

# SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

AN ANALYTICAL EXPLORATION INTO THE PROMISE OF THE  
FORBIDDEN PLANET

-- AN AMERICAN LEGACY FOR FATHERHOOD --

By

Robert Lindsay; Cheney Jr.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Available at: <<http://www.angelfire.com/home/sufferingpatriarchy/index2.html>>



---

## CONTENTS

---

<b>Introduction</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>Chapter One</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>Chapter Two</b>	<b>55</b>
<b>Chapter Three</b>	<b>95</b>
<b>Chapter Four</b>	<b>127</b>
<b>Chapter Five</b>	<b>159</b>
<b>Chapter Six</b>	<b>189</b>
<b>Chapter Seven</b>	<b>229</b>
<b>Chapter Eight</b>	<b>247</b>
<b>Chapter Nine</b>	<b>269</b>
<b>Chapter Ten</b>	<b>289</b>
<b>Chapter Eleven</b>	<b>339</b>
<b>Chapter Twelve</b>	<b>377</b>
<b>Chapter Thirteen</b>	<b>405</b>
<b>Chapter Fourteen</b>	<b>437</b>
<b>Chapter Fifteen</b>	<b>463</b>
<b>Chapter Sixteen</b>	<b>497</b>
<b>Chapter Seventeen</b>	<b>537</b>
<b>Chapter Eighteen</b>	<b>561</b>
<b>Chapter Nineteen</b>	<b>585</b>
<b>Chapter Twenty</b>	<b>623</b>
<b>Chapter Twenty-One</b>	<b>659</b>



---

## INTRODUCTION

---

This book had to be written.

It is the culmination of my 16 year-long struggle with a government and court system which insolently refuses to give Fathers their own children, as mandated by American law. This book is an open, factual, and public indictment against a perverse system of government, courts and the feminists, whom have captured control of our nations courts and usurped this nations laws...if not the outright operation of Government itself. In the words of Supreme Court Justice Thomas C. Clark, it is the irrefutable reality of a nation of which: "Nothing can destroy a government more quickly than its failure to observe its own laws, or words: disregard the character of its own existence."

Simply put: Fathers are in trouble. They have been for over the past quarter century. It has been planned that way. They have been raged upon by a perverse, single-minded design to overthrow the Father at the source of his power: his own home. Do that, then an illegal unseen Elite can thereby, usurp the most basic foundational substrate of this nation itself. When a Father loses the ability to rule in his own home, the resultant pathologies and the political results of that emasculation, have far and incomprehensible effects. These effects are just beginning to be noticed by the American populace, whose breath is taken away from the resultant wars and outrageous tragedies that they are presented with in each and every newspaper and television news report, which documents this sustained conflagration.

What used to transpire in the silence of homes now rages as an outright war across our nations streets—from within each and every individual home, to the workplace—right through to the Presidency of the United States. Indeed—the war, "the leakage" of Feminism: what Ms. Hillary Rodham-Clinton describes as: "The Village"—is nothing less than a devolved, ancient and axiomatic failure. Something of which civilization recognized, then intentionally eradicated some 5000 years ago when the collective breath of Western Civilization "chose" Patriarchy as a design to ascend the human condition. This invention of Patriarchy is exactly what happened. Western Civilization through the institution of Patriarchy continually evolved to help build some of the worlds greatest civilizations—perhaps, which was the preeminent force in creating all civilization as we know it today—including the high-technology 'westernized' American civilization. Now, government is cogently forcing us 'back' into the regressive Tribal "Village"—which is exemplified through the Socialist/Feminist model of governance. The result? Government now insolently works in direct contradistinction to its own laws, under the guise and fraud that it is "helping" us.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

War and destruction are the resultant factorials of feminism—seen on a scale never seen before in human history, silently inflicted upon us all during a time of profound peace. What is most circumspect about this reality, is that this war rages throughout our society as men silently take the abuse and destruction in their lives "as evils are sufferable;" yet government has sent a clear and pervasive message, that it will no longer help nor support Fatherhood either in the home, at work, or throughout society. The resultant perversity has drained several generations of wealth in which to support the ancient Tribalism of Matriarchy, which can only devolve this society. For the first time in American history, our children (the X-Generation in most particular) are being told outright: "You will not do as well as your Grandparents did."

The feminist oligarchy make this political assertion in a nation to where the American national GDP is four times that of what Japan, England, France and Germany make *combined*. They say this in a time of unheard of technical progression and science. They say this, while an Elite regime get richer and richer all the while the American middle-class erodes into the new classes of the working poor and generationally poor. Again, everyone sees that strangely, America is progressing, all the while; at the same time we are moving backwards. Factually, we are moving ahead because of our past Patriarchal infrastructure and new modern technologies push us ahead, all-the-while Feminism devolves this nations true wealth and pushes unseen and unknown social 'Tribal' pressures which pull us behind. Meanwhile nobody 'truly' knows what is going on. Indeed, Fathers themselves whom now suffer the effects of battle fatigue, have no idea why they have been pushed away and out of their children's lives to where now: 40 percent of this nations children grow up with no father in the home. These Fathers, the so-called: "Dead-beat Dads" who now are at epidemic proportions, have no idea that their failure was planned. It was engineered, and designed from the outset of this radical third wave Feminist revolution; a revolution by the way, deeply ensconced in the Soviet Communist system. Father's have no idea how this happened. They have no voice. They cannot explain themselves—yet; many want them to 'apologize' for their supposed transgression—which, by the way; was planned by unseen forces, long before any contemporary American male associated himself with any woman.

What we are speaking of here and what this needless domestic war, and book catalogues, is that we have two opposing systems of government in conflict here. One is Free American, the Other Socialist/Feminist—one is Patriarchal, the other Matriarchal—*only one will survive...for they both cannot exist together...*

What we are clearly documenting here, are inhumane, illegal, and non-constitutional laws and practices, policies and procedures which

## INTRODUCTION

are—again—implemented *by design* implemented to overthrow true American law and justice and replace them with a Fascist/Socialist entity under the tutelage of American ingenuity and efficiency of which, *nobody recognizes nor can justify by any legal or stare decisis basis whatsoever*. In fact, this book will quote from other disciplines and Institutions who will quizzically pose these conundrums throughout their research—as which will demonstrate categorically, that there is treason in our midst.

This book was written for three reasons:

1. For the Fathers Rights movement.
2. For Universities and other Institutes of higher learning.
3. For future generations.

First, the Fathers Rights movement is a burgeoning movement just beginning to gain critical mass. It is a movement that is made up of the simple ‘producers’ of this world: which are basically men. Indeed, one of the main reasons this design to destroy Fathers and Men through Feminism was because the facts are it is the MEN whom still produce and work within any nation. Government and special interest groups went after Fathers due to the simple fact: "this is where the money is." Feminism, simply has been a very efficient away for a domestic enemy within our government to openly transfer wealth from individuals and families, under a more altruistic virtue. Not only that: it openly attacks and denigrates the home and family. This is where a nation’s true laws, morality, and traditions emanate from. The home is the elemental basis of all power throughout any society. As Blackstone and others noted, overthrow that institution—and any society bows to whatever will usurps that intrinsic entity. Indeed, given the simple realities of quid pro quo—we see even today the disparate realities of the system when men and women are posed with the same ‘crime.’ Men pay—women do not. Men go to jail—for the most part, women do not. Men suffer greatly, and for the greatest part—women do not...

All this implemented by the same Feminists whom scream for equality. Like George Orwell noted, "equality" is only for some farm animals...pigs in most particular. The rest go on wanting...

Yet, Legislators, Judges, and Governors and Presidents; as well as a host of opportunistic "Special Interests" will tell Fathers that they are doing great, that everything is fine, that Justice is served from this insolvency. In their next breath however, they will pass even more draconian and Orwellian laws which will undermine our form of governance even further, and the Matriarchal/Tribal/Feminist archetype is assured to continued; all under the guise and fraud that they are passing "law"! ("Law"

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

of which is in continual and direct contradistinction to our form of government).

Meanwhile, our children (for whom this pretended cancerous Leviathan was created) are doing worse and worse and worse. "Save the Children" they continually and incessantly scream. The public, has to fund incredible taxes and the spill-over effects of Police, Courts and Prisons in which to fund this madness...Now, our prisons supersede that of the most oppressive regimes throughout humanity! And our wealth, silently, invisibly; gets drained from the greatest producing nation in the world...and nobody dares explain this truth. But the continual cry of "Best Interests of the Child" go on unabated...and a dull and mulct public, have no idea of the fractures they are through their ignorance and silence, are directly undermining their society, their wealth, their freedoms and outright safety.

Sadly, the Fathers Rights community has no voice to combat this fraud. Fathers get tongue-tied when they come up against unlawful Judges whom criminally deny Fathers even their most basic rights. This book was developed to give Fathers a voice of reasoning, based in law, based in *reason*...based upon the most sacred and immortal precepts and maxims of the *law itself, in which to use against criminal Judges, Legislators and other Special interests groups*. When any Father finishes reading this book, he will accurately be able to do war against a well organized and planned Krell Welfare Machine (of which I explain in full in chapter six).

Krell. What is Krell?

This book is based loosely on the allegory of a 1956 MGM movie called "Forbidden Planet"

In that movie, a mission group contained of scientists, go and research a remote solar system, and land on a planet called Altair IV. There they find a sole remaining science laboratory, which is all that remains of an ancient, long lost civilization called the Krell. This civilization was the zenith of development, eons ahead of human civilization. The laboratory and the inner planet, which has been hollowed out in the Krell's last collective project is the remnant of their most amazing accomplishment. Oddly, the moment the human scientists find this Krell laboratory and the planet machine powering it, the members of this expedition being to mysteriously die from an unseen calamity...until all but a Father (Dr. Morbius) and his tiny baby daughter remain...

Twenty years pass, and another expedition group from earth rushes back towards Altair IV in their flying saucer C-57D to reconnoiter what had happened to the first mission. Upon coming within range of the planet, Dr. Morbius warns the approaching space ship to stay away.



## INTRODUCTION

These "police" of the 22<sup>nd</sup> Century keep going in their flying saucer C-57D undeterred, and land.

There they find now an aged Dr. Morbius, and his young daughter, now a young twenty year old woman.

Again, the new expedition follows the last, seeing the amazing accomplishments of the Krell. Dr. Morbius then explains their great collective accomplishment, which parallels our own.

"The Krell," he told them. "Built this great machine, which was the shining culmination of their civilization. It's job," he portends, "was to take energy from the great machine [and there he points to power meters circling the great laboratory: "Each meter is 10 times the power of the last. Ten, times ten, times ten, times ten—raised almost to the power of infinity!] and then make it possible for any Krell to create anything they wished from the machine, by the mere thought of it."

"What happened?" says our guileless protagonists.

"Well," Dr. Morbius concludes. "That is a mystery. The same night they turned it on, they simply vanished."

Of course what we see here is the Tribal/Communist construct of socialism of which Fathers now are being destroyed and hunted.

In a later scene, we see the conclusion of what really happened, when one of the expeditionary force from C-57D accesses the machine. As he lays dying, he tells our main hero [Leslie Nielsen] what the problem was: "The Krell, completed their machine." He tells them. "But they didn't know about the ID."

"The ID?" they ask.

"Yes...the ID...the ancient mind. The mind of greed, of lust, of wants and desires, of base and uncontrolled passions.

"Sure...their great intellect was able to access the machine and create what they dreamed of, but the machine also accessed the ID...and as they created, they also destroyed...be base animal urges took over, and they destroyed themselves in a night."

"My great Krell..." Dr. Morbius laments. "They never knew what hit them."

Yes...he is right. And exactly like the Krell Welfare Machine, the modern Welfare Machine works exactly in the same manner: A woman "dreams" she can get rid of her husband or boyfriend. She can 'cash in' any equity of the children and go to the "Krell" Welfare Machine that the domestic enemy implementing Radical Third Wave Feminism have ornately built.

Sure, the woman "dreams" of being a stay at home mom, sans any father. Sure, a welfare queen, "dreams" of being Murphy Brown, and sure enough, the Krell Welfare Machine is there, giving her a list of programs to choose from. Training, job training, internships, make work jobs with

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

child care, pay raises...computer and "white collar" executiveship's just for the asking.

Meanwhile, the Krell Welfare Machine exacts its price. It instantly destroys the Father. It enslaves him. It transfers his wealth silently to the machine. And neither the Father, the mother or our American civilization, truly knows or understands what is going on.

But they do. The embedded enemy within the machine implementing it, and passing draconian laws consuming and cannibalizing this society from within. The machine dutifully stays on, being powered by the infinite debt of our own money system. (Ten times ten, time ten...power raised almost to the level of infinity), of which our current meter of a 5.7 trillion (\$5,784,141,843,340.26 as of November 4, 2001).

Ever since those within government supporting this feminized Krell Welfare Machine have "helped" our children—our society like the great Krell civilization has been virtually killed overnight. Now, we have children killing themselves; we have teenage death and suicide rates never before seen in humanity; we have drug use, gang use, teenage pregnancy rates, at levels never before comprehended. We have school test scores plummet to where we are the last (or nearly last) in the world in education. We have social pathologies exploding across the panorama of this society—and all the social engineers keep doing is heaping more laws which proactively support the Krell Welfare Machine which is the incipient cause of the disaster. WE are in fact, going the exact way of the Krell, silently—and not one American can quite put his finger on what is happening—exactly like the proverbial frog boiling in the water.

Any Father thusly reading this book, will then stand on a high plateau, to where he can scan the battlefield and have a wide purview of what is transpiring; and what he can, and cannot do. From this, many Fathers will be able to make more informed choices, more options on how to battle this monster. At minimum, he will be able to establish a dialogue with it, and thereby; defend himself. This book was designed to develop lions from sheep, so that the fraud which has been continually perpetrated against unsuspecting Fathers, whom try and "trust" a system, which looks American: which has people wearing robes, and badges, and running around with official forms, documents and 'supposedly' under the sanctity of law and justice—well—after reading this book, many Fathers will know the true battle-ground, and can choose a true and just path, and thereby; protect themselves more, and more importantly: their future and their children's future.

This book was written so that Fathers can recognize as the first Maxim of Law cited in Chapter one of this book: "Children who follow the condition of the Father are those of freemen." Fathers must stop feeling ashamed of not only wanting: *but demanding their own children*. Not

## INTRODUCTION

only this, many who read this book will come to the same conclusion that Western Civilization came to 5000 years ago after it annihilated Matriarchy....that we as a society *must staple every single child to his father, and keep him there*. It is time the American citizenry be given voice to that same discovery. That we can no longer be a nation of Fatherless children.

There can be no longer, and refuting the facts that Fatherlessness within the American experience throughout the past 50 years; has been this nations *greatest national disaster*. BAR NONE. Adding up the death casualties, the maimed, the missing, those debilitated in health—even the most conservative estimates range higher than any man-made or natural disaster throughout history. The total aggregate numbers of the last quarter century alone, range in the millions—which sadly—are due directly to Feminism. Unfortunately, this is going to get worse, as more and more men begin to come to the end of the State mandated feeding cycle, of which the state leaves them broken, destitute, ostracized, and ruined. These men, many whom are unemployable, (one of the big reasons of how they became "Deadbeats") will once again be recycled into the system as they massively burden our healthcare systems with cancer due to stress and false imprisonment; as they burden our shelters as more and more of them become homeless because they cannot survive economically.

Indeed—if this conflagration were perpetrated upon any other living entity throughout society—there would be International outrage, Environmental groups at the ready, KC130 Military transports standing at the ready, filled to the brim with money, aid, technical expertise and supplied--all willing to aid in the disaster *effecting any other social malady—except fatherhood!*

But because the American male has undergone these injustices: there is a strange and mulct silence. In fact, it goes beyond silence. There is an outright aversion to even approaching this subject, and bringing it to the forefront of public awareness. As one CBS News desk Director named "Rodney" told me in Los Angeles in July 1998 when we attempted to have them focus on fatherhood: "Fathers Rights is not news."

Unfortunately, as we all know, (now that Fathers Rights is just become fashionable in Washington D.C. and elsewhere) it is beyond news. The Fathers Rights Movement will become this nations next greatest social movement, eclipsing all others. It is destined that way, because of what it represents. If you understand the precepts of Western Civilization, of America, of the foundational blueprint and theology of what brought human-kind to develop a *free nation* called the united States of America: then you too will become a Patriarch, and you too will be backing Fatherhood.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This book has also been written for the Universities around this nation, many which have had to suffer the Silent Treatise and outright perfidy of Feminism. Feminism has burned many bridges. It has unjustly persecuted many, many people. It has lied. It has cheated. It has fired people for violating unwritten "Politically Correct" principles, which lend themselves directly to the Fifth columns of the Fascist orders of Nazi Germany of WWII. In fact, many worry of a backlash against the Feminism movement—not because it is not due, but rather—because it is due, and like the Nazi's of WWII, they just don't want to pay the price of their criminality. They made their bed, and now they look for others to sleep in it. They fully expect nothing to happen to them.

How many University and College Professors have been fired over not adhering to being "Politically Correct?" We don't have an exact amount—but it is many. More importantly, how many men have been falsely accused, or even imprisoned due only to Feminist Lies and Disinformation? Again, we don't have exact numbers, but 'conservatively' we are speaking of thousands, if not tens of thousands, hundreds of thousands—or *greater*, have been, and *still* sit unjustly in jail, only due to the fact, that this Feminist political system has created Anti-Law which now are unjustly enacted and imposed by errant State and Federal Legislatures as well as the Judiciary all across this nation.

What is most amazing, is that these new fascist intolerance's, completely controvert American law as we know it. They have no basis in either law or reason, and thereby; we as a nation are mandated to destroy what Ms. Clinton and her fellow feminist cabal have illegally built in this nation.

Lastly, and most importantly this book is written for the future. For 'future' generations.

We must not only document, but dissect and learn from the disasters which have been placed upon us. We must catalogue not only what happened, but *how it happened*. So that it will never happen again.

I have written this book on an empirical level. I have had some sections, shown my humanity in order to give the reader some scope of who I am, and what the true panorama of how this has impacted me and others of whom I document here. I have written this not in a low-level manner...rather, I try and push the reader and especially fathers to the limits of their ability. I do not adhere to the 'lowest common denominator' theory of communication—at least upon subjects as this. Fathers who have the courage and discipline to finish this book, will be empowered. They will *not* fear Judges, nor D.A.'s. Indeed, what I am grooming here with this book is an army. An army of which most certainly will develop...as the war now is unavoidable. It impresses itself upon *every American home*..

## INTRODUCTION

As an apology, I must state that this book is written in a unique tenor. Some may label it 'angry.' Again, after much thought over this, I must admit that this is intentional, as I came to the conclusion, that there can be no mistake about what I am saying here. Many from the other side whom read this book "just don't get it." After they read this book, in the tenor and succinct treble I have imparted to each and every word; "they'll get it." They'll be no mistake about what the Fathers Rights movement is speaking about, nor what we want. The blueprint is not only in our past—it is documented here—our future is contained in these words. I dare them to refute it.

Finally, this book is written with great hopes. My mentor (as I consider him as such) Dr. Daniel Amneus, was the lightning rod for this book's development. When I read the *Case for Father Custody*, I became resolute. The book's further inspiration came from a friend in trouble, called: "Steve" a bartender in Chico California who just missed being labeled a 'Dad' by a blood test which proved he wasn't the Father. Amazingly, Steve (as well as most Fathers out there) did everything exactly wrong—everything of which he 'thought' was right: such as being noble and just, standing up and trying to do the right thing; take the blood test, admit paternity, etc., etc.--which of course helped the D.A., but almost destroyed him. Helping the D.A. is the worst thing you can do, not only for yourself, but also for the next Father who comes along. And most importantly, for your children, OUR CHILDREN, whom are destined to inherit this madness. We have forgotten that children follow the condition of their fathers, and if fathers don't do well (for any reason) the children won't also. Steve was lucky. You and other friends you may have, may not be so lucky. This book will help Fathers of all abilities, in all situations. This book has to—*because factually, nobody else is helping Fathers*. There is a national intent to destroy Fatherhood, and that is exactly what has transpired...presently, Fatherhood has become the greatest crime any person can every commit in this nation, with the most penalties, and the longest sentences ever seen throughout history. Murderers are not hunted, like Fathers are. No crime is.

I do not claim so high a station as to allude that this book will be in every single American's home...no. I don't imagine this being a best-seller. It is too controversial. It is too truthful. Being a Best Seller wasn't the design nor the station of this book. This book is for a cadre of people who care, who need to get to a mountain-top, a plateau, in order to peruse and analyze the whole battle-front. It is for people who wish to do the right thing for the future, and for future generations. I think this book has accomplished that.

There have been books before this one which have become part of the national mind-set, and have gone on to implement social change. Books

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

such as Upton Sinclair's *The Jungle*; Rachel Carson's, *Silent Spring*, and Alvin Toffler's *Future Shock* as well as many other books which have made a difference. If anything, I hope this book gives people a chance to pause, to consider the alternate side of the equation, and to come to the mountain-top with me, and to look over the real battle front...not just the false adumbration given on Television. and throughout the mainstream media. I want such people to ask simple questions, such as "Do we change the character and nature of this nations laws, for some other anti-theoretical social cause, no matter what it's conceived social good?" "Do we re-establish entities which were abhorrent to our Founding Fathers such as Debtors prisons and slavery, in order to subvert our nations laws?" "What is the true investment of the "Cradle to Grave" socialist mindset? Does that investment coalesce with this nations design and Constitutional function?" "Does a Fathers Right to rule in his own home supersede the nation's larger intent for social engineering?"

These and other primacy questions, have to be perceived and considered by the reader.

The main emphasis of this book is not to believe me, nor to believe Ms. Hillary Clinton, nor a host of experts and other social sages: no! The thing I demand from each and every reader is to *believe in yourself*. Do not swallow the mindless pabulum of what society has been indoctrinated with...believe your own eyes...believe your own mind...believe in your own country. Again, if we can see and think clearly, and determine for ourselves what is right and wrong, you can be absolutely sure that the Krell Welfare Machine will never accomplish its task. It is time we turn off the Krell Welfare Machine forever.

Or, it will turn us off. Just like in the movie.

---

# CHAPTER ONE

---

*“Partus sequitur ventrem.”*

*“The offspring follow the condition of the mother. This is the law in the case of slaves and animals; 1 Bouviers Institutes n. 167, 502; but with regard to freemen, children follow the condition of the father.” -- Bouviers Law Dictionary*

## DEFINITION OF THE PROBLEM

---

For the past 50 years there has been a national tragedy presented to the American Society in regards to fathers and their role within the American Family. This well marketed tragedy has intentionally destroyed the American family, devastated our children, and ruined the institution of Fatherhood; yet conversely, it has established a panoply of Governmental Superstructures, all feeding off this planned destruction of the American male. This myth of the tragic domination of the American Male upon a totally defenseless American Family is brought forwards under the moniker of “BEING IN THE BEST INTERESTS OF THE CHILD.” It is a cancerous empire of special interests, attaching themselves like maggots and feeding off the sustenance of the American home, capturing the wealth and inheritance of the children, and using those ill-ought gains for those government empires undefined pecuniary interests. There now, after many years of abuse, is an ever-growing body of work being established to regrettably, document this dichotomy:

“Our business is as imperfect as the human condition. Although social workers, judges, and lawyers in the child welfare and juvenile justice systems continually mouth the words “best interest of the child,” in most cases we are incapable of doing what is in the child’s best interest. More often we try to accomplish what is not in the child’s worst interests. [*Wasted, The Plight of America’s Unwanted Children*, by Patrick t. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago, IL 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; p. 84.]

This Government sponsored empire, is the most organized, coordinated, corrupt and financially supported syndicate in the history of mankind. It openly, and arrogantly advertises and disseminates errant disinformation campaigns, and promulgates outright lies—and surprisingly—those lies are immediately swept up by the national mainstream media and instantly propagated unto an unsuspecting American public. They are consistently bludgeoned so much by this incessant information that these lies become part of the American substrate and mindset. Americans can no longer tell who, or what, is telling the truth in regards to the American Family and the children within this nation. They are only being pre-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

sented the feminist/government “politically correct” pabulum which spews forth incessantly from the mainstream media. From this well-organized sophistry, these lies wind up in the American consciousness and vocabulary as if they were true; even though they are egregiously false. American Presidents and other Governmental institutions, depend on these lies and mythologies to increase their empires and to allow even more oppressive legislation to be enacted against the father. Their plan is to debilitate what is advertised as the main prevaricator of this well-advertised ‘abuse’ agent against children and mothers, which is of course the American Father. It has now become so systematic that Fatherhood clearly is not in the “Best Interests of the Child”, that our infamous courts, the media and the American society have been inculcated to react with a vengeance against the American male and Father. Fathers are no longer good for the American Family, nor our children; and as we shall see from the voluminous facts and figures in regards to this subject, amazingly; Fatherhood has now become one of the **greatest** crimes that any citizen can commit in this society. It is, in fact, the greatest crime in human history.

The Members Of The System (MOTHs) are told they have power (“jurisdiction”) over you, and this emboldens them to feel secure as they invade your life and use power on you and your children. (The amount of power used, depends on how you relate to them.)

**Its 4 outputs** The uninitiated might think that the only result of the System is the decision by a judge, but actually there are several *kinds* of outcomes in The System:

- 1.) the independent action of the agencies,
- 2.) intimidation by the repeated filing of papers,
- 3.) the monetary loss of hiring an attorney,
- 4.) the decision of a judge

**The results** The System yields overburdened mothers, absent fathers, angry children, distraught grandparents, repeat litigation, violence, kidnapping and abuse. The System damages parent-child relationships, overloads the welfare system, demoralizes the removed fathers, and shifts an ever bigger national debt to future adults “in their best interest.” [*Where Have All the Good Fathers Gone? Child Support and Custody*, by Douglas O’Brien, ©1997, Skid 18 Press, P.O. Box 60630, Fairbanks, AK 99706; p. 6.]

Indeed, this system has propagated not only empires, but legalized hate groups which are openly radical extremist Feminist organizations, and even more insidiously, they are otherwise labeled as “Community Organizations” such as “Women’s Centers,” “Community Centers,” “Safe Houses,” media, and other ‘organizations’ which are extremely well funded by an ever-expanding empire of government grants and fund-



## CHAPTER ONE

ing sources totally dedicated to support the destruction of the American two-parent model nuclear family, and more importantly the American Father. Presently, through these massive funding's, these institutions actively support, and implement Radical Feminist teachings and socialist program's to the point to where parents no longer are in control of their own children (nor their own lives). They support and implement training programs for public institutions such as schools to teach anti-Christian and antithetical concepts as Lesbianism and homosexuality, and other open 'alternate' lifestyles to where our children are being drawn into a new paradigm of 'tolerance' of public sponsored perversion, which is not only advocated, but now actively taught as societal norms. Those who oppose these unclean denigration's become attacked by an all-too-willing government monolith whose altruistic intent is to destroy those who oppose these questionable life-styles which affirm American morality. John Stuart Mill addressed this issue in his masterpiece "On Liberty" in regards to this "Tyranny of the Majority":

Like other tyrannies, the tyranny of the majority was at first, and is still vulgarly, held in dread, chiefly as operating through the acts of the public authorities. But reflecting persons perceived that when society is itself the tyrant--society collectively, over the separate individuals who compose it--its means of tyrannizing are not restricted to the acts which it may do by the hands of its political functionaries. Society can and does execute its own mandates: and if it issues wrong mandates instead of right, or any mandates at all in things with which it ought not to meddle, it practices a social tyranny more formidable than many kinds of political oppression, since, though not usually upheld by such extreme penalties, it leaves fewer means of escape, penetrating much more deeply into the details of life, and enslaving the soul itself. Protection, therefore, against the tyranny of the magistrate is not enough; there needs protection also against the tyranny of the prevailing opinion and feeling; against the tendency of society to impose, by other means than civil penalties, its own ideas and practices as rules of conduct on those who dissent from them; to fetter the development, and, if possible, prevent the formation, of any individuality not in harmony with its ways, and compel all characters to fashion themselves upon the model of its own. [John Stuart Mill Harvard Classics Volume 25 Copyright 1909 P.F. Collier & Son]

Where once fathers were admonished not to dominate and inculcate their children to 'be like them' and to mold their children in their own image of rugged individualism and to respect and maintain their own heritage--now presently; radical feminists infest our schools with nascent teachings such as "Heather's got Two Mommies," "I've got no Daddy" and other institutional programs which are most certainly, inculcating *their* belief's upon our own

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

children. The aggregate numbers of these types of books now being taught in our schools is a grave indicator as to the destruction of the Family and most certainly the American Father:

At the same time, children's books on illegitimacy and parental abandonment began to appear. There was resurgent interest in step-parents as well. A new figure, the violent and sexually abusive step-father, joined a more familiar character, the cruel and calculating step-mother, in the pages of these children's books. During the 1970s and 1980s the fascination with these dark themes grew. In 1977 a comprehensive bibliography listed more than two hundred pages' worth of children's books dealing with loss and separation. By 1989 the list had grown to more than five hundred pages. [*The Divorce Culture*, Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, ©1996, Borzoi Book, Published by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., New York, ISBN 0-679-43230-2; p.108.]

This clearly appears to be a cogent program to undermine the two-parent model of the nuclear family, within our own schools. The feminist defend their 'right' not only for children to defy and question their parents, or discipline itself, but also to openly demand and access 'free' government sponsored abortions, and other alternative lifestyles, without the parents authority and/or consent. A host of other government sponsored perversions whose only intent is to destroy the Father and conventional two-parent 'nuclear' family are readily available—only for the asking. Indeed, our schools and universities have become foreign-pseudo-intellectual breeding grounds to where it is unlawful to dare to attempt to place a mere Christmas Manger within a school or say something as benign as the pledge-of-allegiance inside our classrooms; yet conversely; now our schools have become feminist sponsored enclaves of the open avocation of Lesbianism, Gay and Homosexual exploration and validation, and training grounds for extreme forms of promiscuity and sexuality—"a woman's right to control her own sexuality, freedom and reproduction rights"--all under the moniker of "Equality", "The Child's Best Interests", or "It takes a Village to Raise a Child..." Of course, Western Civilization understood these same teachings to be in another state of society:

Among nations of hunters, the lowest and rudest state of society, such as we find it [is] among the native tribes of North America, everyman is a warrior as well as hunter... [*Wealth of Nations* by Adam Smith, Vol. II Everyman's Library, Dutton : New York, ©1910 reprinted in 1971, ISBN-0-460-00413-1, p. 182.]

What can easily be seen here is that Adam Smith, who wrote this over 100 years ago, is clearly describing our modern day Welfare ghetto's in

## CHAPTER ONE

which these feminist are generating. He is describing the tribal condition of Matriarchy, in which the human race tends to devolve to when the Father has been removed from his rightful authority within this institution. This tribal condition currently is being marketed under the title of "Feminism" or Hillary Clinton's "Village."

Indeed, the subversion of the American two-parent family has willingly been sponsored by the omniscient overture of government which has willfully vilified Fatherhood and in which our courts have radically implemented injustice via an arrogant Judicial Activist, Anti-Americanism court system. In cogently creating this nationally sponsored vilification, criminalization, and hatred against the American Father, it has artificially created and sustained a mythical "Bogeyman"—the Father—which it has marketed at the insistence and documentation of radical feminism. It has allowed a clearly demarcated hate-group, the Radical Feminists, with a clear hate agenda against males, Carte Blanche access to national wealth and government services, media and financial sponsorship in which to undermine that one entity of Fatherhood. History has noted similar persecution:

"And the reasons for killing of Jews were shams, having no more to do with "reasons" given for why the Germans killed them than had Hitler's protestations of his peaceful desires to do with the German designs for carving up Czechoslovakia. Among the reasons First Company reported for killing Jews were: "work-shirkers," "epidemic threats," "was without armband," "bribery," "leaped from transport," "vagabondage," "unauthorized departure from place of residence," "deportation," and "hidden after deportation." In many cases, no reasons whatsoever was proffered, save the word "Jews," which was obviously sufficient reason in itself...Since Jewishness was a sufficient cause, all the "reasons" given were clearly no necessary, and were window dressing of one kind or another." [HITLER'S WILLING EXECUTIONERS, Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust, by Daniel Johah Goldhagen, Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., New York, Random House, @ 1996 ISBN- 0-679-44695-8 pp. 196]

As with the Nazi elimination of the Jew, the same sham of the vilification of the American Father and his elimination serves several purposes, the main one being removal of the main authority, power and protection from the American home all under the Feminist guise of 'equality,' 'fairness,,' and being in "The Best Interests of the Child." This vilification and creation of a "Bogeyman" is all too willingly accepted by an unsuspecting American public whom is fed disinformation and outright lies in regards to the facts of this issue. Because the present population is a product of this feminist indoctrination being not only taught this new paradigm of "tolerance" and being incessantly bombarded with feminist/government propaganda from our mainstream media; in reality; they

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

no longer have the ability to discern the true crisis against fathers or the American family. Yet, government in gaining authority and absolute power within a society has to remove several key things in which to subvert a society from law to the autocratic monopoly of a power-hungry elite regime. Once the father is removed as the main authority figure and disciplinarian of the American household, it is at this exact instant, when both parents are instantly removed from their parenting function to one of being reduced to secondary surrogate ad litem guardians of their own children. In fact, once the father is removed from his rightful position as the authority and main-disciplinarian in the home, the State, through the doctrine of **Parens Patriæ** [the state as the ultimate parent] becomes the only real parent of the children.

### Criteria for determining custody-generally

“The court is required to give such direction, as between the parents of a child, for the custody, care, education, and maintenance of the child as in the court’s discretion, justice requires having regard to the circumstances of the case and of the respective parties and to the best interests of the child. DRL §240 (Subd. 1). The court is required to determine what is in the best interests of the child and what disposition will best promote the child’s welfare and happiness, and will make an award accordingly. DRL §170. In determining a child’s custody, the court acts as parens patriæ to do what is best for the child. The court is to place itself in the position of a “wise”, “affectionate and careful” parent and make provision for the child accordingly,” Matter of Finlay, 240 N.Y. 429, 433, 148, N.E. 624 (1925) [West’s McKinney’s Form’s – Matrimonial and Family Law, Covering Domestic Relations, General Obligations, Family Court, Alan D. Scheinkman, @1985, West Publishing Co., St. Paul Minnesota]

From this insanity, a parent can no longer dare raise their hand to their own children, no matter what the circumstances be regardless if it is for disciplinarian purposes or an aberrant folly, for in that one instant; the Pandora’s Box has been opened, At this exact instant, the State can factually, second-guess any attempt at any form of discipline given to the children. Upon any dissention, they will enter the home, and seize the children and place parents in jail. The Government under the doctrine of **Parens Patriæ** is the parent of your child. YOU are not.

“Parents do not own their children. They merely care for them in trust for the rest of society. To maximize healthy growth and development, all children should grow up surrounded by social relationships that are close, personal, and enduring. [*Child Abuse, An American Epidemic*, by Elaine Landau, ©1990, Julian Messner, Silver Burdett Press, Inc., Simon & Schuster, Inc., Prentice Hall Bldg., Englewood Cliffs, NJ 07632, ISBN 0-671-68874-X; p. 18.]

## CHAPTER ONE

Conversely, when the father is the head of the family, the state immediately loses this autocratic function. But with the father subverted to the States' Socialistic Paternalism' under the "Parens Patriæ" doctrine, no parent can truly ever-again discipline or even own their own child [place cite here about father who was jailed for spanking], teach their child [place cite here about family who lost their children for teaching Bible and Constitutionalism], or inculcate family traditions or moral values over that of government [place cite here about child being taught homosexuality, also girl who was pregnant and parents didn't know]. Indeed, parents become no more than Foster homes, temporarily minding the bidding of the State—daring never to supercede its ultimate authority—for if they do, that family is in dire jeopardy. What has occurred over the last 40 to 50 years due to the direct forced implementation of Feminism and Socialism has proven that when the mother is given custody upon separation or divorce, she cannot take care of the children by herself, she needs outside economic support and government subsidy. This is what makes the Government the ultimate parent under the doctrine of Parens Patriæ. Conversely, with the father in place as the head of the household, then; the Family becomes a sealed economic viable unit, and not only does it not need any outside economic support or subsidy: it accrues wealth not only to the contemporary family, but to its descendant's as well. Under this model, society also benefits greatly through the resilient strength and wealth, emanating from those families. Again, note the most pertinent parts of the legal definition of this doctrine:

**Parens Patriæ**—Parent of his country; refers traditionally to the role of the state as sovereign and guardian of persons under legal disability. 440 F 2d. 1079, 1089. The term is a concept of **standing** often used by courts of **equity** when acting on behalf of the state to protect and control the **property** and **custody** of minors and incompetent persons.

The court, as an arm of the state, acts in the capacity of parens patriæ when it awards **custody** of a minor to one parent in a **divorce, separation, or habeas corpus** proceeding. By exercising this authority the state emphasizes that a child is not the absolute property of a parent, but is a "trust" reposed in a parent by the state. 26 A. 2d 799, 809...While the term originated in England and referred to the power of the kind, in America it refers to the people or the state. 41 N.W. 2d 60, 70 [Barron's Legal Guides—Law Dictionary, Steven H. Gifis, © 1996 by Barron's Educational Series, Inc., 250 Wireless Boulevard, Hauppauge, New York 11788, ISBN 0-8120-3096-6, p. 360.]

**Ad Litem**—for the lawsuit; for the purposes of the suit being prosecuted. A GUARDIAN AD LITEM is a person appointed by the court to protect the interests of a minor or legally **incompetent** person in a lawsuit. [IBID p. 12]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Indeed, this is old history, and this premise of usurpation of the Father's authority within his own home is best described within Fredrick Bastiat's treatise "The Law".

If every person has the right to defend -- even by force -- his person, his liberty, and his property, then it follows that a group of men have the right to organize and support a common force to protect these rights constantly. Thus the principle of collective right -- its reason for existing, its lawfulness -- **is based on individual right**. *And the common force that protects this collective right cannot logically have any other purpose or any other mission than that for which it acts as a substitute. Thus, since an individual cannot lawfully use force against the person, liberty, or property of another individual, then the common force -- for the same reason -- cannot lawfully be used to destroy the person, liberty, or property of individuals or groups.*

Such a perversion of force would be, in both cases, contrary to our premise. *Force has been given to us to defend our own individual rights. Who will dare to say that force has been given to us to destroy the equal rights of our brothers? Since no individual acting separately can lawfully use force to destroy the rights of others, does it not logically follow that the same principle also applies to the common force that is nothing more than the organized combination of the individual forces?*

### The Complete Perversion of the Law

But, unfortunately, law by no means confines itself to its proper functions. And when it has exceeded its proper functions, it has not done so merely in some inconsequential and debatable matters. **The law has gone further than this; it has acted in direct opposition to its own purpose.** The law has been used to destroy its own objective: **It has been applied to annihilating the justice that it was supposed to maintain;** *to limiting and destroying rights which its real purpose was to respect.* **The law has placed the collective force at the disposal of the unscrupulous who wish, without risk, to exploit the person, liberty, and property of others. It has converted plunder into a right, in order to protect plunder. And it has converted lawful defense into a crime, in order to punish lawful defense.** [Frederick Bastiat, "The Law" (Italic's, bold's and underline's by RLCII for clarity of issues).]

From this we can see, the state needs these altruistic causes to use as platforms in which to establish a venue in which to gain a reason for 'public support' of a cause which they then malign into a broad spectrum of virtually unlimited state powers. They would rather to broaden the scope and tenor of these powers to unlimited proportions. Attacking the American family, and by vilifying the American Father, the feminists have found a perfect instrument for such a government seeking the unlimited scope of powers through "Autocracy". For once the American home

## CHAPTER ONE

has been subverted, and the core values, traditions and laws of the home have been superseded by government authority—what else can't a government overcome? Frankly, the rest is moot, for once government has successfully intruded into the American home by eradicating the Fathers natural position within that home, there is no further restraint or control upon government. From over-riding the home and family, government then controls all. The resultant establishment of Single Female Headed Household's, has failed not only to raise a viable generations of children, but they have also failed to allow the an environment where the traditional two-parent nuclear family can flourish. This means that once Dad is removed from the home, the remaining woman will need subsidy through government services in which to raise the children, and upon that; the children will not fair very well. Thereby; in the final analysis, with the Father gone, the State intentionally becomes the final, and ultimate parent. From this dead weight which is burdened upon society, society thereby has more social pressures placed against it, and thereby; the safe stable environment of the home, where once the United States once categorically placed first across every social indicator across the board, declines. This is a Matriarchal devolution of the total society which is not a healthy environment for two-parent families with children.

“The distinction of birth, being subsequent to the inequality of fortune, can have no place in nations of hunters, among whom all men, being equal in fortune, must likewise be very nearly equal at birth,” [Wealth of Nations, Adam Smith, vol. II, p. 202]

Again, Smith describes the matriarchal model of the tribe, the ‘lowest and rudest’ state of society. Feminists such as Ms. Clinton and her socialist supporters, want this ‘equal’ tribal “Village” model among us all, for remove the father from the home, and society naturally devolves to this tribal state. Once the tribal state has been established, then; “Government” becomes the parent, and the Welfare state obtains eternal monies, subsidies and power in which to maintain this imperial empire. They do this through their own system, by legalized Autocracy, which intrudes into the most basic areas of family lives. This in itself is a pressure which eventually has disastrous effects upon the long-term stability of the home.

What is really perverse in regards to the Parens Patriæ doctrine, is that it is the ultimate oxymoron. Beyond that: it's use by the state, is an outright fraud. Note the following.:

### FATHER OF HIS COUNTRY

Quintus Catulus, speech before the Roman Senate, A.D. 64, referring to Cicero, after his exposure of the conspiracy of Catiline. Cicero, *In Pisonem*, ch. 3, says, “Quintus Catulus, before a crowded meeting of the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Senate, named me father of my Country.” (Parentum Patriae nominant). Plutarch, *Lives: Cicero*, ch. 23, sec. 3, describes at some length how the title “Father of his Country” ...was bestowed upon Cicero, and adds, “He was the first to receive this title, after Cato had given it to him before the people,” Cicero nowhere refers to Cato as the coiner of the phrase, so in this Plutarch was probably mistaken. It will be noted that Cicero uses “Parens Patriae” but the usual phrase, following Plutarch is “Pater Patriae.” Pliny, however, also uses Latin as in English, between it and “Pater Patriae.” The latter connoting the more intimate relationship. Luscus, for instance, *De Bello Civili*, ii, 7, has “Parens Rerum” (the parent of things), while Pliny the Younger, *Epistles*, v. 19, has “Pater familias” (Father of a family).

“But Rome was yet free when she styled Cicero Parent and Father of his Country. (Sed Roma Parentum | Roma Patrem Patriae Ciceronem libera dedit.) [Juvenal, *Satires Sat. VIII*, 1. 243 (c. A.D. 120)]

To safeguard the citizens is the greatest [virtue] of the Father of his Country. (Servare Cives major est Patriae Patri.) [Seneca, *Octavia*, 1, 444 (c. A.D. 60)]

A good Prince ought to purchase to him selfe the name of the Father of his Countrey, and not to beare himselfe otherwise towards his subjectes, then a Father doeth towards his sonnes. [Stefano Guazzo, *Civile Conversation*. Bk. 11, p. 209 (1574) Pettie Tr.]

What the reader will note here is several things. First, is that Fatherhood apparently was not the ‘terrible scourge’ that today’s contemporary Feminists make it out to be. In fact, in relation to Cicero, and in according with Stefano Guazzo, it was once a highly bestowed title, one of eminent responsibility and Justice. There could be no higher title.

Another point is that this was bestowed upon Cicero, when “Rome was yet free” when he received the title. Indeed, again we can see the ancients had made a clear correlation between ‘freedom’ and the father—or Patriarchy--something that does not exist today, or to be more succinct, something which *is not* Politically Correct today. Clearly, as a United Nations survey shows, the United States is presently listed in 13<sup>th</sup> place as far as free nations, where it once stood first for over a century...and unfortunately, it is 13<sup>th</sup>, and still *dropping*. This is yet another clear social indicator that something is terribly wrong under this present Feminist regime of power.

Lastly, it is an ultimate affront that the Courts and this Government assumes this title and position under its contemporary usage as “the ultimate Parent”—clearly; there is no ‘guardian’ here. There is only an autocratical tyrant. They are using the ultimate powers under the Doctrine of Parens Patriae to ‘supposedly’ save us, yet; their actions are only those of an abusive father, again; a tyrant—clearly the relationship is not as Guazzo points out above, that of “then a Father doeth towards his sonnes.” What present Father who has been destroyed by this present



## CHAPTER ONE

feminist “Village” despotism, feels towards either the government or the courts the way a son would feel before his own father? Presently, to the greatest extent, all men fear this new government. Clearly, the government is no father in the true sense of the meaning of *Parens Patriæ*. Indeed, Thomas Fuller made this observation as how we *should* feel if this system were truly operating under a system of “*Parens Patriæ*”: “*He whose Father is Judge, goes safe to his trial.*” {Thomas Fuller, *Gnomologia*. No. 2400 (1732).] No Father feels safe in these Feminist Jurisprudence dominated courts, *especially* those who seek to uphold their ultimate rights of Fatherhood over that of the state. For in fact, in our present courts, just as Fredrick Bastiat noted above, “The law has gone further than this; it has acted in direct opposition to its own purpose. The law has been used to destroy its own objective: It has been applied to annihilating the justice that it was supposed to maintain.” Sadly, this has created a crisis so profound, as to spill over into every American’s lives, as *nobody* can trust this out-of-control Judiciary any longer.

The arrogance of these people to lay title and claim to our homes and our children, all under the title of the ‘ultimate Father’ or ‘parent’ and then terrorize us under the moniker of the State, in the name of “We the People,” under the title of “law” is an affront to the very foundational fabric of which this nation was founded. This paradox is as legion as the Germans of WWII placating and leading innocent Jews to their Slaughter, all the while the entrance to their ultimate demise read: “Through work, Salvation.” The present out-of-control “Village” government and court systems are in fact guilty of this same use of outrageous diametric epiphanies. What we are documenting here can only in fact, be labeled as high *treason*.

### AMERICAN LAW AND THE FATHER

---

It is said, that American law is a building, built brick by brick, each law resting on the case precedence of previous law, the stability of legal reasoning and case precedence aligning the law into a stable, cohesive set of linear legal reasoning’s that can be depended upon, and almost mathematically traced back into antiquity. This is no longer true in American law, and this modern disjuncture in the precedence of law, is due in great part, to Feminist Jurisprudence.

There is a present cancer within the law. Feminist Jurisprudence is unlike the stability of that brick house formerly mentioned. Under Feminist Jurisprudence, their law starts building completely out of the ether, magically appearing from mid-air starting at the second story without any legal precedent or American legal foundation from the past supporting it. This incredible feminist legal building creates the bricks from nothing

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

which then are laid out across the planet, into the solar system; perhaps into other dimensions. It has no cohesiveness, no intellect, no logic. It is most certainly illegal, and consummately Anti-American. It is based solely on anarchy and power—and has no lawful precedence in law—even within its own domain. It comes from Marxist Jurisprudence and Totalitarianism. Yet...Judges adhere to this new Feminist Jurisprudence law with a vengeance, local District Attorney's apply it daily with insolence, and lawyers will religiously attend to its miscegenation. Feminist Jurisprudence in fact, is anti-law.

“In addition to civil rights such as free speech, radical feminists are also trying, in effect, to dismantle equal protection in the criminal code. In their well-founded concern with violent crimes against women—particularly rape and domestic battery—the radicals are intent on eliminating many procedural protections for men accused of such crimes. Of course, there is no reason to think that such encroachments on procedural process will remain confined only to rape cases; but to those feminist who dismiss autonomy, liberty, and privacy as mere male illusions, that is not a matter of great concern. At the same time, radical feminists are taking the exactly reverse doctrinal approach to cases of women who kill their partners. They have worked to create new procedural defense for such women—the battered woman syndrome, which, if taken to its logical extreme, could free any woman who committed violent crimes. This paradox suggests that to the radical feminists, procedural protections belong exclusively to women.” [*Feminist Jurisprudence, Equal Rights or New-Paternalism?*, by Michael Weiss and Cathy Young, Policy Analysis No. 256, June 19, 1996, p. 12.]

Feminism, is in fact communism, as we will prove in subsequent chapters of this book. This is the foundation of principles it adheres to, as it is a direct delineation of Karl Marx Communist Manifesto. Present “government” is now subverted with a domestic enemy, which now has usurped the foundational tenants of a free America through modern “Legislative Law” which is in direct contradistinction to our form of government. A domestic enemy has factually overthrown this nation, without a shot—from within—and they have gained this awesome power by overthrowing the principle element of the body politic: Overthrowing the American Male and Father within his own home and community. In fact, communism as some scholars notes, is in fact: defined as non-patriarchy:

“Put another way: like feminism, the Marxist claim is unfalsifiable; no matter how long societies fail to exhibit communism (or non-patriarchy), it can always be claimed that communism (or non-patriarchy) is just around the corner. No exception (as I use the term) is sufficient to cast any doubt (much less to refute) the claim.” -- Steven Goldberg (Dept. of Sociology,

## CHAPTER ONE

CUNY) [Dr. Goldberg Replies to "Patriarchy" Debate. From Robert Sheaffer [sheaffer@netcom.com](mailto:sheaffer@netcom.com):]

The organic law established in this nation and Constitutionally supported in both the Common and Statutory Laws through antiquity showed that the Father was the sole head of the household, and leader and protector of the home and family. Feminist Jurisprudence magically appeared out from this ether, *quite recently* being commanded out of a sense of conspired and designed exigency; and by a mandate by special interests to only proliferate this 'special interest' religion upon the rest of society. The feminists in conjunction with Government's need for an altruistic vehicle to apply dominant Federalist power over an unsuspecting people, married the principles of 'abuse' charges against the expansionist Federalist policies of FDR's New Deal and later, President Lyndon B. Johnson's Great Society Socialist programs. This was a marriage of both need and convenience and gave each group almost unlimited access and control into both power and monies that previously have been unheard of in modern societies. The family in essence, became to government nothing more than a commodity; a vehicle to be used and harvested at will. To the feminists and socialists, it became a vehicle to be used to promote a socialist special interests agenda, all the while pretending that they were doing all this, for our best interests. The true fact is, that they did this as a specific design to overthrow a free nation, and to replace it, with "something else."

It was not in our best interests to do this. Rather, it was done in direct contravention to this nations ascribed laws and procedures, e.g., "the common law" which was once the definitively ascribed process for this nations citizens in their own courts. It is said a nation is subverted slowly, step-by-step; and not by massive leaps and bounds. Such was the case with Family Law and Feminist Jurisprudence.

The law stemming from time immemorial (prior to 1152 and King Richard who first catalogued the laws) clearly gave the father the leadership ability within the home. For instance, in Rome, the father could in fact beat, or kill his children under the doctrine of *Patria Potestas*; and no action could be taken against him. The male, and no other entity controlled the home. This was not done due to any Patriarchal conspiracy requirements, but rather, it was done more out of design and engineering needs that societies through trial-and-error tend to gravitate to. As Dr. Daniel Amneus clearly shows in his work "The Case for Father Custody" the creation of Patriarchy was the greatest advent of modern Western civilization. Civilization was not created out of the new inventions of agriculture, or husbandry, which both existed for thousands of years before the 'invention' of Western civilization (or Patriarchy). In Dr. Amneus own words: "It wasn't the invention of cultivation of agriculture

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

or even domestication of animals, both which existed centuries before the invention of civilization, it was the basis of the male-kinship system which evolved over the female-kinship system which took man out of the tribal concept of civilization to that of ordered, civilized society.” Clearly, this was as big an invention for humanity as fire or the wheel. It appears to be the causal factor for the inception of true civilization. If it is not the direct causal factor for modern civilization—Patriarchy is most assuredly a concomitant necessity for it.

Indeed, the law via the construct of logistic necessity within a flourishing growing society favored Patriarchy, not as a systematic subjugation of women, as the feminist would have us believe, but rather; it was the path of least resistance to a societies well-being; the families well-being; and everyone’s continued growth and benefit. Ancient societies made the connection that stable and productive families contributed to the health of civilization as a whole. Patriarchy was the engineered response to that need, and it evolved through a male-kinship system which regulated the female kinship system, which civilization recognized to be a “lower” or “rudest” order of civilization that lent itself to tribalism. Due to this fact that Patriarchy did not devolve into a tribal state and that it amassed the accrual of wealth which was the main component needed to start an ascending civilization...in other words ‘surplus.’ The ancient societies understood that the health and safety of all the family members where well-recognized benefits of the nuclear two-parent family; which again; was so recognized and thereby protected and ingrained in early law. Indeed, one need only to juxtapose the present feminist system, compared that with Patriarchy to know and understand that Patriarchy, through the control of the females sexuality by both the man and society, guaranteed that the male’s children would keep any wealth created by the father. It guaranteed the male an assured product of his genetic expression, that his wife would in fact produce his child. This mandated his genetic response of protection and defense of his progeny within the family unit, which would ultimately benefit society as a whole. This in fact, as represented in early law and throughout the history of Western Civilization; clearly shows that such recognized favor of the father controverts the sophistry that “It takes a Village to Raise a Child.” This is the confederation of Ms. Hillary Rodham Clinton’s “Village” thesis: **tribalism**.

“Children exist in the world as well as in the family. From the moment they are born, they depend on a host of other “grown-ups”—grandparents, neighbors, teachers, ministers, employers, political leaders, and untold others who tough their lives directly and indirectly. Adults police their streets, monitor the quality of their food, air, and water, produce the programs that appear on their televisions, run the business that employ

## CHAPTER ONE

their parents, and write the laws that protect them. Each of us plays a part in every child's life: It takes a village to raise a child.

*I chose that old African proverb to title this book because it offers a timeless reminder..." [It Takes a Village, and Other Lessons Children Teach Us, by Ms. Hillary Rodham Clinton, ©1996, Simon & Schuster, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the America's, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-81843-4, pp. 11-12. (Bold and Italicized my emphasis, RLCII]*

Ms. Clinton just didn't **choose** that quaint old African Tribal proverb—she is in fact, held hostage to it, in implementing the tribal-socialist Anti-American version of it upon an unsuspecting American public. For she's not going to find such a quaint proverb from any Western European civilization or advanced cultures background, such as Muslim, Bhuddist, nor even Christian Mosaic law because her "Village" model is quintessentially held to a tribal standard: *those of failed ancient tribal societies*, or as Adam Smith noted earlier: "*the lowest and rudest state of society.*" This is where Ms. Clinton's theocracy derives from. These feminist and government sponsored 'programs' and 'entitlement's' are in fact, part of the machine of her tribal creation. This isn't just about quaint old related concepts given out by some old wise tribal sage's...no! This is a complete political attack upon the structure and substance of Patriarchy of Western Civilization itself, which refutes tribalism and controls the Female Kinship system in which to make sexuality work for mankind to create and advanced civilization.. Patriarchy is apparently what early human civilization's "invented" approximately 5,000 years ago, to supplant the idea that if you clearly want to raise a child in the most beneficial, loving environment, the choice must be Patriarchy. Therefore any advanced *societies* choice *must* be Patriarchy. This what we understand as the two-parent 'nuclear' household, and NOT Matriarchy (tribalism) in which Ms. Clinton and her "Village" people want to intensely support. This is not only proven by historical analysis, it is proven by modern scientific analysis. All Communist societies are based on the same feminist premise of Tribal 'equality' under Marxist doctrines. Such 'law' as favored by such societies are ones that work against themselves and devolve. Those modern societies which are Patriarchies are flourishing or ascending, while those which are Matriarchies are devolving. In fact—it was directly due to the scientific formulation of Patriarchy, in which society 'cogently chose' as the preferred model within society—that in fact caused modern civilization to flourish. Factually, this is what American society chose, and somehow; from and by unproven Socialist Social Engineering thesis' (actually, in reality—a completely failed theory—as the Russian collapse has shown the world), the ruling elite regime in the American government has criminally abandoned the foundation of

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

law and order which guaranteed this form of free government. The now adhere to socialist Marxist doctrine, and call it “Law.”

Need proof of the Anti-American socialist intent? Again, one only has to go to Karl Marx and Frederick Engels master work: *The Communist Manifesto*.

“We have seen above, that the first step in the revolution by the working class is to raise the proletariat to the position of ruling class, to win the battle of democracy.

The proletariat will use its political supremacy to wrest, by degrees, all capital from the bourgeoisie, to centralize all instruments of production in the hands of the state, i.e., of the proletariat organized as the ruling class, and to increase the total of productive forces as rapidly as possible.

Of course, in the beginning, this cannot be effected except by means of despotic inroads in the rights of property.....

These measures will of course be different in different countries.

Nevertheless, in the most advanced countries, the following will be pretty generally applicable:

- 1) Abolition of property in land and application of all rents of land to public purposes.
- 2) A heavy progressive or graduated income tax.
- 3) Abolition of all rights of inheritance.
- 4) Confiscation of the property of all emigrants and rebels.
- 5) Centralization of credit in the hands of the state, by means of a national bank...
- 6) Centralization of the means of communication and transport in the hands of the state.....
- 7) 10.) Free education for all the children in public schools. [*The Communist Manifesto, A Modern Edition*, by Karl Marx and Frederick Engels, © 1998 Verso, Verso, UK: 6 Meard Street, London W1V 3HR, ISBN 1085984-898-2, pp. 60-61.]

If these items of this Communist Manifesto seems strangely familiar, they should. It has been implemented here in the United States “by degrees” for the past 100 years. The Clinton’s are the graduates of this Marxist school of thought, and Ms. Clinton’s book “*It Takes a Village*” stems directly from this blueprint, as do most Feminist doctrines. If you look at the modern feminist movement, what you will document and trace is the burgeoning Soviet socialist order within the United States. When you research the origins of feminism or the present-day Matriarch’s of feminism, all of them are, and have been, both in the past and in the present: Socialists and Anarchists.

## CHAPTER ONE

Historically, societies which were Patriarchal, collapsed only when they atrophied into Ms. Clinton's "Village" Matriarchies. As noted historians Will and Ariel Durant stated in their book *Caesar and Christ*:

"A great civilization is not conquered from without until it is destroyed from within. The essential causes of Rome's decline lay in her people, her morals, her class struggles, her failing trade, her bureaucratic despotism, her stifling taxes, her consuming wars. [*Caesar and Christ*, [1944] epilogue, by Will Durant..]

Again, if this sounds familiar, it is exactly due to the same reasons in which overcame Rome nearly 2,000 years ago. You can catalogue every one of Durant's documented observations and apply them to modern America. We only have to then collate the applicable reasons for this devolution and identify the incipient cause.

Our law, which is an expression of the collective regulations of many Western societies, most importantly England; politically, created something quite new, yet it still relied solidly upon the well established doctrines and maxims of law for millenium which *only* favored Patriarchy.

During the first one hundred or so years of American history, a father was, by law and in practice, both head of the family and his children's primary caregiver. Fathers were actively involved in every aspect of their children's growth, education, development, and well-being. Fathers taught life skills, both through formal instruction and by example. Fathers decided who their children would marry and managed their children's entry into the world outside the home. The United States was a patriarchy, and when divorce occurred, courts almost always awarded full custody of the children to fathers. [Fathers' Rights, Hard-Hitting & Fair Advice for Every Father Involved in a Custody Dispute, by Jeffery M. Leving, c1997; BasicBooks, 10 East 53rd Street, New York, NY 10022-5299, ISBN 0-465-02443-2; p. 27.]

This is not only just seen by through the analysis of the common law, which the American Law under the first, fifth, sixth, seventh and ninth Amendment's guarantees, it is also shown through the structure of Judge made law, through the maxim's of law, common law, and through the Founding Fathers themselves: not to mention Western Civilization. A list of the Maxims of law shown in Appendix C shows, over and over this tendency for societies, even under Roman Civil Law, which is the law most favored by contemporary defacto governments, to favor Patriarchy over Matriarchy. In fact, our law only provides for Patriarchy, as it is the support of this institution that provides society with the greatest benefits of success, both economic and social. It is also the structure which best protects individuals and families. Indeed—when you speak of law in

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Western Civilization: you are speaking of familial interactions—Law is family:

"It is this patriarchal aggregate--the modern family thus cut down on one side and extended on the other--which meets us on the threshold of primitive jurisprudence. Older probably than the State, the Tribe, and the House, it left traces of itself on private law long after the House and the Tribe had been forgotten, and long after the consanguinity had ceased to be associated with the composition of States. I will be found to have stamped itself on all the great departments of jurisprudence, and may be detected, I think, as the true source of many of their most important and most durable characteristics. At the outset, the peculiarities of law in its most ancient state lead us irresistibly to the conclusion that it took precisely the same view of the family group which is taken of individual men by the systems of rights and duties now prevalent throughout Europe. There are societies open to the observation at this very moment whose laws and usage's can scarcely be explained unless they are supposed never to have emerged from this primitive condition; but in communities more fortunately circumstanced the fabric of jurisprudence fell gradually to pieces, and if we carefully observe the disintegration we shall perceive that it took place principally in those portions of each system which were most deeply affected by the primitive conception of the family. [*Ancient Law, Its Connection with the Early History of Society and its Relation to Modern Ideas*, by Sir Henry Sumner Maine, first published in 1861, Dorset Press, a division of Marboro Books Corporation, c1986 Dorset Press, ISBN 0-88029-092-7, pp. 110-111.]

Put in other words:

But Ancient Law, it must again be repeated, knows next to nothing of Individuals. It is concerned not with Individuals, but with Families, not with single human beings, but groups. [*Ancient Law, Its Connection with the Early History of Society and its Relation to Modern Ideas*, by Sir Henry Sumner Maine, first published in 1861, Dorset Press, a division of Marboro Books Corporation, c1986 Dorset Press, ISBN 0-88029-092-7, p. 214.]

These spillover effects were well known to ancient societies, and those societies cogently chose Patriarchy over Matriarchy because of these benefits which clearly grew from within a stable home environment. From this, they evolved at a pace never seen before in the prior quarter million years of mans stagnation, which was held under the Feminist "Village" system of tribalism.

Our common law, which stems from the roots of English law, trace its way through the Magna Charta right back to our Christian roots of the bible all the way to Roman, Greek, Assyrian and Sumarian law. The



## CHAPTER ONE

common law is in fact the “unwritten law, the law of great antiquity that lives in the hearts and minds of men everywhere.”

“Reason is the life of the law; nay, the common law itself is nothing but reason...The Law, which is [the] perfection of reason. [*First Institute*, by Sir Edward Coke, 1552-1634.]

“There is a written and an unwritten law. The one by which we regulate our constitutions in our cities, is the written law; that which arises from custom is the unwritten law.” [Diogenes *Laertius*, fl. c. 200.]

In analyzing these ancient roots from the common law to the Bible, there is a substantial declination to favor only the Father as the sole head of the household and owner and protector of his wife and children. Again, this was not done out of dominance, but rather, it was a logical expression of a societies need to favor Patriarchy in which to assure both the economic success and social stability and growth of the society, which it in fact, did—very well. There was a clear recognition, that when you have strong families, you have a strong society. Presently, in the new Matriarchal archetype, the Government is insistent on developing weak families, of men women and especially children whom need government help: programs, grants and subsidies—so that this nation becomes a nation of weak families, ruled over by a strong, overwhelming, omniscient government, which will provide for all their needs: “from cradle to grave.” . In fact, it has been said, out of all systems, the Patriarchal system under the law while clearly favoring the father and imbuing him with most of the legal rights (and responsibilities) of his home and family, is clearly the most fair system under the law, (we will come back to this issue in subsequent chapters within this book and prove as such under the law). Again, this stems by the fact that the common law is the law of the highest reason. Of course, the common law is exactly what Feminist hate, and instead, they ‘created’ their mythical building out from “Equity”—another branch of law where ***no law is used***. Note what Bouvier’s Law dictionary says about equity:

**Equity.** In the early history of the law, the sense affixed to this word was exceedingly vague and uncertain...It was then asserted that equity was bounded by no certain limits or rules, and that it was alone controlled by conscience and natural justice...

3.) ....The remedies for the redress of wrongs and for the enforcement of rights, are distinguished into two classes, first, those which are administered in courts of common law; and secondly, those which are administered in **courts of equity**.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

You might consider this insipid conversation     until you look up the definition of *courts of equity*:

**Equity, Court of:** ...one which administers justice, where there are no legal rights...but [are] used when courts of law do not afford a complete remedy, and where the complainant has also an equitable right.

Now, contemporary Judges will have to convince American Fathers that they have no legal rights—when the facts are that every single human Father entering these fraudulent “Family Court” tribunals has errantly made the assumption that they were entering into Constitutional courts—“under the law.” Nothing, could ever be further from the truth. Our contemporary system of courts is nothing but a rogue syndicate of anti-law. They are special “undefined” tribunals implementing Social Re-Engineering through the vehicle of “Judicial Activism.” All this ‘Re-Engineering’ is of a social order which is in direct opposition to our laws, Western Civilization, and most importantly: the American form of Constitutional government.

Fathers must note this judicial slight-of-hand, as these courts, are taking Fathers, who by law, own 100% of their children, then; they are getting them to “appear” in front these “Courts of Equity”—“FAMILY LAW COURTS” so that they may *\*wink\*-\*wink\** ‘make things fair for the Father (and child)’. The hell these people are trying to make things fair. No! They are not!! What they are doing is forcing fathers into secret “Family Court” tribunals to unknowingly get them to silently submit to EQUITY (where there is NO LAW!). Once they have these unsuspecting Fathers in the jurisdiction of these rogue courts and “equity” get’s turned on—LAW GET’S TURNED OFF. Then they steal the 100% ownership the Father has over his child, and offer him “50-50”, and beguile the father to be happy at getting a mere 50% of what he owns 100% of in and by the law. Then, they further enslave him and force him to transfer his wealth to where they direct. Long before the father ever dies, he has to ‘volunteer’ his wealth and inheritance, or a greater part of it, to be siphoned into the courts programs and “discretion.” What is left is ruined fathers, and destroyed children, and national inflating social pathologies, which only grow, and grow....and never get solved.

The Bible, which is the root law of the American experience, and is the foundational blueprint and legal reasoning for all our common law and statutory laws (contrary to Federal, ABA, and Feminist myth’s otherwise) mandates Patriarchy for a reason. The leading legal cite for this is [cite Bible]. Again, the foundation of the legal brick building of the statutory Law under the American system of government comes from the common law which is clearly represented by the Bible. You can clearly see the lineage of this brick-work in the Common Law up to 1993 in the

## CHAPTER ONE

State California for instance; under California Civil Code sections 22.2, 7004(a) and 5101. However; under the common law, this construct is eternal, and inescapable, and cannot be changed--and yet with these underlying mandates of the law, the Judges, feminists, and Legislators illegally facilitate otherwise. What is notable to consider is, that under Muslim Law, Judaic Law and all early great civilizations such as ancient China, all imbued Patriarchy as the model in which to support in which to propagate a society towards its best interests. Now, this Feminist system is using a Sir Galahad complex in pretending to protect the woman and children, so that it can invoke it's "discretion" under these "Courts of Equity" (or "undefined" Courts), to throw law out of the courtroom, and thereby; totally annihilate and destroy the Father. This is what they have been precisely doing for the past quarter century.

Now why is Patriarchy so beneficial to the children?!? Why is it so beneficial to the society?? Well, one reason is because of the fact that it uses the right people for their natural job...it makes "sexuality" work for both the family, and for civilization. Again, going back to the establishment of Patriarchy we see a woman is subjugated and controlled by both the male and society, (more about this control and subjugation issue later). This sexual control and obedience guarantees the genetic progeny for the male who in turn supports, defends and protects "his own children." This simply means that men will know that their children are truly theirs, and they will enjoy and protect their own progeny. From that, the law again in response to the needs of society, gave legal protections under the laws of Descents and Morte Main (of which we can see that Marx and Engels above truly wanted to get rid of, and conversely, what Thomas Jefferson was severely concerned about protecting). These laws protected the wealth of the male (ergo: family) upon his death, and guaranteed that his wealth would be passed down to **his children** (or family). Conversely, it also guarantee's that the father will control his wealth, and his heritage (again, yet another disparity from the communal tribal model which Ms. Clinton desires). (This point is extremely important.) As anyone with a modicum of insight can see, it wouldn't take too long to where in a few short generations under a system of Patriarchy, you would have mankind transcend from a tribal-based static planar society to a upwardly mobile society creating the invention of cities and civilizations and progress in general! For it is the creation of **wealth** (surplus) which propagates these accouterments to any civilized society via the accumulation of great wealth. One of the greatest effects of Patriarchy was not that it controlled women, but rather; it was that it created Families and wealth—and that such surplusage stayed in the Family **by law**.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

What does modern feminism do as implemented by government though our anti-American court system? It immediately attacks the financial well-being of the father, and immediately severs contact with his own children...completely destroying him and the Patriarchal archetype instantly. Ms. Clinton and the elite's whom now infest our corridor's of power, all under the name of helping us—are implementing this procedure with a fanatical vengeance which correlates to the same fanaticism of the Nazi's of World War II. They in fact, incontrovertibly: have made “fatherhood” into one of the greatest crimes ever seen throughout human civilization. There has never been passed more laws, more intrusions, more penalties for any crime throughout civilization; than being a father, here in the United States. Again, there has been a completely new branch of law created called “Feminist Jurisprudence” to help destroy fatherhood—and it has succeeded immensely, with full government backing and coercion's.

The reigning resonating reason for Feminist Jurisprudence is to destroy the Patriarchal system. It is doing this amazingly by undermining religion, the father, and Western Law. . This is something we presently see undermined by Feminist Jurisprudence under a new pretended law. Contemporary feminism allows the Empire of “In the Best Interests of the Child” to vacuum the fathers wealth long before it is ever passed to the child. The main benefactor of Feminism is not the Children, it is in fact, government and the Feminists, whom through their socialistic Empires and Superstructures mandate a continual drain and feeding off of the Fathers wealth (and societies wealth). From this it is not the children who benefit, nor the Father or Parents, nor even society...it's the “Village”...usually headed up by Elite's such as Ms. Clinton, and company. Again, this is done all in the name of the child, whom factually loses his Father in the process and the Fathers wealth which is silently distributed and harvested by this Feminist/Socialist system. No longer are the protections of Patriarchy accorded to the Father, even though they are an American birthright accorded to males under American law.

“Nothing can destroy a government more quickly than its failure to observe its own laws, or worse: disregard the character of its own existence.” ---Supreme Court Justice Tom C. Clark [Quoted in *Foundations of Freedom: A Living History of our Bill of Rights*, by John H. Rodehamel, The Constitutional Rights Foundation, Los Angeles, ©1991, p. 97.]

Yet, the Feminist get rid of anything which demarcates the character of this nation: the Bible, our Laws, our Court system, and even our Government. They don't care because the Feminists and Government accrue huge profits from this disemboweling of the American male and Family. Not only do they gain power, but untold and unaccountable profits,

## CHAPTER ONE

which as far as we have been able to follow, go into 'Black Budget's', which is a corruption of our political regime. To date, from approximately 1960 to the present, the Feminist/Socialist/Government backed and sponsored programs have *conservatively* cost this nation 5.2 trillion dollars. Presently, our national debt is an 'advertised' 5.7 trillion dollars.

How can this happen? How can the mandate and protections of Patriarchal American Christian-based 'Common-Law' be superseded by Tribal Feminist Jurisprudence? By socialism? How can a society prefer a disjointed mythological feminist 'legal' brick building magically appearing from the ether from the second story on upwards over a magnificently constructed, methodical Patriarchal (Western Civilization) brick building stemming from the solid foundational ground of Christianity, law, and Justice?!? How can American's be so easily betrayed? How can Judges and Legislators verify and confirm this betrayal? Especially in the light that this nation was built on the foundation of natural rights?

### James Madison--Address to the States, April 25, 1783.

"Let it be remembered finally that it has ever been the pride and boast of America, that the **rights for which she contended were the rights of human nature**. By the blessing of the Author of these rights on the means exerted for their defense, they have prevailed against all opposition and form the basis of Thirteen Independent States. No instance has heretofore occurred, nor can any instance be expected hereafter to occur, in which the unadulterated forms of Republican government can pretend to so fair an opportunity of justifying themselves by their fruits. In this view, the citizens of the U.S. are responsible for the greatest trusts ever confided to a political society. If justice, good faith, honor, gratitude & all the other Qualities which enoble the character of a nation, and fulfil the ends of Government, the fruits of establishments, the cause of our liberty will acquire a dignity and lustre, which it never yet enjoyed; and an example will be set which can not but have the most favorable influence on the rights of mankind. If on the other side, our governments should be unfortunately blotted with the reverse of these Cardinal and essential Virtues, the great cause which we have engaged to vindicate, will be dishonored & betrayed; the last & fairest experiment in favor of the rights of human nature will be turned against them; and their patrons & friends exposed will be insulted and silenced by the votaries of Tyranny and Usurpation. "

By order of the United States in Congress Assembled. [*Our Sacred Honor, Words of Advice from the Founders in Stories, Letters, Poems and Speeches*, by William J. Bennett @1997, Simon and Shuster, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-84138-X; p. 322.]

Looking back from the Bible in Genesis, through the Maxims of Law that were developed 5000 years ago, we see the first legal support of Pa-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

triarchy in the Law that was the basis for this country. Indeed, these were so profoundly understood to encompass normal men, and their families and home, that they remained unquestioned and inviolate. Now, they have been encroached upon and usurped, and just as Madison predicted above, our “fairest experiment in favor of the rights of human nature” are being turned against us.

### HISTORY OF PATRIARCHY

---

Patriarchy is a biased system. It is an invention as great as that of the wheel, writing, fire, or even nuclear power; but, nonetheless, it is a biased system. Clearly, when you take the power inherent in interpersonal relations, and place it so pervasively under the authority and auspices of one individual, (the male) there is a clear unmistakable bias and skewing favoring that entity. Patriarchy is an invention of placing that authority in the individual of the family, the father; that is most genetically suited to disperse the inner mechanization's of the leadership, provider and defender roles within his own home. However; how can a system that is so inherently biased be so favored not only by Western civilization, but by families as well, especially in the American elite? The question must be posed, why did Western civilization follow the invention of Patriarchy, when clearly in the formation of mankind on the plain's of our primitive human history, Matriarchy through Tribalism was the de facto norm? Why did society gravitate to Patriarchy, when it is supposedly inherently unfair, biased and evil? Why Patriarchy when Matriarchy is “freer” and easier to devolve into?

Clearly, there was a compelling interest in societies to formulate Patriarchy over Matriarchy, and indeed; to continue Patriarchy which still exists today. **Patriarchy is an artificial invention like the wheel, like nuclear power**, is a very unnatural formulation from the gestating stasis of Matriarchy which existed before that ‘invention’ from time immemorial. The compelling interest of Patriarchy to society/civilization were several-fold.

First, was the creation of the two-parent monogamous family unit over that of the sexually promiscuous anarchy of Matriarchy. Patriarchy controlled the sexuality of the female kinship system, and held women bound to the subservient subferior position, of being controlled both sexually and socially, by the more successful male kinship system. From this superior authoritarian position, the male could be guaranteed the fidelity of the woman, which from the combined wealth of that confederation would proliferate a known progeny. This contract enabled the Father to know his children, something which matriarchy most certainly, did not guarantee. For this fidelity, the woman received many benefits: those of love, protection, of honor, of a surname giving her position and title, and

## CHAPTER ONE

the bond of a home a family. (Briffault's Law). At this instant, Matriarchy died as a tribal state of mankind was replaced by Patriarchy through recognition and protection of this system of society.

From this, society benefited.

For it was the guarantee of a man's children which motivated the man to accrue wealth, to become a 'provider' to this wife and children. This motivation stemmed not from greed but from love and devotion, something inculcated within the human species. In the Matriarchal female-kinship based model, this devotion to the children was spread out over the community, and thereby; (as we can clearly see not only in the Matriarchal model, but also the welfare-state) the intensity of that support to the female and children was spread out 'generally' and clearly, not as efficient as in the Patriarchal model, in which the male, as the protector and the provider; worked 'specifically' for his *own* family and child, and thereby, strove to succeed in which to support them. It was through this Patriarchal model that the invention of modern "Civilization" was borne because each subsequent generation did better than the last...for they 'inherited' what the Father (Family) accrued from his leadership and life. From this domino effect, wealth built up over subsequent generations, and thereby created "surplusage," something which was not developed in the Matriarchal archetype. In the Tribal condition, there were no families. When a Father died, he may not have even been recognized as the parent of his child—and upon his death; the tribe inherited what surplusage he may, or may not have accrued.

If we look at each model of Patriarchy vs. Matriarchy; society chose Patriarchy due to the success of the male providing from his family, and combining the man and woman into one cohesive union recognized as 'one' person in law. Also, through the developing Laws of Descent and Morte Main, the Father handed his wealth down to his own recognized children, whom again benefited significantly more than in the Matriarchal/Female Kinship/Socialist model. As history shows us, Patriarchy was chosen not because it was 'unfair' or that it maliciously controlled women, but rather; it was chosen because there was mainly money and profit in it, and society as a whole not only benefited, but it also grew into great civilizations and societies, something unheard of in Matriarchal "Village" archetypes. Simply put, the decision civilization made choosing Patriarchy was not one of dominance, but rather—one of economic and social efficiency and necessity. Again, it made sex work for society.

Secondly, Patriarchy was a model that imbued Liberty and Justice. Even though it was supposedly inherently a biased and unfair system, and held much power in the male he never used that power. (At least rarely, as documented throughout history.)

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

### POWER QUOTE

---

Patriarchal societies are benevolent societies. They rule as John F. Kennedy once noted “The true sense of power does not reside in those who use it, but rather in those who can use it, and don’t.” The male-kinship model offered a stability, not only in the law and rule of society, but also in the stabilizing factor that the male, who held absolute control and authority over his family instilled within each of his family members. The “Family name” and who and where you came from, established towns within societies which were very monolithic in their structure and familiarity. The rule of law and the common law were very well defined due to this cohesive effect of Patriarchy within a society. Conversely, in Female-Kinship societies this ‘binder’ of stability was missing due to the fact that the male was missing as the leader of the family unit therefore, they ‘devolved’ into the lowest and rudest common denominator of mankind: Tribalism. Under the Female Kinship model, anarchy reigned due to the fact that no-one was in charge of the family, nor could anyone be sure of who the children really were whose. This loss of ‘specific’ dedication to the children to their respective Fathers, established an inferior “Village” model, which although dedicated to the children in a Tribal sense, were dedicated to them in a ‘general’ sense, and not a specific sense that Patriarchy provided.

“To say that the male sex has been dominant in the great majority of societies ever since written records began is to ignore any personal vibrations between the sexes. But there is no way of estimating the effect of those vibrations except in the rare cases where biographical or autobiographical details survive.

In the days of the early civilizations it cannot have been great. By cultivating a way of life that legally and socially favored the male sex, the people of the ancient Near East also created a climate in which it was easy for the man to dominate. When all social forces conspired to anchor a woman to her home, to limit her acquaintance to her family, to forbid her to appear before strangers, the result was to imprison her mind as effectively as her body. As in later times, there may well have been strong – minded women who focused all their energies, their ambitions, their intensity of purpose on their husbands and children.” [*Sex in History*, by Reay Tannahill, ©1980, 1992, Scarborough House Publishers, ISBN 0-8128-8540-6, p. 60.]

Thirdly, the Patriarchal model established generational families, with history and lineage. These established a spectrum of various classes within society, and a competitive nature which strove to excellence. Tribal societies didn’t have this, at least to the precise extent which genealogy through the male line afforded them. These generational families which clearly could only be developed via Patriarchy, estab-



## CHAPTER ONE

lished not only great wealth within those families and society, but also developed a town/community/society national sense that soon lent itself to the establishment of nation-states. Family names became synonymous with you were and what you did. Families developed into working-class peer groups, and society benefited by the idea of eugenics and breeding. Alliances formed because of this. Again, this came from great families, based on the Patriarchal models, wanting to join forces of not only wealth and property, but also gene-pool prospects. And from these accomplishments within families, society clearly benefited from the prolific developments of these engineered matrimonial unions....all which would have been impossible through the Matriarchal model.

Fourthly, and probably most importantly, Patriarchy provided a man with a role within society, which directly benefited civilization. This need for a place for a man within the home and family, and society; to bind him with a suitable and proper wife, allowed young males in the society a purpose in which to groom themselves (that is keep out of trouble, learn the traits of how to function in the society to become a good provider, and to bond with a woman in marriage which would again, as a civilized influence, keep the male out of trouble.) This function in Hillary's Tribal "Village" model has all but been lost to generations of children who are stuck in this warlike "Village" model that Hillary wants for all our children. One only needs to go to the Tribal "Village" in which Hillary and her Fellow Feminist have built through the advent of the Single Female Headed Household: the inner city ghetto, (or what some social scientist now refer to as the 'superghetto'), such as Los Angeles, Detroit, Miami, and New York City—to see this sexual anarchy of this "Village" tribal model rage, unabated. Where women are clearly dominant, and superior, using men only as temporary sperm inseminators; to show how this "Village" model has impacted this society. Young males in these societies, have no role, and are not being groomed for the institution of marriage. Without any place for them in society, with a deferred future in their midst, they natural devolve into gangs and crime—again, exactly following the lowest and rudest state of the ghetto tribe. One only has to look at figure above to see a clear violent "spike" of criminality coming from children ranging in ages from 15 to approximately 25. [See Figure 1]. This of course is the age group where they most need fathers, and they are not there. If this nation could get rid of that criminal "spike," by just re-establishing Fathers within their own home again, the accrued savings would be staggering. What the role of Patriarchy one used to assemble these young adults to be groomed by discipline and education into assuming their respective roles within the Institution of Patriarchy...has now been lost generationally, with the attendant social pathology which has attended that fallow Feminist 'tribal' model. These children cannot

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

be held in check by government—but; as history recognizes—they can, and are held in check by the Father:

On a few systems of law the family organization of the earliest society has left a plain and broad mark in the life-long authority of the Father or other ancestor over the person and property of his descendants, an authority which we may conveniently call by its later roman name of Patria Potestas....The implicit obedience of rude men to their parent is doubtless a primary fact, which it would be absurd to explain away altogether by attributing to them any calculation of its advantages; but, at the same time, if it is natural in the sons to obey the father, it is equally natural that they should look to him for superior strength or superior wisdom. [*Ancient Law, Its Connection with the Early History of Society and its Relation to Modern Ideas*, by Sir Henry Sumner Maine, first published in 1861, Dorset Press, a division of Marboro Books Corporation, c1986 Dorset Press, ISBN 0-88029-092-7, pp. 111-112.]

Conversely, instead of assuming their well-defined roles within Patriarchy, our young men are being taught feminist indoctrination. Classes are taught in our schools that clearly show and allow young women to ‘beat up on the abusive male’ and pick at his eyes, kick him in the groin to either injury or cripple him. The only place the Feminists have for the male in this “Brave New World” is the subferior position to the woman, where he cannot control his own household, he cannot discipline his wife or children, he cannot have true authority within his own home. Our schools have become feminist indoctrination centers where parents are openly challenged, school girls are openly inspected vaginally for sex, abortions are encouraged, condoms and sex education and the indoctrination that a female controls her own sexuality and her own body is inculcated with a religious fervor. When boys are approached by willing high school female sexual partners who have learned these feminist lessons well, (usually the females are younger to the males as most relationships are) these young girls who want to assert their ‘right to control their own bodies’ entice these young men to engage in sex with them. Of course when they do, *only* the boys are arrested for these acts for doing essentially what the feminist tribal system taught both of them! Boys cannot prevent the sexual anarchy these pre-teen and teenage girls offer them, and more importantly, the females are expressing exactly what Hillary “Village” is teaching them...with a vengeance. Now, it has come to epidemic proportions, to where instead of women being superior, it is a fact that they are an inferior product, and unacceptable to a Western Civilized way of life.

When these young girls get pregnant, they can openly march right down to the school nurse, and without either the consent or authority of their own family or more importantly from the boy or boys family who

## CHAPTER ONE

was responsible for the pregnancy, she can abort the pregnancy with the aid and ultimate authority of this 'Parens Patriæ' state. Conversely, if she decides to have the child (against the young Boy's consent) she can then march right back up to the Welfare state and demand subsidy from the boy who doesn't want the child. She thereby is protected and he is ultimately ruined. These paradoxical amoral aberrance's are presently the absolute norm within Hillary's "Village" concept, and the staggering na-

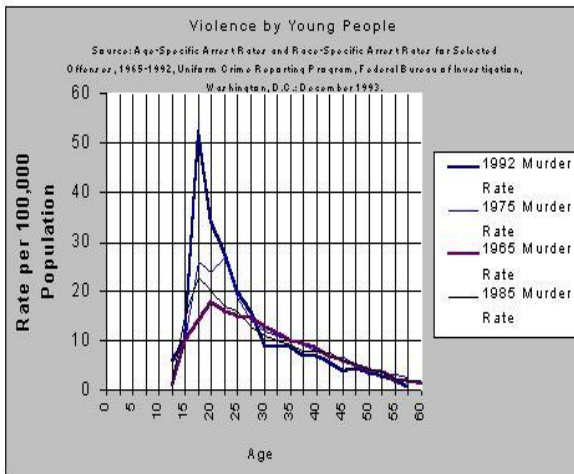


FIGURE 1- "SPIKE" CRIME CHART

This chart conclusively proves that "something" most probably fatherlessness, has exploded childhood crime rates. If this correlation is true, then re-instituting fatherhood, will most assuredly bring this "spike" down, which did not exist before the time of pre-welfare (pre-1955), and will intrinsically, be linked to the rise of the Single Female Headed Household (SFHH).

tional Crime and Welfare statistic's prove this out.

This 'lowest, rudest and most disgusting condition of man', as our Founding Fathers noted; was brought about through the imposition of the devolution by the Institution of Matriarchy, which devolved civilizations formally established as Patriarchal archetypes. Society clearly saw the benefits of Patriarchy, and due to this fact, made laws and customs that would bind the female kinship system under the control of the male kinship system, in order to assure the benefits of the most successful model: Patriarchy. Society thereby controlled not only the sexuality of the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

woman in which to accomplish this, but gave the Father purpose. To do this, he thereby had complete unfettered control over his family, which was his ‘property’, legally defined as ‘chattel’.

**CHATTELS**, property. A term which includes all kinds of property, except the freehold or things which are parcel of it. It is a more extensive term than goods or effects. Debtors taken in execution, captives, apprentices, are accounted chattels. Godol. Orph. Leg. part 3, chap. 6, 1. 2. Chattels are personal or real. Personal, are such as belong immediately to the person of a man; chattels real, are such as either appertain not immediately to the person, but to something by way of dependency, as a box with the title deeds of lands; or such as are issuing out of some real estate, as a lease of lands, or term of years, which pass like personally to the executor of the owner. Co. Litt. 118; 1 Chit. Pr. 90; 8 Vin. Ab. 296; 11 Vin. Ab. 166; 14 Vin. Ab. 109; Bac. Ab. Baron, &c. C 2; 2 Kent, Com. 278; Dane’s Ab. Index, h. t.; Com. Dig. Biens, A; Bouv. Inst. Index, h. t.

This issue of women and children being ‘property’ is greatly contested by the modern feminist movement. In fact, they immediately liken this issue as being similar in nature as to being ‘owned’ like a slave or an animal. This vexatious assumption posed by the modern feminist, although correct in label is wrong in thesis. For in reality, when the state assumes these wives and children under *it’s* doctrine of Parens Patriæ, you better believe they are in fact **property**, (ergo: chattels), under the states law and domain... The feminist however; don’t make a peep about that reality... The fact is, **that somebody owns our children**...but we now live in a society mulct at that recognition, and few are afraid to rise up—and claim what is *by law and by nature* their own legacy. Instead, they meekly mouth the state provided pabulum, that they will “take responsibility” and act “in the best interests of the child” to aid in their own destruction, to the delight of feminists and communists and elites whom continually feed off of this self denial and self-imposed destruction.

However, when the males enforce their natural rights to their own children and property, well, then *they* are viewed as being oppressive. Somehow, the more tyrannical state; is not! (When they seize and claim children in “the child’s best interests”). Of course the common law reasoning for allowing the Male to ‘own’ both his wife and children stemmed not so much from a need to control, but rather of one to protect and be responsible for his own family.. Giving the Father ‘ownership’ of both his wife and his children allowed him to legally bind his family and protect his family from unwanted intrusion or threat. Not only that: Fathers don’t need state subsidy to raise their children—and this is factually, the real threat against the modern state. Clearly, our Forefathers understood that the “Village” could not take care of people *as*

## CHAPTER ONE

*well* as Fathers and Families could take care of the village. (This concept is a proven one as Foster Homes and other State run facilities are factually and statistically the worst place you can place either child or adult into the care of, please read on). Not only this, but this ideals of property right is a foundation to the manner of controlling the female-kinship system and thereby, guaranteeing the safety and security of families. This 'protection' no longer exists in the feminist/communist/socialist 'Village' society—and we can only look to our inner cities to see the ramifications of allowing the anarchy of tribalism to reign supreme over that of Patriarchy. More importantly, this concept of property was essentially moot through the institution of marriage as the man and woman were joined as one, something many women are lamenting about and long for today. Above and beyond this, the state allowed the husband within the marriage all these benefits because of another countervailing point: that he was *responsible* for all the debts and all legal actions of his whole family. So what he enjoyed by law, was offset by matching responsibilities. CITE MAXIM Because he was so responsible for his family, he indeed, controlled it, which again benefited society. Children didn't worry about police when they broke somebody's window—they worried about going home to 'dad.' Now we have children who have devolved into tribal monsters, who are committing crimes adults find shocking—and when they face police or even Judges—they are insolent, laughing, antagonizing. There can be no doubt from this fact alone that Hillary's "Village" has been a categorical disaster. She has created children, that many of us do not even recognize anymore..."Monsters" within our midst.

In fact, under the management of Patriarchy, both the wife and child were well protected by the father, as the father assumed all legal burdens of his property (which meant if they made a mistake, *he* was responsible). However; the father could easily invoke his considerable will (i.e. 'protection') over his family and protect them from any damage that they might inadvertently come upon. This considerable protection has nowhere been seen or afforded in any other model known to man, including Ms. Clinton's "Village" model, which is a farce.

Another spill-over effect from this 'protection' of accorded to the Father could be seen documented by the safety afforded to the Family and the family's position in society. Even the lowliest of freemen could be assured that Government could not intrude upon the safety provided within the home. As William Pitt once boldly declared in the common-law:

"The poorest man may in his cottage bid defiance to all the forces of the crown. It may be [a] frail [home]—its roof may shake—the wind may blow through it—the storm may enter—the rain may enter—but the King of England cannot enter—all his force dares not cross the threshold of that

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ruined tenement!" [William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, 1708-1778, *Speech in the House of Commons* 1763, p 312.]

"For a man's house is his castle." (*Et domus sua cuique tutissimum refugium.*) [Sir Edward Coke, *Third Institute*, (1628).] p. 152

"The house of everyone is to him as his castle and fortress, as well as for his defense against injury and violence as for his repose." [Semayne's Case. 5. Report 91, Sir Edward Coke] p. 152

In fact, as Alexis De Tocqueville noted in his masterpiece *Democracy in America* "in America, a young unmarried woman may, alone and without fear, undertake a long journey." [*Democracy in America*, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York, p. 402.]. This protection which venerated both the woman and the children of a Patriarchal home, stemmed from the ability of the Father to legally 'protect' his home and property. Anyone whom but dared offend his home, woman or child of good name would not only have to meet that father in court, but very well might have to suffer imprisonment or even a personal duel! Sometimes, in recognition to the Father, communities would banish such people whom transgressed these well-defined rights of the Home and Family. A woman who was 'dared' dishonored or raped, could very-well see her attacker hung. Indeed, women and children were severely protected under the Patriarchal model of society. This, again; is no longer true under the new 'state' operated "Matriarchal" archetype.. Nor is it true that either women or children can walk our streets in safety under the new feminist tutelage of society:

"The laws of courtesy had much influence upon the development of the character of the colonial child. Everything in the community was made to tend to the preservation of relations of civility; this is plainly shown by the laws. Law suits were common for slander, scandalmongering, name calling, lying, etc....But all this rigidity tended to a preservation of peace. The child who saw a man fined for lying, who beheld another set in the stocks for calling his neighbor ill names, or repeating scandalous assertions, grew up with a definite knowledge of the wickedness and danger of lying and a wholesome regard for the proprieties of life. These sentiments may have not made him a better man, but they certainly made him a more endurable one. [*Home and Child Life in Colonial Days*, by Sirley Gubok, @1969, the Macmillan Company, Gollier-Macmillan Canada, Ltd., Lib. Cong. Cat. Card No., 69-11295; p.105.]

That responsibility was vested within the laws, and accorded to the male of each and every family and could be invoked at any time when the Father of the family, (as the legally recognized leader and protectorate of his family), felt his family (i.e. his 'property') was either dishonored or

## CHAPTER ONE

attacked outright. This investment was widely recognized and gave civilized protection to not only wives but children, but a safe community environment whom were provided with a two-edged benefit *without police or other state involvement*. The first of these was the responsibility of the wife and children, who carried the Fathers surname and had to act and behave not only lawfully, but honorably in accordance with their name and family honour. This example of good-moral character and exceptional attention to honor to ones good family name, has been all-but-lost in the Matriarchal conversion of this nation. However; during the age of Patriarchy, it was a woman's and child's responsibility to act according to their station *and their family name*, otherwise; they would suffer the vengeance of the authoritative controlling factor of the Father of the household. Loss of good name could mean economic catastrophe for a family, loss of honor, and thereby; the family in its extension of intrapersonal relationship to the community, was not only civil, but very select. This had clearly a stabilizing effect on crime, as no child ever forgot where he came from. This lesson, again; has been lost generationally to our society to societies grave safety and detriment.

Society recognized this self-regulation of the Patriarchal family, and strove to protect it, not only in the laws, but also by more sanguine accountings within the community. Society dared not cross the threshold of that sovereign household of the Father who ruled within his own home, lest *their* threshold and freedom's be violated. Government's understood, that if they crossed that sovereign threshold, then the very fabric of an ordered Patriarchal Society would dissipate. Society complicity with Patriarchy venerated the women, and protected and admonished the children who were controlled from within the Family. This was a give-and-take relationship, on the one side demanded from the home, and on the other side, mandated by society which afforded freedom and safety unprecedented in human history. Although Patriarchy was in fact an artificial creation invented my mankind, it established a structured 'natural order' between man and woman and the community. It used the natural attributes of the species and allowed those gender differences to work in favor of the home, family, men woman and children. Society and Modern Civilization grew from this symbiotic natural order. The 'invention' of Patriarchy made the complements of man and woman work in concert with each other in conjunction with society, it turned the open unbridled sexuality of man from a state of anarchy, and again; made sex work for both man and society. This 'making sex work' for both man and society, took discipline, from both the male and female partners, the children; and society as well—this was unlike the sexual freedom which Matriarchy allowed which took no discipline to implement, and thereby 'was of a lower order.'

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Again, in Matriarchal societies, these acknowledgement's towards one family name and honor has been completely lost. Presently, the "Village" concept obfuscates these lessons. From this we can see that no longer are women 'venerated' and respected; no longer are the children truly protected. What society winds up with is a tribal concept of an insouciant society, which no firm grounding or protections, just the 'general' protections allowed by the society at large (the Tribe). No longer can our women walk the streets in safety, and once a woman has been raped or a child has been violated—"society" is the main benefactor of justice, and no longer do American's enjoy the protections of the Father, the home, nor the family. Society devolves due to the raging antagonism's ingrained through insolvable paradoxes within the tribal model itself, in essence; anarchy evolves because, nobody truly has a home, nobody truly understands where he comes from or the protections of his family name and more importantly, without this foundation of family: no one truly understands the law anymore...which we have documented; stems directly from the Family. Of course, unbeknownst to us all, this anarchy is intentional, and planned, as the Socialist desire to own and control the family was demarcated long before the Feminist second wave social revolution of the 1970s when Radical Feminists began destroying this nation from within:

"In the origins of the family, private property and the state Engels refers to Patriarchy as a form of the family whose essential features were the incorporation of the bondsmen and the power vested in the Paternal head of the family. [F. Engels (1884). The origins of the family, private property and the state, in K. Marx and F. Engels, Selected Works, London, Lawrence and Wishart, 1968, p. 488.] Similarly in the Communist Manifesto Marx and Engels refer to 'The little workshop of the Patriarchal master.' Here Patriarchy is understood as a social relation of domestic production. [K. Marx and F. Engels "The Communist Manifesto" in D. McLennan (Ed.), Karl Marx: Selected Writings, Oxford University Press, 1977 p. 227.]

However, we can see that the definition of Patriarchal advanced by Marx and Engles is a limited one. Patriarchy refers to the system under pre-capitalist modes of production in which the means of production and organization of labour was owned and controlled by the head of household, rather than a more generalized system of female subordination and male domination." [*The Law of the Father, Patriarchy in the Transition from Feudalism to Capitalism*, by Marry Murray, Routledge, 11 New Fetter Lane, London, EC4p 4EE, pp. 6-7.]

We can see that Patriarchy was the main model of selection for societies seeking ascension and not devolution. Through the systematic anal-



## CHAPTER ONE

ysis of Darwin's 'natural selection' process, civilization chose the model of the Male Kinship System of Patriarchy not out of a need of control nor success or a biblical need to subjugate or 'own' the woman...it chose Patriarchy due to the factual reason that as a sustainable human construct of happiness, safety, protection and wealth...it is clearly and systematically a superior model. The "best" model. Any society which implement's it, clearly and historically is destined to succeed and prosper. Prosperity, protection and stabilization are the main components that mandate the use of the Patriarchal model over any other competing model in a modern structured society. This factor is the reason why America was a Patriarchal society. The founding fathers researched many societies in their dissertations in creating the American civilization, one need only to read the Federalist and Anti-federalist Papers to understand that they had a solid understanding of the history of mankind and our history. They settled on Patriarchy, not only as adherence to a Christian mandate, but also as an empirical model of success. For in the ordered structure of Patriarchy is ingrained the tenets of Freedom, Liberty and Justice. Sigmund Freud also understood the implications of Patriarchy:

"Mitchell goes on to argue that such a reading of the Levi-Strauss is consistent with Freud's definition of culture as Patriarchal. Freud's work is seen as a analysis of Patriarchal society, not a recommendation for one—as culture is seen as predicated on the symbolic exchange of women by men. Mitchell argues that for Freud the Oedipal moment signifies the entry of man into culture, into everything that made him human." [*The Law of the Father, Patriarchy in the Transition from Feudalism to Capitalism*, by Marry Murray, Routledge, 11 New Fetter Lane, London, EC4p 4EE, p. 10.]

They all recognized that Patriarchy took discipline, gave everyone responsibilities and benefits, and allowed the Family the greatest freedom to pursue the blessings of Liberty which this our civilization strove, and fought for, and most importantly, which made man 'human.'

### DISPARATE REALITIES OF THE TWO MODELS

---

What we are establishing here, and what the main thesis of this book is all about; is the fact that between the two models of Matriarchy and Patriarchy, each factually align themselves to disparate political domain's. Patriarchy is the culmination of the fruition of the American Model of Governance, and clearly; our history, religion and laws stem from the common law reality of the Sovereignty of individual rights and that of the Parent, home and Family. There can be no dispute that the nuclear family is the invention of Patriarchy. Without the Father (the weakest link of the Family) there is no family for immediately the family

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

devolves into its association to a state of “animals and slaves” as the maxim of law predicates above, ergo: Matriarchy: the Single Female Headed Household. The main drive-engine for tribalism for the new welfare state.

Matriarchy on the other hand, aligns itself with Socialism or Communistic rules of law and coercion, in fact; it is the succinct extrapolation of Marxism. First, one need not only look to the formulative effect of Feminism upon the American society, one only has to look at its inception, which was clearly from Socialist/Anarchist/Communistic roots. Look at the women who built the house of Modern Feminism:

“...Ellen Wilkinson,...had served her political apprenticeship in the feminist and peace movements, and in the communist party..” [pp. 123 A Century of Women.]

“Anna Louise Strong doctor in philosophy, campaigner for child welfare and socialist party member, appeared to be the epitome of radical progressivism...(she) found herself facing empty tables at the American Unions against militarism: ‘The respectable members were returning to war work. The President’s of the Women’s Club’s were “swinging behind the President.” Only a handful of socialists, anarchists and industrial workers of the World—“Wobblies”—remained. [pp. 91 A Century of Women.]

“Cristal Eastman in contrast, challenged the political mainstream as a socialist-feminist. [p. 97 A Century of Women.]

“Socialists and Anarchist who continued in opposition were severely persecuted, when Emma Goldman organized a No-Conscription League, the government arrested every young man attending the meeting.” [p. 100 A Century of Women.]

“...In Europe (Margaret Sanger) researched the history and practice of birth-control, meeting writers on sex psychology like Edward Carpenter and Havelock Ellis, with whom she had a love affair. She also made friends with anarchists and socialist advocates of birth control Rose Witlop, her companion Guy Aldred and Stella Browne. Havelock Ellis was however, to convince her that the cause of sexual reform would be best served by separating it from the left.

Sanger’s supporters in the United States tended to be linked to the Socialist Party, the Industrial Workers of the World or Anarchist circles.” [p. 111 A Century of Women.]

“The Socialist-Feminist Journalist and agitator Agnes Smedley, for example, was arrested in April 1918 because of her support for Indian Nationalist as well as birth control, bringing Margaret Sanger to her defense.” [p. 112 A Century of Women.]

## CHAPTER ONE

"In 1922...the Anarchist Rose Witcop and her companion Guy Witcop...[along] with these Socialist and anarchist women gained support not only from women who were anxious to leave their families, but also from radicals committed to sexual liberation. For example, Harry Wicks describes his autobiography, *Keeping My Head*, how birth control and free love were part of the Battersea Socialist movement, along with vivisection and vaccination." [p. 140 *A Century of Women*.]

"Egalitarian in theory if not in practice, the party attracted numerous women like Dorothy Healey. Healey joined the Young Communist League (YCL) in 1928 at age fourteen and went on to serve as the leader of the Los Angeles district Communist party for over twenty years." [*Second to None, Vol II*, by Ruth Barnes Moynihan and Cynthia Russett © 1993 The University of Nebraska Press, ISBN 0-8032-3166-0, p. 189.]

"From the vantage point of an African-American feminist, with revolutionary aspiration toward socialism that refuse to go away." [*Malcolm X, In Our Own Image* Joe Wood, Editor, ©1992, St. Martin's Press, Inc., 175 Fifth Avenue, New York, NY 10010, ISBN 0-312-06609-0, p. 41.]

...The girls became the world's first lady stockbrokers and, when that palled, proprietors of the *Wesley* newspaper that was first to publish Marx's *Communist Manifesto* in the United States. [*SEX IN HISTORY*, by Reay Tannahill, ©1980, 1992, Scarborough House/ Publishers; ISBN 0-8128-8540-6; p. 397.]

The late Eleanor Leacock was an anthropologist and feminist who published claims of societies that were supposedly "Egalitarian," in regard both to wealth, and to sex. Her writings display a strong Marxist bent. She wrote a long and admiring introduction for her new edition of Engels' *The Origin of the Family, Private Property, and the State*, which was published by International House Publishers (New York, 1972), the publishing arm of the Communist Party of the USA. [Deceptions of a 'Gender Equal Society': Eleanor Leacock's Depiction of the 17th-Century Montagnais-Naskapi by Robert Sheaffer, June, 1993]

In a new book, "Betty Friedan and the Making of the Feminine Mystique", Smith College professor Daniel Horowitz (no relation) establishes beyond doubt that the woman who has always presented herself as a typical suburban housewife until she began work on her groundbreaking book was in fact nothing of the kind.

In fact, under her maiden name, Betty Goldstein, she was a political activist and professional propagandist for the Communist left for a quarter of a century before the publication of "The Feminist Mystique" launched the modern women's movement.

Professor Horowitz documents that Friedan was from her college days, and until her mid-30s, a Stalinist Marxist, the political intimate of the leaders of America's Cold War fifth column and for a time even the lover

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

of a young Communist physicist working on atomic bomb projects in Berkeley's radiation lab with J. Robert Oppenheimer.

...Her husband, Carl, also a leftist, once complained that his wife "was in the world during the whole marriage," had a full-time maid and "seldom was a wife and a mother". [From: Betty Friedan's secret Communist past Why has this feminist icon continued to cover up her years as a party activist? [By David Horowitz, SALON magazine, Jan. 18, 1999 ]

These Socialist roots are now the causal impetus to enforce government sponsored Matriarchy upon the Landscape of America. This in effect, is the expropriation of the American system of governance and replacing it with Socialism, all under the guise of "The Best Interests of the Child" via enforced altruism. The "Village". Exactly as Bastiat warned. The Democratic Party, is in fact, through it's own actions and political platform; the Communist Party of the United States.

What most men do not know, and most American's are totally unaware of, is that this system is being used to harvest not only Fathers, but the American system of government as well. And attack on a Father is in essence an attack upon America. Those who believe in Patriarchy: God, County, Mom and Apple Pie and the American way of life are planned to be eradicated by military courts (via our Military Court or "Equity" Court System which has replaced peace-time civilian "Law" courts) "Village" model of socialism which cannot exist while the father rules within the home. This is one reason why being a Father has become one of the greatest crimes that anyone can commit in this society with the most sweeping penalties in any society throughout human history. For if Matriarchy and Feminism cannot conquer the home by using 'broad' sweeping criteria for abuse and other crimes, then; Socialism cannot be implemented within the United States:

"In times of profound and overwhelming social change like the present, however, extreme view hold out the appeal of the simplicity. By ignoring the complexity of the forces that share our personal and collective circumstances, they offer us scapegoats. Yet, they fail to provide a viable pathway from the cold war to the Global Village [Read: New World Order, ergo Socialism. RLCII]

At present, the extreme anti-government position is the noisiest one—or at least the one that gets the most attention from the media. There are few people are arguing for more government. Instead, the public debate is primarily between those who argue for much less government, period. And those who advocate a smaller, less bureaucratic, but still active government to meet the demands for the information age. Anti-Government rhetoric appears to offer a vision of greater efficiency, self reliance, and personal freedom. Unfortunately, this rhetoric ignores what has historically been mostly valuable about our skepticism toward government—the emphasis it places on personal responsibility from all citi-

## CHAPTER ONE

zens. [Read: Everyone must support big government via Socialism.RLCII]

"We must ask ourselves: Who benefits from the elimination of Federal Regulations that protect us from outbreaks of contaminated drinking water or cases of tainted meat? Who Benefits from a decrease in Federal Pollution Standards, or from the kind of massive deregulation that could allow companies to dump toxins into our nations oceans, rivers, and lakes? Certainly, not our Families or our children." [It Takes a Village p. 308]

Indeed Ms. Clinton...who does benefit?? It positively is neither Families, Fathers or Children under the present draconian "Village" system...presently; American Families are undergoing stresses and economic and social pressures never seen before throughout history—short of outright war and conflagration. The American Family via the direct attack against the Father, is ripping apart at the seams. Children have never done worse as they have now, with each year, government and the media shrilly extolling the eternal problems of our youth...yet as literally trillions of dollars get collected to "solve" this problem, the problem only worsens.

This passage eminently shows that government intervention into the Family is Big Business. As you read Ms. Rodham-Clinton's expose here you can see the classic switch and bait, of which Feminism is famous for. First, Ms. Clinton talks about social issues and the crisis she develops through laws, which she and those like her want Government to intrude into and monopolize. Secondly, create the bogeyman, the bad guy. (This is the Father in contemporary society, it was the Jew in WWII in Nazi Germany, it was the Black in the Antebellum south). Thirdly, discount the crisis, and switch the issue; she does this masterfully here by asking: "Who benefits from the elimination of Federal Regulation?"

Clearly American Citizen's and Families do!! Yet the crisis she pretends to in the first instance have a direct causal relationship with government accruing huge economic benefits and power! Upon analysis of these paragraphs, we can see that Ms. Rodham-Clinton is relying upon the thesis that American's want a New World order, otherwise Masked as the Global Village. Ergo: "Village" being the socialist village that we all are grouped to. Secondly, we can see her create a bogeyman, the nebulous and malicious extreme Anti-Government Right Wing. This ploy is used to disassociate the reader from his or her common sense so that any reader would intellectually be revolted from the 'radical' Anti-Government movement (a movement which, incidentally; has been unmercifully bastardized in the mainstream media and labeled as "angry white men"), then of course she closes with a Mutilated Beugar argument, thereby creating a panoply of altruistic "causes" that are openly and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

arrogantly used by Socialists in which to usurp American Constitutional and Natural born rights. (Again, what Bastiat warned us of). She cites the most egregious examples of pollution and pestilence's known to man—to whence—she again, closes the argument right at the Feminists ground-zero for all their reasoning: "...Our families or our children."

Quick: What does Families and children have to do with Social change, the Cold War or the Global Village? This argument is three times removed from the real intent of what is really being discussed here, and this is the issue of this book. Most men don't even understand what is happening to them, because they think its about something they've done...it isn't. This is about two political systems, one communist, one American. Only one will win here.

What is happening not only in America but around the world is an attempt to impose the "Village" of Ms. Clinton upon the face of anything they do. This is why all Government's argument's lead to the family. On the one hand they state that under our system of Government, that we are Individuals, that we live in Freedom, that we have untold liberties. They then pass a mass of laws which no society can live with, so many and covering such a range of issues that in fact make everything illegal. However; the myth, of any family sovereignty or that, more importantly; a man's home is his castle, is quickly wasted away upon the slightest provocation or event. Upon this reality, there is an empire of laws, officers, Agents, Code Enforcement Officers, Assistant DA's, Councilors, Psychologists, County Counsels, United States Marshall's, FBI Agents, CPS and Social workers, etc., etc., ad infinitum, ad nauseum, all there to eternally: **manage the 'problem'** which they keep creating. These American Socialist systems have never solved any problem—they just eternally manage them.

"I think I have observed that integrity in the conduct of both the living and the dead takes a stronger hold of the human heart than any other virtue. It is placed before mercy by the name of Justice in the Scriptures, and Just Men are in may parts of the inspired writings placed upon very high ground. It is right is should be so. The world stands in more need of Justice than charity, and indeed, it is the want of Justice that renders charity everywhere, so necessary." [*Our Sacred Honor, Words of Advice from the Founders in Stories, Letters, Poems and Speeches*, by William J. Bennett ©1997, Simon & Schuster, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-84d138-X; p. 313.]

What we see here, by Ms. Rodham-Clinton's own hand, is the classic mind of the Socialist, which was classically exposed by Bastiat in his Treatise: The Law. That is to create any conflict, then as a facade, to hold up the weakest and most helpless among us as those willing to deserve

## CHAPTER ONE

charity. Invariably, this always markets the Family, and most certainly; our children. The Family is *incredibly* Big Business, accruing on the order of 1.2 Trillion dollars a year in pure unadulterated profit for government. More importantly, it is and has been used as the vehicle for the Socialists of this nation, including the Clinton's and those of their ilk, to impose massive laws and economic impositions against our society. To put it bluntly, our society is being held hostage just as the family and father are being held hostage. They are using our women and children as a shield to get into our own homes. Wives, girlfriends, children and family are also being used as a shield for usurpation of the American system of government to impose the autocratic Socialist "Village" form of government that Hillary and her fellow Elite regime demand from us.

Frankly, Ms. Rodham-Clinton could care less about you or your children. She and those corrupt misfit's like her do care however, about the Global Village, and about those corridor's of power they tend and groom in which to meet their own agenda. They care about themselves and their ideals—which incidentally—are directly Anti-American. Ask Ms. Clinton her multiculturalist elite if smoking will be a crime in the future, and they will answer: "It might." Yet, ask them how this squares with the countervailing principles of law and foundational Constitutional doctrine, and you will find them surprisingly mulct. These same exact concepts are being implemented to create laws which make everything illegal, especially those which might occur in the home—which according to our foundational laws and precepts, government is not supposed to 'dare' intrude.

In reality, the agenda of America is to be a system of governance by and for the Individual. It is supposed to be an experiment in freedom. Presently; every American is directly and succinctly under attack by the secret systems being used against them to steal their money, to usurp their own individual power and authority; and more importantly; to slowly implement "something else" all under the guise of "Law and Order" and "The American Way." These newly created laws, of which there are thousands of them created from thin air each year by State Legislatures, and the Federal Government, (not even considering the hundreds of thousands of rules, practices, policies and procedures of government Administrative Agencies), are in fact, making 'everything' against the law. Unfortunately; the greatest crime of these all: is simply Fatherhood. These range of laws are no longer there to protect "We the People" but, sadly; they are there for more scurrilous reasons. An eloquent quote from Bertold Brecht sadly enunciates the present reasons for this malefarian operations by our new ruling elite whom are so intent on changing the basic tenets and laws of our nation:

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

“The law is simply and solely made for the exploitation of those who do not understand it or of those, who out of naked need, cannot obey it.”

This fact remains: either one of the two competing system's of Matriarchy and Patriarchy will win out within any society, for they both represent countervailing precepts of Government that are antithetical to each other. Like matter, they cannot occupy the same space together.

It is widely believed that politics and economics are separate and largely unconnected; that materiel welfare and economic problem, and that any kind of political arrangements can be combined with any kind of economic arrangements. The chief contemporary manifestation of this idea is the advocacy of “Democratic Socialism” by many who condemn out of hand the restrictions on individual freedom imposed by “Totalitarian Socialism” in Russia and who are persuaded that it is possible for a country to adopt the essential features of Russian economic arrangements and yet to ensure individual freedom through political arrangements. The thesis of this chapter is that such a view is a delusion, that there is an intimate connection between economics and politics, that only certain combinations of political and economic arrangements are possible, that in particular, a society that is socialist cannot also be democratic, in the sense of guaranteeing individual freedom. [*Capitalism and Freedom*, by Milton Freedman, ©1962; University Chicago Press, p. 7]

Under the constraints of Feminism and Matriarchy, neither can the nuclear two-parent American family or Hillary Clinton's “Redesign of Humanity” occupy the same space together. Hillary's ideal for America and the American Constitutional premise of America are two completely disparate realities. If in fact, Feminism win's out, it will in fact mean the destruction of Patriarchy and the American form of governance. This in turn will be the destruction of the Father. In turn, this will mean the destruction of the nuclear, two-parent family. And finally, this will most certainly, aid in the destruction of our children and will admit the devolution to this or any society which embraces such feminist convention.

This of course is in direct opposition to this nation's formative foundational doctrines. When John Winthrop sailed over leading the Puritans in 1602, he gave a vision as to what was to become the American dream:

....”The Puritans envisaged a society that would be composed not of individuals, but of Families. Therefore, women and children were present from the outset, as they had not been in Virginia. In [John] Winthrop, the men and women who founded Massachusetts had a leader of extraordinary talent and intelligence, one who participated in every detail of social, political, and religious life. A man of deep and unwavering conviction, Winthrop laid out his conception of society even before the settlers had landed.



## CHAPTER ONE

In his justly renowned lay sermon, *A Model of Christian Charity*, delivered aboard Arbella as the Puritans were about to disembark, Winthrop argued that the Puritans had come to America on a special mission under a covenant with God. In order to satisfy the terms of the Covenant, the settlers would have to “be knit together in this work as one man....always having before our eyes our commission and community in the work, our community as members of the same body.” If the colonist kept their bargain, Winthrop said, God would keep His and would protect them and ensure their prosperity. He went on to warn his fellow settlers to “consider that we shall be as a city upon a hill, the eyes of all people are upon us.” [*The American People, A History*, Arthur S. Link, ©1981, AHM Publishing Corp., 3110 N. Arlington Heights Road, Ill. 60004, ISBN 0-88295-804-6; p. 50.]

Clearly, modern feminism shares no part of this dream as their doctrines and outright hatred is factually directly against these very things with which Winthrop and other Founding Fathers established and inculcated within this nation. The only problem with this is, that presently our nation's government also has taken up this hatred against these foundational precepts, and along with the feminists, is proactively attempting to destroy, and eradicate these bedrock principles of American governance. These principles were quickly recognized as an asset to the human condition, and the world if not humanity itself, exactly as Winthrop presaged, did indeed take notice.

“The Americans had the chances of birth in their favor, and their forefathers imported that equality of conditions into the country whence the democratic republic had very naturally taken its rise. Nor was this all they did; for besides this republican condition of society, the early settlers bequeathed to their descendants those customs, manners, and opinions which contribute most to the success of a republican form of government. When I reflect upon the consequences of this primary circumstance, methinks I see the destiny of America embodied in the first Puritan who landed on those shores, just as the human race was represented by the first man.” [*Democracy in America*, by Alexis De Tocqueville, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York, Inc., p. 185.]

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER TWO

---

*"No man can struggle with advantage against the spirit of his age and country, and however powerful a man may be, it is hard for him to make his contemporaries share feelings and ideas which run counter to the general run of their hopes and desires."* [Alexis De Tocqueville—Democracy in America]

### INFUSION OF MYTHOLOGY AGAINST PATRIARCHAL SYSTEMS

---

There is a malevolent obfuscation and outright arrogance against this nation's freedom's being applied by an out-of-control government which is intruding and manipulating the complete body of American's lives. There can no arguing about this fact in the modern American experience. Most people are now afraid of their government, and in fact; outright fear it. The restrictions placed upon government by a Constitution are but a mere remembrance....no longer does government know or understand any enumerated 'restraints.' Its power has become absolute. This is a recently developed contemporary fact that many American's presently suffer through, *especially* fathers. Consider this letter as documented from within *just one* American Industry and *their fears* of American government:

"As you know, the real issue more so than the price per thousand cubic feet is the continuation of the First Amendment of the Constitution, the guarantee of freedom of speech. With increasing relation, as big brother looks closer over our shoulder, we grow timid against speaking out for truth and our beliefs against falsehoods and wrong doings. Fear of IRS audits, bureaucratic strangulation or governmental harassment is a powerful weapon against freedom of speech.

In October 31 [1977] edition of the U.S. News & World Report, the Washington Whispers section noted that, "Oil industry officials claim that they have received this ultimatum from Energy Secretary James Schlesinger: 'Support the Administration's proposed tax on crude oil—or else face tougher regulation and a possible drive to break up the oil companies.'"

His judgment is amply confirmed by the public behavior of oil officials. Tongue-lashed by Senator Henry Jackson for earning "obscene profits," not a single member of a group of oil industry executives answered back, or even left the room and refused to submit to further personal abuse." [Free To Choose, A Personal Statement, by Milton Friedman, ©1980, Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, Inc., 737 Third Ave., New York, NY 10017, ISBN 0-15-133481-1, p. 67-68.]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

What omniscient powers Industry and business fears, such absolute totalitarian dictatorship with absolute authority is extrapolated one-hundred fold against Fathers who do not even begin to have the power or resources to combat such unwanted injustices or intrusions by Government. We must examine the fundamental reasons of how this came to be. Clearly, the unrestrained growth of government and the break-up of the American family are not only closely related: they have also a causal relationship intertwined within the modern workings of our Society. In examining this relationship, we must analyze what the qualitative products are between a Matriarchal Society and a Patriarchal one as we related in the last chapter.

Matriarchal Societies are feminist in nature, based off the Female Kinship system, and suffer no regulation of the woman. It is a state, of sexual anarchy. It is a communal Socialist society where 'all share' and property rights are loosely defined. Where Patriarchy makes sex work for the society, Matriarchy imposes total freedom for the woman with no concurrent responsibility. In fact, the Matriarchal system imposes unjust manipulative ways in which to control the males within the population, as normally; males cannot be controlled by females due to the fact that males are bigger and stronger than their weaker counterpart. [Matriarchy as was established at the dawn of man was a system of stasis, with inherent sexual anarchy, a natural system of stagnation and disorder within the "natural" human condition. Otherwise identified as tribalism.] Females thereby use more surreptitious ways, social-collective in design in which to subjugate and control the male. In the modern American Society, this is done via both Government and through the Courts through Feminist Jurisprudence. Matriarchy is simply a model which cannot work without socialism. What we are saying here is that Matriarchy can never work without SUBSIDY and subsidy can only come through burdening the collective society. It is the expression of socialism that creates the reason for altruism (subsidy). This in turn gives Matriarchy it's cause and by this, gains control and power, via the sophistry of 'equality.'

In the early history of man, Matriarchy was the original condition of mankind due to the fact that we gestated from the ape. Man is the fertilization of the great Apes. So Matriarchy was the initial state for mankind, as mankind had no sense of civilization. This 'lowest order' of mankind ruled for on the order of a quarter of a million years. It is a scientific fact, that apes—have not risen from their matriarchal state, that they have not created science, art, literature, that they have in fact, been exactly in the same social and technological state for eons. Mankind, was essentially the same way.

One misgiving of Matriarchy is that it takes the physically inferior woman then through the application of the equality dogma, empowers the

## CHAPTER TWO

Matriarchal Model through coercion through the tribe. Conversely, the Patriarchal Model is implemented through contract and social regulation—the resultant benefits of the family order being the impetus for such regulation. In this model, the woman ‘chooses’ to voluntarily bind herself to the man, and from that mutual contract, both she and the male benefit—as they become one. This is the regulated application of Briffault’s law. ***“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.”*** In the Patriarchal model therefore, the female voluntarily selects the best male, who concurrently has been grooming himself to be an attractive provider for the woman, the “best” provider in fact. From this an ‘association’ takes place, the best male provider, gets selected by his female counterpart—and from the female acquiring his benefit of security, safety and production; she gives him the best genetic expression of her body in children; and thereby a transactional application of Briffault’s Law takes place. He gets the knowledge that all children procreated from this union are his, and she gets the best protection and provider who will keep her comfortable and safe.

Within a Matriarchy however, it’s different. Sexual anarchy reigns. The tribe procreates randomly. The worst provider has as much probability of procreating as the most avid and expert hunter. When the children come out—nobody has any idea who is the Father, so—the tribe ‘generally’ takes care of them. In a Patriarchy, you better believe the father, knowing the children are his, provides for them specifically—and not only that—he provides for them in the best way he can. Those children get the best of what he can gain in surplus. This does not happen in the tribal model, nor does it happen within our modern social institutions such as Old Age Homes, Halfway houses, Shelters, or most importantly: Foster Care for children.

In a modern Matriarchy, it is only through base coercion that woman gains superiority through State Applied privilege as the male and female remain separate, disparate entities. From this, there is no social order, the only benefit is anarchy and devolution. The one most responsible in the Matriarchal model for proliferating (sexual freedom or ‘anarchy’ of the Female who now “controls” her own sexuality) is not held up to any standards, nor is she responsible for any of her sexual acts: the male is. In Patriarchy, the male is also held responsible for the creation of a child and his sexual acts, *however*, society grants him certain rights concomitant with that responsibility. Indeed, one may look at this conundrum and recognize that in either of the two models, the woman is either choosing to marry the man, or the government. She cannot however marry both. She either is free sexually and has sexual anarchy, and when she

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

breeds the state, (or “Tribe” or “Village”) become responsible to ‘generally’ raise the child by government subsidy. In a Patriarchy, the male assumes the responsibility, and takes in the child to his home, he and his wife become one, and the family becomes a viable, sealed economic unit with the children cared for ‘specifically.’

This idea of the woman having to choose between either man or the government to marry is a direct extrapolation of Briffaults law. She will marry or bind herself to whatever ‘providers’ for her the best. With the attack upon the American male, and the concurrent attack on our economy and massive debt with a negative individual American savings-rate—has established an economic climate to where many of the lower, social order females (especially those whom have created our black and lower income inner-city “super-ghettos”) have clearly chosen the state over the male counterpart.

Instead of the State following the precepts of Western Civilization and giving the child to the father in order to keep divorce rates low, and to keep families together, it ‘enjoins’ in the sexual anarchy by not only supporting it, but economically providing for it thereby splitting the bond between the father and his family and more importantly: his children. The Father is then at a state of affairs to where he has to fight for his own children—to where under law—they ‘should’ be given to him. Instead, the state converts law into anti-law, and gains directly upon the man and woman trying to split their own children. The resulting fraud is best explained by the common law theory handed down from Lord Coke:

### Trying to split children

Here be two maxims of the common law. First, that no man can hold one and the same land immediately of two severall lords. Secondly, that one man cannot of the same land be both lord and tenant. And it is to be observed, that it is holden for an inconvenience, that any of the maxims of the law should be broken, though a private man suffer losse; for that by infringing of a maxime, not onely a generall prejudice to many, but in the end a publike incertainty and confusion to all would follow. Section 152b. [Maxim’s of Lord Coke]

Matriarchy is a system of lies and deceptions. Of ‘confusion’ as Lord Coke notes. It has to be. For in order to pretend that two people each own exactly 50% percent of a child, you have to defraud one in order for the other to enjoy its ownership. Though it is well recognized maxim that two people ‘really’ can’t own the same child (or land), this dichromatic fantasy exists in modern law in order to force this illogic upon the parents, in which to allow the ‘real’ distinction between lord and tenant, so that the male will be forced to accept Matriarchy (whereby the State be-

## CHAPTER TWO

comes the real parent to the child under the “Best Interests” doctrine via *Parens Patriæ*). Under this illogical conundrum of “Joint Custody” (which the State loves and eminently profits from), the ‘real’ lord is established within the home from this anarchy is the State, or the one who arbitrates and controls this issue under color of law and under color of Justice. What we are logically proving here is that the legal thesis alone of 50/50 Joint Custody—is a lie. Can’t happen in the domain of law as Lord Coke notes above. And it most certainly doesn’t exist within people’s realities. Thereby, the courts are knowingly propagating an outright fraud that, in accordance with their own maxims—is an impossible legal condition. Through Matriarchy the male has to be either conditioned or forced to submit to an inferior and weaker species, a weaker logic, and a weaker master: the state—who now truly rules his home. In this regard it is the inferior system, due to the fact that it takes the stronger of the species and relegates him to and subferior position of inferiority, and gives him no place within the home, nor within society; even though through strength, moral, endurance, intelligence, and his natural station, he is clearly the proper agent within a society to rule within the home. Reluctantly, even the feminists are beginning to recognize this sober conclusion:

A man is important for both boys and girls. Both will benefit from having been loved by a man as well as a woman. However, a boy needs a relationship with a man in order to have a role model for masculine identification, whereas a girl need it for the experience of loving and being loved by a man...

Despite my erroneous conviction prior to being a mother that almost all gender stereotypes were created rather than inborn, I saw clearly on how much my son needed a kind of roughhousing in play, something that was totally alien to me, but which almost any man who was in the vicinity seemed to understand immediately. Men appear to love play in this rough-and-tumble way that few women seem to enjoy. [*Single Mothers by Choice, A Guidebook for Single Women who are Considering or have Chosen Motherhood*, by Jane Mattes, C.S.W., ©1994, Times Books, Random House, New York, pp. 162-163.]

For not only Western Civilization, but nature itself chose him for this task. To alienate the child from his father, a Cognitive Dissonance has to be established in which to either intellectually or morally allow the male to submit and to disinherit himself from his proper legal and moral role of parent, which he now, under the Feminist Jurisprudence system, ‘has to share’ with the wife and the State. Of course, as Lord Coke noted: the second he is ‘reasonable’ and shares his property he loses all ‘rights’—just as a Lord Coke demonstrates any Lord would when trying to ‘share’ a parcel with some other tenant. Thereby, there are many Lord’s trying to

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

hold title to the children when in fact; they do not even understand they have been overthrown of that function. Unfortunately, this fraud in “law” is accomplished in modern society by sophistry through “Equity,” forced upon these men, by rogue courts. Through using the tools of sophistry and deception, the Socialist agents have convinced (through force and coercion), the American male to fall on his sword “In the Best Interests of the Child.” The Judges accomplish this through a tool used in Equity courts called “discretion,” which means that they can now throw away the law, and refuse to do what is right or just. In contrast, the female by allowing this false doctrine to intrude into the home, is essentially marrying the real Lord and master to who she now she truly obeys: The State. If she doesn’t obey *this* husband, she loses her children forever to where ever the State decides. The first “Lord” of the husband such women usually discover, , really wasn’t as abusive as this “second Lord” of the state, in which she now is ultimately held slave to. However, this second Lord can supply her with more economic support and stable benefits, which is why she now tolerates this ultimate authority of the State within her life, which she now essentially is married to. This of course, has weakened the once stable position of marriage within our society:

As marriage began to erode as the central institution governing family relationships, so too did the norm of marital permanence. A small but revealing sign of the change came with the popular trend toward self-written marriage vows. In some ceremonies, the traditional pledge to marry for “as long as we both shall live” was replaced with the more limited promise to marry for “as long as we both shall love,” which in many cases meant “as long as I feel happy and satisfied with the arrangement.” At least one sourcebook on marriage vows suggests an even more contingent pledge: to marry for “as long as we both shall like.” In his divorce book J. Randall Nichols, and ordained minister and teacher at the Princeton Theological Seminary, provides a more sophisticated rationale for the limited and continent marriage vow: “The marriage vow is to sign, seal, and vehicle of self-investment; it is not do this or that; it is a commitment to work in relationship.”

No-fault divorce law offers even more compelling evidence of the abandonment of the norm of marital permanence. As legal scholar Donald S. Moir notes, no-fault divorce carries the message that “the marriage covenant is freely and unilaterally terminable, that the welfare of children is subservient to the personal fulfillment of adults, that a parents effective relationship with his or her children may be terminated at any time without cause at the will of the other parent.” [*The Divorce Culture*, by Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, ©1996; Borzoi Books, Published by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., New York, ISBN 0-679-43230-2; p.142-143.]

Clearly, neither Government, nor the Feminist main’s interest or desire is towards the true interest of the American child. Indeed, **no greater**



## CHAPTER TWO

**disaster has fallen upon American children than that of “In the Best Interests of the Child.”** It is an outright lie, and the voluminous facts and figures showing this absolutely show, that modern Matriarchy as applied through Feminism has been a criminal abomination. We see these sophistries applied in several other area's to again, gain a toe-hold of Government intrusion within other area's: the Environment, Drug's, the War on Poverty...etc.

Matriarchy (Socialists) use the natural tendencies of Government to expand and enhance their power in which to apply it's mythologies upon an unsuspecting public. As Bastiat demonstrated in his treatise *The Law*, those wanting to accrue their power and control at the expense of others obtain as such by holding up a social cause. From this they agitate the public, widely dispersing the need of implementation of new laws and social causes throughout the mainstream media, and widely advertise manufactured “crisis's” in which to gain public support, and mobilize their elite's to enforce the cause. From this, those elite profit greatly by these ‘new laws’ and social causes they have now joined to support. Once the cause is subsidized by government, the sophistry remains eternal and the problems never get solved, while the laws; which are usually obscure and general at first; are of no-consequence; soon conflagrate into ever superceding and interceding laws. Within a short period, if you break one of these laws, which now becomes very easy—you are held hostage in paying huge fines, penalties, and in the case of Fathers Rights, even imprisonment. This is our new social order, designed and implemented via ‘activist’ courts requires these courts to violate, the very fundamental premises upon which American law rested, and abandon them completely:

For the Four Horsemen, the principles of laissez-faire economics were not merely preferred but part of the natural order “beyond the right of official control.” Although the swore allegiance to a brand of constitutional fundamentalism that required judges to “declare the law as written,” with no textual mandate whatsoever, they freely read into the Constitution their own Darwinist notions of social policy. Using the protean doctrine of substantive due process as their sword, they ventured forth to defend the country against all manner of social and economic legislation--minimum wage laws, maximum hours laws, price controls, regulations of interstate commerce--and thus, set themselves four-square against Roosevelt's New Deal efforts to lift the nation from depression.

Opposite the Four Horsemen stood the Three Musketeers, Justices Louis Brandies, Harlan Fiske Stone, and Benjamin Cardozo. These “liberals” found no particular economic philosophy enshrined in the Constitution (certainly no “Mr. Herbert Spencers Social Statistics,” as Holmes had put it in the most famous expression of their jurisprudence). Though not all enamored of Roosevelt--Stone was close to Calvin Coolidge, who had

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

appointed him--they were political progressives and legal pragmatists who looked out on a nation in crisis and recognized that its basic charter must be deemed flexible enough to meet "the social and economic needs of the time." To the Musketeers, the Justices had no right (as the conservatives had been doing for twenty years) to hold 120 million citizens hostage to their "own personal predilections" regarding economic policy. The Court's proper concern was solely with Congress's authority to enact a particular statute, not with its wisdom. [Closed Chambers, *The First Eyewitness Account of the Epic Struggles Inside the Supreme Court*, by Edward Lazarus, c1998, Times Books, Random House, Inc., New York, ISBN 0-8129-2402-9, pp. 282-282]

However, the fact remains that the Paradox of Feminism indoctrinating Matriarchy throughout society clearly overthrows the well-founded, and well-documented American legal foundations such as "that one man cannot of the same land be both lord and tenant." The fact that Feminism cannot live within the American system of governance under the past doctrines and foundational precepts which our nation was well established upon. This of course is conclusive proof of the quote above, that Fatherhood, or Patriarchy, is being held hostage by today's entire American Jurisprudence system, to a "personal predilection" which stems *directly* from Feminism. This intolerance to Americanism is not lost upon the Fathers Rights movement and may other groups who tend to support their country. Therefore, presented with this dichotomy, Radical Feminist "just throw away" any laws that they don't agree with, or which stand in their way; just as they are throwing away the basis of American Jurisprudence itself, Christian morals, ethic's, and most importantly—truth, logic and justice. Whatever foundational precepts they don't like, whatever laws or doctrines which do not conform to their radical ideology, they attack, subvert, then; undermine by either destroying them outright or subverting them and 'replacing' them with "new" more "efficient laws." As Ms. Hillary Clinton is eagerly said to have quoted: "A redesign of humanity." The fact that the new laws which are subverting the basic doctrines of America, and replacing them with Anti-American "law"—doesn't matter to these people, for they never believed in the concept of America in the first place. This of course has had direct and eternal effects on the tapestry of the American dream and has greatly compromised this nation's freedom, to subsidize feminism by destroying America from within; *someone* has had to pay for this massive social program.

"On the other side of the national divide is Second Wave America, the forgotten Americans left behind...[it] is a land of middle-class anxiety, downsized hopes, and vanished dreams, where economic insecurity is a preexisting condition of life, and company towns become ghost towns

## CHAPTER TWO

overnight. Men in their forties and fifties who have worked for the same company since college come home bewildered to their shaken wives that they are being let go. People know in their hearts that America will never again be the country they grew up in. The years slide by, family incomes stagnate, wives go to work to make sure their children have the same things as other kids at the public school do. For Middle America, something went wrong. They played by the rules, but the promise was unfulfilled.” [*The Great Betrayal, How American Sovereignty and Social Justice Are Being Sacrificed to the Gods of the Global Economy*, by Patrick J. Buchanan, ©1998; Little, Brown and Company, Canada, ISBN 0-316-11518-5; p. 7.]

Strangely, nobody has related this national American tragedy with the advent of second and third wave Radical Feminism. It is as if everyone recognizes there is a hole in the bottom of the ship of America, yet keep looking up and blaming the sails for the ship sinking.

Matriarchy has usurped the sovereign authority and moral leadership of the father within his own home, through the establishment and maintenance of several sophistries.

- 1. The Children as starving and in poverty.**
- 2. Children as being Beaten and Abused.**
- 3. The wife as being Beaten and Abused.**
- 4. The The Father/Male as a Wife Beater/Abuser/Rapist.**
- 5. run-away or abandoning Father.**
- 6. Wife and Children as being poor.**
- 7. The mutilated Beggar Syndrome—wife and children always need help.**
- 8. Sainted Mother postulate—mothers can do no wrong.**
- 9. The ‘EQUALITY’ Card.**
- 10. Mothers are the supreme parent and must stay with children at all costs over the Fathers rights.**

These ten items have been widely indoctrinated into the mainstream mindset by both government and the mainstream media. To virtually every item, almost each and every one of these then things is a national collective disinformation campaign, designed solely to subvert and undermine the Father, who is “invented” into either a Bogeyman or an out-right criminal. Simply put, the Father is statistically the overwhelming singular best environment in which to place this nation’s children.

U.S. News & World Report recently described the frightening reality faced daily by residents of fatherless city neighborhoods this way: “There are places in America where fathers--usually the best hope to socialize boys--are so rare that bedlam engulfs the community. Teaches, ministers, cops an other substitute authority figures fight losing battles in these plac-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

es to present role models to pre-teen and teenage boys. The result is often an astonishing level of violence an incomprehensible incidents of brutality." [Fathers' Rights, Hard-Hitting & Fair Advice for Every Father Involved in a Custody Dispute, by Jeffery M. Leving, c1997; BasicBooks, 10 East 53rd Street, New York, NY 10022-5299, ISBN 0-465-02443-2; p. 47.]

And this is the main reason why he has been physically and legally driven out of his home, and disenfranchised as a parent, provider and leader of his own home. What the American nation, our Founding Fathers, Western civilization and even civilization itself once fully understood and chose as a blueprint for advancement within society has been mistakenly thrown away for the promise of a “new,” “redesigned,” “more efficient” social order highlighted by radical Feminism. Nothing could be further from the truth, and a warehouse of staggering facts and figures demarcating this national disaster, is concisely demonstrating that this new redesign was as flawed as the ancients once recognized. They threw away this design, “Matriarchy” which existed for a quarter million years before the advent of Patriarchy, and which never really produced a thing. They chose Patriarchy not as a system of oppression as the feminist would have us believe, but rather, as an engineered design, one of discipline, formal direction, morality, and justice—and most importantly—one that assured wealth, or ‘surplusage’ which in fact was the true reason why civilization was invented in the first place. As U.S. News & World Reports and others are beginning to recognize, there is an ever-growing bedlam which is attached to this feminist model, one of devolution, one of destruction.

We must understand the other side of this equation, that Patriarchy is not a system of lies and deceptions as Matriarchy is.. For it’s base and foundation is based in logic and timeless observation of not *man* but *civilization as a whole has determined these truth’s*. Western Civilization *selected and chose Patriarchy for a reason*; not only that, our whole foundation, laws, and civilized logic emanates from this time-tested selection. Patriarchy takes the natural leader, the physically stronger and more aggressive of the two entities between male and female, and allows him to assume his proper role within the family and the home, to protect, to lead and to provide for them. He can only do this if given the empowerment over his domain: his own family. In Lord Coke’s own words, he must be “Lord.” No lies, deceptions or sophistries are needed to implement Patriarchy. The facts are clear about this, Patriarchy gives the male his assumed role within the family and society. Matriarchy however; has no concomitant role for such men, excepting that of sperm donor, gay male, or prison inmate, which has been well documented and is a growing reality in today’s society.

## CHAPTER TWO

This reality is not to belittle the female by any means. Indeed, Patriarchy celebrated the female and allowed her, to assume *her* role as well, which required just as much effort and discipline (maybe more so) than even her male counterpart. They recognized that the female appears to have ingrained other attributes and qualities which make her different, and perhaps much more needed within this system. We know her brain is wired differently. She is more sensitive, acutely aware, her powers of observation appear to be superior, less prone to violence, etc. She is more sensitive, more resolute. Western Society has correctly determined that both the male and female are needed in civilized society to build strong homes and families. In essence, the nuclear two parent Family doesn't need the "Village" as much as the "Village" needs the two-parent Family. Present day feminist dogma desists this model altogether and tries by every means possible to formulate and invent substitutes for the nuclear family. What I call a prostitution of function. These include 'mentoring', 'foster homes', 'child care', and a host of other 'substitutes' which have continually document the failed experiment of feminism. The failure of feminism is the thing that now devolves this society by a negative social pressure and tries to push it into a tribal domain.

This in fact is the expression of nature: the Ying and Yang of the masculine of feminine. Patriarchy does not denigrate these differences, rather; it openly venerates and celebrates them and combines them into one for mutual benefit. From this recognition, it uses this intrinsic differences between the male and female to place the proper person as the proper function within the home and family. Clearly; by that design, it makes human sexuality itself, work for the family and the society. This system which America chose as a foundational blueprint for this nation, was marveled at by both Europeans and De Tocqueville himself:

Thus the Americans do not think that man and women have either the duty or the right to perform the same offices, but they show an equal regard for both their respective parts; and though their lot is different, they consider both of them as being of equal value. They do not give to the courage of women the same for or the same direction as to that of man; but they never doubt her courage; and if they hold that man and his partner ought not always to exercise their intellect and understanding in the same manner, they at least believe the understanding of the one to be as sound as that of the other, and her intellect to be as clear. Thus, then, while they have allowed the social inferiority of women to subsist, they have done all they could to raise her morally and intellectually to the level of man; and in this respect they appear to me to have excellently understood the true principle of democratic improvement. As for myself, I do not hesitate to avow that, although the woman of the United States are confined within the narrow circle of domestic life, and their situation is in some respects one of extreme dependence, I have nowhere seen women

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

occupying a loftier position; and if I were asked now that I am drawing to the close of this work, in which I have spoken of so many important things done by the Americans, to what the singular prosperity attributed, I should reply—to the superiority of their women. [*Democracy in America*, by Alexis De Tocqueville, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York, Inc., pp. 402-403.]

This of course, appears to totally contradict the contention by the radical feminist that women were useless and just being slaves to their men within the American home. No—in fact; it appeared that America had made a link as to which other societies before them did not, and that was that the Females within the society, held not just a position in society; but rather, they held an esteemed, and precious position of solemn and loving responsibility within the home. From this discipline, women were not just cattle, in fact as De Tocqueville describes above, *they were viewed superior*. This is a far cry from the mindless second wave Feminist Mystique mantra being chanted today. More importantly, it is timeless praise emanating from one of America's most definitive study ever undertaken in reference to understanding this country.

Feminism appears to contumaciously lie about the existence of sexual differences and how they relate to society and the family; and it opposes them upon every front. It tries to overcome the obvious by and through the unequal application of “Equality;” and as Betty Friedan describes “The Problem With No Name”, which has been used to promote an unequal playing field in which to skew the tests or performance to that lesser gender of the ‘protected class’ in order to gain the equality of affirmative action. In simple terms: they apply an unequal assessment in order to allow the inferior person an advantage in which to show that they can succeed through their engineered skewing of tests or performance. The definitive example of this was shown at the San Francisco Fire Department entrance tests where the women tested could not lift the ladder during their performance examination.

The result?

There was an immediate re-evaluation of the test and more particularly: the ladder. It was ‘too heavy’ and had to be ‘replaced’...or so the Feminist contended... This is the application of ‘Equality’ as applied by feminist sophistry. Not just in the physical aspects of our society, but rather; in every aspect, in testing, education, science, and even Military war. The Feminist contend that females are equal, if not equal, then superior—if tested correctly. This correlation between Feminist inspired mythology and sophistry in which to obfuscate the obvious is a well developed tactic as implemented by Matriarchal institutions.

At Georgetown University, there was a group of undergraduate females known as the Georgetown Girls. These young women XXXXXX

## CHAPTER TWO

[explain their problem.] When confronted by a feminist coalition at the University hearing, these young Georgetown Girls inadvertently posed a question in total exasperation to the Feminist tribunal before them and incredulously asked: “What do you want us to do? Lie?!?” to which the tribunal immediately responded: “Yes! If it places forwards our goals towards our social agenda!!!” These young Georgetown Girls were incredulous, but; they were meeting what men have met headlong for the past 50 years: the Feminist “Village” mind. Feminist Lies and Disinformation.

Not only was there a stunned silence from the Georgetown Girls, but there was also a stunned silence to many whom have dealt with this radical feminist mindset. But we must consider, this as the working grease of Matriarchy, the ability to lie and apply disinformation at will, in order to place forwards their social agenda—at any cost. It is one of the main components to allow Feminist and Matriarchy to survive, as otherwise; it could not.

This is one reason why there has been such a complicit media, ready, willing and able to disseminate the most egregious lies the Feminists disseminate in favor of their cause. The media has become such willing conspirators to this sophistry, that they no longer can either tell or afford the truth. The American mainstream media, in both print and electronic; have become willing conspirators towards the liberal cause of Patriarchal development for “The Best Interests of the Child.” They have become no more than a willing propaganda machine now intent on keeping truth from the public as much as they are mandated to inform it. This was not true only within the corridors of the mainstream media, but also the research communities as well. This has been a well documented problem within the Radical Feminist regime:

“In the past these issues have turned out to be too difficult and too politically risky for debate. In the mid-1960s Daniel Patrick Moynihan then Assistant Secretary of Labor, was denounced as a racist for calling attention to the relationship between the prevalence of Black-Single-Mother families and the lower socio-economic standing of black children. For nearly twenty years, the policy and research communities backed away from the entire issue. [Children in Crisis, edited by Robin Brown, ©1994, H.W. Wilson Company, New York, ISBN 0-8242-0853-6; p. 23.]

This closes all doors to any meaningful discussion or opposition by Patriarchal factions within our society. No longer can the public be informed as to what public policies to implement, due to the fact that most facts and figures that have been presented to them have been well-publicized lies. These lies have knowingly been left to propagate and become part of the national mindset, leaving the public incapable of mak-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ing *any* decisions upon this matter, *especially* serving on a jury at trial.. As especially noted by President Clinton's \$34 billion dollar lie that men owe this amount in child support, when the facts over and over have empirically proven different. The whole American mindset in regards to Fatherhood: is a complete abject lie! These lies are willingly and cogently reintroduced incessantly and insistently to the American public, even though the media has full knowledge that these facts and figures being disseminated—are in fact—outright lies. Yet, these Feminist sophistries continue...and they grow. They grow exponentially. Presently, even the American public has become fully cognizant that our media has become nothing more than state-sponsored propaganda machine. They recognize something is wrong, and the media for the first time in over a century, is seeing a huge migration of the populace move from the 'traditional' media models, towards 'alternative' news sources. Never before has paper and television news lost such a share in market due to their attendance and support of Feminist Sophistry and state-sponsored propaganda. Even with this recognition, it is with great reluctance that they intent to change, in fact, they are not changing.

This clearly establishes a combine of interests between government, media and the Socialist/Feminist factions. They clearly act knowingly, in collusion, to support the myths presented by the modern Matriarchal order.

## THE BLACK MODEL OF FEMINIST USURPTION

---

It was during the heyday of the Antebellum South that the roots of modern Feminism and Matriarchy first established its model within the United States. The southern white-male separatist faction unwittingly through the economic vehicle of slavery of the importation of African Blacks, established Matriarchy as we know it today. They imposed it for their own economic viabilities, destroying the Black Father, stealing whatever wealth his labor made for him, separating his family, stealing and selling his children, selling his wife, and using him only as a sperm donor. Indeed, what the White Southern slave owner was doing was emulating the exact function of the modern Welfare state today, which does these same exact things to the Black Male, except this time: under the guise and in the name of "We the People" of the State.

Slavery is a system based on injustice, economic subjugation, and peonage/servitude for the benefit of either an individual or a society. It is a system as old as mankind, and can be either an evil or mercenary benevolent institution. It is not an American institution, as derogated by the foundational precepts of our Declaration of Independence and the Constitution. However; that contumacious point aside—modern Femi-



## CHAPTER TWO

nism/Matriarchy was gestated from that former institution as it developed within the antebellum south.

From that southern model, we saw a clearly demarcated ‘species,’ a Black African—who was sold into bondage, for personal economic gain of mostly whites. [Please note however; history shows that there were cases of blacks who as freemen, also owned slaves in the south, as well as conversely; the Founding Fathers who also could not resist the temptation of that pragmatic economic institution.] Focusing on this plantation model of slavery, you usually had a white freeman, landholder, usually with a family and property, owning a slave or slaves, who worked at their masters bidding. Their toil promulgated wealth for the master, and the agrarian society which fostered slavery. As a subset to the master, the Black African slave was compelled to do whatever his master desired, unconditionally. However; this Black Slave lived in a separate order, a world unto himself; and usually assimilated the Matriarchal societies from Africa from whence he came. This condition of Matriarchy was exacerbated by the Master, using the slave as pure chattel, as property, and animal sold and used at will.

If a slave propagated children, the wife and children of that slave could be separated from that slave at the will of the Master, they could be sold into bondage, or the wife of the male slave could have duties as a concubine, or prostitute among the other male slaves, essentially, the benevolence or denigration of the Master reigned supreme.

What we had here, led by this Master/Slave relationship developed in the Antebellum south was the exact contemporary construct of the Modern welfare-state. Indeed, if we again look to the maxims of law, it was clearly recognized that children raised in such a sexual abstract situation, without the regulation of the male (father) was indeed the condition of “slaves and animals”. This state laid the bedrock for the formation of modern Welfare slavery. The modern Black woman in accepting Welfare has betrayed and driven her society backwards to the slave/master model...

In the modern Welfare State, the substitution for the white Male Master is the Government through the Doctrine of *Parens Patriæ*. As in the Antebellum model, the Black male, who has been conditioned by centuries of Matriarchal oppression (read slavery) now is only a temporary sperm donor. The female, whom has unwittingly provided this slave seedbed, is now the state subsidized administrator of the household, using the male as only a sperm donor, holding no loyalty or obligation to him, and living a life of promiscuity and irresponsibility. Today, this is called ‘freedom’ by many feminists. As are the condition of slaves, this sexual anarchy is the singular, main component of why the Black society within the United States has never been able to rise out of poverty. It is not due

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

because of lack of desire, intelligence or effort, but only due to their unknowing enslavement to Matriarchy within the slave model of Modern Welfare State which mainly holds them in bondage. When a man no longer holds the function of a man, but that of a temporary accouterment to a woman's sexual freedom, he enslaves not only himself, but his children as well. This has been accomplished and conspired against the Black community, generationally.

As Le Roy Marshall an ardent Black Fathers Rights advocate in Englewood California and Director of Fathers United Against Slavery noted in East Los Angeles: "Our woman seek men, but don't find any. All the women here want to be married, but can't, because they don't respect the Black man." Indeed, this is the condition of Matriarchy, that of slaves and animals. This is also the exponential of Briffault's Law which states that "The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the Female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.". As the Black slave of the Antebellum south toiled for another in the fields of Southern America, his female counterpart was busy keeping her children together, (if she was able to keep her children), as she could not depend on the man for support because slavery was tearing him apart. This is of course, the total ordination of Briffault's law. Unlike Patriarchy, his wealth was foiled and unjustly taken from him, and when he returned from his labors, he had nothing to show nor to give his woman in which to improve her condition. There is no 'benefit'. This is the classic delineation of Matriarchy at its best it enjoins Briffault's Law: "*The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.* [The Case For Father Custody, quoting from Robert Briffault].

What we have here is the influence of hypergamy. Women marry up, (towards riches and wealth), men marry down (towards beauty, youth, and offspring). In Matriarchal archetypes, the man has been undermined; his endeavors have been superseded for another's best interests at the expense of his own. (The State.) He does not have anything really to offer the woman, (other than temporary insemination), thereby; forcing the woman through the natural selection of hypergamy, to seek a male 'or something else' that is a better provider or 'offers the woman something'. To that end, she will not hold her allegiance to him as Briffault's law has been broken. When that 'ability to provide' is taken away from the male, as can be seen in the case of the Black Community and its intimate association with Welfare, the woman are left with economic desolation. Thereby, they have to marry the state, and from this choice, driven by Briffault's Law, they get the benefit and security in which their own males are supposed to provide. In the Black Community this is a genera-

## CHAPTER TWO

tional condition, men have lesser choices and economic opportunities due to the fact of the implementation of Matriarchy/Slave-based conditions. From that, the Black women have no real expressive choice within the Black Community as her men have been relegated into slavery, thereby making the Black male a poor choice for a Black woman to choose or hold fidelity to. This is but one of the reasons why Matriarchy and Feminism is the “condition of slaves and animals.”

This model is solidified within the Welfare State by this economic modeling. Black women get pregnant earlier, thereby opening the ‘door’s of opportunity and freedom to these young black women who obtain instant gratification and security from the Welfare “Village”. Striving to better themselves they do; as their new husband: “The State” grants her subsidies to do so; thereby she takes college courses. When these women enrich themselves through the panorama of ‘special support’ and opportunities of a virtual cornucopia of Welfare programs such as GAIN, WIC, PIC and other educational, and child-welfare programs, they are accepting the ‘benefit’ of which Briffault’s law describes.. Indeed, from this, a majority of Black Women obtain degrees, opening the door to economic freedom *within the socialist state itself*, which was the Feminist/Matriarchal intent in the first place.

Prosecutor Hayes rose to cross-examine Cheri. She asked curtly whether she had sought a job.

“I’m always seeking employment,” Cheri told her.

“Anything now?”

“Not at the moment,” Cheri said.

“How do you support yourself?”

“I’ve been borrowing money from friends.”

“How often do you go out on job interviews?”

“Résumé’s are sent out every month,” Cheri said. “Most recently, I’ve applied as a field organizer for NOW.”

Hayes asked why Cheri’s Welfare payments had been cut off.

“Failure to provide information they needed from my child’s birth certificate,” Cheri said.

The cross-examination ended without any specific questions that might have forced Cheri to testify about her part-time, late-night jobs. [*Myth of the Welfare Queen*, by David Zucchino, ©1997, Scribner, 1230 Avenue of the America’s, New York, NY 10020; p. 267.]

So the Black Woman obtains a career from the Welfare State, and the monolith of feminism which as Cheri admits above—is also a main player within this game; which of course is a engineered corollary which increases the power and breadth of those continually expanding institutions. (It should be noted here, that any male under-going this same line of questioning—would have been placed into jail or most certainly have

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

lost any 'government benefits' he/she was seeking. However, the Cheri above, was apparently able to keep those benefits even though she was only getting job-interview reports 'monthly' where a man would have been required to get them either weekly, or most certainly: daily.) The Welfare woman cannot obtain this same type of security, wealth and safety from the a poor American male. This system viscerously makes a class of men, POOR men mostly 'marginal' or 'unmarketable' for marriage or to provide security for either their woman or child at the outset—and poor men have no hopes of competing with this national Welfare system. The woman, however; is guaranteed these things, especially the security through the Matriarchal tribe. So she substitutes the benefits of the Welfare State as the functionary husband of her household, the state now becomes her husband. Of course, the Black male has been usurped and he doesn't even know it, and has no say upon this illegal usurpation and intrusion into *his* home, in *his* supposed castle. In accordance with Briffault's law, the Black female marries the state, as the state now provides her with benefits and security most Black males cannot counter. No Black male; nor can many White or other males, provide as well, with as much security and safety as Welfare does. This of course, is a complete conversion of our system of governance and American society itself, but those within the system do not care—because providing these things is "their daily bread."

In the sixties and seventies we thought the situation we read about in Michael Harrington's *The Other America* was desperate. Then, when I climbed the stairs of housing projects and visited tenements on Chicago's South and West sides, I knew firsthand the bleak lives of the poor. But these were the good old days when the poor were just poor and not [an] underclass, and when we felt no fear in walking inner-city streets or negotiation housing project stairwells. Today, two and a half underclass generations later, I compare the underclass I see in court today with the poor I represented twenty-five or thirty years ago, and the comparison is invidious. No fathers. Never fathers. Schools that do not and cannot without parental involvement educate; empty factories in the inner city; a welfare system that deprives people of dignity, fostering irresponsible behavior and belittling self-discipline; drugs sold on street corners as freely as soda, and guns as available as the drugs; and the whole mess a Gordian knot resisting solutions and ready to explode in the outer city as random violence and in the inner city as rioting and looting.

A young Department of Labor economist named Daniel Moynihan publicized all this in the 1960s, but white and black liberals placed his report outside the ambit of public discourse by the simple device of branding it as racist—though they never argued that the raw facts he reported were untrue. Instead, as the messes of the underclass raged out of control, Democrats blamed Ronald Reagan and his revolution. It really wasn't a revolution at all, but it has given the Democrats a convenient excuse...

## CHAPTER TWO

Moynihan argued that the growing trend of black children raised without fathers would ultimately lead to catastrophe. The left shouted him down because they feared racists would use Moynihan's report as proof that black people were less moral, ethical, and family-orientated than whites. Many on the right felt that way to begin with, so they didn't pay much attention to Moynihan or his report. Moynihan had the audacity to pick up a large rock, uncovering a thousand nasty, crawling creatures. We shoved the rock back in place, but the problems were still there. And they grew and multiplied. [*Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick T. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago 60622; ISBN 1-56663-163-7; pp. 90-92.]

Young Black Males have been under direct economic attack by their new Slave Master, the Welfare State "to Provide" for this Welfare institution which is in turn destroying him. He has been immediately undermined, as his authority does not reign supreme, the court (Welfare State) will direct him, his life, and his children even against his most basic will or authority. The courts in essence, have now become the White master. At every opportunity he will be undermined, enslaved, his life profits drained from him. He like other males will obediently become a slave. He has no idea what is happening to him, for on the one hand, the Black Male, who is proud and willing to care for his progeny, tries to enjoin in his own demise to show he cares for his own children. He provides for "Child Support" as long as he can, but usually is quickly destroyed by the system (an intentional by-product of this system). Thereby, he is undermined by the engineered Sophistry of "The Best Interest of the Child", the Feminist Tribe demands that he destroy himself by direct financial subsidization of his own destruction. This sophistry as in the Master Model of the Antebellum south, accrues huge profits to the Welfare State. The Black Woman along with the Welfare State essentially 'split' the wealth of the Black man whom is trying to do the best thing, but is undermined by his own planned failure by this system. In fact, District Attorney's around the country, try and push as many undeserving, and problematic cases onto welfare as they can, for they fully understand as well as others within the system 'understand,' that this is where their "daily bread" comes from:

Joann was addicted to crack. She was twenty-three, pretty, bright and came from a lovely family. Her mother was a Bank Teller, and had cared for Joann's three-year-old son for two years. Kinship Foster care, of course. After a twenty-four-month residential drug program, Joann came to court ready to resume the care of her child. The attorney argued that before her boy could be returned, Joann had to open up a public assistance case and get a subsidy from the city for an apartment. Joann readily agreed, but I almost had a stroke.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

“Welfare?” I shouted. “Oh no! She is going to get a job.”

Well, you would have thought that I just maligned the Pope. “No Welfare,” I said. “that’s hopeless. You have come too far to get on the Welfare spiral.” Then I adjourned the case for eight weeks for Joann’s job search.

When Joann returned to court two months later, she had been employed full-time for six weeks at a Roy Rogers restaurant. She looked terrific, and although she was not crazy about the job, it was a beginning. Joann needed a nudge. [*Don’t Pee on My Leg and Tell Me It’s Raining, America’s toughest court Judge Speaks Out*, by Judy Sheindlin, ©1996, HarperCollins Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022, ISBN 0-06-017321-1, p. 235.]

In the final analysis, it is not the Black women who accrues the males wealth, nor her children; but rather the Welfare state. Hillary and others embedded throughout this perverse system fully know this, and understand this. That is the institution which benefits mostly from this parasitic slave-based arraignment. Neither the singular Single Female Headed Household’s, or those children therewithin, nor the community can rise up from this constant attack upon their males, as any gross wealth developed by that society is drained out from that community. Thereby, the community itself cannot comprehend why, which government program after government program that they attach themselves to—the community somehow is always held down into poverty. There Welfare roles keep on increasing, crime keeps rising, police and prison populations keep on expanding. This is the classic impressment of the promise of the devolution of the Welfare tribal state, which really only devolves these communities into anarchy, crime, social pathology, and eternal poverty.

Until the Black community exorcises itself from this addiction of the Welfare state: their communities, will continue to devolve into the Tribal condition of anarchy. The historical analysis and the attending facts and figures in regards to this reality—are not just overwhelming—but rather: staggering:

By 1984, over 90 percent of births to black women under age twenty were illegitimate. As the president of the National Council of Negro Women noted in 1985, although early marriage and the resulting early motherhood were once common among blacks, today the overwhelming majority of all black babies are born to unwed teenage mothers—a situation described by Eleanor Holmes Norton as a “natural catastrophe in our midst, a threat to the future of Black people without equal.” In 1985, the Children’s Defense Fund described marriage as a “forgotten institution” among black teenagers, when the adolescent single mother had become the rule, rather than the exception that she was in the black community in the 1950s. [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Car-

## CHAPTER TWO

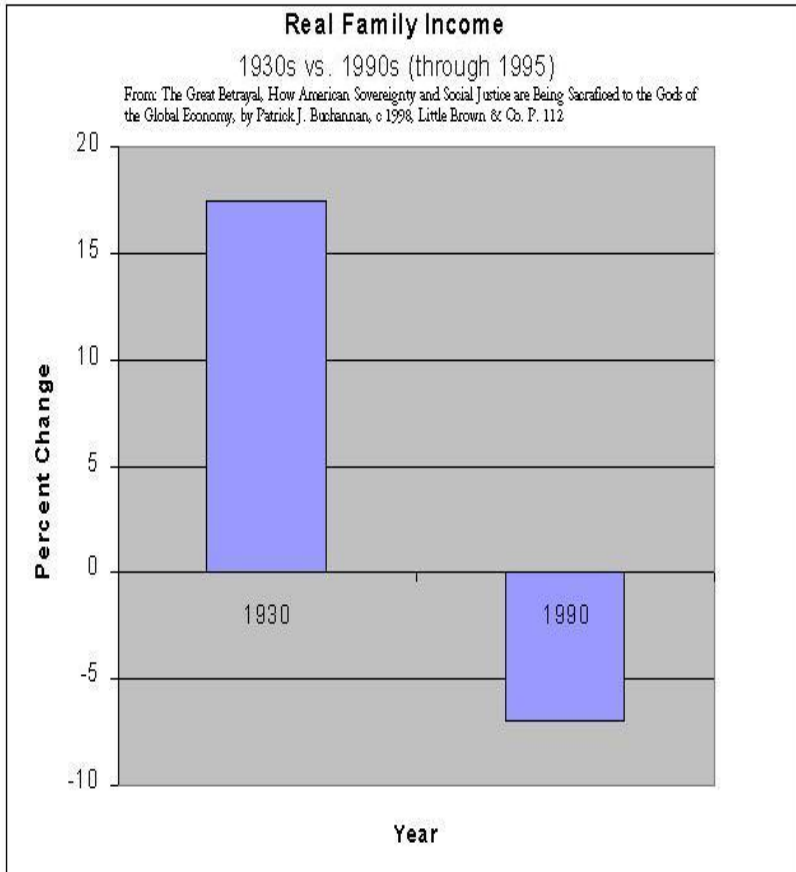
oklyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Suite 450, Dallas TX 75202; ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; p. 298.]

Two years after the riots, a report by the U.S. Commission on Civil Rights went further in probing the root causes of Miami's unrest. It cited poverty, unemployment, poor housing, and declining public schools--all of which blacks suffered in disproportionate numbers--along with a widely held belief that the criminal-justice system was biased. In criticizing Reno's office, the report noted that three times as many blacks were being prosecuted in Dad's juvenile courts as any other racial or ethnic group. Reno said the report offered few constructive suggestions for change. "It will only exacerbate community tensions," she said. [*Janet Reno, Doing the Right Thing*, by Paul Anderson, @1994; John Wiley & Sons, ISBN 0-471-01858-9; p.83.]

"Yet the statistics along with an entire array of economic and social criteria are sobering. According to the National Urban League, the median net household worth for black families in 1988 was \$4,169, compared to \$43,279 for white families. Over 29 percent of black families had zero or negative net worth, compared with 87 percent of white families; only 5.2 percent of black families had net worth's above \$100,000, contrasted with 29.2 percent of white families. In 1992, 33.3 percent of all blacks were below the poverty level, compared to 11.6 of whites. In 1991, the black unemployment rate was 12.4 percent, more than twice as high as the white unemployment rate. The black-to-white unemployment gap has actually widened between 1964 and today. Likewise, the Urban League reports that blacks are 6.4 times more likely to die by homicide than whites. In 1991, 46.4 percent of all black families were headed by single females--a figure that has doubled since 1960. In 1970, 38 percent of black births were out-of-wedlock; by 1988, that number had grown to 64 percent. By the year 2000, the proportion of black children living with both parents is predicted to decline to 24 percent. For these children, the odds are great for a life of poverty.

Educational prospects are equally bleak: in 1991, 19.6 percent of blacks between the ages of 20 and 29 did not have a high school diploma, and an additional 46.4 percent did not progress beyond high school. The National Assessment of Educational Progress in 1995 reported that only 12 of black high school seniors (as compared to a dismal-enough 40 percent of whites) were proficient in reading. According to Shelby Steele, 72 percent of black college students drop out. The educational statistics manifest themselves in additional ways: as many as three-fourths of black males between the ages of 25 to 34 who dropped out of high school had criminal records. Overall, nearly one of every three black men between the ages of 20 and 29 is in jail or otherwise under supervision of the judicial system, which represents a 30 percent increase since 1989.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



....Traditional civil rights remedies do not hold much hope for the truly disadvantaged. As political scientist Seymour Martin Lipset observes, "Whatever the causes of childhood poverty, affirmative action is no remedy for this group. Preference policies or quotas are not much help to an illegitimate black ghetto youth who grows up in poverty and receives an inferior education. Race-conscious affirmative action is relevant only to those who are eligible for job, business, or college opportunities--and utterly irrelevant to the remainder....It seems clear that massive welfare programs and the race-specific policies of the past 30 years, despite their enormous costs, both economic and social, are not up to the task of bringing large numbers of economic outsiders into the mainstream of American life." [The Affirmative Action FRAUD, Can We Restore the American Civil Rights Vision?, by Clint Bolick, @1996 by the Cato Institute, 1000 Massachusetts Ave., N.W., Washington, D.C. 20001; ISBN 1-882577-28-0; pp. 20-22.]



## CHAPTER TWO

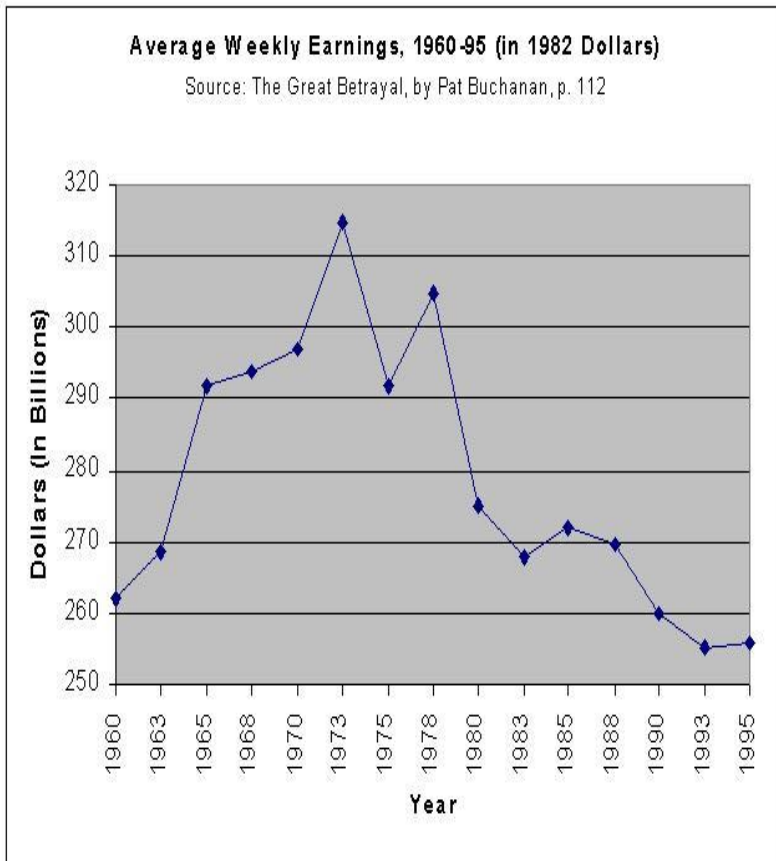
This of course is classical paradox of “The Best Interests of the Child” in conjunction with the Black Male being economically and socially obliterated is the classical *modus operandi* of the Modern Welfare State, which in fact, is the exact model of the Slavery model of the pre-Civil War Antebellum south. In both cases, the Black male is having his wealth stolen from him, undermining his chances of success, which can ONLY be gained through Patriarchy. The final result? Within a few short years over 90 percent of them lose all contact with their children—thereby, maintaining the generational Welfare cycle. The final result? Children are destroyed: society no longer has strong resilient families (by intended design) and thereby; are burdened to support an ever burgeoning Welfare ‘underclass.’ This model is now leaking over into other classes within our society; White, Black, Asian, Hispanic: no nationality, no nation will be able to stand in the way of this devolution once it takes root.

This condition has been folded over against the Black Society and the complete American Society as a whole. What the Black Society has suffered through via the seemingly inspirational offering of the Modern Welfare state, is in fact, engineered enslavement, but on a vastly greater scale, spanning generations, and crossing all ethnic and race barriers within America. In this regards, we are all being ‘equalized’ into slavery. This is why the opening quotation of Chapter One is so important. This is why every American Father and every American school child must be required to memorize that maxim of law. “Those children that follow the condition of the mother are that of animals and slaves.”

Hillary, and her multiculturalist elite have been building a slave-class society through welfare, so that they can profit from the destruction which ‘should’ go to the home and family, and then ‘should’ be absorbed by the local communities throughout America. Instead, by this Welfare State cancer—Fathers wealth is immediately compromised at his paycheck. It never starts up the food chain which would help to enrich so many individuals from the bottom up. They demand that it ‘trickle’ back down through Welfare from the top down, by subsidy and through ‘entitlement’s’ and ‘grants.’ It is factually, a transfer of the males wealth to the Feminist “Village” and the Government’s supporting infrastructure.

What this has done to the Black Society in America has devastated them categorically across every social marker across the United States. The Black male is exponentially more probable to suffer gun use, drug use, teenage pregnancy, suicide, high school drop-out rates, imprisonment...really...the list is to long to categorize here. This has been a planned war against the lower classes of the Blacks, in favor of the white and elite classes of the United States. It was a planned way to engineer

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



their demise, and to control their population (or any population) by offering them the ‘salvation’ through the addiction of Welfare. Yet, like everyone else, the Black male and community do not recognize the problem, they know they are slowly sinking; yet they too, look up and blame the sails instead of the gaping hole in their hull for sinking their ship. It isn’t the sails: *it’s feminism* destroying and feeding off of these communities.

It is time that the Black American categorically rebuke feminism and Welfare. It is time that they assume their rightful position as men, and lead their society out of poverty, into the prospects of Patriarchy, which will allow individual men to gain wealth, to obtain a wife, to have children, and to work and keep his wealth in his family. They must control the female kinship system as the rest of us must do. This is the seed of progress which was chosen to invent modern Western culture, and the ancients as well as our Founding Fathers recognized this. In the present

## CHAPTER TWO

Matriarchal model, it is clear that the main benefactor of the Welfare State is NOT the children, as we shall see all too soon, they have been annihilated by the welfare experience, across the board. Any child within the grips of Welfare has a zero chance of getting out of poverty. It is planned that way. It is engineered for this solution. The Government elite want it no other way...the facts and figures proving this allegation are, plainly: I-N-C-O-N-T-R-O-V-E-R-T-A-B-L-E. Welfare, is planned to feed off of and destroy the children, as that seedbed is the future harvest of a panorama of 'Alphabet Soup' Government agencies which feed off and depend upon those future harvests for their future industries, interests, and controls.

"Our society fails to guarantee this support. We have a thirty percent illegitimacy rate and a sixty (no longer fifty) percent divorce rate with virtually automatic mother custody.

A judge may try a divorce case in the morning and place the children in the mother's custody. He may try a criminal case in the afternoon and send a man to prison for robbing a liquor store. The chances are three out of four that the man he sends to prison grew up in a fatherless household like the one he created in the morning when he tried the divorce case. He sees no connection between the two cases.

Fatherless children are 5 times more likely to commit suicide, 32 times more likely to run away, 20 times more likely to have behavioral disorders, 14 times more likely to commit rape, 9 times more likely to drop out of school, 10 times more prone to substance abuse, 9 times more likely to end up in a state-operated institution, 20 times more likely to end up in prison.

Fatherless girls perpetuate the next generation of fatherlessness, encouraged by the removal of the stigma on illegitimacy and by the growth of a government Backup System which is designed to repair the damage created by fatherlessness, but which actually encourages and subsidizes it.

Family instability and the resulting fatherlessness has produced children who are impulse-ridden, overly aggressive (or overly passive), drug abusing, with low self-esteem and poor judgment. Their educational performance is a national embarrassment.

Father custody, formerly mandatory and automatic, stabilized the mid-nineteenth century family. There were only a few thousand divorces annually in America when the Seneca Falls feminists complained in 1848 that in divorce mothers automatically lost their children, when in 1869 the English philosopher John Stuart Mill complained in *The Subjection of Women* that "They are by law his children." Between 1870, when judges began the shift to mother-custody, and 1920, by which time mother-custody was the rule, divorce increased by a factor of fifteen. Today's sixty percent divorce rate is wrecking marriage and the family and society." [*The Case for Father Custody*, by Dr. Daniel Amneus, Cover Sheet]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

From this, government through the courts is opening a gateway to all women and easily allowing them to enter the Welfare State. Women; through their own selfish interests and needs, are entering an engineered sophistry that is antithetical to they ever finding a mate within their own community, as their 'tough' choices from the very beginning in entering the Welfare State are undermining the male to which they are ultimately seeking. They are throwing away their males, and any allegiance they may hold to their race by 'marrying' Hillary's Welfare "Village" tribe. As Mr. Marshal laments: "They can find no males here." Of course not, the Black females have betrayed their males with their marriage to government and the attendant Welfare State! They know via the intrinsic lessons of Briffault's law which exist throughout the animal kingdom, that the women will consistently replace their males with the best thing that can support them. In this case the 'benefit's' of the Welfare State. This is because it provides the most secure assets in which women derive benefits from, and as we said before, most men cannot begin to match these benefits and *especially* the security. The Black American woman has betrayed her man and her race, for the chump change of Welfare and it's special government programs which binds her society, and her men, and her children into that generational slavery. Because of their own immediate greed, they cannot abstractly reason that in the final analysis, through this model, that Hillary's "Village" is going to enslave someone to 'pay' for her freedom. And it does, by generationally harvesting men (and soon women, for more women default on child support than men) in which to enslave, and steal from so they can keep the whole tribal Welfare state alive and constantly enslaved. This process has unwittingly harvested males within their and our populations generationally.

A few years ago I attended a meeting called by the news director of the local affiliate of one of the major television networks. In the wake of the highly publicized deaths of several children in Chicago, the director had pulled together people active in child welfare. He generously offered television time to educate the public about the problem of child abuse and its proposed remedies.

About thirty of us sat around a long heavy oak table in a luxurious boardroom. I was enjoying myself because the buffet table we loaded with good strong coffee, gourmet sweet rolls, and fresh fruit and juices. Then the meeting started. When the director asked for our suggestions, one of the first out of the starting blocks was an articulate, intense attorney for a well-known civil rights organization. She quickly set the boundaries. This is not a racial issue, she announced. As many white children as black are abused. The station would be acting irresponsibly if it showed only instances of black children being abused. Just about everyone in the room nodded in agreement.

## CHAPTER TWO

When my turn came I pointed out that race was the overriding issue. Cook County, which includes Chicago, is about one-third black, yet 88 percent of the abuse and neglect cases at Juvenile Court involve African-American children. The same situation bogs down child welfare and criminal justice systems in every major city in the United States. I pointed out that if we removed the so-called underclass from the equation, the attorney from the civil rights organization was correct. But the underclass—primarily black in our major cities because of our blighted history of slavery, segregation, and employment discrimination—is the equation....

The social workers, child welfare types, and lawyers sitting around the table coughed, blew noses, scraped chairs, sipped coffee, stared at their hands, or scratched stick figures on yellow pads. The news director diplomatically moved on. Knowing I was defeated, I waited fifteen minutes or so and then left, explaining I had to be in court. But the coffee and rolls were great. [*Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick T. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago 60622; ISBN 1-56663-163-7; pp. . 94-95.]

Because of Briffault's Law, low income females have a choice to select the best system that will provide for them or their children. They have clearly made their choice, and have selected the Welfare State. In fact, this paradox will not only continue, but broaden within the Black community (and all other communities) until Males within that Community, assume their proper roles superior to government within their own homes, and drive out the Welfare State by refusing to support it. What is saddest is that, Hillary's "Village" is now leaking over into the white and other populaces. In that regard, we have now become truly color-blind.

Presently, government has enslaved the Black man, by forcing him to pay for that enslavement. It is called 'Child Support'. As such, it is a fraud, as Hillary and those who support this system fully understand, the whole system is a fraud. And as noted above by Mr. Murphy, those who inhabit this system, don't want any other discussion to avert them from their 'daily bread.' Unfortunately, many in the black community don't realize that this 'feminist' Welfare construct is a new advent to their population. The blacks in inner cities did not display and entreat the underlying problems of which now permanently binds them to the Welfare state:

With many black men employed as sailors, the households far exceeded those of whites. Among Blacks between the ages of 15 and 40 in 1860, Females outnumbered males in New York County by 4,267 to 2672. Females accounted for 56 percent of the Black population. Similarly, 58 percent of the city's Irish were female in 1855. Irish and Black domestics shared a second demographic trait. Few had children. In 1860, there were ten percentage points fewer Black women with children than white females. Domestic work also lowered the Irish birth

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

rate. As poverty, drinking, fighting and desertion undermined marital relations, matrimony became devalued, and Irish Female Headed Households became common. [A *History of New York State*, David M. Ellis, ©1967, Cornell University Press, Ithica New York, Library of Congress Catalogue Card Number 67-20587, p. 11.]

Yet, oddly, it wasn't the Irish who were dragged down into the depths of Welfare's generational despair—it was the *Black* American population, *even though they had less children, and less families...*

Please note the full understanding of these facts and what they relate to, compared to a previous generation of Judges who made the insight that they had a duty to actually protect the male; from a case called *Fanning v. Fanning* in a court case stemming from the late 1890's:

### **Fanning v. Fanning**

“...As guardian[s] of the interests of the public and persons not parties to the record, it is our imperative duty to prevent dissolution of the marriage relation by means which the law condemns and expressly forbids.

An infant child is the issue of this marriage, and we cannot tolerate that its character shall be sullied and its career clouded by a Judicial conviction of the Father on such evidence of infidelity to the most sacred obligations. Since the “common-law marriages,” so called—another name for concubinage—is so obtrusively prevalent in the community, and our calendars are crowded with applications for divorce, it behooves us not to relax the stringency of the rules which, in the interests of good morals and social security, have been prescribed by law for the safeguard of the sanctity and stability of the marriage relation.

Daly Ch. J., and Bischoff, J. Concur. [*THE MISCELLANEOUS REPORTS OF NEW YORK*, Book 2, *Delehanzy, Judges of the Several Courts Reported During the Period Covered by this Volume*, p. 94]

Both past Judges and Society as well, had a sense to protect both the Father and more importantly, the Family from any denigration—for the good of morality and the social good. Presently, they have *completely* turned their backs on such self-evident truths and have abandoned their protections of the Family in ‘supposedly’ assuming the “Sir Galahad” complex of now protecting only the Female. From this modern feminist intellect, the “Family Court” calendars have exploded—something again in opposition to *Fanning’s* sage warning’s and admonition’s. The result has been a social pandemonium and anarchy which rages as various wars across the landscape of America. And any Father or group, social scientist, or politician who dares to challenge these facts, or even note the obvious, is quickly shouted down, attacked, and most importantly; either vilified or outright imprisoned. Presently, the courts have turned their back on both law and order, as within their own courtrooms and outside their doors flowing into the streets and schools and homes of America,

## CHAPTER TWO

they directly from the war that they intentionally created. As Dr. Amneus notes above, by overtly removing Fathers from their own children and from their own homes—these courts now establish and sustain various social pathologies directly related to their acts and omissions, that now fills our prisons, kills and wounds our children, homes and families, all under the direction and in the name of ‘freedom’ and ‘equality’ for the feminists.

### THE ULTIMATE PARADOX

---

Paradox. This is the force and weight of Matriarchy. It is the embellishment of Sophistries and disinformation within a society to obtain needed goals at the expense of others, with no attendant responsibility; all in the name of “The Best Interests of the Child”. Placing the propaganda machine of the media before the American public and incessantly inundating the public with the fallacies and sophistries of Modern Feminism, establishes the unholy combine of the media, the Feminist and Government in a managed program to undermine the American male, and thereby destroy the family: FOR PROFIT.

It is the support of the male: the father; who as head of the household which establishes individual wealth and prosperity, inculcates mores and traditions, and generally is the true binder and propagator of the two-parent nuclear household. This implementation of Full Patriarchy is the thing that combats an errant government, and keeps it within the control of its specified ‘enumerated authority’. Self-governance requires a robust, intelligent society. Matriarchy does not require a robust people, and it most certainly doesn’t require intelligence, it does however; require slavish obedience, and the ability to never question. This is the Ultimate Paradox, to either support the a robust society and thereby an ‘unbiased’ structured system of Full Patriarchy, and from that have a society grow in ascension, liberty and prosperity, with low social pathology indexes; or to conversely, support the ‘Equality’ and ‘Fairness’ and ‘Freedom’ of Feminism, which gains unlimited power and wealth to a ever-burgeoning government, with no limits, who imposes huge restraints on personal freedoms, with an extreme, never-ending social pathology index fed by the sexual anarchy that then reigns upon an unwitting society, (whose ignorance of course, again, feeds the power-construct of the Matriarchal Welfare archetype by allowing them to ‘create’ even more problems to solve and manage).

The average mainstream media indoctrinated modern citizen would quickly viscerally choose the ‘equality’ ‘fairness’ and ‘freedom’ of feminism, then; shortly thereafter wonder why he/she is paying so much out in taxes, and wonder why children are being killed upon the streets and wonder why there is a cop on every corner. Conversely, in accepting the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

structured and ordered system of full Patriarchy, they would revolt and wonder if the men were going to rage and beat their women and children inconsolably within the quiet unprotected sanctitude of their own homes—yet then amaze in their surprise at the order, prosperity, freedom and safety that such a system provides. They would wonder at the paradox presented before them.

Clearly, as William Pitt noted, it is the male and his supreme authority in the home which keeps government at bay at the threshold of each and every door. Take the father out of the home, undermine him, and you have lost the true underpinnings of the control of government, and thereby; for instance--no longer is there a need for any fourth-amendment warrant...they just come down and break-down your door as they do today. It is the individual acting in the status of “We the People” who controls the authoritative chains of the ‘enumerated power’ clause of an unrestrained government. Remove the Father from within his own home, undermine him as he lives there, and government now instantly becomes the Master of “We the People”. No longer does the American public have a protector living within the home as William Pitt declared, nor any authority over government whatsoever. The main force of power in the home has been replaced by the state through feminism. Remove Fatherhood, and the family goes into disarray, and more importantly, the real authority and control of government is removed. This is the most important part of the Feminist and Socialist agenda within this nation today. They are silently removing what groundwork the American system of governance has established over the past 400 years.

From case study to University studies, there is a clear correlation of the father within the home as the main disciplinarian which gives a family structure and limits. It is the placement of the Father within his own home that raises both children’s I.Q. test scores and scholastic test scores, just by the mere fact that he is there. Place a father in the home, and suddenly, you establish children within that household that have limits, with respect for the law, with a sense of identity; of family name and heritage; ergo: you tend to produce ‘super-children’ within these environments. Go to a Patriarchal society such as Japan, and you have children which astronomical test scores in relation to our test scores, a society with insignificant illegitimacy and teen pregnancy rates. A society with the lowest crime rate in the world. Follow that Patriarchal construct to this nation, and those households following the Patriarchal model indeed, follow that bell curve of establishing “super-children” within this society.

“Walter Miller’s (1958) well-known article, “Lower Class Culture as a Generating Milieu of Gang Delinquency,” argues that the lower class concern with toughness.



## CHAPTER TWO

Is probably related to the fact that a significant proportion of lower class males are reared in a predominantly female household and lack a consistently present male figure with which to identify and from whom to learn essential components of a “male” role. Since women serve as a primary object of identification during pre-adolescent years, the almost obsessive lower class concerns with “masculinity” probably resembles a type of compulsive reaction-formation. (P. 9)

Rohrer and Edmonson (1960) develop a similar analysis of the origins of adolescent male gangs among New Orleans Blacks:

Thus an organized form that springs from the little boy’s search for masculinity he cannot find at home becomes at first a protest against femininity and then an assertion of hyper-virility. On the way it acquires a structuring in which the aspirations and goals of the Matriarchy or the middle class are seen as soft, effeminate, and despicable. The gang ideology of masculine independence is formed from these perceptions and the gang then sees its common enemy, not as a class, nor even as a sex, but as the “Feminine Principle” in society. (Pp. 162-163)

Whiting, Kluckhohn and Anthony (1958) extended the hypothesis by arguing that “insofar as there has been an increase in Juvenile delinquency in our society, it probably has been accompanied by an increase in the exclusiveness of mother-child relationships and/or a decrease in the authority of the Father. (P. 70) [*The Myth of Masculinity*, by Joseph H. Pleck, ©1981, The MIT Press, Cambridge, MA, ISBN 0-262-16081-1; p. 97.]

Remove the father, and instantly; you tend to show immediate pathologies within the children. Place those children into the confines of the Single Female Headed Household and in the first instance, the social pathology within those children go astronomically off-scale, across the board within all limits of the social pathologies represented. The Ultimate Paradox is of course, is the implementation of Full Patriarchy establishes singular, maintenance-free homes and families, free from the watchful eye of government and the Superstructure of waiting Welfare programs standing at the ready to help needy families. Place the father within the domain of his own home, allow him to be a father, and instantly; government loses its eternally engineered Socialist Superstructure.

Government cannot, and will not have this, and will fight the re-implementation of Full Patriarchy at every instance. Like the War On Drugs, Welfare and the artificial enforcement of Matriarchy is a generational program, intended to be an eternal, ever-growing part of government. An Empire. Replace the Matriarchal “Village” family concept,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

with the Patriarchal “Ozzie and Harriet” concept of a Patriarchal Family, and you destroy the Welfare State categorically by the following ways.

1. **Matriarchal Societies are Debt based Societies, Patriarchal are Free Saving Societies.** You return the wealth of the nation back to those whom produce it. You go from a debtors society of one of savings. A government can more readily control a debtor society than it can control a society that is free from debt. Also, allowing those whom to produce their wealth to keep it, stops the “Welfare Filter” of the absconding of money, via taxes, special programs and outright confiscation. This alone will be a loss estimated in the billions, and not only that, it will be a loss of control for government, whom will no longer be allowed to delve into the personal savings issue of every American who are ‘mandated’ to support welfare.
2. **Matriarchal Societies are Slave-based Uneducated Societies, Patriarchal Societies require a Robust and Educated populace to viably survive.** Strange, yet the two are axiomatic. Matriarchal societies are socialist in nature, and as the natural extension of the Matriarchal society is the Single Female Headed Household which produces less-educated children. Those children are more likely to be unassuming and easily swayed by a Communistic/Socialist state propaganda machine. Patriarchal homes however, are those in which the two-parent household’s flourish, and the greater attendance to education occurs. These households are more apt to produce intelligent children, those who will not unwaveringly swallow anything a Government presents them with. The responsibility of Self-Governance requires an educated public, clearly the Patriarchal model is where this flourishes. From that, you obtain a Government restricted by a well informed, educated populace; which of course lead to free, just societies, ones that are ‘self-determinate’.
3. **Patriarchal societies Create a Nation of Personal Savings Funds which Propagates Private Industry.** In the “Golden Age of America” personal savings in this nation was XXX. These savings held in trust bank accounts funded Private Industry which provided 93% of the jobs in this nation. Presently, due to Matriarchy, we are a nation without savings. [show us vs. Japan’s savings] Now, Government provides 40% of the jobs within this nation and that percentage is growing. Clearly, Government exponential growth is intimately tied to the restraint upon personal and family savings, which are either taxes out from the populace’s use, or it is seized outright by an ever arrogant and burgeoning government.
4. **Matriarchy is the seed to fund Government growth and “Empirism”.** Through the well-established fact of the Single Female Headed Household propagating the majority of crime and social pathology within this nation, this is the causal engine that supplies and feeds the Superstructure of the Welfare State. Removal of Feminism/Matriarchal archetype from this society, will drastically collapse that monolithic entity.

## CHAPTER TWO

5. **Patriarchal Societies imbues the family over that of the socialist State or the Feminist tribal “Village” model.** Presently, through Ms. Hillary Rodham-Clinton’s assertion that it “Takes a Village to Raise a Child” will be completely eradicated through the re-implementation of Full Patriarchy. A Patriarchal society is one with lineage, history and tradition, which venerates its family and community. Matriarchal societies are that of a Tribal State, with limited if any sense of legacy and tradition. Matriarchal societies venerate the doctrine of *Parens Patriae*, the state as the ultimate parent, with absolute control and invasive authority into the panorama of human existence. Presently, families cannot make any decision without Government’s willing consent. In fact, there are Orwellian program’s being developed right now that will have a social worker assigned to a child, present in the birth-room upon delivery; that will be the sole agent for that child for life.
6. **Matriarchal Societies are those modern societies devolving. Patriarchal Societies are those ascending.** The tribal condition imposed by Matriarchy is a drain on a society’s resources, and thereby—as the outright failure of Soviet Communism indicates; socialism is a devolving pressure against society ascending. Because of this tribal social condition where wealth is transferred by the state, such societies most likely assume one of two states: either the first being stasis, or no advancement; and the second devolution towards destruction.
7. **Placing the Father back as the head of his home and family forces government out from being a superior law to that of the father in his own home.** Once you place family (the Father) as the main law in the home, government must retreat to its former constitutional role as being subordinate to “We the People”. The individual becomes once again supreme over that of government, as shown in Model one of Lawrence H. Tribes Constitutional Law.
8. **Re-Establishing the laws of Morte Main and the Law of Descents.** Once Full Patriarchy is re-established, the wealth of the father will be handed down upon his death to his children. Presently, due to the Welfare State, a Fathers wealth is seized by Government for government purposes and interests, to support its Empire and enrichment. This is done in the “Best Interests of the Child” (or other social doctrines which allow the state to steal) whom in fact at best only receives 27 cents on the dollar. [Show how for one dollar it takes a 1.63 to collect, yet only gives the child 27 cents of it.] Reestablishment of the laws of Morte Main and the Law of Descents will again, through children who will be the direct beneficiary of that Patriarchal instrument of protection, is the causal reason why societies tend to ascend using Patriarchy as the model for order within the society.

Clearly, Governments have a vested reason to align themselves with the false promises and the Sophistries of modern socialist Matriar-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

chy. Implementation of the “Equality” effect has a wide range and scope within a society, in very covert ways. Most societies have no idea they are being undermined, for each society feels the pain of every child and wants to help and they buy into this ‘protection’ through the doctrine of “In the Best Interests of the Child”. Clearly, it is the nature in cultures to believe in ‘original sin’, to create and vilify those whom Government vilifies and condemns. However; in this instance, this is the ultimate betrayal, for in the first as well final analysis, there never was a bogeyman within the American Father. Government and the Feminist needed to create one, and through their sophistries and propaganda, took a very unassuming and rare problem at one extreme end of the bell curve and exploded it to vilify the American male and Father so that society now believes all men are abusers! Presently all males and Fathers are inherently evil, and ‘must have’ done something terrible. Therefore, they must be controlled. Our society has been become conditioned to the national propaganda of Matriarchy, which they now believe unquestioningly. It has become a national mantra. Close analysis and empirical reasoning show only one thing: that children did not have the massive problems that were advertise to initiate the Welfare State, and presently, they are factually in worse condition now that the Welfare State is here.

These are serious charges. One that lend themselves to treason. For Factually, Matriarchy is exemplified in Radical Feminism, which is no more than a extreme liberal hate group, one bent upon gaining supreme privileges and “super-rights” that supercede constitutional authority. They do this at the cost of enslavement, and destruction. Enslavement of the Father and Society, and the destruction of our children, all, of course, “In the Best Interests of the Child.” This of course, makes huge profits within the Welfare state, who ‘manage’ these maladies that will never end or be solved...

“Be careful Lisa, most of those girls are lesbians, you know.” This was my mother’s rejoinder when, during a telephone call to her my sophomore year of college, I announced that I was a feminist. I remember a wry smile crossing my lips as her words echoed through my head. Her warning was a bit late: Unbeknownst to her, I had already come out as a lesbian. I found her prescience amusing, but I was more intrigued by the fact that even though she lived in the Bahamas, miles away from any organized feminist movement, my mother had fallen prey to that popular myth: All feminists are lesbians.

Bahamians hold no monopoly on misconceptions about feminism. The current U.S. sociopolitical climate is rife with rhetoric about man-hating feminists and feminists who prey on other women. Who can forget that during the 1992 presidential campaign, Pat Robertson wrote a fanatical fund-raising letter opposing the insertion of the word “women” into the Iowa state constitution? Robertson claimed there was a “secret

## CHAPTER TWO

feminist agenda” that was “not about equal rights about women [but rather about] a socialist, anti-family political movement that encourages women to leave their husbands, kill their children, practice witchcraft, destroy capitalism, and become lesbians.” [*Listen Up, Voices from the Next Feminist Generation*, edited by Barbara Findlen, © 1995, Seal Press, 3131 Western Ave., Suite 410, Seattle, WA 98121; p.45.]

Well, we must all be chagrined, that Pat Robinson’s and this poor mother’s alarms although wasted on deaf ears have in fact, come true for the most part. In being non-aligned with Pat Robertson, and in being directly on the front lines of the Fathers Rights movement, especially in battling the courts, and in researching not only the feminist agenda, but also its pragmatic, real life applications across this *nation*, I can factually tell you that Mr. Robertson’s prescience is in fact, dead on correct. The fact that this radical lesbian feminist, chuckles at her mothers concerns and warnings about Feminism being closely linked to Lesbianism, when the reality is totally true; it proves somewhat that there is in fact, a ‘secret feminist agenda’ being propagated upon college campuses around this nation. These are tax-funded government programs designed to implement Radical Feminism from the most remote American small town-enclave right up to our nations largest cities—all through the miracle of our present educational systems..

Intellectual trends in the law also left Bork relatively isolated. One of the most vibrant forces in legal academia was the Critical Legal Studies Movement (described by one of its leading members as a “political location for a group of people on the Left who share the project of supporting and extending the domain of the Left in the legal academy”). In terms of legal scholarship, this enterprise meant applying European literary criticism and neo-Marxist social thought to the study of legal doctrines. That, in turn, meant dismissing old notions of legal reasoning as historical artifact or the will of the dominant classes. For “the crits” (as they were known), law was a hegemonic struggle for power, and the vast body of judicial decisions reflected little more than a sinister desire to perpetuate the class, gender, or racial advantages of the lawmakers.

The crits deconstructed the law, exploding what they perceived as myths about the potential for objectivity or the value of tradition, history, and the common law. They deconstructed law schools, too. Duncan Kennedy, one of the movement’s founders, went on tour as a CLS evangelist with such “modest proposals” as equalizing the pay of janitors and professors at Harvard (where he taught) and having them exchange jobs for a while. Heirs to a sixties radicalism, the charismatic leaders of CLS charmed students with their “context smashing” doctrines while a follow-up army of feminist, multiculturalists, critical race theorists, and champions of gay rights borrowed deeply from such attacks on the established order. [Closed Chambers, *The First Eyewitness Account of the Epic*

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Struggles Inside the Supreme Court, by Edward Lazarus, c1998, Times Books, Random House, Inc., New York, ISBN 0-8129-2402-9, Pp. 236—237]

Government and the Media have aligned themselves to this liberal radical hate-group with its roots buried deep within the doctrines of socialism and anarchy, for their own concomitant gain and benefit. Clearly, there are hidden agenda's being implemented here, without the public's full knowledge or consent. They have falsely vilified the American Male and Father, whence other societies have not. They have enslaved the Father, imprisoned him, created a second-class citizen, and enraged a public upon the false doctrines and dogma of national propaganda, which is the only way they could have established, and continually maintained these outright lies. In fact, this mantra has gone beyond lies and deceptions and has become a sustained shrill staccato throughout the American experience: "save the children"—"not one more child."

Such are these charges that they go beyond treason, that they are factually: a terrible, terrible sin. They were needlessly brought, and they were pathologically hate driven and implemented against an unsuspecting public, and a totally bewildered male. They have brought a plague against mankind, all managed by an Imperialist Federalist Government, whom happily assumes the task of replacing the Father and in forcibly replacing him, and benefits greatly by doing so. The explosion of crime, prisons, and government empires are endless due to the singular replacement of the Father, but those within this monolithic system, do not care. They will never recognize that they are the fulcrum of the problem and that it is not the American Father, who was not the problem in the first place! The intrusions upon an unsuspecting public, whom must eternally and unquestionably fund these massive socialist superstructures throughout the government's empire, which of course, strangely, never accomplish their goal of 'solving' the said problems that created these empires in the first place! They have become an eternal blight upon the American landscape of freedom's and liberties, most of which have to be abrogated in which to defend against the pathologies which have become artificially produced and Legislatively sustained. Yet, these pathologies generate huge capital, and more than that; they inspire ever-increasing control of an omniscient, Orwellian, ever-pervasive and intrusive government over its own people, all in the "Best Interests of the Child" of course.

Clearly this Ultimate Paradox is no paradox whatsoever. What it has become is a systematic and surreptitious irruption against what was a once Free American society. It clearly was a planned attack upon the American people, who had no idea that it was coming, whom did not vote for the establishment of the Welfare State, and who in fact, even without

## CHAPTER TWO

having the tools and information of the true facts and figures presented to them, greatly deny and hate this system that was created and imposed upon us, by a Socialist oligarchy. The weakest element of this paradigm is through the autonomic consent to this system which is given by American's who unwaveringly and viscerally want what is in "The Best Interests of the Child". They have no idea of the scope of the perversion that they unwittingly delegate to Government and the Feminists in which they use to gain power and control within this nation to 'solve' these unceasing problems; yet, this is how that phrase has been used to implement destruction and havoc upon our children and families. It has become a Pandora's Box.

During World War II the Japanese who were desperate at the final outcome of the War in the Pacific, used children as a physical shield against bullets. They put their armies behind that shield, and placed guns upon the shoulders of those innocent children in which to use them in a similar paradox to hopefully overcome superior American forces who the Japanese knew would hesitate, and not shoot the Japanese army out of fear of killing innocent children who marched before them. The modern Welfare state does not only this exact thing, but also something worse; it forcibly removes the father from the children's lives and vilifies and criminalizes that same exact father, to allow Government and Feminists to intrude upon that home and obtain huge profit's and at the same time, to implement their socialist agenda against this nation, in which to subvert the American 'individualist' form of governance.

Indeed, this subversion has been given voice through the tribal pressures which now have become unleashed through the complete access of women to their supposed "freedom." They have escaped the supposed "tyranny" of the 'dreaded' "Problem With No Name," and have brought a tribal devolution to the American culture which has devastated generations of men, destroyed and killed children, developed them into several generations of a national uneducated underclass, all the while consuming several national budgets which should have been used to ascend this society. Because Fathers have been disenfranchised, they can only find anarchy throughout the institutions of America...just like Pat Robinson predicted above. So have other men:

I figured it this way: The world had taken away my wife and in compensation had made all women my wives. For a while it felt all I had to do was reach out and there one or two would be, beauty queens from remote Fijian Islands, eager to help me mourn. It was as though I was hopping from honeymoon, to honeymoon, when all I wanted was my wife in our Sunday morning bed with our boys on either side. But it was never her, my southern belle who had gone savage. She whom I wanted most had succumbed to military rhetoric over family life, turning into a kind of

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Apache Sado-Squaw. A member of some tribe warrior women who thought that the answer to an unhappiness they couldn't name was to scalp the men they loved.

...I was just sadder than hell because I was wasting my life suffering for her when there were women out there who were lovely and deep and maybe even true. [*Men on Divorce, The Other Side of the Story*, edited by Penny Kaganoff and Susan Spano, Harcourt Brace and Company, 6277 Sea Harbor Drive, Orlando, Florida 32887-6777; pp. 177-187.]

What must sound most remarkable through this man's pain and heartache; is that he is most eloquently describing the Tribal state of which Feminism is devolving this society into. He is describing what I am empirically observing throughout this book. The savagery, the rampant, uncontrolled and unrestrained sex, again—based within a freedom that has no concomitant responsibility attached to it. What is most saddening however; is that it is most certain that this man probably will not find a woman who is “lovely, deep and maybe even true,” for most cannot withstand the social pressure and anarchy of which Feminism empowers them with.

Yet, this isn't the saddest thing this system is developing and devolving us into. What most certainly this man's two son's will begin to experience, will of course lead to the next generation of destruction, of which Feminism has invested it with. America is quickly becoming Hillary's ‘redesign of Humanity’ however; nobody really knows what this redesign is about: all we are doing is recording the casualties in the wake of the Feminist national disaster, all the while Ms. Clinton and her immoral counterparts, profit immeasurably by this slavery and national destruction. Note the following documented casualty:

“I don't have a dad,” says Megan 8, a tiny blonde child with a pixie nose who gazes up at a visitor and talks of her hunger. “Well, I do have a Dad, but I don't know his name, I only know his first name, Bill.”

Just what is it that Fathers do?

“Love you. Kiss you and hug you when you need them. I had my mom's boyfriend for a while, but they broke up.” Now Megan lives with just her mother and older brother in Culver City, California.

What would you want to do with your Dad?

“I'd want him to talk to me.” She's hurting now. “I wish I had somebody to talk to. It's not fair. If two people made you, then you should still be with those two people.” And she is sad. “I'm not so special,” she says looking down at the floor.

“I don't have two people.” [*Children in Crisis*, edited by Robin Brown, ©1994, H.W. Wilson Company, New York, ISBN 0-8242-0853-6; p. 60.]



## CHAPTER TWO

This is no longer just the promise of modern Feminism, it has become our all too painful reality. We have been sold a bill of goods which is no more than a fraud, and surprisingly; they want to continue this massive conflagration—to propagate even more empires and socialist dreams. All the while the Fathers, Families, and children of this nation get decimated in the process. And a rising cacophony of a single question begins to sing from these small children which all begin to sound out the same question, “Where’s my Dad?”

Shoshana Alexander’s *In Praise of Single Parents* is a good example of second-generation advice literature. Alexander does not minimize or rationalize children’s grief at the loss of their intact family. Indeed, she tells story after story of sad children, mired in the misery of divorce. There is the story of Danielle, whose parents split up when she was three and a half. Immediately after the divorce the little girl comforted herself by adopting the Holy Family as her own and engaging in nightly conversations with Jesus, Mary, and Joseph, who, in her imagination, hovered at the foot of her bed. But nine years later Danielle has not “gotten over” her parents’ divorce. She still yearns for an intact family. She fills dozens of spiral-bound notebooks with her own stories with her own stories of happy two-parent families. ““ make up families,” she says. “That’s what keeps me alive.” According to Alexander, Danielle’s mother is stunned by the persistence of her daughter’s grief and mourning. “Even though I have been so aware of the lack she has suffered, and I have so much wanted to address it...I am astonished that I have not been able to do that...she has obviously experienced tremendous fragmentation.”

Similarly, the literature gives a painful accounting of the distress caused by an unknown or vanished or inconsistent father. Children began pestering mothers with the “daddy question” at an early age. Indeed, the testimonies of single mothers on the child’s early consciousness of father absence are consistent with the research evidence on children’s precocious awareness of fatherlessness. “It just broke my heart each time Trevor would ask the question: Why don’t I have a father who loves me?” one single mother lamented. Shoshana Alexander’s son, Elias, at age three wants to know who made his daddy go away. “did you make him go away?” he asks his mother. Then he raises his deeper concern: “Did I make him go away?” [*The Divorce Culture*, by Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, ©1996, Borzoi Book, Alfred A. Knopf, New York, ISBN 0-679-43230-2; p. 101.]

This failed social experiment now only goes in direct opposition to those American visionary dreams and precepts which we as a society have agreed to live under. As the beginning quotation noted which started this chapter: “No man can struggle with advantage against the spirit of his age and country, and however powerful a man may be, it is hard for him to make his contemporaries share feelings and ideas which run coun-

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

ter to the general run of their hopes and desires.” What is amazing is that doctrine of Feminism runs absolutely against the spirit of this nation—yet it is flourishing...all the while many of us (mostly poor) devolve. This is the present paradigm we men must solve. How does something which is so countervalent to our American form of government, survive when our contemporary society is also against it?

This is the real paradox we must have the courage to meet, analyze and answer, before we can hope to answer these children’s more important questions about the problem of Fatherlessness in their lives...

---

## CHAPTER THREE

---

*"In the man's desire, conscious or unconscious, to identify and keep his progeny is the beginning of love. In a civilized society, he will not normally be able to claim his children if they are born to several mothers. He most choose a particular woman and submit to their sexual rhythms and social demands if he is to have offspring of his own." [Men and Marriage p. 14]*

### **THE COURAGE TO RULE WITHIN A HOME**

---

Government applied Feminism against the American male has created a mass of destruction within the American home and family similar to the effects of Tecumsa Sherman blackening major portions of the south using his 'scorched earth' policy during the American Civil War 1861-1865. Both American's and Males have silently taken this upheaval with regards to this war specifically raged upon them in relative silence, yet the costs have been enormous. The results staggering.

"40% of children in fatherless homes have not seen their father for at least a year." [*State of the Fatherhood, Father Facts*. Quoted in McKenzie, October, 1997]

"40% of children in fatherless homes have not seen their fathers for more than one year. 58% have never been in their fathers homes." [Wade Horn, National Fatherhood Initiative]

"Although judicial pronouncements have exposed gender neutrality in terms of parental custody (McIntyre and Sussman 1995, Westfall 1994, Wyrauch & Katz 1983), the reality is that more children are living with neither parent (4%) than with father-only (3%), (69% of children are living with two parents and 24% of the children are living with mother only." [U.S. Bureau of the Census 1996]

What we see just by these figures alone is that 40 percent of all children in this nation have zero contact with their father. What other war or conflagration or pestilence has eradicated the father to such an extent within the American experience?? Figures such as this go beyond the realm of social engineering and in fact display the fact that a rather debilitating reality that 40 percent of this nations total children population have been left as fatherless orphans. What we are speaking to here are tragedies that align themselves beyond the level of war, famine or other national tragedies. Clearly, the scale of destruction against the American male and Family have been incredible...incomprehensible.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Strangely, this has all been done in the clear light of day, as **government policy** all confirmed as being **“In the Best Interests of the Child.”**

The statute of 1776, commonly referred to as “The Declaration of Independence,” document’s how men can easily be oppressed and more importantly, how they suffer such denigration:

“...That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness. Prudence, indeed, will dictate that Governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shown, *that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed.* But when a long train of abuses and usurpation’s, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these Colonies...” [The Declaration of Independence—July 4, 1776.] (Emphasis mine. RLCII)

The American Father, and more importantly American children have suffered immense losses, all by the design of Feminism along with a complicit government which has acted in direct contravention to American law, history, and custom. The catalogue of lost lives and wealth alone is incomprehensible. If the reality of our lost economic legacy and heritage every became public knowledge, there would be mass killings directed against the Elite socialist engineers who have betrayed this nation by their willful errant complicity in implementing this Socialist design against the American home and father. But Fathers are *willing to suffer*, if they are convinced that it will help their children. This is what the State has depended on throughout the design of this Welfare Machine, that as noted above, that ‘mankind are disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable’—they have compromised the basic sense of sacrifice and fairness ingrained within the American male in order to accomplish their more ulterior despotic designs.

American Fathers, and the Fathers Rights movement, in turning away from these realities of a 40 percent Fatherlessness figure and the insane destructive costs of pursuing the mythology of modern Feminism have disposed them and their progeny, to unconscionable suffering. While these men and groups somehow find comfort in withstanding the honor in enduring such usurpation’s and despotism, they have not met the domestic enemy amongst us—and instead of meeting that challenge, they have

## CHAPTER THREE

errantly turned away and allowed a cancer to propagate beyond proportions—by accepting it and not challenging these tyrannies. Now this domestic enemy has destroyed several generations, of mostly poor Americans; and in its feeding frenzy, is now harvesting more and more of America through the destruction of the American Father and thereby the American family.

I have met the American Fathers rights movement and have found great dedication and much consternation and even more desperation among its members. Unfortunately, we currently have a court system that has religiously dedicated itself to Anti-Americanism Feminist Social Engineering in direct contravention to American Law, Statutory Law, the Common Law and Natural Law, not to mention the basic tenants of Western Civilization. It has done so unfettered by any meaningful challenge thus far, for; in its basic design it is engineered to be predatory as it attacks each male singularly upon any petition, assertion or declaration of a wife, girlfriend, or third-party interest. From this inception of attacking each man individually with the collective force of the Federal and State Government's as a whole, few men survive. In the best-case scenario, men who immediately lay down and comply only have hundreds of thousands of dollars stolen from them, including most certainly—the lives of their children—which will either diminish or be eradicated in front of them...for many of these men encompass the 40 percent figure above. Those who oppose this system gain no help from either the legal, Judicial or Executive authorities of the state *for there is no redress by design in this present system*. When this happens, the question reduces to a simply axiomatic reality: "Where do you go when the state becomes the criminal?" As Brad Rhunt asks us: "Where do you go when the Judge won't obey your law?"

Clearly, the answer is nowhere. For both the Legislative and Executive department's fully understand the illegalities that are being pursued here—but the fact is that the theft is too great, and they cannot stop it, nor do they wish to stop this destruction. They are addicted to their profits of which this perverse system generates.

With American President's such as President Clinton having to establish publicly-funded "defense funds" in which to enter our own court system to fund *their trials*--in regards to average Fathers and Father Rights advocates it shows that the courts are abjectly hopeless--in reality; no average American can afford today's courts. Frankly, the courts have become ground zero where the domestic enemy resides; for this is the Maginot line where the actual conflagration against American males occurs. If President's cannot afford these courts—how can the average man?? It is from these 'courts', in which government is assured of harvesting thousands of American males through the Feminist sponsored

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

‘enrichment’ and ‘entitlement’ program’s now propagated by design by all the Legislatures, offered to women to help her abrogate the marriage contract, cash it in, and destroy the family. Both the Feminists and government are well aware of the impact of this offer, and from known demographics; County, State and Federal government budgets can be planned years in advance, because of the profligate profits garnished by this Socialist-Feminist system which it supports females. No singular man can stand up against this Monolith. No nation of men can either.

“They point out that the United States conducts more jury trials than any other nation, about 160,000 annually in state and federal courts.”  
[*America’s Courts on trial, Questioning our Legal System*, by Elaine Pascoe ©1997, The Millbrook Press, Inc., 2 Old New Milford Road, Brookfield, CT 06804, ISBN 0-7613-0104-6; p. 38.]

It is this realization of the Men’s movement, that indeed; they need to comprehend that law is in fact lost to them. The courts are lost to them. The hope of any justice is betrayed. Factually, there is nowhere these men can go; so the great majority “fall upon their swords” because in fact, there is no further redress within such corrupted tribunals. More importantly, the ABA trained lawyers, who are in fact; only hired “Officers of the Court” entreat men towards this destruction. They help the Judiciary more than they’d ever attempt to help their clients. They are there to help harvest men, and to exacerbate the problem, keep it alive, to groom it by Legislative act, and thereby allow both the courts and the lawyers to continually benefit from this needless conflagration. If there were a true ‘lawyer’ class residing within our system, this Socialist “Family Law” would have been Constitutionally challenged and defeated thirty years ago. The fact that it hasn’t, only proves that the American Fathers Rights movement is fighting a joined monolith of interests, ranging from the Judiciary, to the ABA, to State Legislatures, and throughout all three branches of government.

If the American court system worked as originally designed and justice were offered in these tribunals, then; there would be an immediate increase in Fatherhood applications to these courts of up to 20% to 50% in which to resist and fight this un-American monolith which is now destroying them. Presently, however; because of the courts well documented injustice, less than 1% of men ever challenge either the outright theft of their children, or the destruction of their homes. In the present court environment guilt is an assumed fact, even if they know you are innocent. What is most amazing about this figure in regards to men entering courts—is that this 1% percent is on the rise! Talk about courage within the male species!

## CHAPTER THREE

**We will control juveniles...** In the early 20<sup>th</sup> Century, juvenile courts were created to deal with the new immigrants to the United States. These courts were less concerned with justice and more concerned with social control. By the 1960's the juvenile system was available to all levels of society, not just poor immigrants. This 'control' became known for its procedural nightmares, arbitrariness and cruelty. Cases were poorly presented, inadequately prepared, and yielded decisions based on the personal opinion of a judge....

**The Destruction:** The beginnings of a "witch Hunt" started as "pass through" reporting was mandated for all professionals, to create a steady stream of rumors to feed these agencies. It was in this way that they crusading mentality of the Social Scientists turned the child protections agencies into the largest peacetime weapon ever created to destroy family relationships.

**Continues....** The federally funded agency expansion, coupled with the original abuse in the juvenile courts, form "The System" of today. The System where all of the denial of rights in juvenile courts (poorly prepared cases, no right to counsel in some instances, no due process, no equal protection of the laws, no right to confront and cross-examine hostile witnesses especially mental health professionals) are overshadowed by the efficiency of family destruction done by the agencies. [Where Have all the Good Fathers Gone? Child Support and Custody, by Douglas O'Brien; ©1997, Skid 18 Press, P.O. Box 60630, Fairbanks, AK 99706; ISBN 0-9637496-2-5; pp. 24-26.]

Therefore, the present American Fathers Right movement is completely fractionalized due to the fact, that they can come to no consensus as to how to attack these criminal courts. This is because they cannot recognize that the courts are only a well-engineered trap. **They don't work—and they are not supposed to work. They are there to deny Fathers their rights, and to destroy families and to profit from that planned destruction. They presently violate their most basic legal foundational tenants. They are there to factually impose Social Engineering against the American society.** They are based on a no-win scenario. Thereby, any Father or Fathers Rights group trying to impress fairness, law or even justice upon this system is destined to lose, by the courts own design! Any Father or Fathers Rights group even thinking that they are going to somehow communicate any 'logic,' or 'sense' into this system is severely deluding themselves. This is a planned destruction by a criminal court system with no apparent reasonable redress. History has documented such Judicial criminal aberrance before. The following documentation may seem all to apparent and real to many fathers whom have suffered such immense injustice at the hands of 'our' Judiciary:

"Judges and members of the legal profession were so eager to purge their institutions and their country of Jewish influence that they, beginning

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

already in the first few months of Nazi governance, often outran the legal mandates that the regime promulgated. In October 1933, one Berlin court upheld the dismissal of a Jew from administering an estate, ruling that the people's pervasive hatred of Jews "made it seem inadvisable to retain a Jew in office, even in the absence of a special law to this effect." Earlier that year, in July, another Berlin court provided a more sweeping justification for judges taking such initiative in the battle against Jewry. According to *Die Juristische Wochenschrift*, the most important German legal periodical, the court, writing with obvious approval, pointed out "that a revolutionary legislature [the Nazis had been in office but six months] naturally leaves loopholes which ought to be filled by the Court in applying the principles of the National Socialist *Weltanschauung*." The German judiciary—almost all of whom had taken the bench during Weimar and therefore were, at least formally, not "Nazi judges"—was composed of such ardent racial antisemites that leading Nazis (bound to the belief that the eliminationist program should be legally governed) chastised judges for having violated the law in their rampant eliminationist ardor. Interior Minister Wilhelm Frick similarly tried to reign in all those under his jurisdiction, including many holdovers from Weimar, from extending the eliminationist measures beyond the laws that the regimes had made. The judiciary's extensive contribution to the persecution of the Jews during the Nazi period reveals its members to have been zealous implementers and initiators of eliminationist measures. The judges composed a group that was obviously bristling with anti-Jewish hatred during Weimar, and then, when Hitler took power, was freed to act upon these beliefs. In this sense, the judges, all their education and training in law notwithstanding, were like so many other groups in Germany. With the judges, this transformation is simply that much more glaring." [Hitler's Willing Executioners, Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust, Daniel Jonah Goldhagen, Borzio Book, Published by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., @1996, Distributed by Random House Inc. New York, p.97]

NO FATHER CAN PRESENTLY ENTER THE AMERICAN JUDICIAL SYSTEM. It is a Chinese Finger trap—only there to ensnare him, to destroy him, to compromise his interests, to destroy him, and thereby; American law. I have indeed suffered such arrogant realization of this fact by one Brad Rhunt of the Butte County Investigative District Attorney's office in Oroville, California. In a phone call with me he at one point asked me: "*Where do you go when the Judges won't obey your law?*" Clearly this was a direct affront to reason and to justice, and to every Father in America—not just me. Clearly, what was being said here by someone within the system itself, was where can you really go now for either law or justice, if the Judges don't obey it anymore? This is the exact paradigm the Jews of WWII faced front of the Weimar Republic courts and this is exactly what all Fathers face in front of our contemporary court systems. Mr. Brad Rhunt was making this exact point obvious



## CHAPTER THREE

to me, that there wasn't law available anywhere, that really I couldn't go in today's courtrooms....but that I should 'just give up.' This is the subliminal message that has been overtly impressed upon all men's minds, and to which all courts have succumbed to. This message has been received loud and clear as most men, on the order of 99% of them, do not even attempt to engage with this criminal system. (This in itself is proof that our system of government no longer works.) No longer do we find the courts which defended the home and marriage by defending the father as we saw in Chapter two under the case *Fanning v. Fanning*. No longer do we have courts that provide simple justice "as though the heavens would fall." If we did, the American judicial system as we know it, as well as Welfare as we know it—would completely collapse...for they all know where their "daily bread" comes from. They fully know and understand that they are harvesting the American male: for profit.

"The public welfare demands that constitutional cases must be decided according to the terms of the Constitution itself, and not according to judges' views of fairness, reasonableness, or justice. I have no fear of constitutional amendments properly adopted, but I do fear the rewriting of the Constitution by judges under the guise of interpretation." [Hugo Black - U.S. Supreme Court Justice. Columbia University's Charpentier Lectures 1968]

From this it is no wonder that the American Fathers Rights movement is fractionalized for we have nowhere to go for justice. This fact—is a direct indictment of our present Judiciary—no father, nor any Fathers Rights organization, should enter these courts—it only exacerbates their intrinsic corruption. As Lord Coke noted earlier, when the maxim of law fails in regards to who is Lord and Tenant of a property; "for that by infringing of a maxime, not onely a generall prejudice to many, but in the end a publike incertainty and confusion to all would follow." Clearly—how can they begin a movement when there is no foundation for success of the movement except anarchy and confusion within the present court systems? Where there is no redress?!? Government no longer obeys American law that allow the Father as the head of household or in which protect the home and family. It doesn't even follow it's own tenants and maxims! No wonder why the Fathers Rights movement is confused! Judges have abandoned a premiere function of not only obeying their own laws, but making sure that the other two Branches have not overstepped their authority, nor—even allow the people themselves to exceed such limits.

"Armed with the power of declaring the laws to be unconstitutional, the American magistrate perpetually interferes in political affairs. He

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

cannot force the people to make laws, but at least he can oblige it not to disobey its own enactments, nor to act inconsistently with its own principles.” [*Democracy in America*, by Alexis De Tocqueville, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York, Inc., p. 176.]

Of course, the Judiciary has become criminally errant in this responsibility. Although this was done without a single vote, and although the American public has no real knowledge of what is really going on, ‘our’ courts are doing the exact opposite to what our American Law and heritage really is. Of course, if you didn’t know, this is all being done “In the Best Interests of the Child.” Yet, conversely, the Fathers Rights movement has no idea upon what platform to rally. As the cite above indicates, the American Judiciary is treating Fathers the same way that the Nazi’s treated the Jews in 1939. Where could the Jews go for justice? How did they get ‘Law’ applied to their lives?

Factually, they didn’t. There is a cogent plan to civilly kill all Fathers, just as there was a cogent plan to annihilate the Jews, and take away all there rights and **especially their property**. Remember, support of the father is support of the family, which is support of rugged individualism thereby the American free form of government. There clearly is no money in this for Socialist infrastructures who like Ms. Hillary Rodham-Clinton, cannot tolerate Sovereign self-expression and independent success. Remove the father and you immediately revert to a Feminist Matriarchal structure of the “Village” which will have all the support and infrastructure ready, willing and able to capture, control and most importantly, eternally manage their respective markets of Family, Support Services and Prisons. Conversely, place the Father back into the Family, as head of the family—and suddenly; a lot of Welfare program’s simply disappear. Frankly, there is no wealth to be gained by supporting Fatherhood, for with stability, with order, with a secure home and family—you don’t need the greatest part of these Feminist Welfare Programs.

So, the Fathers Rights movement is fractionalized because of no pragmatic foundation at law that any court will recognize, respect or obey anymore. Presently, the movement is divided between “Joint Custody” and “Patriarchy” camps. At no time can they accommodate their disparate belief systems within the movement for each are diametrically opposed. As Lord Coke earlier noted, no Lord or Tenant can occupy the same land—so too it is with “Joint Custody” and the “Patriarchal” factions within the Fathers Rights movement. No two parents can own a single child. Only one must rule. When the Father is thrown out of his function, then; the State will rule. In our past history the Father just didn’t rule his home, he established the basic tapestry of the political boundaries of this nation. From this, marriages were stable, homes safe, and children were safely secured. Today, the woman rules basely with a

## CHAPTER THREE

vengeance within today's court system. She marries the state, and from this social anarchy reigns. This has factually caused family breakdown, exploding divorce rates and a panoply of attendant social pathologies which have destroyed millions upon millions of children: generationally ... plus, it has overthrown our system of governance in the process.

In the Fathers Rights movement, the Joint Custody portion of the movement is best demonstrated by the term "gut feeling." These people feel that 50/50 "Joint Custody" will solve the problems for fathers in the Fathers Rights movement **if the courts just 'get it right.'** If not that, then at least it will solve their own problems. Many aligned with this camp think by "their gut feelings" and adhere to joint custody because they 'feel' it is fair and equal. They want to have the courts disperse justice in an equal fashion, and they want more access and rights to their property, and children. Their mindset is likened with the reasoning of the Feminists and the Courts: that of 'being fair' and 'equal'. Clearly many have to agree with them, fairness and equality appear to be good, and upon separation or divorce the mandate that things will be run fairly by an impartial court system is the culmination of an intelligent solution to a very tough problem. Many people who advocate such joint custody are intelligent, caring people, who spend much time and effort helping others in support of their issue, and they also spend much time and effort trying to amend their system as best they can. They have also convinced themselves, that indeed, "*even if*" the Patriarchy camp is right and America must return to a system of Full Patriarchy, and that truly is the proper solution to the Fathers Rights community problem; that **government** will never allow such a proper solution again...Patriarchy is dead because government *wants* it dead.

I have met and like many of these people and have struck up steadfast friendships and relationships with them. It is hard to tell these people with such visceral "gut feelings" that they are completely wrong.

In Los Angeles in the summer of 1998 I met with a group of fathers belonging to this philosophy. I listened intently to one eclectic gentleman named John Smith, a member of ANCPR who indicated that we had to get the fathers rights movement disparate factions together and support Joint Custody, as it was in reality—the only sane solution. His reasoning was eloquent and persuasive, citing many knowledgeable experiences about the social pathology and abuse that was hitting our children. When I pressed him as to why the Patriarchal solution wouldn't work, he indicated that it offered no real solution to the wife-beating issue and child abuse issues that men perpetrated against defenseless wives and children. This of course is the main fracture within the Fathers Rights movement—everyone cares about the abusive, out-of-control parent.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

I had heard this classical defense all before and was smiling when I asked him “where do you get your facts and figures?” “Where does the scientific data state that men are abusers within the home?” He vacillated a bit, then; after a while as I continued to push, he reluctantly admitted that he didn’t know. “I have a gut feeling about all this,” he finally said in exasperation, explaining.

I knew he had a gut feeling. Most all fathers and most all American’s have a gut feeling from this and it comes from the incessant indoctrination by the propaganda machine of today’s media. The public whom is abjectly ignorant of Fathers Rights and the true sense of this issue also has “a gut feeling.” But all these “gut feelings” are categorically wrong. I then cited him the facts:

Abuse figures show that most women are responsible for domestic violence in the home. for instance, Research from the Child Protective Services shows that abuses by state were: 67% mothers, 33% fathers in Virginia; 70% mothers, 30% fathers in New Jersey; 68% mothers, 32% fathers in Texas; 62% mothers, 38% fathers in Minnesota; and 67% mothers, 33% fathers in Alaska. In comparative studies such as the 1994 study by the Toronto Institute for the Prevention of Child Abuse, a study of child maltreatment showed that 49% were abused by mothers and 31% were abused by fathers. These are well known statistic’s throughout the University community and State Agencies handling children and child abuse, although the general public is stunned and factually cannot believe these figures when they are presented to them. For example:

“In September 1989, a Social Service Officer in Milwaukee County, by the name Terrence Cooley, wrote an inter-office communication titled “ADFC Child Abuse Information,” a copy of which found its way into the editorial office of *The Family in America* pointing out that of the 1,050 cases of child abuse and neglect in that county, an astonishing 83 percent occurred in households receiving Aid to Families with Dependent Children (read: Single Female-Headed households.) [*The Garbage Generation*, Dr. Daniel Amneus, Primrose Press, Alhambra CA 1991, p. 86]

After citing the facts in this issue, John was quite stunned. Most people are. I then at that instant realized that for the Fathers Rights movement to succeed, it needed to become informed and know it’s own product. Without that solid scientific foundation, we would be kept adrift from each other in a sea of “gut feelings” most of which would be wrong. Clearly, we cannot build this movement from mythology or gut feelings. We are factually going up against the most powerful nations upon earth. Each father who resists this persecution and despotism applied by government isn’t just fighting a traffic ticket or a simple misdemeanor. Each father is singularly going up against his District Attorney,

## CHAPTER THREE

the court, the Legislature, the County, the State, 49 other States, the Federal Governments, the Department of Health and Human Services and the IRS all enjoined together in an organized crime syndicate enjoined with Feminism and special interests who are **severely** interested in stealing from each and every other Father (and ultimately his progeny) in this nation. The State's economies, power and 'black budgets' are directly linked to he 'the Father,' and they are willing to civilly kill the father or worse in which to force him to submit and become a lifelong slave to them. In the scope of this realization of the outright war that is being applied against Fatherhood, the Fathers Rights movement cannot be 90% correct. We have to join at the scientific level of the facts and figures of what is really happening in regards to the home and family. Once that happens, all segments of the Fathers Rights movement can join together—because there is agreement upon the truth. From this platform of agreed facts and figures, we can comity and thereby become a viable force.

This will not be a hard endeavor for the Father's Rights community because the empirical facts and figures in relation to this subject are clearly on our side. (Pick up any newspaper and watch the daily documentation of this Feminist war rage throughout our nation which I will document in Chapter X.) Not only that, we not only have the moral high ground in regards to this issue, but we also have the organic law and social Constitutional compact on our side. Upon these solid foundations the Fathers Rights movement can coalesce, however; clearly, Fathers **must** know their product in which to join and then force change upon this issue. Presently, ignorance, supposition, and outright silence are the worst enemies to our cause. We all vacillate in a sea of "gut feelings."

Finally, it is upon the erudition of the Fathers Rights movement of the facts and figures that have demarcated this plague that the Feminist have imposed against society that should intellectually bring the Fathers Rights movement into the Patriarchal camp. I say 'should' respecting the divergent opinions of others, but I also say it pragmatically as a System's Engineer. My study of this issue coincides with what I believe human civilization decided upon 5000 years ago in which to solve this problem: Patriarchy. Western Civilization followed this route, the English established this lawful heritage, and Colonial America embraced it. This thing they chose, established and developed was Patriarchy. More than that, every Father should be factually noting that we already are in a state of "Joint Custody" within the American court system!!! Clearly, we can see that this does not work; it hasn't worked; nor will it ever work. That "Joint Custody" in fact, failed miserably... It is in fact, a Pandora's box that once opened, does not equally share the children, in exact accordance with Lord Cokes' Lord/Tenant observation: no two people can own the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

same property. With joint custody, you are asking the criminal wolves to guard the sheep again. The second you open that Pandora's Box, you corrupt the world with the harpies of anarchy and special interests which will descend upon "Joint Custody" within the family and pervert it again, and again, and again, into its present form of pestilence. Those that doubt that fact, and those that doubt the courts ability to 'get it right' need only to reread Lord Cokes' passage above and to study and recognize our past history in this regard. Implement Joint Custody in this nation, and you will eternally have growing empires of courts—which will continually devolve this nation and drag it into complete devolution. Do this, and you eternally overthrow the promise of American freedom and liberty, and thereby, eternally enslave man and society to failure.

Did the police and Judges of the Antebellum South "get it right": when they enslaved blacks? How about a century and a half later when Martin Luther King sat in prison after prison for doing something as sublime as "Standing in a Bus station"? How about the workers in the early 20<sup>th</sup> century who struck for better pay and working conditions, such simple things as clean water and a cool place to work, did the courts "get it right then? How about the Japanese whose major crime was being Japanese during WWII? No...courts, police, and government's don't 'get it right'—they are the main malefactors to our problem. They are—the wolves. Our history and the domain of history is replete in demonstrating that Judges and Judiciary are all too easily corruptible, and in the first analysis, they are the main inspiration and implementers of tyranny and injustice. (In direct contravention to their office and their oath of office and the Constitution, which by the way—a fifth grader could comprehend, implement and easily follow). The Fathers Rights movement must have the courage to see and analyze the past, and more importantly, to call a spade a spade and mark the truth as it sets. Clearly, we can get no help from either the Judiciary or the Bar Association of America—the facts show they are in fact—the largest part of our problem and must be dealt with accordingly. They are obeying law just as much as the Judges did in the Weimar regime during WWII. In fact, if they 'did get it right' this would have never been a problem in the first place, and millions of men and children wouldn't be suffering because of it!

From this foundation, we must recognize that if we and the courts are in a perverse state of "joint custody" already—then, under this domain, we cannot expect "joint custody" **ever** to help the fathers movement, even if judges do 'get it right'. But, lets pretend for the moment, just for discussion here; that they did 'get it right' and this society obtained an amazingly fair court system that did not persecute or destroy fathers upon separation or divorce. In fact, the whole United States had a purely 50/50 distribution of children upon this issue. The underlying plague of di-

## CHAPTER THREE

orce, crime, drugs, teenage suicide and the panorama of social pathologies that are killing our children and burdening our society would still be there—still coming from the Single Female Headed Households. Because the woman would still have an avenue to destroy and compromise the family: to cash it in, as we all recognize they are presently doing. So, “Joint Custody” in its failure to address that fundamental issue, cannot ever be an answer, for the pathology in creation of the Single Female Headed Household has to be clearly stopped, and eradicated from this society. For it is the Single Female whom is the engine that creates these panoply of Government services, because of the fact that she needs state provided subsidy to exist!

More importantly, the economic drain against society, our individual homes, our children and communities would still be there. Again, the feminist plague would be alive and well. The worst thing however, is that upon the full implementation of the Joint Custody Fathers Rights faction, the father would still not rule within the home, which—would allow the most virulent portion of this feminist plague to exist; and that it the portion that destroys the home in the first place: missing Fathers. Fathers have a proper place and function within the home and “Joint Custody” never acknowledges this function, and thereby, denies fatherhood in the first instance. Because “Joint Custody” enjoins with the “freedom” to allow women to destroy the home and the marriage—this condition factually removes *the reality of function* in regards to males. Allow people the anarchy of “freedom” to keep divorce rates high, and you thereby destroy the true function of men within our society.

Again, know the product of what I am speaking of here. We are speaking of a Feminist system that is diametrically opposed to America and Free societies; of individualism and Free Enterprise. We are speaking of a system that as a cancer attacks the society silently from within, singularly home by home, and like cancer attacking a body, a single cell at a time by attacking and disenfranchising the FATHER. Feminism is that cancer: the destruction is logarithmically cumulative. We are speaking of a system that is diametrically opposed, *and at war with Western Civilization*.

If the Joint Custody Fathers Rights movement obtains and realizes all its dreams, the underlying pathologies still remain. In the final analysis, nothing really changes. However; what is most disappointing is that under this scenario of the Joint Custody movement winning outright the Patriarchal Fathers Rights movement is doomed. We get nothing from such an association for our agenda is to simply rule and control our own homes, which is our proper place and birthright. We are not willing to share this God given natural right—as apparently the Joint Custody Fathers Rights coalition are willing to do so. We are Fathers and are man-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

dated to assume that responsibility, above and beyond any such de facto belief system such as *Parens Patriæ* is a supreme doctrine over that of the rights of the individual father.

This courage to rule within ones own home is uniquely American, and was developed and supported throughout Western Civilization. This of course contributed to a great extent to the burgeoning prosperity and individual wealth within the American society. In subsequent chapters we shall catalogue this success in which to show the strength of this philosophy.

However conversely considering the outcome, of an alliance between the Joint Custody coalition and the Patriarchal faction, in which to follow our Patriarchal agenda, the Fathers Rights movement would quickly assume a national coalition and stature that would outstrip all prior social movements within this nation. Simply stated that upon the realization of Full Patriarchy, the Joint Custody coalition realizes everything they want and more, for the fact is that Joint Custody would be the lowest common denominator or the worst thing that could happen to any Father upon separation or divorce under Patriarchy. But instead of the Court, government and Feminists controlling the division of property and labour, it would be the father openly and willingly contracting away his rights point by point under a Patriarchal system. He would do this by consent, in contravention to the present system's application of coercion and fraud by the court systems enforcement of *fraud by way of inducement*. Presently, under the present system, the father contracts away his right by default at birth, or by silent judicial notice—unknown to even the most scrupulous father. But again, under a Patriarchal archetype, upon separation or divorce the Father most certainly would control everything, keeping his children, his Family, and property—disbursing nothing out to foreign derogatory influences. For the father as Lord Coke notes, would be Lord over his own land (his children in this case).

Under this construct, welfare and divorce, along with Feminism and the Plague it has set upon this culture—would quickly--and simply collapse. But again, Fathers who did want Joint Custody could easily contract away their rights. Fathers that did want Full Custody would also obtain their rights which they cannot do under the present corrupt system; and this is what we must think of here. Presently, these fathers are completely betrayed by the present malicious system, and also those who would implement “Joint Custody” which would also abrogate such fathers interests.

Clearly, such an alliance would bring together both groups for each coalition's effort to implement Patriarchy by default would concurrently assure Joint Custody for those who chose to contract away such rights. Even in this scenario, the benefits would be immense for most



## CHAPTER THREE

certainly—upon this paradigm shift of the controlling Father, (*not the Judge*), the interface to the systems of the courts and legalese would be streamlined by at least 90%—due to the fact that divorce and destruction of the family would no longer be big business for them. Simply put, they wouldn't want to deal with it because there would be no money in it.

So under this alliance, if the Fathers Rights movement joined forces under the banner of Patriarchy, all could win. If however, this alliance is reversed to where Patriarch's worked to implement "Joint Custody" (which the courts, government and feminists already say we have), then upon that effort, upon any victory—the Patriarch Fathers Rights movement would receive no benefit from that association and they would be left with nothing.

The biggest success if Patriarchy were reestablished in this society, would be in the Reinstitution of the American nuclear family which undeniably has been under outright attack for the past 50 years. This is the real underlying benefit to such an alliance, for in the final analysis, because there no longer is any economic incentive to destroy the family, divorce rates would most certainly revert back to pre-1950 level or approximately 10 to 15 percent. Currently divorce rates are at 63 percent or *higher*, for second marriages, the divorce rate is an astonishing 75 percent!

One of the main purposes of this book, is to allow the Fathers Rights movement a platform to "know it's product" of the many facts and figures in relation to many issues which most well meaning Fathers Rights advocates are totally ignorant of. The second purpose of this book is to inspire a movement of men, who, contrary to contemporary public doctrine, will defy Government and Feminists and simply: stand-up and be men to assume their rightful position within the home and family.

The main purpose of this book is to education, and to formulate a viable Fathers Rights movement, and to give voice to men and women who have been destroyed by this system. We must have the courage to rule within our own homes, and more importantly, we must learn the tolerance to allow other fathers to do the same.

### IN THE BEGINNING

---

"In a study published in 1861, Johann Bachofen claimed that the mother was the original focus of civilization. Since then, considerable research in the fields of anthropology, psychology, myth and ritual, and archaeological excavations, have vastly increased our knowledge of the role played by the female in early cultures and early notions of deity. Some have argued that the word was once inhabited by a matriarchal culture, and that later, perhaps around 5000-6000BC, there occurred a shift towards Patriarchy. Certainly the symbol of the nature Goddess is of very

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

great antiquity. The symbol of the cosmos as a 'world egg' occurs in various forms. Yet later, after the emergence of distinct God figures, there is considerable evidence for the prevalence of the female God in many ancient societies. [*Experiencing God, Theology as Spirituality*, Kenneth Leech, ©1985, Harper & Row Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, N.Y. 10022, ISBN 0-06-065226-8, p. 350]

One fact glaring in regards to the men's movement is that we don't know where we came from. I distinctly remember as a child reading the National Geographic magazine about tribes and ancient cultures across the planet. One of the first things I wondered was that "How in 1960 can they still be living in the stone age? Why haven't they invented houses? Running water? TV? Why are they still suck in mud huts hunting with bows?" Clearly in a child's mind this problem is perplexing. As a Patriarchal influence in the Fathers Rights movement I can tell you that analysis of this problem and more importantly, the *answer*; should become a mantra to every living male across the planet if they understood the real implications of this question. Simply put, the answer to that childhood question is answered above. "Something" happened to mankind approximately 5000 to 6000 years ago...that something just happens to be perhaps the most benign, yet powerful human invention ever created: Patriarchy.

Like fire, like the wheel, like nuclear technologies, Patriarchy was mankind's greatest invention. Unlike the aborigines and other latent tribal cultures that graced the covers of National Geographic and Scientific American, Patriarchy forced men to harness the power of sex for the good of himself and mankind, which in turn developed a highly advanced Western Civilization. Such a small thing seems incongruous at face value, but upon contemplation—that base discovery harnessed a society and created something never seen before in the prior 250,000 years of mankind...and that was...the two-parent nuclear family.

Ozzie and Harriet, Fred and Wilma, Mary and Joseph...even Fred McMurray as Father Knows Best...this was the 'invention' that released man from the stasis and quagmire of Matriarchy and created a system to where he could assume his rightful role (as well as the woman) both working towards become a family. This was a quantum development from the previous 250,000 years where tribal cultures held mankind either in devolution or a complete stalemate. "The creation of patriarchy was an evolutionary development, just as the destruction of patriarchy now taking place is a de-evolutionary development. The War Against Patriarchy is especially dangerous because nobody seems aware of what's going on, aware of the strategy, tactics and weapons being used, of what men need to do if patriarchy is to be saved." [Case for Father Custody, p. 76]

## CHAPTER THREE

Eugen Weber a professor of anthropology at U.C.L.A. marks this delineation of civilization which he notes occurred approximately 5000 years ago. He notes that all gods up to that time were female, and that the cultures were Matriarchal and Matrilineal in nature. They were 'Tribal' and as such, were in a state of constant war. If one tribe saw that another had a surplus of horses, for instance, it would attack that tribe and steal their horses. Surplusage it appeared, was the key to creating civilization, without it—there could be no time for art, mathematics, engineering and many of the higher order developments of civilizations. More importantly under Matriarchy, surplusage could not be held in a Tribal society, because someone would always steal it. It was up to this point where a social transformation first arose to whence the first "Seed-Kings" were seen in religious ceremonies. It was these "Seed-Kings" Weber declares, which were the proto-formation of all modern European Kings. At this approximate 5000 year demarcation point, in conjunction with the "Seed Kings", Male religious Gods appeared—pushing out the Female religions of the time. From this Neo-Patriarchal structure a new stability was created, war dwindled, and because of this stability—man could establish and retain his surplusage. From the accumulation of surplusage we see the first formations of modern Western civilization start to take root and grow.

"When little was known about the Kinds of the first two dynasties—and even less about pre-dynastic period—what appeared as a sudden cultural advance at the beginning of the First Dynasty was described by some scholars as the incursion of a new "master race" into Egypt. Supporters of this hypothesis pointed to carvings such as the ceremonial slate palettes found at Abydos, the 'painted tomb' at Nekhen, and the appearance of people traditionally known as the 'Followers of Horace' as evidence for their claim." [*Ancient Egyptians, Life in the Old Kingdom*, by Jill Kamil, ©1984-1996; The American University in Cairo Press, 113 Sharia Kasr. El Aini, Cairo, Egypt; ISBN 997-424-392-7 p. 39.]

Clearly, this was the establishment of Patriarchy. Ancient societies apparently made a cogent decision to select Patriarchy over Matriarchy. We can see the reasons for this in anthropological writings:

"The tribe was like a larger family in those days. There might have been a headman, who would have been the boldest of the hunters, but little if any system of government. The women did all the work, and looked after the children, and meant more to them than the Father, whose place was with the hunters. So much was this case that the custom grew up in savage races of tracing the descent of the mothers side," p.55

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This is a classic definition of a tribal construct. No father, just hunter-gatherers, no motivation for males, children kept with Single Mother Households, in other words: the "Tribe." You almost see this same exact construct in the American big city ghetto's where feminism has hit hardest.

"Our inner cities," [Vice President Dan Quayle] said, "are filled with children having children, with people who have not been able to take advantage of educational opportunities with people dependent on drugs or the narcotic of welfare."

I made a special point of expressing concern over how "If a Single Mother raising her children in the ghetto has to worry about drive-by shootings, drug deals, or whether her children will join gangs and die violently, her difficult task becomes impossible." That remark came pages before the single sentence that would create the real ideological firestorm of my Vice Presidency: "It doesn't help matters," I said, "when prime-time has Murphy Brown—a character who supposedly epitomizes today's intelligent, highly paid, professional woman—mocking the importance of Fathers by bearing a child alone and calling it just another 'Lifestyle Choice'." [*Standing Firm, Dan Quayle*, by Dan Quayle, ©1994; Harper Collins Publishers, 10 East 3<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022, ISBN 0-06-17758-6; p. 319.]

This is anything but a lifestyle choice. It is a direct assault on the American form of Governance, by an alternate socialist system that is willing to feed off the past fruits and wealth of what our society built. The Feminists and socialists will use this nation's vast resources and wealth in which to try and see if they can get the institution of socialism 'right.' Russia couldn't do it, so they are willing to sacrifice this complete wealth of this nation and use whatever they need in which to accomplish their goals. The only cost that has to be incurred in which to accomplish this is the complete subjugation and economic destruction of the American Male. This of course, goes hand in hand with their plan.

Indeed, all we have to do is to compare these inner city ghetto matriarchal structures, which inhabit our poor, and which government feeds off of, and builds empires from. Here is a description of what most tribal societies encompass:

The basic social unit was matriarchal. The large family made up of children, parents, grandparents, cousins, uncles, and aunts, and deference to the oldest woman in the family, who settled most disputes and exerted most authority. An Indian child took on the name of his mother, a practical procedure in a society where the chase and warpath of ten brought death to the males. Child bearing women of the privileged families nominated the civil sachems, and they also had a voice in deciding matters of supreme importance to the tribe. All real property, both land and huts, be-

## CHAPTER THREE

longed to the women. Compensation for a woman's life required twice the amount of wampum as that for a male's, convincing evidence of the high regard with which females were held. [*A History of New York State*, David M. Ellis, ©1967, Cornell University Press, Ithica New York, Library of Congress Catalogue Card Number 67-20587, p. 11.]

If this sounds remotely familiar, it should...for we have been breeding and designing this exact model here in the United States through the implementation of feminism over the past 50 years. It is the ghetto model we now experience today. Here is one parents nightmare, and a brief glimpse into our future as the present situation appears to *force* her to submit to this condition:

Leon Valley Elementary  
7111 Huebner Road  
San Antonio, Texas 78249  
PH: (210) 706-7385  
Fax: (210) 706-7391  
<http://www.northside.isd.tenet.edu/valleyww/index.htm>

Dear SIR:

Or is the accurate address really Madam? It seems I have been engaged in a type of game with the Northside Independent School District for a little over 2 years now. I dislike games. I especially do not like games regarding our son's education.

In the spring of 1997, I contacted the District office for information about enrolling our son in school in the fall. I was told he had to be 4 years old on Sept 1st in order to start Pre-K. I can accept that. Our son has the misfortune of being born a few days late, so I waited. I requested information about the curriculum, to be told I need to ask the school directly.

In the spring of 1998, I again contacted the District for information about enrolling our 4-Year-old son In Pre-K in the fall, and was told to contact Leon Valley Elementary (LVE), directly. I asked the district about the curriculum our son would be taught and if I could obtain copies. The district sloughed me off and directed me to the individual school, ignoring my request again. Am I to believe that the districts have no idea what their schools are doing? The nice lady I spoke with at LVE informed me that "No, your son does NOT qualify for Pre-K" that fall, because he SPOKE ENGLISH! Nothing had ever been mentioned until this point that our son was to be discriminated against because he is AMERICAN. The nice lady at LVE was kind enough to BRAG that they do not JUST teach ENGLISH to the poor unfortunates that do not speak it, which sounds unconstitutional to my non-legal mind.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

In the summer of 1998, I again contacted LVE to see if our son could start Kindergarten. Our son again had the misfortune of being born a few days too late for the Sept. 1st cut off. I had nurses and caseworkers from a home health agency contact the district to see if possibly there could be an exception because of a second surgery I was required to under go. The answer was that nothing could be done, that no assistance from the school or the district could or would be made. I can accept that.

I cannot accept what happened this spring when I once again contacted the NISD! I know our son would be eligible for school this fall. Yet no one can provide me with information about his curriculum. Am I supposed to believe that the districts are so unconcerned about "education" of our son that they still have no idea what is being taught in their schools? The horrendous results posted on your own web site from the schools within your district suggest that this is the case-that your motto is "Let's NOT teach the children -let's just lower the standards."

When I contacted the LVE to obtain information, I was met with the most blatant anti-male bias I have witnessed in my life-and this is bias against a BOY! The lady I spoke with could not accept that we have a son, not a daughter. When she rattled off the list of items needed for registration on April 13th, 1999, after being corrected regarding the sex of our son, it was "Her Social Security Card", "Her proof of residence", "Her shot records", and "Her original birth certificate". It did no good to correct this woman after each item and inform her I have a son, as she continued on with her biased list for a female child and never once corrected herself. She seemed incapable of saying "his", or apologizing for her anti-male attitude. Bringing HIS original birth certificate would be difficult, since we were caught in the flood of Oct 1998, and she asked if "SHE was born here", I stated "NO, HE was born here". She suggested bringing a duplicate of "HER birth certificate" and I asked what good a duplicate of "HIS birth certificate" would accomplish when I was just told I had to have an original.

Maybe this seems trivial and petty to you, but if you had sons, you would probably agree that it is, at the least, frustrating for them to constantly refer to HIM as HER! This is clear anti-male bias, and our son hasn't even started school yet. How will he be treated when his parents aren't around to observe?

Upon inquiring about how many male teachers there were for kindergarten, I was informed there were none. I inquired about how many male teachers there were in the entire school, and she seemed proud to report they have a MALE PE Teacher, and 2 male para professionals, "but they are ONLY assistants".

It is not an idle observation that schools like NISD are doing so poorly because of such attitudes and the lack of competent men teachers. The evidence abounds that the flight of male teachers from education coincides precisely with America's fall to the lowest country in the world in most test scores! (See Attached Graph) It is a little bit clearer how we manage to spend so much to get so little. What America has done to its citizens with this feminized education is criminal--it is beyond reprehensi-

## CHAPTER THREE

ble. (Stats can be found to back this up here <http://fathers.ourfamily.com/-satincome.htm>).

Our 5-year-old son will not work for many years & child sweatshops and child labor was outlawed years ago. He is thus not required to show HIS (not her) social security card to enroll in school. Even if you planned to pay him wages, we as his parents will deal with whatever taxes might be required of a minor child. Requiring a child to show a social security card, to receive an education, is a naked attempt by a government agency to systematically number and dehumanize its citizens. In an identical fashion to Hitler and his concentration camps, where children were branded with numbers just before they were gassed or shot. Fortunately, Texas courts have ruled that social security cards are not national Ids and cannot be used for any purpose other than social security.

We must presume that the reason children are required to have a social security card for school, is in direct correlation with the implementation of the STW (School-To-Work) program. Where this is a blatant attempt of the government to take over control of our children, it is a topic all in itself best left to another time. However, let it be noted we strongly oppose this program.

As his parents, we teach our child every single day to treat others with respect. The blatant anti-male bias witnessed in the past few days is abundant evidence that our schools spend too much money, yet can't teach our children. You seem to believe that parents will just accept their own tax dollars being used to fund anti-male bias against our own sons-essentially funding the destruction of their futures? But it is clearer than ever why parents who home school provide a far greater education for their sons than they could ever hope to obtain in Public School. My experience with your school supports the just-released study on home schooling, which proved test scores and social development for home schooled children, are superior to that of public schools. With the anti-male biased attitude I have experienced, we will provide a home schooling curriculum, which meets the basic education goals of reading, spelling, grammar, math, and good citizenship, in a bona fide manner.

Your web site reports that only 4% of your teachers are men, which is much lower than the national average of 25%. It is an utter disgrace that America's educators believe that education is so unimportant that only a quarter of its teachers are men. How can boys learn about masculinity, respect for the opposite sex, "workplace discrimination", when they start out witnessing the worst form of anti-male bias imaginable right in their own classrooms, hour after hour, day after day? They might not know that all of the countries, which score considerably higher than the US in international tests, have considerably higher percentages of men teachers, but we adults do. We also know that all of those other countries which score as low as ours also have a low percentage of male teachers, <http://fathers.ourfamily.com/educate2.htm>.

We hereby request the following:

1. The precise curriculum you plan to use to teach our son.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

2. The affirmative plan you will implement to hire enough men to achieve 50% men teachers in the district.
3. A letter from you describing how you plan to correct the chronic anti-male bias described above.
4. Assurance that our tax dollars will be handled responsibly enough that at least half of our son's education will be with men teachers.
5. Standard test scores for the district and a method for tracking their improvement as more men teachers are hired.
6. Your assurance that anti-male bias against both boys and men is a violation of your official policy, and will be eradicated now.

This letter has been distributed to the NISD, LVE, the Texas Education Agency, Internet discussion groups, Governors of every state, Senators of each state, the 1 million Signatories to the Fathers' Manifesto, and other people who should care about the decline of our public schools.

Sincerely,

Lynda Griffin  
5612 El Verde Rd  
San Antonio, TX 78238

A disgruntled Parent who is fed up with feminism and anti-male bias in education and who guarantees you she will do something about it!

Clearly we can see the anger this woman has in regards to the intentional impressed devolution of feminism intruding into her home and family. However, the Fathers rights community must recognize, that conversely, *it is they; the recognition and creation of father as the head of household which created civilized society in the first place!* Although humanity first construct was 'the natural state' which held mankind in a virtual stasis for a quarter million years of matriarchy, it was the advent of the father, and the two parent family, which made humanity 'civilized.'

The first Englishman who showed more than superficial familiarity with Aristotle's derivation of the entire social order from the primitive household was Sir Thomas Smith, one of the leading diplomats of Elizabethan England. Smith saw in the household the first commonwealth, which he regarded as a private aristocracy. After acknowledging his debt to Aristotle, he said:

So, in the house and familie is the first and more naturall (but private) appearances of one of the best kindes of a common wealth, that is called Aristocratia where a few and best doe governe, and where not one alwaies: but sometimes and in some thing one, and sometime and in some



## CHAPTER THREE

thing another doth beare the rule....The house I call here the man, the woman, their children, their servants bond and free, and all other things, which are reckoned in their possession, as long as all these remaine together one, yet this cannot be called Aristocratie, but Metaphorice, for it is but an house, and a little sparke resembling as it were that government.

The government of the household transcended these private bounds through sheer expansion; in the process, the private, metaphorical aristocracy became a monarchy. When a household grew too large for efficient rule, and the children married and desired partial independence, they were sent out by their parents 'to roote towards the making of a new stocke, and thereupon another house or familie'. Eventually, this multiplication of households became 'a streete or village', and they in turn 'joynd together [into] a citie or borough'. When 'by common and mutual consent for their conservation', several of these units were ruled 'by that one and first father of them all, it was called a nation or kingdome'. This development, Smith reasoned, was the 'most natural beginning and source...of all civil societies', which were originally held together by the natural inclination of men to obey their ancestors: 'For so long as the great grandfather was alive and was able to rule, it was unnaturall for any of his sonnes or offspring to strive with him for the superioritie, or to go about to governe or any wise to dishonour him from whom he had received life and being.' [*The Authoritarian Family and Political Attitudes in 17<sup>th</sup> Century England, Patriarchalism in Political Thought*, by Gordon J. Schochet, © 1988, Transaction Books, New Brunswick (U.S.A.) and London (U.K.), Transaction Books, Rutgers—The State University, New Brunswick, New Jersey 08903, ISBN 0-88738-695-4, pp. 50-51.]

We are not only in fact the impetus for civilization, we are the guardians of civilization. Patriarchy, is the structured establishment of political rule of a society from the home, to the village, city, and nation itself. The father, is in fact, the fountainhead of law, and justice, just as the Kings of England held that title, it systematically evolved from the 'invention' of the male lead, two-parent nuclear family which accrued order, stability and thereby wealth so that civilization could take hold, and thereby flourish.

Indeed, humanity has recorded the dichotomy that rages between tribalism (the natural state) and Patriarchy (the ordered 'civilized' state):

WHEN ENVIRONMENT IS DECISIVE Lest anyone doubt that environment matters in the development of intelligence, consider the rare and bizarre cases in which a child is hidden away in a locked room by a demented adult or breaks free of human contact altogether and runs wild. From the even rarer cases that are investigated and told with care and accuracy, we know that if the isolation from human society lasts for years, rather than for just

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

months, the children are intellectually stunted for life. Such was, for example, the experience of the "Wild Boy of Aveyron," discovered in southern France soon after the Revolution and the establishment of the first French Republic, like an invitation to confirm Rousseau's vision of the noble savage. The 12 or 13-year-old boy had been found running naked in the woods, mute, wild, and evidently out of contact with humanity for most of his life. But, as it turned out, neither he, nor the others like him that we know about, resemble Rousseau's noble savage in the least. Most of them never learn to speak properly or to become independent adults. They rarely learn to meet even the lowest standards of personal hygiene or conduct. They seem unable to become fully human despite heroic efforts to restore them to society. From these rare cases we can draw a hopeful conclusion: If the ordinary human environment is so essential for bestowing human intelligence, we should be able to create extraordinary environments to raise it further. [The Bell Curve, Intelligence and Class Structure in American Life, by Richard J. Herrnstein and Charles Murray, c 1994, Free Press Paperbacks, A Division of Simon & Schuster Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN0-684-82429-9; p. 410]

Mankind clearly needs Patriarchy more than it needs Matriarchy which is exemplified through the raging sexual anarchy it impresses across any society. Tribes are tribes due to the fact, as shown above, that they adhere to female kinship system. In a highly technological society such as ours, clearly, the choice must be delineated to Patriarchy, which of course is exactly the opposite of what our present government is supporting.

## KEEPING FEMINISM ALIVE AT ALL COSTS

---

As we have seen, feminism has fulminated gender-wars, with the hate group of Feminists, combining with Government and the media to portray men in a continued bad light. Through Television, Radio, and the Print Media, a virtual Orwellian "People-Speak" of incessant media propaganda denigrating the Father. This is *planned*. As presently, through the Radical Feminist vast power base, they have embedded those select persons throughout the mainstream media, television and even the movie industry, and they have implemented policies which now groom everything of which you see to make sure it aligns with the new Feminist social order and standards.

## CHAPTER THREE

“In the fall of 1996, GLAAD (Gay and Lesbian Alliance Against Defamation) asked me to be its entertainment media director, a position I happily accepted. This new job has allowed me to link my activism with my knowledge of the entertainment industry. I work with entertainment industry professionals as an adviser/consultant on projects with gay and lesbian characters or themes. For instance, when *Ellen* was planning its coming-out episodes, I consulted with the writers and producers of the show, including Ellen Degeneres herself. I helped to make the scripts more realistic by clarifying gay issues and situations. (I also had a cameo on the show, portraying a social worker at a gay and lesbian community center.)

I work with such shows as *Hard Copy* and *Entertainment Tonight* on a regular basis. Any time they do a story that contains a gay issue, they consult with me on the best way to present the information. Recently, I worked with Universal Pictures and producer Sean Daniels on the film *The Jackal*. The studio executives were worried because in test screenings audiences had cheered during a scene in which a gay man was murdered. I worked with the filmmakers on editing the scene in a way that made it clear why the Jackal character killed the man, eliminating any possible homophobic motives. I also worked with Jack Valenti, the head of the ratings board, and the producers of *As Good as It Gets*. The word *fag* was used in the trailer by Jack Nicholson’s character, and Valenti thought it might be offensive. [*Family Outing*, by Chastity Bono, ©1998, Little, Brown & Company, Canada, ISBN 0-316-10233-4; pp. 179-180.]

You most certainly, will not see more traditional values impressed upon this new revolutionary Feminist order, for in this new established mind set, you won’t get the opportunity to ever see such opposing views aired.. From this they have established and indoctrinated a scapegoat within a society: the American male; and from this they have created their bogeyman, as they cannot accomplish their agenda with out him. Similar institution of hate propaganda is well documented throughout history. Every society which has established these construct’s of a Alpha class of elite’s over a Beta class of Plebiscite’s has ultimately collapsed within the boundaries of their own hatred.

### *The Murder of Marriage*

The murder of marriage is a particular atrocity because it was mostly the act of a small and narrow elite. As difficult as it is to believe, the historical record is fairly clear: In the early seventies marriage was radically transformed and the traditional marriage commitment outlawed in a way that has endangered the economic and emotional well-being of millions of women and children, largely to please lawyers.

In 1966, before the no-fault revolution, only 13 percent of Americans believed divorce laws were too strict. As Harvard professor of law Mary

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Ann Glendon notes, "Discontent with fault-based divorce seems to have been felt more acutely by mental-health professionals and academics than by the citizenry in general." It was not an anguished public, chained by marriage vows, that demanded divorce as a right. The revolution was made by the determined whine of lawyers, judges, psychiatrists, marriage counselors, academics, and goo-goo-eyed reformers who objected to, of all things, the amount of hypocrisy contained in the law. [*The Family, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Mary E. Williams, book editor; ©1998; Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, pp. 69-70.]

Indeed, this is clearly reflected in contemporary times, by the present collusion between the specialized triumvirate of elite whom engineered this failure: the Feminists, Government and Media. This Specialized triumvirate has profiled men in not only a bad light, but with hatred imbued in their messages. In virtually each and every News Story, the man is held responsible for anything the woman either commits or alleges. Only one side is documented: usually the woman's side. In stories where the Father is driven (and he is externally driven, he would never dream of doing this by himself, essentially; he is forced to do it—because there is in fact, no alternatives to this system) insane and murders his family and/or children; the only thing said on behalf of the man is: "he was experiencing a divorce/separation"...and that is it.

Nowhere do you see women held up to such visceral contempt. In no News story, do you hear explanations, or facts and figures in which may support the man's side. Indeed, as in the case of the man who drove a tank on national TV in Los Angeles, and who crushed cars in a maniacal way, to vent his frustration against this system; NO news station had the guts to inform the American public that this was a father who was driven insane by this system, and his intentions were to drive this tank to Family Court to crush that building. Indeed; inexplicably, the American public watches such dynamic images—yet—the media surprisingly never tells the real story as to 'why' these things happen.

Yet, when this special triumvirate applies its propaganda against the Father, only one thing is presented to the national viewing audience, and that is; how can we penalize Fathers even more? From this spin and Propaganda, the national public has no idea what the true facts and figures are in regards to this issue. Thereby; when Government passes even more strict and reprehensible laws against fathers, the plebecite can only agree, due to the fact this special triumvirate allows no other viewpoints to enter the discussion.

In fact, even within the hallowed halls of Government, these issues are parsed in only the Feminist light of reason. Any Father's Right's organizations are not even allowed to be part of the mainstream discussion,

## CHAPTER THREE

in fact; are barred from entering the room or joining in. Thereby, it is no surprise that laws get more and more heinous to where Fathers are the most persecuted segment of the American Population. Under this bulwark of the special triumvirate no segment of the population can escape or even endure. This perhaps shows why Fathers (as well as mothers) go insane and kill their families and children when posed with this Government applied terrorism.

They fully intend to implement this terrorism at all costs. Indeed, in the foundations of early feminism we but caught a glimpse of this ugly hypocrisy:

"The third women's rights convention in the United States was held 19-20 April 1850 at the Second Baptist Church in Salem, Ohio...the convention had a particular characteristic: it was officiated entirely by women. "Never did men so suffer. They implored just to say a word; but no; the President was inflexible--no man should be heard." The women leaders even refused men the right to vote or sit on the platform. [*Women's Progress in America*, by Elizabeth Frost-Knappman, @1994 ABC-CLIO, Inc., 130 Cremona Drive, P.O. Box 1911, Santa Barbara, CA 93116-1911, ISBN 0-87436-667-4; pp. 265.]

Indeed, this evil lineage is much more malevolent today than it ever was in the 1850s. Where they used Patriarchy's inherent fairness to gain a political platform, presently, Radical Feminists, the Courts, and especially the media themselves are attempting at all costs to hide their ugliness and failures. Indeed, this goes along with Eugen Weber's corollary that Tribalism "is in a constant state of war."

Not a dollar. Not a nickel. Not a penny. I can paraphrase [the Judge's] remarks but not the venom in his voice as he snarled that Frank was a *junkie, whore, thief*...

That evening, my two-year-old son Joey cried out. As I rocked him, I thought of those services. DCFS's files reported that between the ages of two and four, Frank and his sister lived with foster parents who locked them in a basement and tossed in baby food for them to eat. When Frank was four, DCFS figures something was wrong and removed the children. The kids went through several other foster homes in the next year or so. His mother dropped out of the picture. His father, a Vietnam veteran, had committed suicide. Frank only had his sister. When Frank was six, DCFS took her away from him.

Frank shook his head but could not or would not articulate [his grief over the judgement.] That night, as I held my now sleeping son and stroked his head, I knew. I knew that from the time [Frank] was Joey's age he had cried out and wept and pleaded until he was empty. And what about those who should have heard his cries, whom we pay to hear his cries, and should have helped? They called him a junkie and a whore.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

I went back to bed but could not sleep. I got up, went to my desk , and wrote essentially what you have just read. The next day I sent it to the *Chicago Tribune*. A few days later an editor phoned. He liked the article and wanted to publish it. But he wanted a DCFS response. I agreed.

Several days later I was told that the director of the DCFS and several of his top aides would attend the next conference with Judge Rovner. At the conference the officials were all smiles while their lawyer grimaced in the background.

Would I consider settling?

Of course.

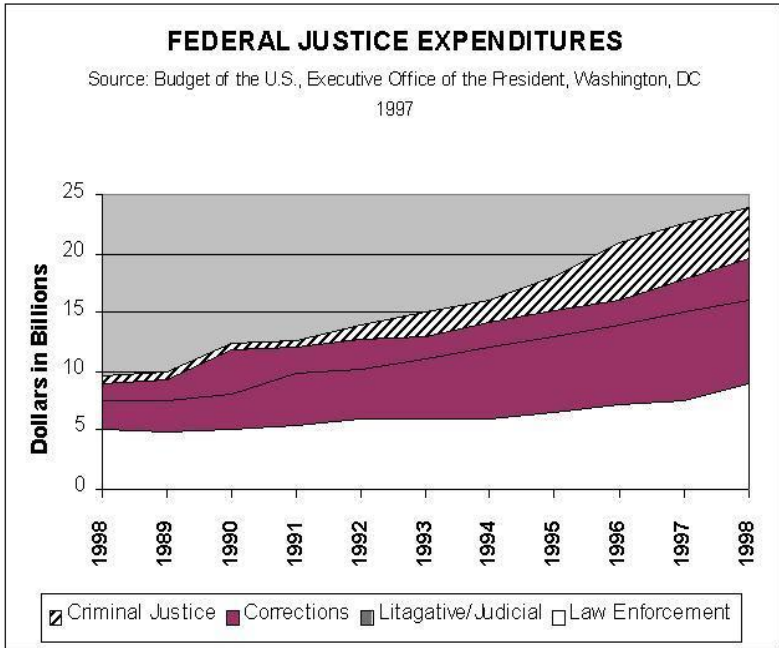
Then the director turned to the judge. They would give Frank a very substantial sum, more than the private agency. But there were two stipulations. First, I could never publish exactly what the settlement was. Second, I had to withdraw the article from the *Tribune*. I accepted.

The agency, like any government bureaucracy, would not mind years of litigation and even a substantial adverse judgement. After all, taxpayers would support both the litigation and the judgement. But one word of adverse publicity? That strikes at the heart and soul of the bureaucracy and cannot be tolerated. Confidences must be protected. [*Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick T. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 Norht Halsted Street, Chicago IL 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; pp. 126-128.]

Again, this exactly demonstrates the extent that these people will ruin others lives. Note that Mr. Murphy above, fully understands the principle that these new Feminist Elite within the government sector do not care how much money they enslave you to. Why should they care? *YOU are funding this constant state of war*. Because to them, it's all infinite debt to them—they pay no penalties for their treason's. Therefore, they have established a machine that will go to any lengths to incarcerate you, enslave you, take you to court on the most frivolous of legal issues—as long as they get paid for it and as long as they keep all such conflagrations absolutely secret from the national plebecite. This is something we have noted also. These courts do not fear anything. We can research the most ardently backed constitutional law imaginable, and these criminal Judges will use their “discretion” and destroy any legal arguments or even law. But you get a camera and do this same exact thing when he knows now his treason will be aired publicly, and he will fear you. He will suddenly ‘uphold the law,’ and perhaps, even make a dramatic point about it to boot.

Therefore, we have a system here, that profits from its own misconduct and criminal malfeasance's, and the only way any citizen can really get back at these people is by publishing or putting such information out to the general populace.

## CHAPTER THREE



Again, the main body of the populace has absolutely no idea what is going on in these courts, nor what the real intent of these family courts are doing. Start to get the majority of the public educated to the facts that the present feminist system is really dedicated to destroying the Father, and the home and Family—and thereby; government officials can mine and harvest the destruction of that family—then, you’d have a massive revolution on your hands because even the most intellectually challenged among us can recognize what they are doing is criminal.

Therefore, the Fathers Rights community *has to recognize* that this system is never going to help them. There is no redress. That the fact that it is government’s fault that most men are poor, through failed economic policies and failed social experiments, that most men become lost to their own children, and that they sole purpose is to apply the Feminist Model of destruction against the home and family. Going back to these people and trying to ask for help is like the sheep asking the wolf to comfort his wounds.

The Feminists, Government, and the ruling Elite regime, fully understands the fact that they are trying to destroy men. They understand that destroying men, is their daily bread. *For this is how they really make money.* The system is designed to be Bearish, and to feed off of failure, usually off the most poor and destitute among us. They have designed a

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

system that can make more money off of a poor person by incarcerating them into jail, than; by allowing him the freedom to just be poor. Their mythology pretends that they can help these people though a never-ending choice of government programs—which of course, does more harm than good. We used to be a society to where the poor ‘pulled’ themselves out of poverty. Now, as the Black underclass has empirically shown this nation—we have poor stuck in the conditional state of the “New Underclass” of the Welfare society:

Part of the American genius has been that, at every level of society, people can improve their own lot. We have no caste system, no class requirements, no regulated professions, no barriers to entry. [*Newt Gingrich, To Renew America*, ©1997, by New Gingrich, Harper Collins Publishers, 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022, ISBN 0-06-017336-X, p. 41.]

Of course, this is no longer true. We do have people’s intentionally ‘stuck’ within the Welfare Underclass, who by design, are captured within its web. Like the well designed Chinese Finger Torture trap novelty, people (mostly Fathers) can get into this system: but by no means can they ever get out.

Again, once this point is brought into the light of the day, so that all people can see this fraud, like Mr. Murphy notes above, they quickly quash and buy-off such information. The present system will be happy to drag you through 20 years in court, and whistle a happy tune all the way, screaming that they are ‘defending’ women and children, all the while they get enriched from the taxpayers infinite monies. But dare to let out one peep what is going on, and they will do extraordinary things to keep the true facts and figures quiet.

They have to keep Feminism going at all costs.

This is why the Fathers Rights community has to sit down, learn their product; and then after such system’s analysis, to recognize what works and what doesn’t. They also have to label who is their friend, and who is their enemies. Any Father even remotely thinking these courts, Lawyers or Judges are anywhere remotely, fair, or legal—has a rather shocking truth to discover. These are not our courts of law—they are in fact anti-law establishments, only there to assure your destruction. They are the Chinese Finger Torture...and these courts...were designed that way—in direct contravention to American Law. They are in fact, *our enemy*. This perversion which now is a cancer to the Fathers Rights movement, and society itself, will effect law throughout the panorama of the American experience. What American’s discount in law, in allowing District Attorney’s to criminally attack “Deadbeat Dads” will most certainly, haunt them and future generations of Americans—who will find defunct, corrupt



## **CHAPTER THREE**

courtrooms and Judges, whose only interest will be power, money and monopoly.

Directly because of Feminism, our American court system is now completely broke. This is not only an unseen disaster, which most American's are not even aware of, it has become a national crisis, which has placed every single American in jeopardy, for the want of a true and just court system as was originally designed by our Founding Fathers for this government.

They exist no longer.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER FOUR

---

*"It is the duty of every man to render to the Creator such homage, and such only, as he believes to be acceptable to him. This duty is precedent both in order of time and degree of obligation, to the claims of Civil Society. Before any man can be considered a member of Civil Society, he must be considered as a subject of the Governor of the Universe: And if a member of Civil Society, who enters into any subordinate Association, must also do it with a reservation of his duty to the general authority, must more must every man who becomes a member of any particular Civil Society, do it with a saving of his allegiance to the Universal Sovereign."* [James Madison, *Memorial and Remonstrance Against Religious Assessments* §11 (1785, reprinted in *Everson v. Board of Education*, 330, U.S. 1, 64) Rutledge, J., dissenting].

### THE LAW AS WE KNOW IT

---

"It would be sinful for a man to surrender that to man which is to be kept sacred for God", said Baptist leader John Leland in persuading James Madison to sponsor a religious freedom Bill into the Bill of Rights, something we still sorely need today. "Somehow" men, by the guile and misrepresentation of once a trusted government, have been beguiled and fooled into surrendering what is most sacred to them: their own homes and families. Montesquieu wrote about this saying: "There is no more cruel tyranny than that which is exercised under cover of the law, and with the colors of justice." [*The Macmillan Book of Proverbs, Maxims, and Famous Phrases*, selected and arranged by Burton Stevenson Sixth Printing, ©1948 (Macmillan), The Macmillan Company, New York, p ] Unfortunately, this is the *modus operandi* of our present Judiciary, and many men and families have been destroyed because of this fraud.

This, is the exact treason by which modern Feminists in conjunction with an immoral Legislature and corrupt Judiciary intend to force fathers to submit to the present "Child Support" and "Child Laws" of this nation—all under "The Best Interests of the Child" Doctrine. All for the communist doctrine of 'for the best interests of the masses'. They want Fathers to bow to the greater social will of abandoning their home, their children, and their families, to a foreign agency that has coerced this society by outright lies and incessant propaganda; to admit the antithetical admission of Feminist Jurisprudence into all of our lives. This Feminist Jurisprudence, designed by the Socialists, Anarchists and Feminists of the late 19<sup>th</sup> and early 20<sup>th</sup> centuries, is now government policy.

The father who is now disenfranchised, must voluntarily—by modern statutory laws—and the despotism of an out-of-control judiciary, give up

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

his natural born rights bequeathed to him by God: that of being a Father, and a parent. We are men, surrendering to other men or persons (mostly Socialists like Hillary Rodham-Clinton), our sacred rights and proper roles as parents. This is being done, in direct contravention to our laws, the common law, and natural law, all in which to satisfy a 'larger venue' of an undefined group of elite who are imposing and using the tyranny of Social Engineering upon Fathers and the Family..."for the greater good" of society...and for possibly for other undocumented reasons (such as to overthrow the American rule of law in the United States or even as a prelude to conditioning the public to accept and abide by "The New World Order"). This elite regime whom are the masters at the control of this Socialist Engineered helm, are harvesting an unsuspecting culture for their own economic benefit, and more importantly—to satisfy their mandates of Social Engineering and Social Control over a supposedly "free" society.

The current political question has been answered in regards of who is the ultimate parent within the American home. Due to the "Feminist Revolution" with the complicit backing and support of Government and the Socialist "Elite" within this nation, under the Doctrine of *Parens Patriae* the Feminists and Government concur that "government" e.g., The Courts, Police, Social Services, Child Protective Services and a host of other government agencies and enclaves—are in fact the ultimate caretakers of your children. The legal question is more complex however...

First, we must ask the simple most basic questions. For instance: is a man compelled to give up his natural born rights as a father, then; have to pay (or forced) into such an obligation to provide charity for his child?

Not under Law.

**MORAL OBLIGATION.** A duty which one owes, and which he ought to perform, but which he is not legally bound to fulfil.

2. These obligations are of two kinds **1st.** Those founded on a natural right; as, the **obligation to be charitable, which can never be enforced by law.** **2d** Those which are supported by a good or valuable antecedent consideration; as, where a man owes a debt barred by the act of limitations, this cannot be recovered by law, though it subsists in morality and conscience; but if the debtor promise to pay it, the moral obligation is a sufficient consideration for the promise, and the creditor may maintain an action of *assumpsit*, to recover the money. 1 Bouv. Inst. n. 623

The District Attorney and Judges are 'forcing' men into unconscionable contracts to enforce the 'morality' imposed by the common law—all the while removing any and all benefits of the common law of which the father, by perfect right, under natural law; enjoys. If the father is disobeyed, if the mother kidnaps the child, if the government seizes the child—the father has NO ALTERNATIVE OTHER THAN TO BE

## CHAPTER FOUR

FORCED INTO THE 'MORALITY' OF SUBSIDIZING HIS CHILD'S CHARITY. In supposedly "The Best Interests of the Child." Here is what the law says is a unconscionable contract:

### § 19.2 What Makes a Contract Unconscionable?

The Code does not define *unconscionability* nor does its text indicate what elements go into making a contract unconscionable. The official comments suggest,

The basic test is whether, in the light of the general background and the commercial needs of the particular trade or case, the clauses involved are so one-sided as to be unconscionable under the circumstances existing at the time of the making of the contract.... The principle is one of the prevention of oppression and unfair surprise...and not of disturbance of allocation of risks because of superior bargaining power.

This test is followed by a brief discussion of 10 pre-Code cases as examples.

Each Claim of unconscionability, therefore, must be determined on a case by case basis which measures specific facts against a background of common law development. [*Rights and Remedies Under U.C.C. Article 2*, by Harold Greenberg, ©1987 Wiley Law Publications, John Wiley & Sons, New York, ISBN 0-471-81283-8, pp. 282-283]

As any rational person can see, the 'contract' of which no father is fully informed of, nor can produce this contract (I've asked many Fathers to 'produce' the contract that has all the draconian terms they suffer through spelled out on it in writing, to date, after asking approximately 50 Fathers Rights activists *none, categorically no Father has produced this 'mythical' contract; or in the court's words "special contract" or "special obligation" that fathers are ensnared to, and bound to unmercifully*). Again, something which engineering-wise is nothing more than a Chinese Finger Torture for Fatherhood, cannot even remotely pass this test of unconscionability. Again, in regards to the common-law of which the U.C.C. is based, and of which Family Law and American Law propagates from: what we are speaking to here are 'contracts' and laws that are not only unconscionable, but transgress the human social condition into those of abject sin.

In my thirteen year effort to gain back the theft of my son, upon recognition that the Court system was completely over-run by an unseen and silent entity which was directly responsible for controverting law, I started an organization called: The Sovereign Patriot Group in 1988. This was a Fathers Rights group dedicated to 'cracking the code' of law and injustice that was being perpetrated upon us. We were immediately rec-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ognized as 'Constitutionalists'. I soon had a small core of intelligent and dedicated people who were researching every aspect of the law, and like the famous scene in the Wizard of Oz when Dorothy's tiny little dog peels away the curtain to reveal a small tiny little man in charge of the controls—we found the law was identically the same—not what it appeared to be at all. Just a little old-man frightened at his own controls. What myth's and outright lies the lawyers, District Attorneys and Judges were 'advising' and 'informing' us of—was in fact—in direct opposition to the written law. What was most astounding, was that in reviewing and researching the law, we found that courts were proactively 'modifying' the law such that base Constitutional Laws, Rights, and Precepts which started out as one thing...became something completely different through the perversion of rulings throughout the years. These perversions looked at historically, had intent, a design. More importantly, if a court case had reviewed a certain former legal decision via case law "precedence" or "stare decisis" decision ruling, it would use the most critical, terse and obtuse reasoning's in which to make a new ruling, which usually meant the loss of a right. We found that the civilian defendants in these decisions were being annihilated and outright defrauded by some of these court narrow interpretations and rulings. The all important words **"In the Light Most Favorable to Government"** (usually taken upon 'silent judicial notice' by the judges upon any court proceeding) took on a more sadistic meaning and intent when it became applied to law against normal citizens and the American Society as a whole. This of course is contrary to how our courts in America are mandated to work:

*"Fiat iusticia et ruant coeli."*

"Let justice be done though the heavens fall."

[*A Decacordon of ten Quodlibeticall Questions Concerning Religion and State*, by William Watson, (1602)]

"The whole quotation is; "You go against the general maxim in the laws, which is, 'Fiat iusticia et ruant coeli:" This is the first appearance in English Literature, so far as discovered, of the maxim in the exact form most generally used. It will be noted that it is referred to as already well known. It was used by many writers after 1600, but was given its widest celebrity in 1768 when it was quoted by Lord Mansfield in *Rex v. Wilkes*. Lord Mansfield used the form, "Iusticia fiat, ruat coelum" (Let justice be done though the sky falls). Manningham, in his *Diary*, 11 April 1603, uses still another form, "Fiat iusticia et coelum ruat." The context of Lord Mansfield's use of the phrase is, "The Constitution does not allow reasons of the state to influence our judgement. God forbid it should! We must not regard political consequences, however formidable they might be; if rebellion was the certain consequence, we are bound to say, "Iusticia fiat, ruat

## CHAPTER FOUR

coelum."—William Murray, Earl of Mansfield, Judgement, *Rex v. Wilkes*, see Burrows reports, Vol. Iv, p. 2562. In this Judgement, Lord Mansfield reversed the sentence of outlawry passed upon John Wilkes for publication of *The North Briton*." (Underlines for emphasis of issue: RLCII.) [*The Macmillan Book of Proverbs, Maxims, and Famous Phrases*, ©1948, Selected and arraigned by Burton Stevenson, Sixth Printing; The Macmillan Company, New York; p.1286.]

Most of these types of decisions presently being implemented by today's courts were done behind the security and secrecy of 'closed doors' with little or feeble representation on the other side, the usually poor or common man. Soon, as in the game: 'Button, Button, Whose Got the Button?'" The original intent and meaning of our American law became a perverse and sadistic imposter of our original law as it was perverted by and through the lucrative influences of Feminist Jurisprudence as well as other special interests with an agenda. Soon, things like: you must have a warrant in which to arrest any American became: you don't really need any warrant at all. To the Feminists like Ms. Hillary Clinton, the ends justifies the means. Bad law is okay, as long as the government accomplishes its goals—no matter what they might be.

Nonetheless during the exploits of my organization, The Sovereign Patriot Group, we helped many people in regards to a panorama of legal issues and became well known for successfully helping people with traffic ticket's, small misdemeanors, farmers, Welfare Mothers, and a host of other petty offenses to where the City or County or State or Federal Government was essentially trying to extort money from these poor people. This was the de facto the norm of the present county system, to directly attack abjectly poor and otherwise defenseless citizens, and have the country take as much as it could from these people. (Most Fathers must understand by now, that obtaining a court appointed "Public Defender" is no defense whatsoever—it is only submission). Regardless, in one of our most important cases: The Brady Dayton Cumbuss Butte county Jail death—we met with then Butte County Sheriff/Coroner Mick Grey.

The Father Robert Cumbuss and his Family came to us in which to help them in this matter, we had no prior knowledge of what the conditions of the whole case were, but we soon ramped up and became quite versed in what would be a most formidable opponent: a corrupt local government. We showed up at a scheduled meeting with Sheriff Grey, along with the family and the local media. (To this day I have no idea who called the media or even informed them of this meeting. To be truthful, I was stunned that they were even there). Nonetheless, Sheriff Grey in his affable and gracious manner led us into his office in which to discuss the matter...there were approximately 15 people all crowded into this room...all seeking answers to the inconsolable death and tragedy of a young, 20 year-old black male. (The second death at this notorious facil-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ity within a two-week time period). There was great expectations at this meeting and the air was electric with anticipation. As Channel 24 TV News Reporter later said in regards to this incident: "I was so nervous that I forgot to turn on my news camera." To the public, Patriots joining to protect a Black families in their concern for justice and directly challenging a department of the Government, took on the proportions of the historic Muhammad Ali vs. Joe Fraiser fight.

When we challenged Sheriff Grey on the legal issues of this matter, in which to simply allow the Father to make a Citizen's Arrest in accordance with the law, under a Verified Criminal Complaint, under California Penal Code section 142(a) (the same code mind you, that young Brady-Dayton Cumbuss was arrested under and then sent to jail for), Sheriff Mick Grey came back and shot back us: **"What law are you using?!"**

This is an important question...one that initially, took us back in surprise. However, the meaning was clear by the time we left his office: they were using "some other" law—that had no semblance to our own. He never arrested any of his Sheriff Deputies that this grieving Father wanted arrested, and which is proper to do under the California Penal Code. This is what is happening in court after court across the American landscape: they are using a different set of laws that the average citizen (and most lawyers), have no comprehension of...they switch laws, even venue and jurisdiction—as long as it serves their purpose and as long as they can get away with it.

The average father (and layman for that matter) has no comprehension of the twisted corpse he is dealing with when engaging with Government or our courts. I contend that they are not American courts at all, but rather; they are 'undefined'. They have established for themselves an Alice in Wonderland environment where everything works in secret and in the exact opposition to what "We the People" suppose and support those systems to run in a simple, fair and unbiased manner. Nothing could be further from the truth. Justice is nowhere to be found in today's Americans court system.

In Lawrence H. Tribe's book *Constitutional Law* he clearly demarcates seven systems of governance within the American Judicial court system, beginning from the late 1770's to the present. Most American's 'think' we are in Model I system of governance, which he defines as Separation of Powers. If you speak to the average American, his description of America and how things run and work will most closely follow that model's attributes...he will have no idea of the other six. In fact, if you describe to him the Seventh Model "Implied Expectations", he might think you are speaking of a Fascist or Marxist nation and not his own...yet this is the *present* model we are 'supposed' to be in. This is the model,



## CHAPTER FOUR

our ‘American’ court systems are *supposedly* running under. While the average layman reads and understands the meaning and understanding of his Constitution under Model I—the courts are running under the sophistry of Model VII...*or beyond...* My contention is that we are in what I **call Model VIII, the New Cannibalistic, Predatory Government Infrastructure**, or **NCPGI** for short. In my analysis of looking from the outside in, rather than from the inside out as Mr. Tribe has documented in his work, NCPGI is a government, whose intent is to proactively (something police and many Agencies say they are doing as the term ‘proactive’ has become a very hot colloquialism within the modern corridors of power), hunt criminals of all types, to harvest these persons into the corporate "Judicial" system, to accrue massive profits from the transfer of wealth of those brought within this system, and to keep those profits for the ever-growing ‘special interest’ Imperial Empires: otherwise known as the Elite regime.

What most citizens don’t know, is that ‘everyone’ is a criminal under this system of law. More precisely, they are **slaves** under this system of law—and the government under the doctrine of ‘*Parens Patriæ*’—is only ‘taking care of’ or ‘managing’ the slaves. **You**, of course, are the slave, and under model VIII of NCPGI, you don’t even know it. To prove this, I ask many people "What can’t government do to you? How can you ‘protect’ yourself from government? "Where does the Constitution protect you?" Every person I’ve presented that question to, cannot answer those simple questions. Indeed, they cannot because of the fact that due to a ever diligent State and Federal Legislatures: **everything** is a crime. Then, more importantly, when such citizens go into court and try to make ‘law’ or the ‘Constitution’ work—they can’t! Judges just do what they want, abrogate clear legal precedence, and if need be, salaciously declare in open court time and time again: "You don’t have any Constitutional rights!" When people challenge me on this idea of ‘no law’ I ask them to ‘give me a badge’, then let me watch you...then, after I have quickly ticketed them for ‘rolling through a stop sign’ or ‘taking a corner too close’ or even ‘turning your turn-signal indicator on 99 feet and not 100 feet before your turn’ (note: that ticket actually occurred to an individual named "P.J." an engineer that unfortunately...had a *beard* the CHP officer didn’t like, and therefore stopped him and gave him this ticket...true story...)—they soon realize that any police officer or Code Enforcement Officer can accuse people of any crime **at will**. This is above and beyond the realization that many of these Police Officers and Code Enforcement Officers are writing tickets and lying about them! This book will not even go into that perversion within this system. But clearly, government has more than enough laws to make *everything*, including fatherhood, a

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

crime...which has factually been done...fatherhood is this nations greatest crime, 'just waiting to happen.'

Most people I've challenged with this present construct, soon realize the error of their statement when they recognize that upon *any* infraction, they know I'll write them up and hand them their imaginary ticket. Unfortunately, Police Officers, Code Enforcement Officers, and District Attorney Investigators do no hand out imaginary tickets like I do only to support my intellectual argument, they instead, hand out the real ones and get paid to do it! Add to the fact that many of these Constitutionally 'sworn' officers get mandates from their administration to 'go after' citizens and create revenue (commonly known as 'quotas'). They do this with reckless abandon and are extremely efficient at this part of their work, and take great pride in their 'professionalism'...

To elucidate this point I must again bring forth an antidote which happened in Chico California. I read the within the local media and found out that the Police Chief of Chico had obtained a grant from the Federal Government in which to obtain two brand new state-of-the-art motorcycles and attendant officers and support personnel. In order to obtain this Federal grant, the "Chief" *promised* the Federal government that his department would over the next three years raise Drunk Driving Arrests, and Reckless Driving Arrests predetermined percentage points above what was considered to be an already high statistical figure, or Chico's "norm." Chagrined, I wrote the media and the Police Chief of Chico and demanded to know how he could promise this?

How did he know that Drink Driving was going to increase? Or reckless Driving? That, I contended, would be like saying there would be 10% more murders next year, or that there would be 41% more broken windows! How could you presage something that hasn't happened yet? Worse yet, what if a massive social change had occurred? Where, for the sake of argument, everyone turned Mormon or Muslim or something and simply stopped drinking—how could the Police Chief increase these crimes when the town in fact, stopped doing the crimes?!?

This is the paradox of modern law enforcement. Under this Model VIII NCPGI—you don't need crimes anymore, all you need are police officers going out and 'proactively' hunting the mass of the population and meeting their 'quotas'. Some have called this system of inventing criminals 'lottery taxation' where when an officer chooses a citizen, that citizen has won that day's lottery of being taxed by having been 'invented' into a criminal. "Sir, you didn't turn your turn signal exactly 100 feet before your turn here, you turned it on at 99 feet." (P.J., unfortunately, paid the ticket—because he recognizes the uselessness of fighting the present court systems. Unfortunately, he worked for a living and could not sustain the drain on his life). Paying the ticket is easier than

## CHAPTER FOUR

suffering through the black-hole of interfacing with this twisted and perverse regime which produces: NOTHING. This is the key to the Modern NCPGI and those within this system know its futility, and market and directly benefit from its flaccid results of tyranny...its cannibalism on a national scale.

However if you research NCPGI's noble catalogue of laws, supposedly under the American Judicial system, in order for any citizen to commit a crime he or she must complete all three elements of doing the crime:

1. **A Mens Rea:** This is the **KNOWLEDGE** or '**INTENT**' to do a crime. A person who is insane, or who inadvertently has an accident or suffers a mistake is not held as having committed a crime under our form of law.
2. **An Actus Rea:** This is the **ACT** of the crime. I punched you, or I picked up a rock to break your window.
3. **The Corpus Delecti:** This is the **BODY** of the crime, i.e., "The broken nose" or "the smashed windows" in the examples mentioned above.

We have several standing armies during a time of peace who are dedicated to arrest people in order to fill these quota grants and NOT adhere to proving a crime under the three elements listed above. This is most exacerbated by power, greed and the fact that many counties must criminalize people in which to not only maintain, but to expand their Government Infrastructures and Budgets.

This perversion was exemplified the News story in the Sacramento Bee of the Sacramento District Attorney's office of Family Support Division in 1998. In that story the Federal Government had contacted the Sacramento District Attorney and said that the county was going to lose all its grant money because it did not fill or meet the Federal Quota's it had contracted with in regards to Child Support collections in which it promised it would meet. Within a few short weeks after the Sacramento Bee ran the story, the District Attorneys office, by a flurry of new arrests, had indeed met their Federal Quota demands! They did it upon the backs of what most certainly were many poor and innocent men who were placed into jail or 'invented into criminals' in order to meet the required quota but under Model VIII of NCPGI: Who cares about these poor men anyway's? They are just disenfranchised, poor and powerless men. Ms. Hillary Rodham-Clinton doesn't, most certainly—she sees these men as a blight. So who cares? They are best warehoused and from their useless incarceration—they produce money for Sacramento county by that jail obtaining Federal Grants to warehouse these "criminals."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Another issue in regards to crimes must be discussed under this system. In criminal law there are two sets of crimes that can be violated, one is **malum in se**, and **malum prohibitum**. Simply put, malum in se crimes are real crimes, meaning the acts are "evil in itself" or "naturally evil". Murder, theft or sodomizing a donkey are examples of malum in se crimes.

Malum prohibitum crimes however...are the ones we are speaking of here in regards to Model VIII NCPGI and the crimes government place's against Fathers in regards to custody and child support. These 'crimes' are crimes only due to the fact that they are "wrong because they are prohibited." Ergo, the government itself simply declares it to be a crime. These are the crimes made unlawful just because the State Legislature (or any other Government Agency) says they are. For instance, if they say that it is illegal for a black man to drink at a 'whites only' water fountain...then...the illustrious Police and Code Enforcement officers will run out and fall over themselves trying to arrest you if you are Black and drinking at a "whites only" water fountain. These Police and Code Enforcement Officers and District Attorneys and Judges—exactly like those Judges and Officers of the German Weimar Republic previously mentioned in Chapter 3—will say to you with a straight face that 'they are only upholding the law'. "I'm only doing my job..." However, if you are a Jew or a Father—and the 'law' says we must arrest you for 'committing' your crime the Legislature has determined to be a crime...you are in the same exact position as the Black drinking from a whites only drinking fountain in 1952...

"There's no way to rule innocent men. The only power any government has is the power to crack down on criminals. Well, when there aren't enough criminals, one \*makes\* them. One declares so many things to be a crime that it becomes impossible for men to live without breaking laws. Who wants a nation of law-abiding citizens? What's there in that for anyone? But just pass the kind of laws that can neither be observed nor enforced nor objectively interpreted-and you create a nation of law-breakers-and then you cash in on the guilt." [Ann Raynd, *Atlas Shrugged*]

Clearly we can see from this passage, the real reason behind NCPGI. As this book catalogues, the Feminist movement that is presently intentionally destroying Fatherhood and Families is doing so in which to gain a foothold 'to rule over men'. This is most easily accomplished by subverting the male by using 'altruism' "In the Best Interests of the Child". Factually, there is no way any father can combat this sophistry due to the fact that he is fighting a system that is imposing a malum prohibitum crime: a crime the State Legislature invented that was the **intrinsic converse of this nations laws**. In other words, they implemented an Anti-

## CHAPTER FOUR

American, Anti-Father, Anti-Family and Anti-Child set of Legislation all in "the Best Interests of the Child". It is as much as a crime as Blacks drinking from segregated White drinking fountains. In that case the white elite's made laws stating that they owned those drinking fountains...in our case the Socialist and Government Elite are making laws stating that our children are *their* children under the doctrine of Parens Patriæ, and that the Village determines whether our kids are in jeopardy, and who will go with them and how they will be distributed and who will go to jail for it all. The fact is, that the modern Fathers Rights Patriarchal movement offers nothing for government, except strong secure families raising free and robust children. This brings in no money or Government Grants to Cities, Counties and States.

Patriarchy is unacceptable to the Village Model and those who support it or directly benefit from it. However, how does any citizen answer Sheriff Mick Grey's interrogatory to us all "Which law are we using?" which is powering this whole perversion?!?

### THE COMMON LAW

---

"We the Congress, adopt the common law not as the common law, **but as the law of the highest reason.**" [John Adams, Notes on the First Continental Congress]

That noble statement forged a unity of intent for a nation in regards to the rule of law and procedure in regards of what they expected in which to use as a dialogue in which to attain redress from their government. Why the common law? Why is this the law of the highest reason? Why aren't our modern courts, the ones which declare such a lofty standard's and ideal's when the Constitution, our laws, our history mandate its inclusion? In fact, a better question is: "Why do these present courts hate the common law if it is in fact, 'the law of the highest reason?'"

From the inception of societies and civilizations, men have had to collectively join and resolve disputes. To this end they contracted with superior powers, or even fiduciary arbitrators in which to obtain some semblance of reason, or justice to provide amity and justice for all. Anyone casually observing the performance of our contemporary courts would see that clearly, the disposition of easily, and justly or fairly resolving legal difficulties has been totally lost. What we observe in the insanity of injustice and litigation of our present court systems leave much to be desired from the mandates of what John Adams and the First Continental Congress established above. Indeed, from the performance of our present system, many can conclude that it is infinitely closer to the Courts of the Weimar and Nazi Regimes noted in Chapter 3 than it is to anything we imagine of American Jurisprudence.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

The Constitution for the united States of America directs us to the original intent as that blueprint Mr. Adams and Congress suggests is forged within that document. It is patently clear of what the rule of law must be in congruence with Mr. Adams statement above:

### Section 4 – Protection of the States Guaranteed

**The United States shall guarantee to every state in this union a republican form of government,** and shall protect each of them against invasion; and on application of the legislature, or of the executive (when the legislature cannot be convened) against domestic violence. [Constitution for the United States (1787-1789), Article IV, Section 4]

What does the common law, "the law of the highest reason" have to do with a Republican Form of Government?

Well, republican form means that the interests, practices, policies and procedures of the Government are as identical and close with "We the People" as humanly possible. This means that Government's interests are the same as ours. This could be expressed as a symbiotic relationship between a government and man that 'we are both moving to the same ends'. When John Adams wrote that the common law was the "law of the highest reason" he was stating that Congress adopts the law to be as "We the People" demand it to be, so that we can recognize it...and more importantly; understand it; and thereby, our actions and interests will be the same as government. In simple terms, our forefathers wanted 'law that was reasonable,' that 'any man could understand and obey.' This is a concomitant relationship, one of mutual endeavors towards the same ends. Having a nation of prisons, clearly shows us that this is no longer a government of Republican form. The people no longer have any idea what laws government might throw down their throats. In fact, nobody really understands law any longer—most certainly those within the present Feminized system. But this was not how it always was:

Influential as was the work of Washington, Adams, and Jefferson in fortifying republican government, their work was only one phase of the transition from monarchy to the republican way of life. To the new order was brought the support of intellectual and artistic talents among the citizens, made manifest in forms of written and oral expression such as books and dramas, and in visible symbols, such as paintings and engravings. Through the press, the theater, and popular education—format and informal—the results of these activities became known and appreciated among multitudes of people upon whose thought, aspirations, labors, and character the republican experiment intimately depended for its success.

By the intellectual and artistic activities of private citizens the doctrine was formulated that the Revolution and the Republic were worthy of the highest esteem in themselves, and admirable in the history of humanity.

## CHAPTER FOUR

By the same processes were widened and deepened knowledge and thought respecting the new nation whose fortunes were involved in the republican way of life, with all that it signified in terms of civilization. With increasing interest in society, economy, and the people went inquiries, ever more microscopic, into the physical geography and the natural resources of the continental domain as expansion and settlement proceeded—the material setting in which the republican experiment was being carried on. [*The Beard's Basic History of the United States*, by Charles A. Beard and Mary A. Beard, © 1944; Doubleday, Doran & Company, Inc., 14 West Forty-ninth Street, New York, NY, pp. 148-149.]

Factually, today; neither Fathers nor the American public have *any* comprehension of what "Republican form" of governance is, nor do they have any idea why the Founding Fathers as well as the great sages throughout history mandated and wanted this blueprint in government. We have a society, generationally, which has become totally ignorant to the true foundational design of their own nation...but strangely...these same people are willing to undergo the great radical "Redesign of Humanity" in which Ms. Clinton and her elite consorts are more than willing to perpetrate upon us all.

5000 years ago, the lawgiver Hammurabi understood this precept, of men having to know the blueprint of their own nation, and thereby publicly placed all his laws on a great tablet, he placed them in a square for all to see, to read and understand. Even today, many of those laws are easily recognizable and understood. Can we say this of the modern codes? Of Lawrence H. Tribes "Model VII" system of governance or what I consider to have mutated into Model VIII NCPGI? Or the practices, policies and procedure's of the plenary of Alphabet Soup of Government agencies? Do we know that congress and the State Legislatures pass approximately 10,000 laws per year? Do we even know what these laws are? Or better yet—do we even know what their true effect is or even comprehend their *true design*? Do we understand what is going on when Congress attaches anti-gun legislation as a trailer on a school lunch bill? Do citizens truly understand the law, such as they did in Hammurabi's time—when contemporary legislation is now committed behind closed doors, in the depths of volumes of legislation and procedure—that such laws suddenly make one a felon for having a 30 round clip on his rifle that has been sitting in his closet for the past twelve years? Do we really understand what is going on? Does anyone? Or for the cause of 'simplicity' are we entrusting this government to those with more ulterior motives for convenience? Those who stand up and scream that we must have a "Democracy" of which our founders vituperatively warned us against:

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

It was the theory of the Framers that a republican form of government, not a democracy, was preferable. "In a democracy, where a multitude of people exercise their person the legislative functions, and are continually exposed, by their incapacity for regular deliberation and concerted measures, to the ambitious intrigues of their executive magistrates, tyranny may well be apprehended, on come favorable emergency, to start up in the same quarter." [*The Anatomy of Liberty, The Rights of Man Without Force*, by William O. Douglas, ©1963, A Trident Press Book, U.S. and Canada; Lib. Of Cong. Cat. Card No. 63-12572.]

Clearly, as with the Fathers Rights movement—no one had any ‘notice’ or forewarning that an unseen Elite Regime would be changing basic foundational American law to meet their own purposes of Social Engineering and to go against our very form of established government, that would directly go against the "character" of the American nation. No father that I have spoken to understands how he, as Ann Raynd noted earlier: was "invented" into a criminal. No father I know can ‘produce the contract’ that binds him into this insanity. I know that many fathers have no idea that they’ve somehow been induced into a ‘special obligation’—and they can bring forth no document with the words: "special obligation" boldly plastered across it. Yet, this is how government is inventing these criminals, through a ‘special obligation’ or ‘special debt’ or even a ‘sealed contract.’ They know nothing about this, and no person can bring forwards the contract that shows all these terms and special contracts, for a consideration. Indeed, with just this fact alone, we can see the whole system is a fraud. There is no consideration in this "special" contract that enslaves fathers—thereby; upon basic contractual law, this "contract" is flawed—and null and void.

Clearly, the wants, needs and hopes of "We the People" have changed disparately and drastically between we and government. When you talk to those embedded within the corridors of power, they admit: "Well, sure you don’t understand it—but it is the best system we’ve got..." Perhaps they might agree with you that this is all evil, then in the next breath say: "But I’m only doing my job."

The First thing is that, no, it is not "the best system we’ve got" and secondly, no, they are not doing their job. This contemporary cannibalistic "Model VIII" NCPGI is a perversion of law, and they know it. It is the law of regimes, the law of convenience, the law of efficiency...it is the law in which every despot and tyrant throughout history has used against either an unwilling or unsuspecting plebiscite.

Clearly, as history has show us, as John Adams and the founding fathers have shown us, this nation as well as much of modern civilization as a whole chose and selected Patriarchy as the vehicle to best protect Fathers, Families and children. **Without warning or cause, a sublime se-**



## CHAPTER FOUR

**lect Elite Regime changed the social structure of this nation into something else without a popular mandate or reason.** As we have demonstrated in Chapter 3, the elite have intentionally fulminated the present changes that we now all suffer through—for ‘their’ purposes and ultimate design. That change has not only controverted our heritage, but it also has perverted and usurped our law. Both society and law were changed for the worse, without “We the People’s” knowledge or consent. More importantly, they were changed to satisfy an unseen Socialist coalition within the power of government, who used their abilities, to quietly without public recognition, to change the form of government. Simply put: an unseen elite regime implemented this disaster without our knowledge and more importantly, *not for our safety, happiness or security...this whole perversion has been designed for their benefit...and not ours...*

This is **not** Republican form...and they know and understand this.

The principal aim of this book has been to make known the laws of the United States; if this purpose has been accomplished, the reader is already enabled to judge for himself which are the laws that really tend to maintain the democratic republic, and which endanger its existence... It is not my intention to retrace the path I have already pursued, and a very few lines will suffice to recapitulate what I have previously explained.

Three circumstances seem to me to contribute most powerfully to the maintenance of the democratic republic in the United States.

The first is that Federal form of Government which the American’s have adopted, and which enables the Union to combine the power of a great empire with the security of a small State.

The second consists in those municipal institutions which limit the despotism of the majority, and at the same time impart a taste for freedom and a knowledge of the art of being free to the people.

The third is to be met with in the constitution of the judicial power. I have shown in what manner the courts of justice serve to repress the excesses of democracy, and how they check and direct the impulses of the majority without stopping its activity. [*Democracy in America*, by Alexis De Tocqueville, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York & London, p. 194.]

This ‘other’ system that those in power feel is not the best system, and which they do not want “We the People” to have is openly publicized in our Constitution:

### AMENDMENT VII

**In suits at common law**, where the value in controversy shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of **trial by jury** shall be preserved, and no fact tried by a jury shall be otherwise re-examined in any court of the United States, **than according to the rules of the common law.**

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

**The common law** it says.

Strangely, those within the system clamoring about and using their de facto "the best system we have" in 1998 took one Dr. Jack Kevorkian to trial because somehow as a surprise to them, their 'best system we have' didn't work for them as Kevorkian had escaped three attempts under de facto court rules that intensely tried to, but couldn't convict him. The trials concerned the doctor assisting others in suicide, so that they might not suffer any further debilitating effects of diseases which made them suffer. After several tries using the de facto court systems under statutory law (read: "the best system we've got") the District Attorney frustrated at his previous failures decided to use the 'other' system. That of the common law. In essence, after the DA threw every thing including the kitchen sink at Kevorkian—he finally went to use something even better, and as a last resort...more superior...and that was, the common law.

On January, 10, 1998 in Wade County Michigan, District Attorney Jack Crack prosecuted Dr. Kevorkian under the common law. After a short trial lasting 7 days, the jury in that case returned a "not guilty" plea and released Dr. Kevorkian from the charges.

Strange, but "the best system" much advertised by those embedded within the system of government and used consistently with great effects against unsuspecting fathers—wasn't good enough for Wade County prosecutor Jack Crack in the final analysis. Indeed. We have witnessed many incidences to where the constitution and the common law isn't allowed by prosecuting attorney's or criminal Judges, who defy and even refute that system of law...until *they themselves need it*.

When they are in trouble; it is they who immediately gravitate to its broad protections. It is at that time that they want "the law of highest reason" for their trial. What they will not let fathers have in trial as a secured liberty catalogued above under the Sixth Amendment, they most certainly demand for themselves when their time comes for justice.

In 1995 Judge Clarence Thomas clearly invoked the common law when Anita Hill, a Feminist who made claims against the Judge upon his confirmation hearings for Supreme Court Justice invoked its protection. On national television, Mr. Thomas claimed "natural law" rights several times to seek its protections under a cloud of questionable, unsubstantiated, malicious accusations. By his pleadings upon that inquiry—he was able to secure his post to the Supreme Court of the United States.

What we see here is that the Elite, when push comes to shove—moves to the venue of the common law as quickly as they possibly can in order to obtain 'justice'. Indeed, unbeknownst to millions of American's, during the O.J. Simpson trial which was televised nationally, I had noticed that during the arraignment in the early part of the trial, the flag behind Judge Lance Ito, was the common law flag of peace (not the Gold Fringe

## CHAPTER FOUR

Flag normally found in all courts—the exact flag you'll get when you enter court.) As the history of that trial shows, 'something different' occurred in that trial that wouldn't happen to 99.999% of the rest of the public if they had been charged with the same crime: he was acquitted and found "not guilty." (After the arraignment, the flag then appeared with the gold fringe again).

We have catalogued that during the mid-nineteen seventies, the flags of peace were silently withdrawn from our nations courts ( probably because Model VIII, NCPGI was replacing those 'old' courts) and were replaced with flags of the Gold Fringe. This flag is described under USCA Title 4 as being "The President's Own". It is the executive's flag of the United States President. In 1982 we know that the Supreme Court merged Law and Equity, changing our courts once again. Clearly, what we can see here is a resultant Model VIII NCPGI court with a new Military countenance. No longer are these 'Courts of Law'. They are either Military, Administrative or "undefined" courts working in their own interests. This we feel is why when the Judge arrogantly declares: "You don't have any Constitutional Rights" that he is factually stating the truth. He should be saying, "In these Military courts, you don't have any Constitutional Rights." But that would be telling the truth, and stripping these Judges of the cloak of secrecy they use against all Americans.

The nature of the forum defines the law of the forum. Under these forum's of 'the Law Martial' flags, the forum is telling you of the nature of the law in regards to the proceedings. This we feel, is why the modern layman's concept of law as we all know as "Constitutional" in nature and form, has been patently overthrown by the modern Judiciary because of the flags they fly within their courts. These forum's are displaying their military and Executive mandates, and we as an unsuspecting public have been destroyed because of them because we 'assume' these flags just mean something else—that they are "Constitutional". They are 'pretty' flags, they don't mean anything. Silently, the Judges are 'only doing what we are covertly showing you'—that we are Military tribunals by the forum of the flags we display openly in court. At best conjecture, these are hybrid courts undefined in nature...but they are doing insidious acts of despotism for altruistic causes that are unknown to us all.

We have tried by law and motion, to change these flags within a court room. Kevin Haddock in 1998 in the Kasakov Medical Marijuana case tried in a hearing before Judge Reginald Gilbert in Oroville Superior court in Oroville California. The Assistant District Attorney at that time, chided our efforts. "These flags mean nothing," he adamantly decided. "You are wasting our time..." "It's not an issue," he boldly asserted.

Kevin who argued the motion to remove the case made an eloquent and reasonable plea for their removal. "Simply," he said, "we feel these

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

flags have meaning and intent within this tribunal. We recognize, that they may mean nothing," he said allowing this as an issue which the Judge could voluntarily respond and address the fact "that the 'Gold Fringe Flags' didn't mean anything." "Even in this," he continued, "we feel it is eminently reasonable, 'even if in the light that they are of no consequence', to have their removal from this court, and in their place, have them replaced with our American Flag of Peace with no gold fringe."

Judge Gilbert who was smiling coquettishly like a Madonna replied: "Like Burger King, you get what you order...I decline your offer of removal of these flags at this time." And he quickly ended the proceeding.

We looked over at the Assistant District Attorney who was so belligerent just moment's before, and now whose mouth was wide-open in disbelief. He couldn't believe what had just transpired and we could see that the Judge's actions in regards to this flag decision crushed his belief in what he felt he knew was the law—for certain—he knew that the law of the flag's 'was an issue', which he had denied and thought inconsequential before, and in fact like most lawyers; thought frivolous. His previous assertion (and whole psychology) was overturned. He had, as most American laymen 'assumed' that the flag's meant nothing, and unlike John Adams and the First Continental Congress who wanted law that was open and reasonable and logical within the courts—what had just occurred before him was confusing, and disarming. We know of no way to remove these flags within these tribunals. "Somehow" either by accident or mistake, or erudite legal motion—that O.J. had somehow obtained what we cannot. Yet—the nature of the forum controls the law of the forum. So what these courts are telling us is that there forum is Military or 'undefined' and that the law will be Military or 'undefined.' One thing is most certain, the common law, or the rules of common law cannot be accessed by these present tribunals. And one other thing is most glaring about what happened here; and which is very important to the Fathers Rights movement, and that is that these "courts" are not identifying themselves. They are not telling us what they are, for instance, if they are in fact Constitutional "Article III" courts. They are not telling us who the players are, for instance—is the "Judge" before you *really* a constitutional Judge? So, from the first instant Fathers engage with these courts without answering these eminently important questions, Fathers have absolutely no idea, what they are dealing with.

"I have already observed that the principle of the sovereignty of the people governs the whole political system of the Anglo-Americans. Every page of this book will afford new instances of the same doctrine. In the nations by which the sovereignty of the people is recognized, every individual possesses an equal share of power, and participates alike in the government of the State. Every individual is, therefore, supposed to be as

## CHAPTER FOUR

well informed, and as virtuous, and as strong as any of his fellow citizens. He obeys the government not because he is inferior to the authorities which conduct it, or that he is less capable than his neighbor of governing himself, but because he acknowledges the utility of an association with his fellowmen, and because he knows that no such association can exist without a regulating force. If he be a subject in all that concerns the mutual relations of citizen, he is free and responsible to God alone for all that concerns himself. Hence arises the maxim that every one is the best and sole judge of his own private interest, and that society has no right to control a man's actions, unless they are prejudicial to the common weal, or unless the common weal demands his cooperation." [*Democracy in America*, by Alexis De Tocqueville, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York, Inc., p. 56.]

These well recognized truths of the just compact between the sovereign citizen and his community, through and by an allegiance of a mutual government, assured our society that individual freedom would reign supreme. That a man would and could not traverse his fellow citizens rights blindly, or without just reason and cause. And he most certainly could not traverse the boundaries of his own sacred home. The citizen was the true judge of his own home, and his own family—his own "private interests" which were vested and sacred. Yet presently, government is tearing these laws, and truths down to arrogantly fulfill their own selfish and criminal needs, which of course supercede law itself. [PLACE CITE HERE ABOUT NOT GIVING UP FREEDOM—THAT WE COLLECTIVELY GET TOGETHER TO PRESERVE LIBERTIES—NOT TO GIVE THEM UP.]

The common law, however was not like this. It was not corrupted like our contemporary laws are. It was exemplified by Hammurabi, who 5000BC openly placed **all** the laws of the society on a tablet within an open square for all to read and understand. Clearly, the nature and cause of our present "Judicial" tribunal's are anything but open and understandable. These courts are of a hidden secular order with an unknown hidden agenda. To say they are un-American would be exactly the truth. This is why no father can win in the present court system. Most laymen have no idea that they are dealing with 'Military' or 'undefined' tribunals that are their direct enemy. They are trying to obtain Constitutional justice from a forum that well could be described as Fascist/Socialist. These tribunals in turn, are harvesting millions of men, destroying millions of families and peeling open the wealth of America in open view of the public, yet; totally hidden from the public. What they are doing defines the perfect crime, and it is something of the highest treason ever committed in any nation upon earth for it has silently burdened this nation with a needless conflagration upon the American experience that has oppressed and outright destroyed: generations.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

The common law, however; is the law of the highest reason. It is open, and public. When a Judge admonishes an unsuspecting litigant: "Ignorance of the Law is no excuse" (a held maxim of law, by the way—even under the common law); you should instantly respond exactly like what Sheriff Mick Grey did to us: "What law are you talking about?!?"

Indeed yes, men should know the law...and under our form of government the common law is the law of the land as mandated in the Constitution and many State Constitutions. However—how about the Penal Code? Is that law? Or how about the other codes, such as the Family Code? How about all the Federal Statutes? How about the United States Code and its 63 Titles all contained within hundreds of Thousands of volumes? How about the Law Merchant? Admiralty Law? Ecclesiastical Law?? Are we responsible to know those law too??? Does *he* know all those laws??

No...we are not, and *he* does not--and the Judge knows this. We are only supposed to know the common law, "the unwritten law, the law of antiquity that is written in the hearts and minds of men everywhere". We are supposed to know and understand reason. This means what when you go out for milk, the law that is in your heart and mind is that of travelling down the road to get milk. Not to "roll through a stop sign", to 'weave' in the road, to 'take a corner too closely' or the heinous 'not turning your turn signal on *exactly* 100 feet before the turn—you turned it on at 99 feet'... These are all *malum prohibitum* crimes...or otherwise known as "Victimless" or Consensual crimes explained of earlier. And there is no humanly way possible for anyone to obey all these *malum prohibitum* dictates from and by government!

As stated earlier the common law rules here, IF any controversy becomes of "the crime" and that controversy of "the crime" is over \$20.00; we are supposed to be able to obtain "the Common Law". However, in this example; all you wanted to do is to get milk! The Judges and Police are mandating that you have to know about the infinite panorama of laws and Codes that range throughout their universe!! It can't be done!!!! It is a physical impossibility for any human to know all these hidden *malum prohibitum* crimes! But...conversely...we *all* do know the common law...because it is the simple law that 'makes sense'. The law of logic. The law of the highest reason.

So, when the Judge asks you this "Ignorance of the Law is no excuse", you should act exactly like Sheriff Mick Grey did: "What law are you talking about?!?" If the Judge answers you must know the Penal Code, tell him he is lying to you. First that it is impossible for any human to know all the penal code (if he says "no it is not" then; have him prove it, by having a separate hearing where you will test *him* on the Penal Code...in which he must pass 100%). Secondly, politely inform the errant

## CHAPTER FOUR

Judge, that the Penal Code is Private Law...and what brings you under that Private Law?

What do we mean by Private Law?!?

Well, when IBM passes a law in their corporation, lets say for instance, a dress code: does that dress code apply to you travelling down the road to get milk? No!! Of course not! You are comfortably in shorts and wearing sandals in a T-Shirt driving down the road to get milk for your family. If a Police Officer pulls you over for turning your turn-signal 99 and not 100 feet before the turn, he is holding you to a PRIVATE LAW of a CONSENTUAL "VICTIMLESS" CRIME passed by the State Legislature that is working not in the common law, but the CORPORATE venue of THE STATE OF \_\_\_\_\_ □ -- You fill in the Blank. As the Officer writes you a ticket for one Corporation, "The State of \_\_\_\_\_" or most likely it will be the smaller corporation of "County of \_\_\_\_\_" or "The City of \_\_\_\_\_"...but strangely, he is not writing you up for a ticket from the other Corporation IBM!!! All these blank corporations are private entities exactly like IBM. They are NOT the PUBLIC CONSTITUTIONAL entities of "We the People" being "\_\_\_\_\_ State" or "\_\_\_\_\_ County" or "\_\_\_\_\_ City". These small grammatical changes 'appear' to mean nothing, **but in law—they are crucial to identifying the venue and jurisdiction of the law** 'they' are charging you with. (i.e.: "The Forum.) This appears insane: but in the world of the legal mind—it is sadly, all too true. The United States, is not the same legal entity as the united States of America, they are two disparate venues in two disparate jurisdictions...but they both exist.

This logic of the twin-opposite names is insanity! Yet note these two case cites and read the highlighted proper names of the courts:

"The term "**District Courts of the United States**," as used in the rules, without an addition expressing a wider connotation, has its historic significance It describes the constitutional courts created under article 3 of the Constitution. Courts of the Territories are legislative courts, properly speaking, and are not District Courts of the United States. We have often held that vesting a territorial court with jurisdiction similar to that vested in the District Courts of the United States does not make it a "District Court of the United States." [*Mookini v. United States* (1938) 58 S.Ct. 543, 303 U.S. 201, 82 LEd. 748, at p. 205]

Versus:

"The **United States District Court** is not a true *United States court* established under article 3 of the Constitution to administer the judicial powers of the United States therein conveyed. It is created in virtue of the sovereign congressional faculty, granted under article 4, &sect; 3, of that instrument, of making all needful rules and regulations respecting the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

territory belonging to the United States. The resemblance of its jurisdiction to that of true United States courts, in offering an opportunity to non-residents of resorting to a tribunal not subject to local influence, does not change its character as a mere territorial court." [*Balzac v. Porto Rico* (1922) 42 S.Ct. 343, 258 U.S. 298, 66 L.Ed. 627, at 258 U.S. 312.] (Underlines by Author to enforce point. RLCII).

Now, which court do you think they are using against you as an unsuspecting American public?!?? Most certainly, you are being pushed into (or 'volunteering') for the despotic United States District Court, and not the article III constitutional venue which you should be in as cited above in [*Mookini v. United States* (1938)]. I pose a question to the whole Fathers Rights community: Do you even know what court you are in? Bigger question is: why two courts? Why is one District Court of the United States and the other United States District Court? Nobody can answer this. But we have to know—because *what if you are in the wrong court?*

What 'someone' has established here is a fraud beyond the proportions of all reason and legality. Unlike Hammurabi, this is all being done via the 'magic' of a corrupt Legislature and Judiciary through a mountain of law which nobody can comprehend. No citizen realizes or recognizes what has happened to our systems of government whom are by law, supposed to be our 'public servants' but whom in reality are our masters through the veil of an unrecognizable sophistry. This is why no citizen recognizes their court system any longer. This is why no Father (or American) can enter these courts, because they are courts of thieves. The fact is that it is not our court nor our system. It is the direct antithetical to the American construction of law and common law. It is 'something else'; it is 'undefined'; and it most certainly is secret, operated by secret societies and secular orders masking themselves as and through corporations acting in the 'public' interests...when the fact is that they are acting in a 'private' secret venue to destroy or at least ruin the other system of free governance upholding Liberty and Freedom.

The common law as this nation inherited it by right and conquest from Great Britain, is the law in this nation and is the one that rules and protects the home and family. They are laws of time immemorial, adapted from civilization to civilization which used them for ages and which have direct lineage to the laws of Moses and the Bible.

"The Bible was long held to contain the worlds earliest laws, comprising not only the decalogue but also a large collection of other laws attributed to Moses. These laws take one of two forms, called respectively, apodictic and casuistic. Apodictic laws are absolute prohibitions, such as 'thou shall not kill'. Casuistic laws are those of a type 'if a man delivers to this neighbor money or goods to keep, and it is stolen out of the man's house, then, if the thief is found, he shall pay double." (Exodus 22:7)



## CHAPTER FOUR

[*Civilizations Before Greece*, H.W.F. Saggs, Yale University Press, New Haven, London, p. 156]

What we can see here is the earliest machinations of *malum in se* laws compared to *malum prohibitum*. Yet, within the construct of the common law, we can see the formation that *malum in se* was well constructed and represented through religion, faith, and doing what was right.

With no one to impose punishment, without any laws, men kept faith and did what was right...the peoples passed their lives in security and peace, without the need for armies. [Ovid, *Metamorphoses* 1.89-100.]

We can easily see that the formation of Patriarchy was clearly defined by the Hammurabi, which later was the common law. Even today we can recognize what the intent of these laws were so long ago:

**§24:** If a woman whom a man took as a secondary wife bore him children, the dowry which she brought from her fathers house belongs to her children, but the children of the (1<sup>st</sup> primary) wife and the children of the second wife shall share equally in the property of their father.

**§25:** If a man married a wife and she bore him children and these children are living, and a slave-girl also bore children for her master, (even if) the father granted freedom to the slave-girl, any of her children, the slave-girl's children shall not share the estate with the children of their master.

**§26:** If the wife died, and after her death the man took his slave-girl as wife, the children of the (first) wife and (still) the heirs. The children which the slave-girl bore her master shall...(last transcription lost)

**§27:** If a man's wife has not borne him children, but a prostitute from the streets has borne him children, he shall provide grain, oil and clothing for the prostitute. The children which the prostitute has borne him, shall be his heirs, but as long as his wife lives, the prostitute shall not live in the house with his wife.

**§28:** If a man has turned his face away from his wife...but she has not gone away...and his married a woman as a secondary wife, she shall continue to support his wife. [ pg 160 *Civilizations before Greece*]

Clearly, we can observe from analysis of these ancient laws that the father ruled in the home through the Legal support of the laws. However, the women were supported, and protected as well as the children. We see in these sections the laws and protections of the laws of Morte Main and Descent which Jefferson was so concerned over. In section §25 we see the concept of illegitimacy as defined in California Civil Code section §7004(a), or that the inheritance of an errant 'illegitimate' pregnancy, that the wealth stays with the 'legal' heirs. This clearly supported Patriarchy and made the institution of 'illegitimacy' a non-profitable endeavor. This in turn supported marriage, and lowered divorce as history shows us.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Section §26 above clearly also supports laws of descent as clearly as the Maxim's of law's indicate "the child knows his fathers bed the best." Which is to say that the original marriage had great meaning upon the system of Patriarchy, ergo: the contract of marriage was a sacred contract and upheld by law and held in great esteem. Today, the marriage contract is deliberately undermined by our present Judicial system as the original "sacred" matrimonial contract vowed in Churches as well as 'Contract in Law' Prenuptial agreements are the easiest contracts within this nation or Contract Law in which to abrogate. Indeed, such flaccid backing is given to these 'contracts' as to render them almost meaningless...

Section §27 demonstrates ancient laws which kept welfare within the home in accordance will allowing the Father to control that welfare and in which to allow the concept of some semblance of honor accorded to a wife of a husband. If a similar predicament befell lets say a blue-collar worker who was married, the District Attorney's Office through their Child Welfare and Child Support laws would ruin that man's original family, and would indiscriminately steal from him and his family in order to provide for the prostitute's child, all under the "Best Interests of the Child". The Blue Collar workers children he had with his first wife would be either greatly inhibited by such actions or worse yet outright destroyed. What is most glaring in all these sections, is the fact that nowhere does it provide any payments or benefits (other than the ability to rule over their subject and to provide law and order) to government or the court systems. Again, in our present system, the 'system' benefits greatly.

Section §28 establishes the legal doctrine of providing for the first wife upon separation or divorce, again; clearly holding the first legitimate marriage in high regard.

Clearly, such early laws, which most features were later incorporated into the common law, benefited, and supported marriage and the children that developed from those unions.

**§6--§8:** Payments t a divorced wife [if a man divorces his wife he shall pay her one mina of silver. If it is a former widow whom he divorces, he shall pay her ½ mina of silver. If the man cohabited with the widow without a marriage contract, he need not pay her any silver. [pg. 162. Civilizations Before Greece.]

We must analyze these ancient laws supporting Patriarchy and the family in the light of Civilization itself, which we have shown; at about the time prior to these laws were Matriarchal in nature. These laws were clearly a demarcation of the establishment of the Patriarchal revolution, and the new formed idea of supporting the ability of the family to stay together by the support of Government supporting it's weakest link: the Father. There can be no disputing that these Ancient laws, along with the

## CHAPTER FOUR

common law, helped the institution of marriage, and Families. There can be nodisputing of the facts, that under the present Feminist/Socialist regime, that Feminist Jurisprudence is directly attacking the Father, intruding upon, and usurping the sovereign authority of all homes, and thereby is dismantling and damaging the Family unit, and thereby—greatly contributing to the destruction of our children; generationally. The reign of Patriarchy has reigned from about 5000BC until approximately 1920 when the first fusillade of feminist sponsored attacks began on the American Family as an institution. Their direct target: the common law as guaranteed by the first, third, fourth, fifth, seventh, ninth and tenth Amendment's, and Article 4, Section 4 of the Constitution for the united States of America (1787-1789).

Ancient societies jealously guarded both the Family and Fathers Rights by law. This was a practice so pronounced, that in Greece, and Rome, it was undisputed that the Father was the ultimate authority within the home, having ultimate power over his wife and children...even that of life or death if he wished. Assyrian Laws clearly allowed men to control their own homes:

"Apart from the penalties for married women which are written on the table, a man may flog his wife, he may pull out her hair, he may damage and split her ears. There is nothing wrong in this." [Civilizations Before Greece—p. 169.]

These laws still persist throughout the middle east, and are under attack internationally by the Feminist movement worldwide. Feminists such as Barbara Walters and Diane Sawyer reporting on ABC's News Magazine program 20/20, condemn the practice in its most worst light—the blatant public killing of immoral women who refuse to obey their laws. Clearly Ms.'s Walters and Sawyer intend to have their feminist avocation imposed upon the Countries whom are still adhering to these laws. Conversely, Ms.'s Walters and Sawyer would be quite apopyletic if those countries impose their custom's and laws upon them—but in the safety of a eminently biased media system, we can only see one side: theirs. Clearly, they do not inform us of any benefits of these customs which have been in place in such societies on the order of 8000 years. Clearly, we do not see the prevalent Social Pathologies that their Feminist system has plagued this nation (and other Socialist/Feminist nations whom have embraced the Welfare State) imbued upon their societies—but nowhere in their report is that issue reported.

"Traditional cultures believe that the acts of the woman reflect on the families," the story begins. They bring out several women, mostly imprisoned in Jail (for their safety against being beaten or killed by their husbands, fathers and even other family members who will beat or kill

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

them if they are let out). Barbara Walters and Diane Sawyer are using these women as "mutilated beggar's" in which to gain support and sympathy from an American audience in which itself is being converted from Patriarchy to the Matriarchal model via the mainstream media. Using the highest forms of propaganda, open ended and leading questions, shock photographs, highly stylized video impact, their story is a clear form of propaganda, only portraying for the greatest part, the Feminist/Government position of Matriarchy. In one powerful scene, a woman who has been 'shacking up' with another man, is brutally killed by her brother because of her immoral acts. Of course *he* cannot marry, and he along with the family are humiliated and shunned throughout the society. Upon bringing her body to the hospital, 20/20 documents how the whole town is gathered around the car, clapping for joy.

Clearly, in juxtaposition to what ABC 20/20 is showing us, the town is in a state of joy, or release—of finally being rid of something they deem terrible. This is much different than what we saw in Nazi Germany during WWII against the Jews. Clearly these societies know the threat and breakdown of Matriarchy. By their religion and their teachings, they have been inculcated generationally to defend against this danger. What we see here is not the Autocratic function of a malicious state using plebany reasoning to a certain ends, rather; what we see in this report, is a town sighing with relief over the denigration and perversion that it is being threatened with. They allow the FAMILY to impose social regulation at a lenient price. This follows the maxim of law "The Father who does not rule too harshly, must be obeyed."

However I use this 20/20 story not too bring out any sadistic intent to kill or destroy women. No. The point I am making here goes to the exact root of the American experience. For in this 'documentation' which was nothing more than a Feminist hate piece against *another* foreign society; Ms's Walters and Sawyer are making the assumption that these people, cannot independently rule within their own nation. That they need the egalitarian support and help of Feminism, which has created such a panoply of problems and fears here; that somehow, *their* political mindset is good for these peoples. This is the exact arrogance which prohibits any American male from ruling within their own home. Not only can't men make decisions within their own private homes, but neither can supposedly 'sovereign' nations! All now, must bow to the will of Matriarchy, as seen through the eyes of radical feminists.

One only has to go as far as the morning paper or Television news report to see what they Muslim societies fearing. Rape, perversion, gun use, gangs, teenage suicides, gay and lesbianism perversions and lifestyles are all virtually non-existent in these cultures.

At what price, does one ask?

## CHAPTER FOUR

Well, in this nation *you can't ask*. And that is why the media is presently controlled by Gay, Lesbian and Feminist extremists, who will never allow male causes to be shown in their proper light. At all costs, there are cogent efforts to circumspect any true information from being disseminated by mainstream media institutions.

A couple of years ago I received a call from a TV producer. She said a well-known anchorwoman was putting together a special on "Programs that Work" for children in the so-called underclass. Specifically, she referred to a case in Chicago in which a ten-year-old and an eleven-year-old threw a five-year-old out of the fourteenth-story window of a housing project because the five-year-old wouldn't steal candy for them. Could I tell her what programs work for kids like those who tossed the five-year-old boy out the window? I answered that I knew of no programs that would help them. After a brief silence, she thanked me and hung up. [*Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick T. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; p. 16.]

This same exact scenario happened to us, several times. In once most memorable incident down in Los Angeles, just before Father's Day in 1998, we had sent out most certainly, 100 press flyers to various mainstream media organizations about our platform in the Fathers Rights community. We had intentionally placed our agenda that no father should pay Child Support on this document, so that the Media could tell exactly what we were really about and plan accordingly.

We got one call from an angry female reporter from Santa Monica, who tersely said that she'd *never* run a story like this. Of course I asked how the public was to be properly informed as to make correct decisions upon this subject. I asked her: "How will they ever be able to determine if we are correct or not?"

After again, a brief silence, she didn't even say goodbye. She just hung up on me.

In this 20/20 report we can see a similar blackened mindset. They interviewed the family whose son, now in prison; which had killed their promiscuous daughter, each Mothers and sister within that family concurred totally with the abolition of the Matriarchal feminist model within their communities and cultures and condoned their daughters death. This is clearly a shock to the feminist biased reporters of Ms.'s Walters and Sawyer combined. Clearly, in these cultures the family has meaning, and protections: most of the men shown having committed these "Honor Killing's" have been given lenient sentences by the Judiciary whom are clearly supporting Patriarchy by doing so. *More importantly*, the family's well being is linked to the societies well-being also—this cannot be disputed. In this light, therefore, do these cultures have the right to defend

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

against such immorality? Apparently, they say yes; and from their actions they control morality through the home and family. Not from an eclectic cultural elitists such as Ms.'s Walters and Sawyers.

Here in the United States however; parents dare not spank or raise a hand to their own children because of the social terrorism of which the Feminists and cultural elite will level upon such people, who: "dare to think and rule for themselves." In a story that harks of malevolent autocracy, we can clearly document this point of what such denial to rule in ones own home brings:

The story involved on Skip Frisbee, a middle aged father who like most fathers had lost his daughter years earlier in a custody dispute to an errant and clearly immoral mother. The mother, who used Skip only as a random member to "her" family in regards to their one child a daughter aged 14; finally in the middle of the night she showed up at his door with their 14 year old daughter and dumped her on his doorstep to 'take care of her'. Apparently, she had found a biker that she wanted to travel with, so; she dumped the responsibility on Skip.

Initially, this was a godsend for Mr. Frisbee, as he initially wanted his daughter, but, through the actions of a clearly Feminist/Socialist court system—lost custody to the mother. The mother over the years, lived an 'open' lifestyle, giving the daughter, little if any moral values or core instruction on how to behave or what was right or wrong. The mother also intentionally kept the daughter away from Skip, just because she could. Nonetheless, now that Skip finally had his daughter after so many years, at least they could live a modicum of some family life.

This hope was short-lived, for upon the first weekend, the 14 year-old daughter, already lost to the Feminist system, (she had been in trouble with the law several times), arrogantly informed the Father that she was going away for the weekend to 'do what she wanted.'

Skip of course, was lost in the ignorant backward sensibilities that many of these 'backward traditional cultures' suffered through—Patriarchy--tried to lay down the law as the Father to his own daughter, telling her that in no uncertain terms was she going to live an open lifestyle, that she would study, go to school, have a regular schedule, be responsible, etc. The daughter flew off the handle, so the father grounded her and sent her to her room.

She belligerently defied him, warning that if he did, he would pay.

He was not moved, and stood by his decision..

So, she—being grounded—called the Police on him and claimed that Skip (her own biological father) sexually molested her. In routine order the police showed up, they arrested him, and summarily put him in jail. She of course was now placed in a foster home, free to party, which she did. After it was all said and done, the daughter ran away from that home,

## CHAPTER FOUR

and he was left embittered not only by the betrayal, but at the system that had propagated this plague against him...the courts and his own government.

What does the American society get from this madness? Clearly ABC's 20/20 is backing the 'open' and 'free' lifestyle choice of Feminism. However; in millions upon millions of homes exactly like Skip Frisbee's—this feminist anarchy has not only obliterated any semblance of what the 'assumed' was the right thing to do, they have categorically come to the conclusion that those who are imposing any form of punishment against children or women, are in fact; criminals. As we have documented...it is the Feminists, the Government, and an elite cadre of Socialists who impose this diametrically opposed system against Fathers and Families. In the final analysis, we breed women like Skip's daughter Susie, who in turn; will most assuredly propagate several generations of an underclass linked to Welfare, the War on Drugs, Prisons and many other social pathologies solidly linked to this perversion..

But I also expected that by the mid-eighties family preservation would have made a difference, that a lot more kids would be staying home, I was right on both counts. Family preservation had made a major difference, and the kids were staying home. But the difference was not an improvement.

Gradually over the next several years my view on family preservation and reunification changed. Preserving families is a good idea in a "proper" case, but such cases are unfortunately not as common as they used to be. And Father Flanagan's dictum about "no such thing as a bad boy" had been modified by many child welfare workers into "no parents are bad parents." But the kids and parents coming into the big-city courts are different from a generation ago. The files I kept seeing and the cases I kept trying, and those the lawyers I supervise brought to my attention, altered my view. [*Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick t. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago, IL 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; p. 69.]

Taking a cold hearted scientific view of this, one can only come to the conclusion; that perhaps, the more traditional cultures like the Muslim's are more enlightened than the new 'emancipated' regimes that have enjoined and applied Feminist Tribalism against their respective societies. This application is the exact plague the modern Fathers Rights Movement is fighting. We are not only saving ourselves (a noble endeavor), but our homes and our children—and as the 'traditional cultures' show: we are also saving society as well from this disaster.

---

### COMMON LAW ANALYSIS

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

If you ask any lawyer or Judge what the common law is, they will try and say that it is "Judge made law". When you start to speak to them in the analysis of their statement, you will find them adamant, until you start bringing up certain elements of its function. If you ask them if it is unwritten, they might agree. If you ask them if it is the ancient law, they will agree to this also. However, if you ask them if it is the law that "lives in the hearts and mind's of men everywhere", they will begin to vacillate. Clearly, they want title to that law as they know its breadth and power, just as District Attorney Jack Crack did when he tried to prosecute Dr. Jack Kevorkian under it in 1998. However, note the following passage:

"Common law." The law of England is divided, as hath beene said before, into three parts; 1, the common law, which is the most generall and ancient law of the realme, of part whereof Littleton wrote; 2, statutes or acts of parliament; and 3, particular customes (whereof Littleton also maketh some mention). I say particular, for if it be the generall custome of the realme, it is part of the common law. The common law has no controller in any part of it, but the high court of parliament; and if it be not abrogated or altered by parliament, it remains still, as Littleton here saith. The common law appeareth in the statute of Magna Charta and other statutes (which for the most part are affirmations of the common law) in the original writs, in judiciall records, and in our bookes of termes and yeares. Section 115b.

Clearly Judges are not the makers of the common law as the cite makes clear: "The common law has no controller in any part of it, but the high court of parliament" The "Parliament" only interprets it from the customs and usage's of any given area. It is 'the ancient' law, going back before the time of Hammurabi, Assyrian or any other law. In fact, the common law goes back *before* the time there were any Judges.

The ancient customs and usage's of an area dictate what the common law is. For instance, in Scotland, there is a common law right that anyone has the right to cross your property, as long as they do so unobtrusively, and when they get to and from the other side of the property they close both the gates upon entering and leaving. However; in the united States, upon that identical common law right to travel, there is a higher common law right of privacy of property, and the rights of the individual; and you can be shot by the owner for trespassing. How can Judges rule on the common law when it is so disparate in two areas upon the same common law right?

It is because they don't. They only rule on the custom's and usage's of that particular community which have already established that custom for themselves. So that, we can see from society to society, slight variances in the common law, yet; on the whole; more stability within the law than in any other system. The reason? It is because the common law is the law of the highest reason. Laws under common law scrutiny have to pass the test of time immemorial. This is why, laws such as killing immoral



## CHAPTER FOUR

and dishonorable women have lasted for so long in ancient 'traditional' cultures. From this 'ancient' law muster, societies under the common law can depend in stability of the law. This is supposed to happen under the de facto system of law, such as those laws passed by the State Legislatures of this nation, but; because those laws are plied by incredibly powerful special interests—we have laws that now not only controvert the common law, but the Constitution itself!

In fact, our society has been so bludgeoned by these laws and special interest Legislation, that now, we have just become desensitized to it all. The mass of voters no longer participate in voting because of the inherent corruption is lost to them, and upon the Legislature's passing more and more Draconian laws; all the Average American can do now-a-day's is just to sigh and shrug, then try and become invisible within the masses.

Law's are being passed such as those for 'car seizure' for just being charged with a DUI or DWI. This clearly is a violation of the 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment right against double jeopardy and the doctrine of the presumption of innocence before trial. Under American law you are 'supposed' to be presumed innocent, and thereby; you can't suffer any penalty until *after* you have been found guilty by and through *due process of the law*. If you are found guilty—you are only supposed to suffer 1 penalty for 1 crime.

What is most tragic in the final analysis, is that the common law is a resilient law that has lasted millenium across the domain of several civilizations in which it served them quite well. It provides clear remedy against real crime, and it also provides real protection in the law, because again; it is based upon the law of the highest reason.

The common law has been catalogued through the maxim's of law. The maxims, are theorems and doctrines of truisms that were found out over the historical extent of humanity extending back more than 5000 years. Judges, in order to become Judges at one time only learned Legal Procedure and the Maxim's of law. This is how powerful these maxim's are.

Clearly, one who reads these maxim's cannot argue with their irrefutable logic, nor their elegant simplicity. They cover the range of the human experience, and are deeply imbedded in true law and order.

For instance, the maxim, "The child knows his fathers bed the best." succinctly shows that the Father was responsible for the child's heritage, and more than that; the child's most protected form of being raised by. Again, the maxim's are clearly based upon a Patriarchal solution as they again show not only Civilization's predisposition for the Father, but also the Judiciary's once held such predisposition. This predisposition empowered the courts to protect the Father and thereby the family through decisions such as *Fanning v. Fanning*, discussed earlier. Unfortunately,

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

due to the modern corruption of our modern court systems, they have turned not only away from their maxim's and thereby the law, but also the logic of why these 'truisms' were established in the first place. The extent of human society and America has paid a dear price for their transgression of the common law and the maxim's of law.

---

## CHAPTER FIVE

---

*"How long have you big bags of hot air in Texas have been bragging that you are going to get "joint custody" now!! BFD!! We have had "joint custody" in California for 24 years now, and **IT DON'T WORK!** We already have a word for fathers who get "joint custody" in California—it is called: "PRISON IN-MATES!" -- John Knight of the Fathers Manifesto. e-mail From Mr. Knight to Mr. Ted Hulick*

---

### PLAGUE UPON NATIONS

---

In the previous chapters we have proven how Judges and Government have worked in direct opposition to the laws and social fabric of this nation, against the rule of law and in contravention to the maxim's of law which has previously directed them as a civilized mandate to support Patriarchy. They are supposed to support Fatherhood, and in turn; they know that this will support the two-parent 'nuclear' family which in turn, will allow society to flourish. It is incontrovertible that they are doing the exact opposite, as the facts and figures of the explosion of divorce; the explosion of state-subsidized (read Welfare) 'Single Female Headed Household's'; and the 'train-track' concomitant explosion of teenage crime and other attendant 'pathologies'; in conjunction with the corollary symbiotic exploitation of Government Infrastructures directly related to this destruction of the American Family have superseded anyone's prior expectations. The only defense those in government can submit in answer to these facts is that they had good intentions under what they feel is their mandate of being an altruistic government ready to protect the 'safety' of their citizens.

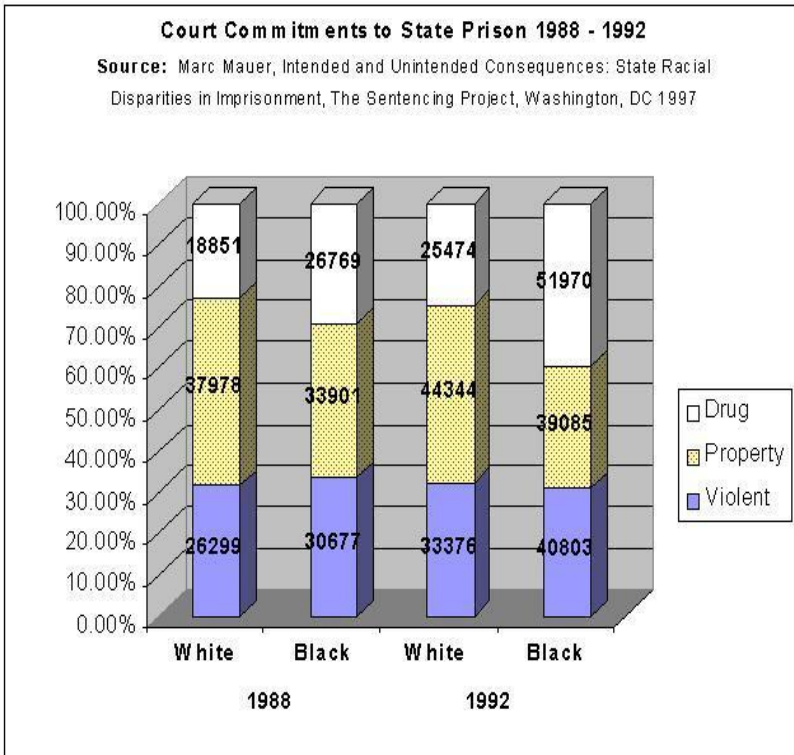
Disregarding what Bastiat said in regards to government using altruism for more ulterior purposes: nothing could be further from the truth.

"As we have gone through the literature on Social Security, we have been shocked at the arguments that have been used to defend the program. Individuals who would not lie to their children, their friends, or their colleagues, whom all of us would trust implicitly in the most personal dealings, have propagated a false view of Social Security. Their intelligence and exposure to contrary views make it hard to believe that they have done so unintentionally and innocently." [*Free to Choose: A Personal Statement*, by Milton Friedman, ©1980, Harcourt, Brace Jovanovich, New York and London, 757 Third Avenue, New York, NY 10017; ISBN 0-15-133481-1; pp. 105-106.]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

From the massive facts and figures which openly display putative malfeasance upon early recognition that such practices, policies and procedures government inflicted upon its own citizens, and most certainly; upon for the greatest part 'mostly fathers' we can see by present government and court performances against our own citizenry, that there is another design and intent to this altruism. Any person with a modicum of intelligence—rather—with an inferior amount of intelligence, could easily tell that something was terribly, terribly wrong in the formation and execution of Feminist applied 'altruism' upon this American Society. Categorically, each foreign nation also implementing the Feminist/Socialist model of 'altruism' are suffering similar disasters in pathologies upon their collective civilizations. In accordance with the Feminist hate model, they have all willingly vilified 'Fatherhood' and men into criminality. Those societies which have not adopted these models, have not 'invented' Fathers and Men into criminals. They actually venerate fatherhood.

One might make the assumption perhaps even a connection: that a nation implementing "Welfare" or "altruism" will most certainly soon commit Fatherhood into a concurrent criminal status. At minimum, those



## CHAPTER FIVE

countries will soon find themselves devaluing Fatherhood. It appears, that Fatherhood and Welfare and incongruent institutions.

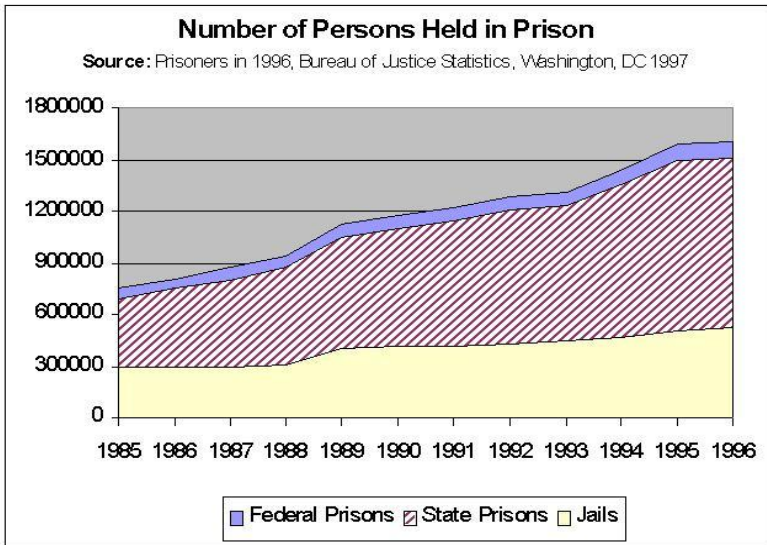
For instance, in America, the 'average' American Male has a probability of 80% being incarcerated at least one time in his life from minor infractions ranging from anywhere from 'speeding' and 'DUI' among other misdemeanor violations, to 'murder', non-payment of child support, and other 'felonies'. Estimates within our jails clearly show a perverse system, that will most likely place Blacks and Poor into Jails, and those doing 'Consensual' or the "Victimless" crimes we documented previously in Chapter 4. Other nations which have not adopted the Feminist/Socialist model of 'altruism' factually do not vilify nor criminalize their Fathers or Males. In Japan for instance, the 'average' Japanese male has a 2.1% chance of going to jail at least one time in his life. Clearly, this radical separation of incarceration figures but shows the perverse mentality, and more importantly—intent of the Feminist/Socialist government system of Welfare. This "Prison Mentality" which has now become a normal occupation within the government mindset, has staggered our society, beyond comprehension. For instance:

The Edna McConnell Clark Foundation warns that building and operating more prisons takes money away from education, road building, health care, etc. From 1984 to 1994, California higher educational institutions lost 8,000 jobs, while the department of corrections hired 26,000 employees for 112,000 new inmates. In the early 1980s, California spent 3 percent of its budget on prisons and 18 percent on higher education. In 1994, prisons and education each accounted for 8 percent of the state's budget. With the passage of the "three strikes and you are out" law, California's inmate population will dramatically increase calling for more funds.

The National Conference of State Legislatures estimated that with its "no parole" provision, Virginia will double its prison population and need \$2 Billion or more during the next 10 years to cover building costs. Researches from RAND, a California think tank, concluded that "to support implementation of the law, total spending for higher education and other government services would have to fall by more than 40 percent over the next eight years." In addition, imprisonment reduces the number of taxpayers and wage earners for society, as well as creates more families on public support. [*Prison's and Jails, A Deterrent to Crime?* By Nancy R. Jacobs, ©1995, Information Plus, Wylie, Texas 75098, ISBN 1-57302-047-8, pp. 14-15.]

What people forget to mention is that for every father you imprison, many children have to be displaced and put somewhere else. For every dollar you spend on Prison, you take away a dollar in education. Because of the Feminism mindset and other reformist social sanctified causes, the prison growth rate as shown above has gone absolutely insane. No longer

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



are we a free nation, and if one clearly looked at these facts, which made Judge Braxton Kittree, in Mobile Alabama comment in 1990 "In my experience, prisons and jails fill up as fast as they are built." This has been again, a specific control mechanism used against men, who for the most part are provided no social role within their own homes or their own society, and thereby; are instantly criminalized. The waste of resources is incomprehensible. The national dreams differed and destroyed in which to support this insanity: astronomical. The pain and suffering incurred through such a flawed mindset: satanic. The palpable results: ignoble.

When one does an Abstract analysis of this system using empirical analysis, one can only be revolted at the system that has been adopted, which has not only been sustained and propagated in the light of such reprehensible quantifiable facts of its abject failure, but presently is forcibly being applied against the citizens of the United States of America, even though those within the corridors of power are well aware, and have been given fair and continuing notice, that their practices, policies and procedures have not only become an unsustainable disaster upon the American landscape, but also that they are, by law; in absolute abrogation to this nations laws and system of governance.

The final analysis of this can only be, in the light of the overwhelming facts and figures, and by the complete degradation of the Welfare State upon America—that those "Public Servant's" whom continually support and impose these systems upon us all—in the light of such overwhelming destruction, can only be doing this as a intentional, cogent program dedi-

## CHAPTER FIVE

cated to the Destruction of the American Male, the Family, and thereby—the destruction of the fabric of this nation itself.

The lineage of this destruction has been established over a century. From the late 19<sup>th</sup> century, feminists have placed forth an ideologue internationally, which by the late 1920's and 1930's began to take fruition within the corridors of Washington power. In the 1930's FDR started the panorama of socialist Administrative Agencies, all in response to real (some say contrived) social and economic problems which were besetting this nation. These "Alphabet Soup" agencies were the first assault upon the Capitalist/Free Mercantilist System of Free Enterprise. A coterie of Socialist Elite regimes embedded themselves within the corridors of power, all under the guise of American 'altruism' established under the panoply of the Roosevelt New Deal Program's. This validity gave those with countervailing intent's to the American system of Governance, more and more control over the American home and family, and; more importantly; over the Father. Conversely, the supporting institutions of Patriarchy were never consulted throughout these design's, however; the Feminists ruled and gave input to government in which to conceive and implement the range of these programs. From 1933 until the present, more draconian laws have slowly usurped the American model of government, and most certainly, Patriarchy (only being momentarily interrupted by WWII, Korea and Vietnam) as is documented in the Seven Model's of Government put forward by Lawrence H. Tribe in his book, Constitutional Law previously mentioned in Chapter 4. These changes happened slowly, almost imperceptibly, until the watershed years of the early 1960's and 1970's when Lyndon B. Johnson implemented a more radical opening of the floodgates to Welfare starting in 1964.

"In the Welfare area the change of direction has led to an explosion in recent decades, especially after President Lyndon Johnson declared a "War on Poverty" in 1964. New Deal programs of Social Security, unemployment insurance, and direct relief were all expanded to cover new groups; payments were increased; and Medicare, Medicaid, food stamps, and numerous other programs were added. Public housing and urban renewal programs were enlarged. By now there are literally hundreds of government welfare and income transfer programs. The Department of Health, Education and Welfare, established in 1953 to consolidate the scattered welfare programs, began with a budget of \$2 Billion, less than 5 percent of expenditures on national defense. Twenty-five years later, in 1978, its budget was \$160 billion, one and a half times as much as total spending on the army, navy, and the air force. It had the third largest budget in the world, exceeded only by the entire budget of the U.S. government and of the Soviet Union. The department supervised a huge empire, penetrating every corner of the nation. More than one out of every 100 persons employed in this country worked in the HEW empire, either

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

directly for the department or in programs for which HEW had responsibility but which were administered by state or local government units. All of us were affected by its activities. (In late 1979 HEW was subdivided by the creation of a separate Department of Education.)

No one can dispute two superficially contradictory phenomena: widespread dissatisfaction with the results of this explosion in welfare activities; continued pressure for further expansion.

...Despite the failure of these programs, the pressure to expand them grows." [*Free to Choose: A Personal Statement*, by Milton Friedman, ©1980, Harcourt, Brace Jovanovich, New York and London, 757 Third Avenue, New York, NY 10017; ISBN 0-15-133481-1; pp. 96--97.]

By 1971, the takeover had been so complete, that the Feminist could dictate the complete reversal of law upon the Supreme Court, starting with the application of the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment being applied to women and soon thereafter—the ultimate fraud—and era of *Roe v. Wade*.

Of course, this fraud comes at the price of logic, for three quarters of a century earlier, the roots of the Civil Rights movement were laid down by Supreme Court Justice John Harlan who made a dissenting opinion in the case *Plessy v. Ferguson* which upheld the hated "separate but equal" doctrine of the late nineteenth century:

"...Homer Plessy [who] was one-eighth black...was denied a [railroad] seat in a first-class car because he was considered black under Louisiana law. The most straightforward argument—that Plessy was denied freedom of contract—was no longer possible because of the evisceration of economic liberties in [the] *Slaughter-House* cases [which restrained such liberties.] So he had to make the argument—historically more difficult—that the Fourteenth Amendment's equal protection clause forbade racial segregation. The Court disagreed, ruling that race-based distinctions are valid if they are "reasonable," and "with respect to this there must necessarily be a large discretion on the part of the legislature."

In dissent, Justice John Harlan gave lone voice to the American civil rights vision. [He said that the] statute was plainly was "inconsistent with the personal liberty of citizens, white and black," and the supreme law, which established universal civil freedom....and placed our free institutions upon the broad and sure foundation of the equality of all men before the law..." [The Affirmative Action FRAUD, Can We Restore the American Civil Rights Vision?, by Clint Bolick, ©1996 by the Cato Institute, 1000 Massachusetts Ave., N.W., Washington, D.C. 20001; ISBN 1-882577-28-0; pp. 32-33]

What is most notable especially in recent times, is that the lust and power of government has drawn such Socialists and other Elite Regimes and special interests, like a moth is drawn to a light. Indeed, within the modern Welfare State Agencies of Health and Human Services, right down to community Feminists Health Centers and "Safe Houses" we see



## CHAPTER FIVE

an embedding of a host junta of radical Socialists, Feminists, along with radical Lesbian and Gays. This is the "Hive" of the modern Radical Feminist movement. Within these systems, (which by the way, are the ones making the supposed 'scientific' inquiry and analysis) are people whom have a clear demarcated 'agenda' (some would even call a 'religion'), and are the ones who are given quick access before government and their tribunals; both public and private—in which to make and assess 'recommendations' for further action or programs to be implemented within government. Indeed, you will find no 'Constitutionalists' or "Patriarch's" or any other representation from groups representing a Free and Sovereign American people who desire 'less government' or who demand strict construction of the Constitution and its narrow, limited construction allowing only 'enumerated' authorities. For these people and the groups they represent; only silence will be allowed. From and by this fraud, government has the arrogance upon implementation of hearing only from these groups, that; it has inquired into the public mind and has allowed full public disclosure and discussion. Nothing could be further from the truth.

### ENFORCING THE PARTY LINE

"There's nothing like working in the battered women's movement to feel truly abused," says Renee Ward, who served as director of a Minneapolis shelter for battered women from 1982 to 1984. A movement outsider with a background in sociology and public health, Ward had no idea what lay in store when she took the job at the shelter. She found it to be "a very unhealthy environment," partly because of animosities among staff. Ward attributes this to the fact that "having been a battered woman was the primary qualification for staff members," and the women often continued to enact the "victim-victimizer roles" of abusive relationships in their interactions with coworkers and supervisors. But above all, she recalled ten years later, "it was a terrible, terrible experience because of the pressure of ideology":

Racism, patriarchy, homophobia, oppression of the masses were talked about endlessly, as part of the indoctrination that had to go on for everyone at the shelter, including the clients. It seemed like expressing any other ideas or raising any questions was not really tolerated. There was a lot of hostility to men. I didn't think that was very successful in working with women, because most of them wanted to be in a relationship with a man.

....Even people who have never sought out the battered women's movement may find their lives affected by its growing clout.

It's impossible to tell how many veterans of the movement are working within the criminal justice system as prosecutors, like Sarah Buel, an abused –wife-turned-activist with a penchant for extreme rhetoric and striking but sometimes erroneous factoids, who was an assistant district at-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

torney in Massachusetts from 1988 to 1996. Others have found niches in victim services. Pamela Johnston, whose account of her battles with the right in Kansas in 1980 was mentioned earlier, turned up in the 1990s as executive director of the Victim Information Bureau of Suffolk County in New York.[*CEASEFIRE! Why Women and Men Must Join Forces to Achieve True Equality*, by Cathy Young, ©1999; The Free Press, A Division of Simon & Schuster Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-83442-1, pp. 110 and 116]

"It was great I could had a lot of people I could rely. I knew who I could talk to if I needed to talk," admits Yahminah McDonald writing for New Youth Connections, a college Newspaper at La Guardia Community College in New York City. "I found the group at the AIDS Center of Queens County, where I already volunteered. It was run by a lesbian woman...We helped each other along the way to feel safe and comfortable." She relates.

Indeed, they do! For within the Feminist Health Centers, Women Shelters, Women's Safe Houses, County Welfare, the County Family Services Support Division, Police Domestic Violence Unit's, and the range of Health and Human Services nationwide: **this** is the only mindset you will find within these institutions! Radical Feminists!! It is a monolith and the *only* philosophy throughout these organizations.

Upon even a cursory look at the employees in the child protection system, one fact emerges: a disproportionate number (to society) of these employees come from molested backgrounds. One could only conclude that these workers were drawn to these positions because of their own biases or experiences of child molestation themselves. [*Where Have All the Fathers Gone? Child Support and Custody*, by Douglas O'Brien, ©1997, Skid 18 Press, P.O. Box 60630, Fairbanks, AK 99706; ISBN 0-9637496-2-5; p. 59.]

Conversely, when Fathers Rights groups try and access either the media or our own government—or these very institutions--we are intentionally ignored into abject silence. Silence is the weapon of choice of media, government and the Feminists within this construct, and those who think or feel otherwise; are not hired, or if hired: quickly dismissed. If there is any news or public hearings to provide input; we are quickly dismissed and either shouted down, or denied the forum outright. This is not 'just' a social program they are running, it is a religion of the deepest convictions—and the state in imposing its usurpation's of this power; **only allow the blessed testimony and report of those who have either passed or possess the altruistic component of socialist theory and dogma.** Those who do not expound this religion: are shut out.

## CHAPTER FIVE

What we are left with here is a one-way mindset, that has been allowed to flourish at the expense of the American way of life. This is in fact, only a one way street. Grants, subsidize, and trillions of dollars in government moneys and program's are at stake here. Thereby; no other facts or realities can exist in which to even remotely challenge this system, for their intent is not only to cause the plague that America and the American family are derogated to, but more importantly—to eternally manage them—at the expense of the Father and the Family who are intrinsically destroyed by application of their altruism.

The men of Police Battalion 101 voiced no general objection to having had Frau Wohlauf, Frau Brand, and other women living with their battalion in Poland, fully knowledgeable of their genocidal killing of Jews that was, as two of the men put it, their **'daily bread.'** [*Hitler's Willing Executioner's, Ordinary German's and the Holocaust* p.243.]

Like the holocaust of WWII, the modern American plague of socialist Feminism in this nation is a movement with dedicated obfuscation to the truth and the American system of common law and governance, which is their **"daily bread"**. Directly due to this unwavering and rigid mindset, the American Father along with society has had to suffer the loss and destruction of their individual birthright's of home, Family, and wealth.

Just before I volunteered to go into the United States Marine Corps during Vietnam in early 1972, I remember seeing New York City in the last great light that it represented. Of course, the city had problems—but the subways and local infrastructure flourished—and more importantly, things like iron bars and roll-up iron curtains did not grace the outside of the majority of homes and business establishments—that was something foreign—it hadn't happened yet. When I came back in after my tour of honorable service in 1977, I was mortified by the war-zone New York City had become: the public parks overgrown with weeds and in disarray, iron bars upon peoples' windows, and more importantly: graffiti...graffiti was like a pestilence...it was **everywhere**. Clearly, even then; I sensed that an earthquake had struck the intrinsic substrate of America.

Something had. For in the final analysis, what I was seeing, and unfortunately, what later; the whole nation experienced—as this pestilence of bars, iron doors, and graffiti soon went nation/world-wide, **this** was in fact the resultant expectation of the first graduating class of 'generational' Welfare started in 1964 by Lyndon B. Johnson. The 'Great Society' crop of Welfare, (which could clearly be seen to astronomically explode at a slope increase on the order of 45 degrees) had reaped it's first harvest of Single Mother Welfare children that were now grown and making their impact on society. This was the 'graduating class' of Welfare mongrel's that were turning into the late teen's and over-running and burdening so-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ciety. This pestilence, has continued; unabated and as Newt Gingrich and others have noted: the **attendant 'railroad tracks'** of statistical links to demographics of crime and their link to single mother households; are indisputable. The effects of this pestilence I have personally witnessed in South Los Angeles, to where virtually, every-single-home has iron bars on their windows within each and every community there.

Each single bar upon those homes, represents a single child representing the millions of children who have been implanted into Government Welfare systems which later on, 'harvests' this impending scheduled failure, and now is represented by the explosion of Welfare infrastructure subsystems such as Child-Youth Authority, Gangs, Drug Use, exploding prison populations, mental institutions, Foster Homes and the likes. Each bar represents as many children who have been 'sown' by this corrupt Feminist system to breed and sow more "harvests" of crops of Welfare failure so that Government and the Welfare State can eternally manage each subsequent generational 'harvests' of crime and social pathology they knowingly planted decades earlier. Each and every person whom is hired and works within this system and who supports it, clearly understands where their "daily bread" comes from, and they are unwilling to submit to the greater authority of the Home and Father which will cure this disease. In fact, these Socialists who are the clerks and administrators within this system will overtly lie and cheat as Milton Friedman noted above, in order to maintain its continued existence and more importantly: increasing production levels. America is factually being forced into the failure of this "Village" model that Ms. Hillary Rodham-Clinton along with a host of well-connected Feminists and Socialist Elite's which begs the American people to acquiesce to what is an already, astounding disaster.

"Believers in aristocracy and socialism share a faith in centralized rule, in rule by command rather than by voluntary cooperation. They differ in who should rule: whether an elite determined by birth or experts supposedly chosen on merit. Both proclaim, no doubt sincerely, that they wish to promote the well-being of the "general public," that they know what is in the "public interest" and how to attain it better than the ordinary person. Both, therefore, profess a paternalistic philosophy. And both end up, if they attain power, promoting the interests of their own class in the name of the "general welfare." [*Free to Choose: A Personal Statement*, by Milton Friedman, ©1980, Harcourt, Brace Jovanovich, New York and London, 757 Third Avenue, New York, NY 10017; ISBN 0-15-133481-1; pp. 97-98.]

Clearly, they don't care about the bars upon each and every window whose silent sentinel categorically represents the testimony of failure of this "Village" system. Each bar, of course, catalogues one child who was

## CHAPTER FIVE

destroyed by this system, and became a criminal in which to support Ms. Clinton's Socialist machine. For the destruction of our children since the advent of American Socialism has been like nothing this nation has ever imagined. But it does provide jobs for the "Village" masters, and it most certainly has become the '*daily bread*' to countless clerks and administrators, (not to mention the American elite) each one whose mismanagement has only seen the growth of these social pathologies explode continuously within our nation.

This is one reason why Welfare has become such a security—rather not truly a security but a long lasting husband--to the underclass female who is destined through her religion of Radical Feminism to marry into it.

First, single mothers, particularly unwed mothers, stay on welfare longer than other welfare recipients. Of those never-married mothers who receive welfare benefits, almost 40 percent remain on the rolls for ten years or longer. [*Children in Crisis*, edited by Robin Brown, ©1994, H.W. Wilson Company, New York, ISBN 0-8242-0853-6; pp. 38-39.]

### EDUCATION

---

Thomas Jefferson, architect and Founding Father of this nation knew that in order to sustain a free society, that we would need to breed a nation of free men. To do this, he knew along with the other founders, that education of the children was the key. This was recognized before Jefferson's time, a century and a half prior by the New England Puritans whom mandated a good Christian education. Clearly, the founders understood that in order for self governance, you would need an 'informed' society. To be informed, you had to discern abstract concepts of good and evil between disposition of various subjects of political import. This, required the tools of a robust education.

"Forasmuch as the good education of children is of singular behoof and benefit to any Common-wealth; and wheras many parents & masters are too indulgent and negligent of their duty in that kinde. It is therefore ordered that the Select men of everie town, in the severall precincts and quarters where they dwell, shall have a vigilant eye over their brethren & neighbours, to see, first that none of them shall suffer so much barbarism in any of their families as not to indeavour to teach by themselves or others, their children & apprentices so much learning as may inable them perfectly to read the english tongue, & knowledge of the Capital Lawes: upon penaltie of twentie shillings for each neglect therin. Also that all masters of families doe once a week (at the least) catechize their children and servants in the grounds & principles of Religion, & if any be unable to doe so much: that then at the least they procure such children or apprentices to learn some short orthodox catechism without book, that they may be able to answer unto the questions that shall be propounded to them out of such

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

catechism by their parents or masters or any of the Select men when they shall call them to a tryall of what they have learned of this kinde. And further that all parents and masters do breed & bring up their children & apprentices in some honest lawful calling, labour or imployment, either in husbandry, or some other trade profitable for themselves, and the Commonwealth if they will not or cannot train them up in learning to fit them for higher employments. And if any of the Select men after admonition by them given to such masters of families shal finde them still negligent of their dutie in the particulars aforementioned, wherby children and servants become rude, stubborn & unruly; the said Select men with the help of two Magistrates, or the next County court for that Shire, shall take such children or apprentices from them & place them with some masters for years (boyes till they come to twenty one, and girls eighteen years of age compleat) which will more strictly look unto, and force them to submit unto government according to the rules of this order, if by fair means and former instructions they will not be drawn into it." [1642]

Under the tutelage of modern feminism, the denigration and capabilities of our children of rote educational subject matter in the modern classroom has been but one social markers of the failure of this Feminism and Socialism system. This failure has been responsible for breeding several generations of underclass within this nation, that have no base intellectual nor moral abilities, and to which not only the political society within our nation has been left severely wanting because of this all-too apparent defect, but also has been the cause of Private Industries failure to obtain qualified workers in which to sustain viable and future industries within this nation. This is one reason these industries are fleeing to foreign countries...there, they can obtain similarly undereducated employees...but they can get them cheaper. Welfare policies have factually been one reason that has driven the blue-collar industrial base from this nation to foreign shores.

Unfortunately, the failure of the educational system is not the only aberrant effect of this new 'dumbed down' generational Welfare class of people. As Dateline NBC and other news and information shows have shown, children having fights and outright rumbles on school buses, children carrying guns into the schools and killing people, children openly, fearlessly, in front of camera's and before School Authorities, openly challenging them to kill them. Open massacres now occur, such as in Jonesboro, Arkansas and Littleton, Colorado. This new virulent pathology is a subset of what resides in our prisons, and the homes of the mass of the Welfare culture. The ineffectual transmission of discipline, home authority, and the heritage and responsibility to the family and the family name has been lost generationally to this out-of-control underclass—and now of course as Littleton Colorado represents, this virus is moving up from the underclass to the middle and upper-class children of this nation.

## CHAPTER FIVE

Young guys went and still go to jail for crimes they committed and will continue to commit after their release [from prison], and which they pretty much commit as will their offspring because they have no jobs and hence no money, and they have no jobs because they are dumb, and dumb because they have no education and dropped out of high school—actually dropped out mentally in grammar school, because no parent was around to kick them in the butt to go to school, and the parent didn't encourage education since she saw no need for it because her parent didn't see the need, and when he boy became almost a man, no real man was around to deal with the almost-man's male aspirations, and his mom had other kids with no dads to deal with, so the boy became a man by himself (which normally is not a real good idea), and so no one was too surprised when he went to the joint for stealing other people's property or selling drugs for money or killing a friend he'd rather no have killed if he weren't drunk or stoned or pissed off and his friend wasn't drunk or stoned or pissed off and hadn't insulted him—though as he sits in his dank cell, he really can't recall what his friend said to piss him off.

And what do we do here for Charles, his brothers, sisters, mother, the father he never had, and the 55,000 or so other Charleses? We have a hell of a lot more judges (better ones for that matter), more lawyers, social workers, psychologists, psychologists, and more money. But still Charleses deluge our child welfare courts and agencies, and still we argue over how much due process or family preservation or family reunification or counseling or termination or adoption services we must provide. But each of us down deep knows we are ignoring, avoiding, or at most ineffectually touching the real issues and problems. [*Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick t. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago, IL 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; p. 87.]

I've spoken to teachers such as Dirk, who teaches high school history in a High School in Northern California, "I see some kids where there is no light behind the eyes." He says disappointedly. "With as many kids coming from these underclass household's, you can pick them out in class—they stand out," he continues, "you can see many are trying. But there are others, that are lazy, that are lost. There is no effort, no drive. There's nothing. They just don't care."

Other teachers I've spoken to agree. "Some we can't even manage. We are just temporarily babysitting them..." I've heard them say.

Again, I've spoken to police officers and even prisoners who have met this new breed of child in civilian combat situations. One prisoner in Jail told me "I pulled a gun on one 12 year old kid who had come into my house, and told him to get out" then saying in amazement, "the gun didn't even phase him. He ignored me and went casually along his business looking at me with a blank stare. I ain't ever seen anything like it. 'Gun just didn't phase him..."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This desensitization to violence, guns, and authority has had a salient impact upon the American experience. There is a segment of children directly correlated to Welfare that 'are lost' and are an essentially throw-away commodity within our present communities. This is a Dead Wood generation that psychologists, Teachers, Police and Prisons have no comprehension or capability of handling. Like a virulent virus, these new cold hearted thieves, vandalizers, murderers...and worse, *Monsters*...are individuals which have really one future, and that is to eventually be killed or warehoused into the modern day Jail system, and by being warehoused, they can accrue per diem monies for the modern Welfare Superstructure and its attendant Jail Infrastructures and thereby accrue income for those institutions and the Elite of America who profit from these industries. Until that time, society hire's a panorama of 'professionals' like teachers, security guards, psychologists, probation officers, counselors, and police, just to mindlessly baby-sit them, until the inevitable occurs.

Most of these kids turn out to be pathologically and generationally connected to the system. They earn their way in which more and more heinous acts of violence and robbery—and once in. Never really get out of the system.

"We can't teach morality in the classroom," I have heard from teacher after teacher.

They can't, and they don't. More importantly—they shouldn't!! It is supposed to be done within the home and family. In the incidents of the vicious beatings upon several buses, children in those incidences knew, and cogently understood that they were being filmed and taped. They did this with arrogance and spite in front of the Bus driver, they did this openly—with not only comprehension that it was wrong—but in defiance that it was wrong. Just like the 12 year-old above, this new breed of criminal child just isn't phased by guns, power or the system. FBI studies confirm that there is a new malevolent virus within our children, as there statistic's and aberrance's which can be directly correlated to Feminism and the concomitant rise in Single Female Headed Household's.

"[I]n 1992 a total of 267 youths fourteen or under were charged with homicide, a 50 percent increase from the prior decade. That same year one third of all accused murderers were age twenty-four or younger.

The rise in youth homicide started in 1985 after leveling off for nearly fifteen years. Where murderers' ages once peaked in the mid-thirties, the spike on the homicide charts is now at around age eighteen. Since 1985 the rate of homicides committed by juveniles has doubled. This is despite the fact that the total number of teenagers in the United States is the lowest it has been in recent years. [*Guns, Violence, and Teens*, by Vic Cox ©1997, Enslow Publishers Inc., 44 Fadem Road, Box 699, Springfield, NJ 07081, ISBN 0-89490-721-2; pp. 6-7.]



## CHAPTER FIVE

These children and all children shouldn't 'fear' the police or Principal's in regards to answering to authority, they should fear their own Fathers who should be instilling within such children morality! But because the fathers have been disenfranchised by the present court system, this inculcation of morality has been obliterated in today's youth. This destruction of morality is directly related to Feminists and their programs to eradicate fatherhood, which they have accomplished beyond their wildest expectations. They will not admit to paying for their misdeeds or being held accountable for the results of their war. Even when facts show otherwise, they are reticent to admit the correlation which Fatherhood has to education:

While researchers have found that children whose father are involved in their early rearing tend to have higher IQ's, perform better in school and even have a better sense of humor, psychologists say this is not necessarily a gender issue. "It has to do with the fact that there are two people passionately in love with a child," says Harvard's Brazelton. [*Children in Crisis*, edited by Robin Brown, ©1994, H.W. Wilson Company, New York, ISBN 0-8242-0853-6; p. 69.]

But they don't because most of these persons, who are there only to lie to the American public in regards to the real causes of this destruction, are only there for their 'daily bread.' They are amoral, and they estimate that they are 'superior' to the common man, and thereby, this Social Engineering is not really their fault, for at some point in the future, with more money and more programs, it may reverse itself. They do not want to admit that Fathers are intrinsically linked to a child's well-being and education, for to do so, would greatly effect the amount of their 'daily bread.'

The first, glaring point of the figure is that marriage is a powerful poverty preventative, and this is true for women even of modest cognitive ability. A married white women with children who is markedly below average in cognitive ability—at the 16<sup>th</sup> centile, say, one standard deviation below the mean—from an average socioeconomic background had only a 10 percent probability of poverty.

The second point of the graph is that to be without a husband in the house is to run a high risk of poverty, even if the women was raised in an average socioeconomic background. Such a woman, with even an average IQ, ran a 33 percent chance of being in poverty. If she was unlucky enough to have a IQ of only 85, she had more than a 50 percent chance—five times as high as the risk faced by a married woman of identical IQ and socioeconomic background. Even a woman with a conspicuously high IQ of 130 (two standard deviations above the mean) was predicted to have a poverty rate of 10 percent if she was a single mother, which is quite high compared to white women in general. [*The Bell Curve, Intelligence and*

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

*Class Structure in American Life*, by Richard J. Herrnstein, ©1994, Free Press Paperbacks, A Division of Simon & Schuster, Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-82429-9; pp. 138—139.]

Unfortunately while cultural elite's make substantive livings off of deciding these issues, in the meantime, the children become even more amoral without the guiding influence of Fatherhood. The feminists, in order to 'save' the children from abusive Fathers, have willfully established a raging tribal war society, to where now our children are indiscriminately thrown into, and forced to survive—which many don't. These children have been inculcated with the new Feminist Doctrines of "Freedom" with no attendant morality or responsibility attached to such liberties. Of course, at no point in time do they understand or make the connection that responsibility comes with such freedom, as the Feminist themselves do not comprehend this. Such children are arrogant to any authority. They fear nothing, not their teachers, the Police, or other community leaders. They 'should' fear what will happen to them at home, especially when their fathers get home. But they don't, for the greatest majority of these children: the father is simply not there, because he's been forcibly driven out. IF the Father is there, then; he has been effectively emasculated as the towering influence and authority figure within the home. Many can't do anything about their children running wild! Many men are also feminized and are conditioned to believe that they cannot discipline their own children to effect a proper respect for others; rather, these Social 'experts' who have implanted these new dogma's upon each and every household in America—have to find alternative, more 'sensitive' and 'politically correct' method's to child rearing. Rote discipline is out. Everything else is in. Note what the 'expert' Dr. Spock admits about this fact:

How is the mother to know what is right and what is wrong? She wants somebody to decide for her. [*Dr Spock, and American Life*, by Thomas Maier, ©19 , Harcourt Brace & Company, 6277 San Harbor Drive, Orlando, FL 32887-6777, ISBN 0-15-100203-7; p. 377.]

No-one within these system's, such as Ms. Hillary Rodham Clinton, Dr. Spock or others; dare admit their failure in this regard. They dare not want Parents to think for themselves...the last thing they desire is for couples to figure out their problems themselves...now—we all need 'experts' to figure out such things. These 'experts' have exponentially grown throughout this society in name and numbers. Clearly, morality, which is a cornerstone to teaching and a component to the facilities of a higher order society and civilization—has been lost in favor of the 'Village

## CHAPTER FIVE

Model'—which only allows certain demarcated performance in discipline of the children. The result is that we have many children coming from the Welfare "Single Female Headed Household," class that are infesting our schools and as dead wood, bringing down much of the educational institutional system and creating war. These children are direct descendants to the tribal 'rude' tribal-state of civilization that Adam Smith and our Founding Fathers noted, and in which the body of the Maxim's of law correlate: "The offspring follow the condition of the mother. This is the law in the case of slaves and animals."

This feminist devolution of a constant tribal state of war has caused school administrations to 'get tough' with student bodies and thereby make all campuses as is they were prison compounds. Long gone are the simplicities of life of which the feminists like Ms. Clinton are saving us from: the terrible fifties where the leading problems teachers faced were 'chewing gum' and 'smoking.' Now by through the blessings of the Feminist "Village Model" teachers main problems include teenage pregnancy, gang violence, guns in school, and even death! Yet, Ms. Clinton along with her Feminist cohorts will professionally with consummate grandeur and full-media coverage inform parents that this "Village" tribal model is; where we want to be.

Meanwhile, teachers, children, families and especially Fathers become the countless victims of this model. Indeed, it has gotten so bad that in one High School in Miami, Florida; which was 'cracking down' using this 'Village' model was finally met by resistance by several students on campus who were just damn tired of putting up with prison/police state, socialist mentality. They were tired of the curfews, of being scanned, of shakedowns, drug searches, and Armed Guards roaming their school as a constant military encampment.

So, they revolted and organized their own newspaper to bring to light these issues of both Administrative brutality, and to protest against the type of prison mentality that now pervaded the school system. They wrote and published a newspaper and both eloquently and crassly vented their opinions. The school, in keeping with it's ultimate "Village" model, permanently suspended all the students involved in this first amendment issue, and beyond that; they imprisoned them also. (Thereby giving them prison records for 'daring' to use their First Amendment rights.)

This is the 'anarchy' and war that Ms. Rodham Clinton's "Village" model realizes. And those who dare disavow this model of constant Tribal war, or even to resist it, or try to bring light that even the war is going on, are crushed in its wake. This is what is happening to all fathers whom dare rebuke Child Support, the Theft of their children, or the 'states' authority to rule in their home: they are crushed and destroyed. And like these High School children in Miami, they have now become victims

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

too—as all our school children have who now experience the military encampment within our nations public school systems.

"Meanwhile, in 1924 in Ireland, P.S. O'Hegarty grumbled that the woman of Dublin were the most implacable and hysterical participants in the civil war. The suffragettes used to tell us that with women in political power there would be no more war. We know that with women in political power, there would be no more peace." [A Century of Women—p. 128]

Now we, as well as our children, as well as our Black communities can not only see, but experience this war first hand, as they are the main victims suffering it on the front lines. Matriarchy, is the tribal state of a constant state of war just like the history of early tribal man documented.

What is most disturbing is that from our Puritanical roots in education in the late 1600's, through Jefferson and the founding fathers, the Civil Wars, the Industrial Revolution, is that morality was a big part of the school system. In fact, the recognition that schools cannot teach morality; is becoming more of a hard reality to even the most hardened socialists who also realize something is very, very wrong within our society. Our teachers are exasperated by the thought that they are being placed into fiduciary roles as the putative parents of the children, which as little or no authority as mandated by the "Village"—compounding their already impossible task of trying to teach a group of children in a second wave industrial format in a third wave military socialist regime! They recognize that they aren't the parents, and cannot even pretend to be or establish either that morality or authority within these children's lives. Yet, on the other hand, they recognize that parents (especially the father) who should assume these roles as the main authority and morality influence within their own children's lives, have been subordinated and replaced—with the ultimate authority of the state, which will not allow such ultimate authority to dare be imbued within the putative parents of these children. This is one reason why our Forefathers were so passionate in regards to education, and unlike today; literally pushed their children into excellence:

"It was inevitable that New England parents with their fairly passionate zeal for the education of their children, should in many cases overstimulate and force the infant minds in their charge...the "pious and ingenious Mrs. Jane Turell," who was born in Boston in 1708...before her second year was finished when could speak distinctly, knew her letters, and "could relate many stories out of the Scriptures to the satisfaction and pleasure of the most judicious." When she was three years old she could recite the greater part of the Assembly's Catechism, many of the psalms, many lines of poetry, and read distinctly; at the age of four she "asked many astonishing questions about divine mysteries."

## CHAPTER FIVE

It was told of Timothy Dwight, President of Yale College, that he learned the alphabet at a single lesson and could read the Bible before he was four years old and taught it to his comrades. At the age of six he was sent to the grammar school and importuned his father to let him study Latin. Being denied, he studied through the Latin grammar twice without a teacher, borrowing a book of an older boy. He could have prepared for college when but eight years old, had not the grammar school luckily discontinued and left him without a teacher." [*Home and Child Life in Colonial Days*, by Sirley Gubok, @1969, the Macmillan Company, Gollier-Macmillan Canada, Ltd., Library of Congress Catalogue Card No., 69-11295; pp.111-112.]

The state recognizes that morality comes from within the home, the Father, the family. It is formulated and inculcated within that great sovereign institution. If that institution is left alone, it can develop children who can be easily taught and educated, and create cogent individuals capable of succeeding in life and contributing to society. The discipline within the home and family will supercede that of the Police and State thereby, good behavior from our children will not come via mere statutory laws, regulations, or social theorist—but rather, by the direct and absolute inculcation of morality and decency learned from within these children's own home. Without that, a major foundation is missing from the child's formation—and it is this gap in morality and respect for the home, family, authority, and most importantly the Father; which is in-breeding disrespect, arrogance, and immorality and disrespect within our children, to teachers, society, Police and any other authority figure.

These pathologies are endemic to the failure of our children within our schools and throughout society. Studies indicate, that just by dropping a father into the home, a child's test scores go up 38 points. Children who enjoy their birthright of being brought up by an intact nuclear family, are in fact the same children that made the United States the highest scoring nation out of all foreign nations in school aptitude tests in the 1960's.

From that noble beginning and again, following the exact statistical 'railroad track's' of well documented link of statistical facts and figures bred by the Single Female Headed Household, today's children growing up in these single mother homes have generationally made similar world testing scores: dead last. From first in the World to last within a short time-span of 30 years! Yet, when this derogatory performance is linked to the "Village" model, the Feminist Hive along with the structure of Government Welfare supporters diffuses such facts, as they are unwilling to admit what is very apparently true.

There is a more malevolent intent to the desiccation of American Welfare class children. This 'dead' wood clearly burdens schools who, such as West Side High School in Newark, New Jersey, which has to use con-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

siderable funding to hire dozen's of guards to protect girl high school basketball games. Creating a military establishments within our schools in order to be all inclusive to the Welfare "Village" tribal model, is directly stealing money from the schools and contributing to the military mind-set, and thereby it is taking badly needed money away from the Sciences, Athletics', Music and the Arts—and other components of a firm Liberal education. The devolved product, not only in the Welfare Mongrel's whom are coming out in droves from these institutions, but also upon the more willing enlightened student's who miss out on many of the promises of such a 'dream differed' form of "Tribal" education, due to the "Tribal" wars burdened upon them.

Ms. Clinton and other's within the "Village" model want this, for it is part of their undocumented proclamations to destroy from within. To do so, you need a dumbed down society; a society that is not robustly educated such as what Jefferson and the Founding fathers mandated. No. With an educated society, you cannot put pass such errant legislation past such an didactic population. With a dumbed down society, you can pass any such legislation. Not only that; but you can also impose foreign ideals and precepts within the society in the clear light of day, which would not be tolerated otherwise, and have that ignorant society obsequiously obey the fraud of these new laws. Such legislation, precepts and ideals can destroy the society from within, like a computer virus attacking the executive program in a computer. Soon, the system has to fail due to the injection of illogic into its pure system programming. This is what removing the father has allowed to occur in this nation.

Ironically, the architect of so much of this failed social experimentation, President Lyndon B. Johnson, recognized both the problem and the solution thirty years ago when he stated:

The family is the cornerstone of our society. More than any other force, it shapes the attitudes, the hopes, the ambitions, and the values of the child. And when the family collapses it is the children that are usually damaged. When it happens on a massive scale, the community itself is crippled. So, unless we work to strengthen the family, to create conditions under which most parents will stay together, all the rest—schools, playgrounds, public assistance and private concern—will never be enough.

Unfortunately, rather than work to rebuild the *village*, we have instead taken the broken bricks of families, and mortar of cultural institutions, and the steel of houses of worship and used them to build up town hall. Too many of our "leaders" confidently make the claim that where our community has failed, government can and should step in. But reflect upon the state of our community today and you will see what I mean: town hall has been a poor replacement for the institution that makes up a *village*. [*The*

## CHAPTER FIVE

*Family, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Mary E. Williams, Book Editor, ©1998, Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; p. 186.]

This breeds a contempt throughout our system of government. For in fact, such a system cannot pass the muster of its own logical weight. We can see this by the anarchy that the Bill Clinton, Monica Lewinsky scandal has presented this society with. Clearly, irrefutably; the President has committed a grievous offense—those who have a higher intellect would label it a crime. But suddenly, via the media; we have injected into the equation that ‘a majority’ (dumbed down) of the populace is willing to tolerate this crime, even though; those before him whom have committed the same crime of perjury; have been convicted and are serving time in jail. Yet—the ‘tyranny’ of the uneducated majority; are unwilling to impose their undocumented ‘rule of law’—just because they have a ‘gut feeling’ that the crime does not “rise to the level of impeachment”.

It doesn’t rise to the level of impeachment. It exceeds that level of impeachment... We are not speaking of something here that ‘just barely’ passes this constitutional muster—as 115 guilty people before him irrefutably indicate—he has exceeded proof of that elemental requirement.

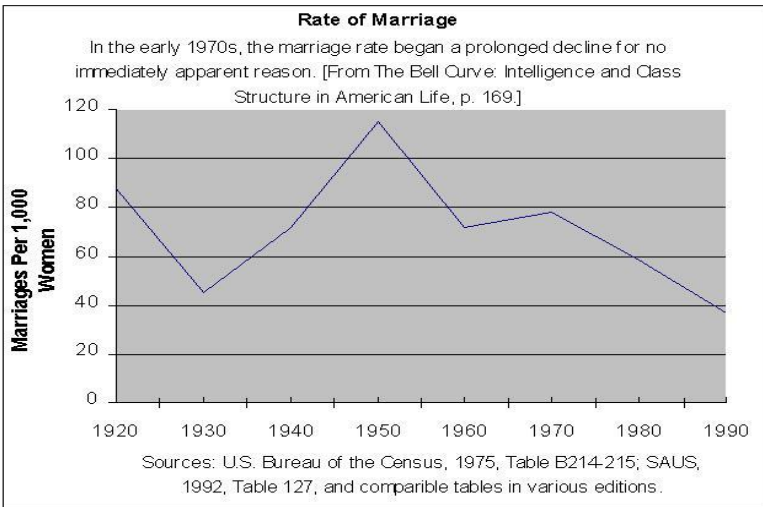
"Decency, security and liberty alike demand that government officials shall be subject to the rules of conduct that are commands to the citizen. In a government of laws, existence of government will be imperiled if it fails to observe the law scrupulously. Our government is the potent, omnipresent teacher. For good or ill, it teaches the whole people by example. Crime is contagious. If the government becomes a law-breaker, it breeds contempt for the law. It invites every man to become a law unto himself. It invites anarchy.." [U.S. v. Olmstead, 277 U.S. 438 (1928)]

Now that we have learned that he has most likely also violently raped a women prior to this, makes his tenure in office disgusting for many of us whom demanded his removal from office in the first place.

To think in such abstract terms to reach the best conclusion in law and in governance, a society needs a solid education. This education is the tool that allows them to do abstract thinking and not by the errant ‘gut feeling’ of visceral logic. A nation of free men must live in accordance not only with the laws of the nation, but as a corollary, they must be able to guide the law, and use the tools of empiricism and logic throughout the range of their collective thinking...to think beyond the problem at hand in an abstract way, to obtain what can be best suited as the most correct answer for all. But beyond this, they must be fair and just, they must have a heart to come to the conclusion that benefits not only society, but the legacy of mankind as well; so that that future stability will be passed on to

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

future generations. This rote faculty, mandates proper education of a populace in self-governing peoples.



## RISE IN DIVORCE

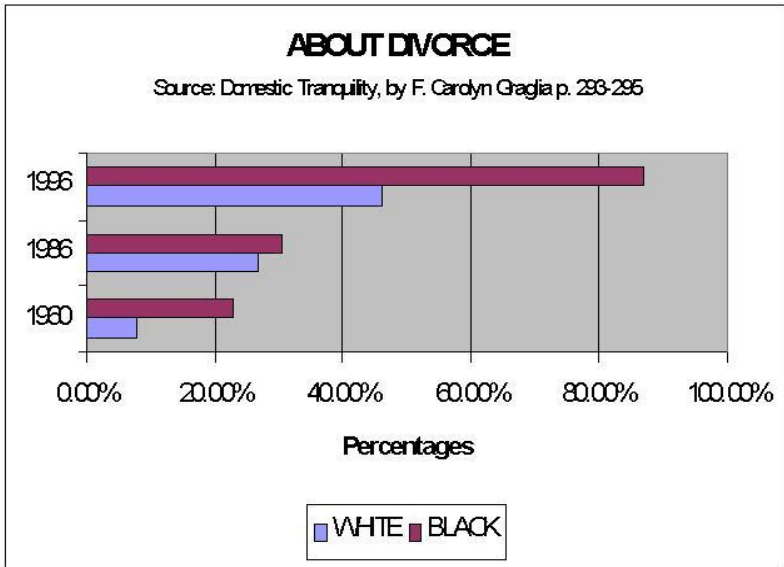
The modern American male in no way can be assured to rule in his household. The contract of marriage has been willfully made meaningless by the present corrupt court systems which work in direct contravention to their foundational laws and mandates. Because of this aberration of this institution, divorce has again; statistically like 'railroad tracks' described earlier, followed the direct explosion of the Single Female Headed Households which have been subsidized by Welfare and these corrupt court systems.

Divorce in America used to follow other nations at about 8%, and this figure stayed completely stable until approximately 1957-1958 when, they began a dramatic climb to present-day levels of 63%. Indeed, what we clearly see by the divorce figures of the first half of the twentieth century, is; that what problem's and social pathologies followed the Black Population due to their caste having suffered the first effects of feminism and social engineering upon their populations in disenfranchising the Father from his family; was quickly followed by the white population who were soon to suffer the same fallow effects of Feminism upon its population. The two curves, again; are linked like railroad tracks, the white divorce rates clearly following the black divorce rates at a latent response time of approximately 10 years.



## CHAPTER FIVE

Divorce has become so pervasive that many people naturally assume it has seeped into the cultural mainstream over a long period of time. Yet, this is not the case. Divorce has become an American way of life only as

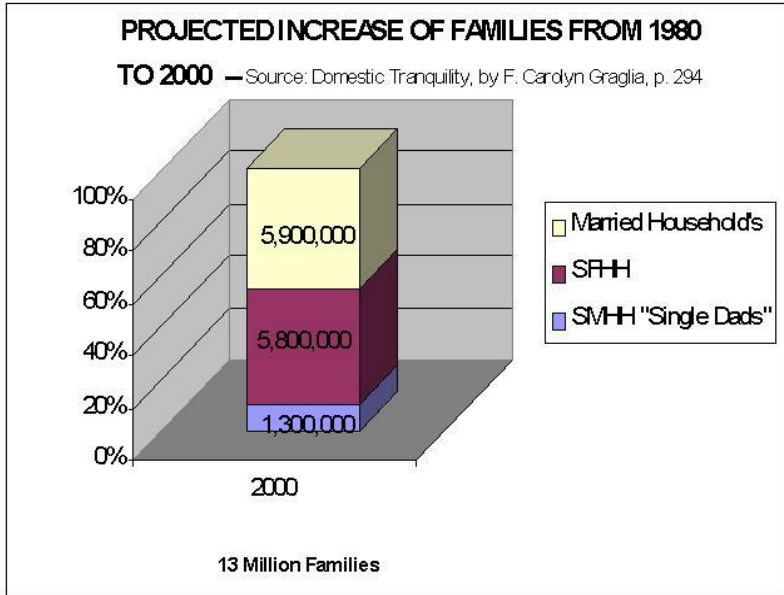


the result of recent and revolutionary change.

The entire history of American divorce can be divided into two periods, one evolutionary and the other revolutionary. For most of the nation's history, divorce was a rare occurrence and an insignificant feature and family and social relationships. In the first sixty years of the twentieth century, divorce became more common but it was hardly commonplace. In 1960 however, the rate accelerated at a dazzling pace. It doubled in roughly a decade and continued its upward climb until the early 1980s, when it stabilized at the highest level among advanced Western societies. As a consequence of this sharp and sustained rise, divorce moved from the margins to the mainstream of American life in the space of three decades. [*The Divorce Culture*, by Barbara Defoe Whitehead, ©1996, Borzoi Book, Published by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., New York; ISBN 0-679-43230-2; p. 3.]

As we have seen earlier, the devastation which has encompassed the black populations and the total feminization of that population; along with the direct attack against Black Males which are totally defunct and missing from the Black experience; are a direct relationship to the destruction waged upon it by ever-increasing divorce rates.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



The explosion of divorce rates in turn, has made the institution of marriage an almost impossible propositions in regards as an viable life choice for many males within that society. The fact that so-many black women cannot find suitable mates in which to marry is exactly linked to the destruction through the ineffectual contract of marriage which is so easily abrogated by the female (for the greatest part) and the Judges and Welfare and Government who want, and demand that failure. They have gotten their wishes as presently, our nation suffers from a 63% divorce rate, mostly imposed against males by women who file for divorce 75% of the time..

Above all, a 50 percent to 60 percent divorce rate--tolerated for a generation--in itself sets in motion a dynamic of decline that will not spontaneously reverse itself. In a divorce culture, anxious married couples sharply limit their investment in each other and in children. As the marriage contract becomes attenuated and unenforceable, fewer married women feel safe bearing children. And as fewer single women see any need to marry to have children, the illegitimacy rate soars. Meanwhile, their children--the children of divorce--are themselves at higher risk of divorce and unwed parenthood, a phenomenon that by itself fuels a dangerously downward spiral of marital decay. [*The Family, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Mary E. Williams, book editor; ©1998; Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, p. 71.]

## CHAPTER FIVE



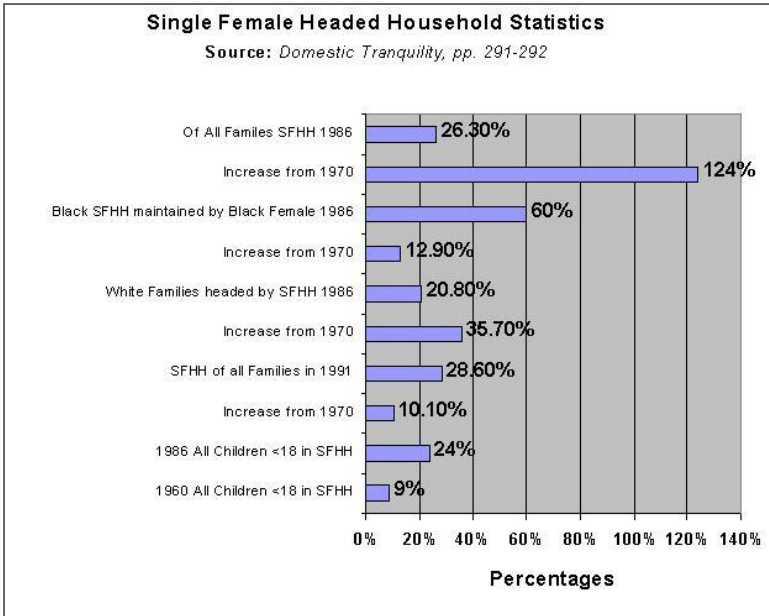
Therefore, in such a fallow environment, to where any association between the female by men cannot either be enforced or regulated by the male, and upon the first instance to where any problems occur the woman can recede into an empire of waiting Shelters, Police Programs, Community 'Safe' Houses, direct cash subsidies, restraining orders, and the like—it doesn't take too much 'higher order' thinking to realize that the detriments of marriage clearly outweigh the benefits—to any clear thinking male. There is no security in that institution for the American male.

We do not need proof of this. In looking at the empirical figures upon this reality, we only have to see where it struck first, hardest, and continuous: and that is the Black community. In that community we can see where we are all headed. "Fathers" are a rare commodity in those devastated communities.. Stable, long term "Marriage" a rare occurrence. In such communities which have compromised the institution of marriage for men, such men cannot invest, find and build a home with the bond of a submissive wife whom will obey him. We can see such communities devolve into anarchy and force that society into a tribal underclass. Or in other words, the become Hillary Clinton's "Village." Because of these facts, such men have no need to groom themselves as teenagers and young adults for the institution of marriage due to the well expressed factuality; that marriage has no meaning in America, and government institutions will no longer support it. The courts will not uphold it, society will turn their backs on it; and upon any problems occurring, the man; is

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

most likely either going to go to jail, lose his children, and in all probability; lose his accumulated wealth.

Instead of young men being trained and groomed for marriage, they are displaced and devolve into the base "Free Markets" of the Tribal kinship system: that of drugs and gangs and other related social pathologies. Again, in the Black community we can see Ms. Hillary Rodham Clinton's "Village" plague hard at work, destroying the inner foundational basis of



the home and family by the destruction of the male, which now has created a society to where Police patrol communities like roving dragoons, and helicopters and high-speed chases are common, if not annoying daily occurrences of life in those cities.

Until the man can rule in his home unabated, and until he can join with a wife that will be submissive to his needs and assume her rightful role within the home and family; this nation in following the "Village" mythology can only be assured of the continuing disasters that already plague us. If man cannot find civility, sovereignty and safety within the creation and maintenance of his own home, then; it will be a fact—that nobody in the "Village" will be able to find such peace. For that sexual energy that is supposed to be at work for the good of society, via the anarchy promised by the "freedom" and "equality" of the feminist movement, will wage war upon societies.

## CHAPTER FIVE

These stunning facts and figures; and the charts that clearly show that this system should have been abated in early 1960's, only prove the purposeful, and willful (I say treasonous) malfeasance which has cogently been applied against our society all in the interests of 'social engineering' and most certainly; to impose Feminism over Patriarchy as a basis for governance within this nation. Anyone who has seen these facts and curves can only ask the question most fathers ask: "Why wasn't this disaster stopped 30 years ago?"

I have presented the Fathers Rights Fact Sheet to various members of the black communities within LA, and each and every time black men have read it's pages, they have become gravely silent. Most respond with, "We have to show the pastor's this information." "We have got to get this information to our churches." Clearly, the FRFS strikes an indelible chord within the black male as he fully understands he has been 'chumped' in regards to the promise of American prosperity, which has eluded him because of this planned treason which has removed him from his home and children. He understands he has been under generational attack. He knows the females in his society are belligerent, and out-of-control. He recognizes ability of abstract reasoning when I say to them "He who rules the children of America, rules the world." For he has been the one attacked first by the slave realities of the Tribal model, and he can document the loss of his wealth to government (or the Master in previous history) by the loss of his home, the disenfranchisement of his lawful authority, and by the outright theft of his children from the midst of his life.

Because of this intentional war and malfeasance against the rights of men and Fathers within their own homes, the institution of marriage has completely collapsed. It needs a major overhaul and more importantly; legal support. Clearly, even those who have wives sign "prenuptial agreements" cannot get *even those* contracts enforced, again; creating even more paradox within the legal establishment. No contract is able to be enforced within the institute of marriage *in regards to the Male*, because Judges have willfully wrecked havoc and continued anarchy upon that sacred institution. They have totally abandoned their mission as cited in Fanning v. Fanning cited earlier in Chapter 3 to protect the children, society and the Father, and most importantly; the sacred institution of marriage.

Thereby; men, if they really think about it—really cannot get married. There are too many minuses versus the any pluses that could be accrued. The institution of marriage has essentially been dismantled. Such men entering into it, are placing themselves in extreme jeopardy by doing so—and as the facts show—they are no longer doing so. Marriage has dropped steadily, and significantly...for good reason... What may be love in the first instance, may, and is most certainly in the great majority of

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

American marriages, soon grounds for a bitter divorce and custody battle. No longer do women make the second attempts to sustain a marriage, as in accordance with Briffault's law, the courts have given them an easy way out of that contract, and most assuredly, a considerable subsidy for their troubles. Thereby, because of the artificial influence of the state the court has a mission to destroy the institution of marriage, which it has done tremendously well. Marriage has effectively evaporated in the advent of modern Radical Feminism.

Especially when this is taken in the light of the children. Upon that construct; then: the male loses altogether—and factually—as massive facts and figures show; the destruction of the Father upon that issue, is a foregone certainty; with the only remaining question being: how much will the Father be destroyed!??? It is so bad, that upon any father, such as Richard Stone in New York City who on January 8<sup>th</sup>, 1999 of only being told by his wife that she was going to divorce him, he mentally snapped—stole his children, then murdered them. Fathers, many of them law abiding and good citizens' otherwise, completely cannot handle the 'omniscient' overwhelming power that is about to intrude upon the God-given authority of his life—and crush him. They know what destruction awaits them, and they fully understand that they will have no redress or recourse when this malevolent Leviathan enters their lives. This is as true as it is for women, many whom also snap when presented with this untenable force. The bonds of the marriage union are wound so tight because of this errant Feminist social pressure, that upon any indication of 'divorce' the parents completely lose it, and rampage.

### SHE SUFFOCATES HER 3 KIDS: COPS

[*The Associated Press*]

WHEATON, Ill. -- A nurse authorities say used prescription medication to put her three children to sleep and then suffocated them was charged yesterday with murder.

Marilyn Lemak, 41, was under police watch at a hospital in Naperville, a Chicago suburb, with minor injuries and was expected to be jailed today, prosecutor Joseph Birkett said. Police said Lemak's wounds were self-inflicted.

Birkett declined to discuss a possible motive.

"Why people do horrible things to children is not for me to think about," Birkett said. "There's no good reason to kill three beautiful children."

Lemak and her husband, Dr. David Lemak, are separated and seeking a divorce. Birkett said the children's father was "devastated."

"He was, according to all the info we have, a very concerned and caring father and he saw his children regularly," Birkett said.... [*The New York Daily News*, Sunday, March 7, 1999; p 24.]

## CHAPTER FIVE

More and more children like this are dying ever more frequently, due to the insanity which feminism has placed upon the Family. For again; there is no protections against the persecution of the American male. Radical Feminism has been so effective in conspiring along with Government and the Media of 'inventing' and 'creating' a bogeyman; that when a father is confronted with the reality of divorce—they snap, just like Richard Stone did. And just like Mrs. Lemak did. And just like more and more parents do who are caught in the unsolvable paradox of Modern Radical Feminism. They wind up killing their wives, children, themselves, even in some cases innocent bystanders, even Police. This is another by-product of the realities that marriage is no longer supported and upon the first instance of its demise, the man is ruined completely, and war thereby ensues.

This, is yet another proof that we are subjected to a needless war, during a profound time of peace. We can add these children, and many other men and women into the growing numbers of failures that this system represents.

The women pretends, Dworkin laments, that "pleasure is being reduced through intercourse to insignificance" : "Intercourse is the pure, sterile, formal expression of men's contempt for women," "When," she demands, "will they choose not to despise us?" Certainly, the casual sexual intercourse to which women have submitted at the urging of feminist sexual revolutionaries is nothing more than an expression of men's contempt for them, because it is intercourse without commitment, the terms of which most women experience as contrary to their interests, but which sexually predatory men will always impose when they are allowed to. The abortions to which so many women have also submitted have guaranteed their sterility of these sexual encounters. Eloquently, Dworkin asserts that "it is a tragedy beyond the power of language to convey when what has been imposed on women by force become a standard of freedom for women: and all the women say it is so." But her words indict the wrong culprit if they allege that men imposed this so-called sexual freedom upon women. Men did not do this to women; women did it to themselves and to each other."

Brunnhilde also knows that men will stop using women with contempt only when women insist upon respectful treatment—insist, that is, on sexual treatment that is Kantian and morally based, not Posnerian and morally indifferent. It is probably towards the goal of demanding respectful usage that "rape crisis" feminist are working in their clumsy fashion. But a woman will never common respectful treatment from men if she thinks of herself as an oppressed victim, or is she follows the injunction of feminist sexual revolutionaries to prove her equality with men by mimicking male promiscuity. She should decline to act like an ersatz male, view her femininity with pride, and shun the casual sex that proclaims contempt for femininity's distinctively diffuse sexuality. Without apology or diffidence,

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

a woman can use her power of the groined archway to secure the male's affirmation of her individual worth as female by his honoring and accepting responsibility for all the feminine baggage that comes with being female. [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Carolyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Suite 450, Dallas TX 75202; ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; 345-347.]



---

## CHAPTER SIX

---

*"I do not see how a barbarous community can constitute a State. I think we must get rid of slavery, or we must get rid of freedom."* [R.W. Emerson, *The Assault Upon Mr. Sumner's Speech*, 26 May 1856]

*"No servitude is more disgraceful than that which is self imposed."* - Seneca, *Ad Lucilium*, Epis. XLvii, sec. 17

### THE HOUSE THAT HILLARY BUILT

---

The Feminist cabal that infests the Media, Government, the Welfare Infrastructure of Government and the Universities all argue within a domain of double-speak that was first noted by George Orwell in his book *Nineteen Eighty Four*:

They use the phrenology of the scientific "psycho-babble" in which to put forwards their radical ideas and outright Anti-male, Anti-American programs. This is somewhat documented by a statement in a Feminist book called *Feminism Without Women*:

"[The movie] *Three Men and a Baby* is a profoundly regressive film on many levels. On the psychic level, as I have tried to demonstrate by analyzing the central joke as it were highly condensed, over determined, dream image, it involves a regression to the anal stage. On the social and narrative levels, it involves a desire to reject the symbolic Father and to refuse castration." [*Feminism Without Women, Culture and Criticism in a "Postfeminist" Age*, by Tavia Modleski, ©1991, Routledge, New York & London, 29 W 35<sup>th</sup> Street, N.Y., New York, 10001, ISBN- 0-415-90416-1; p83]

Mind you, I document this passage due to the fact of its sheer abstract relationship to: nothing of much consequence: a movie. Take this same author and try and have her abstractly formulate the basic construct of Feminism equaling slavery, and that Patriarchy follows the Free and Independent condition of mankind—and she would most likely *not* be able to think in the abstract way she has just displayed here. In fact, you would find her strangely mulct and belligerent.

Like altered states of drug inducement, Feminists live in a world to where they pass in and out of logical comprehension versus tribal ethereal states, to where they make assertions such as these, from the same book:

"The female author of the article quotes [Elaine] Showalter remarks [in the New York Times Magazine, 1987] about the "lunatic fringe" of radical feminism at the turn of the century, some of these women, Showalter points out to the class, "labeled sperm as a 'virulent poison'..." [*Feminism Without Women*, p. 3]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

What is tragic in regards to what we as layman can see as totally frivolous and incomprehensible logic, in which as a third party to this madness, we can sit back in the comfort of our own homes and smile at such seemingly harmless illogic, but these are the people propagating such imbecilic postulates that are the ones embedded throughout Feminism who sit in front of the town leaders, in front of State and Federal Legislators, are courted by Television and News media's, and are the ones giving unfounded testimony, myth's, theories and outright lies, to support socialist program's that is killing Fathers, Children and Families in the halls of Congress! Government wantonly listens to these idiots and in listening and 'taking testimony' from these forms of individuals who inhabit the radical Feminist cadre, Washington D.C., the President of the United States, Congress, and other national law-making institutions are enacting programs upon these fallow facts and theories these madmen and madwomen willfully are propagating. Just by listening, they give credence to their psychobabble. The Feminists and those with such covalent mindset's are the ones passing muster to be hired, (the 'bean-count), and who now inhabit the halls of power throughout society. All those whom share the in the syncopacity of mindset—are the ones moving ahead within our government, no matter how insipid or frivolous their theology may be:

The main theme of much of the writing about marriage and families during the 1970's and 1980's was that of individual rights. Just as politics were only legitimate when they respected individual rights, so also marriages were worthy of respect only when they were based on a recognition of rights.

This view impressed itself on many who were not scholars, as is evident from an essay published in 1973 in the *Harvard Educational Review*. It urged that the "legal status of infancy...be abolished" so that a child would be endowed with all the rights of an adult. Even more, any law that classified people as children and treated them differently from adults "should be considered suspect." As a result, the state "would no longer be able to assume the rationality of regulations based on age." The author of this essay was Hillary Rodham. [*The Family*, Mary E. Williams, Book Editor, ©1998, Greenhaven Press, PO Box 289009 San Diego, CA 92198-9009; p. 37.]

In the disciplines of science and engineering, there is something called GIGO, or garbage in, equals garbage out. What this small abbreviation reminds engineers is that in any model or system, if you put garbage in, you will most certainly get garbage out. This is an unwanted by-product or absolute error within any system, and most Engineers constantly guard against this dreaded GIGO occurring. Unfortunately, this is an aversion to

## CHAPTER SIX

most disciplines: *except government*. In the government system, they want it, if in the words of the College Administrator who admonished the Georgetown girls earlier in this book for telling the truth, and for not lying: "if it serves our social agenda". Government wants lies because as Bastiat noted, lies build empires. They want failure, disasters, and conflagration, for all these things enlarge their domain.

The new feminism, on the other hand, focuses on the evil that men do to women. In 1998, when feminists were criticized for failing to support the women allegedly victimized by President Clinton, Susan Faludi wrote a remarkable article contrasting "real feminism," which is about "becoming equal and mature players in public life," and "girl power," gained by "celebrating yourself, ideally via your injuries, [and] talking about what was *done to you*" (like Paula Jones or Monica Lewinsky). Although her criteria were purely political, it's still a good point. Indeed, critics whom Faludi had ridiculed as "faux feminists" have been saying it for years.

This shift from women's rights to women's wrongs has far-reaching implications, besides making victimhood central to feminism. [*CEASE-FILRE! Why Women and Men Must Join Forces to Achieve True Equality*, by Cathy Young, © 1999, The Free Press, A Division of Simon and Schuster, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-83442-1, p. 5.]

From this, when a father or even a family makes any disposition in regards to their own family—suddenly they are ensconced by the several new "legalized" Standing Armies during a time of peace who attack them under new Legislative Laws which mandate how Fathers and families are to act, and what they can and cannot do—within the corridor's of their own homes!! All this from the symbiotic mindset listed above. This gives no limit to the arrogance and illegality of government, for if their 'experts' are of this singular feminist mindset—then the laws that follow—will emulate what was inputted to them in which to start them in the first place. This is a perfect case-study of the system realities of GIGO.

This is not only egregious, but also totally unacceptable construct within government. The modern American experience proves this. As Blackstone Commentaries indicates, the man is sovereign within his own home. Government cannot intrude into the home...everywhere else it has domain...but not within the home. Now, because of this, complete idiots with a foreign-alien feminist ideology are able to overthrow what foreign governments and wars could not—the American way of life. All, in the supposed name of in the "Best Interests of the Child".

Yet Government, willingly armed with the questionable facts and figures from radical Feminist hate-groups—ply new "Laws" and doctrines upon an unsuspecting public who are completely devastated upon their implementation. Not only that, it is through these sophistries that those

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

special unseen feminist Elite's imbedded throughout the corridors of power, implement their regime of power and altruistic programs against the American ideals of home and family. Clearly, the home and family has been usurped by these lies, as; that was the intention of these laws from the outset...to overthrow the Father, and therefore: to gain entry into the family.

"A number of feminist began to perceive lesbianism not as a sexual orientation but as a personal and political choice to commit fully to the women's movement. Women who continued in sexual relationships with men, some feminist argued, were guilty of "sleeping with the enemy....Any woman who defies her role—be it refusing to be a mother, wanting to be a biochemist, or simply refusing to cater to a man's ego—is defying the sex role system. It is an act of rebellion." [*The Woman's Rights Movement, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Brenda Stalcup, Book Editor, @1996, Greenhaven Press, Inc., PO Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; pp. 190-191.]

The Feminists have been given a green light by government to be allowed to input these anti-logic GIGO suppositions into the Legislative "fact-finding" processes. All those groups or person's who do not have 'similar' mindsets are quickly identified and excluded from such processes. This was clearly seen with the media in Waco, Texas where the FBI and ATF held news conferences...

"The rules of the "press briefings" were also rigged so that the FBI would always win. No shouting. Raise your hand. And, more important, each newsman getting the FBI nod was strictly limited to one question and a follow-up—but only if he announced his intention of asking the second one at the start of the first.

And he never got another question, not the next day or the day after, if he asked one question the FBI or the ATF didn't much like. [*Mad Man in Waco*, by Brad Bailey & Bob Darden ©1993, WRS publishing, 701 N. New Road, Waco, Texas, 76710, ISBN- 1-56796-027-8; p. 210.]

So, this conflict isn't about some woman's coffee or bridge club having too many cocktails and getting a little giddy—no. This is about a life and death struggle between two opposing systems of government, one Socialist/Fascist and the other Free American...only one will survive.

## DESTROYING HETROSEXUAL DOMINATION

*Longtime activist Charlotte Bunch was the editor of Quest: A Feminist Quarterly, in which her 1975 article "Not for Lesbians Only" appeared. In the following excerpt, Bunch maintains that straight women can follow feminist ideology.*

## CHAPTER SIX

The heart of lesbian feminist politics...is a recognition that heterosexuality as an institution and an ideology is a cornerstone of male supremacy. Therefore, women interested in destroying male supremacy, patriarchy, and capitalism must, equally with lesbians, fight heterosexual domination--or we will never end female oppression. This is what I call "the heterosexual question"--it is not the lesbian question. Although lesbians have been the quickest to see the challenge to heterosexuality as a necessity for feminists' survival straight feminists are not precluded from examining and fighting against heterosexuality....

This analysis of the function of heterosexuality in women's oppression is available to any woman, lesbian or straight. Lesbian feminism is not a political analysis "for lesbians only." It is a political perspective and fight against one of the major institutions of our oppression--a fight that heterosexual women can engage in. [*The Woman's Rights Movement, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Brenda Stalcup, Book Editor, @1996, Greenhaven Press, Inc., PO Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; p. 193.]

This war against the American way of life is being silently raged within each and every household in America. This is why all government agencies, such as the FBI and ATF carefully control their news conferences. This is also the reason why when the collective Fathers Rights groups of California *personally* approached the mainstream media in downtown LA and Hollywood in the summer of 1998, and why we were categorically turned down by each and every one of them, again and again. As the person named "Rodney" the Newsdesk director at CBS News said to me personally: "[Fathers Rights,] isn't news."

We all understand the facade of that statement. It *is* news, and that is why the Fathers Rights movement will never be seen on CBS TV. It is because the Government along with the Feminist hold a death grip upon that institution...and nothing goes on and gets presented to the public without prior approval, and more importantly; without prior spin and control of the presentation...

We went through this silence of the propaganda Media machine in Butte County in 1994 during the elections for Superior Court Judge. Our organization, along with about 4 other local groups met at the Chico City Council Chambers to take part in a public 'debate' of the candidates. We were there to make an issue of one candidate, "Judge" Ann Rutherford, who was up for re-election that year, having been a known corrupt county Judge for the past decade or so...many citizen's in the county were tired of her and wanted her out. She was known as "Cocaine Anne" both County and Statewide.

So we dutifully went there, about 40 of us, and counted the room which was packed which held about 75 people total, us included—we dominated the room. This "debate" was to be aired live, on public "Cable

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Access" Television, along with most of the mainstream media were who were there covering the story.

"Judge" Ann Rutherford is known by her voluminous past exploits as "Cocaine Anne," and has what most normal citizens consider 'a criminal past;' and in that regard, the moniker "Cocaine Annie" was not given her because she was involved in the war on drugs...it was the contrary...most people in Northern California understood, *she* was the problem...

So, on the date of this 'public' hearing, we went to it and I had a petition ready for the League of Women's Voters who were running and hosting this televised 'debate.' This petition was signed by forty concerned citizens as "We the People" in which to politely ask two questions to all the candidates: 1.) "Have you ever taken drugs in your life?" And 2.) "Will you be willing, as a candidate for this office to take a drug test and submit the results unconditionally to the public?"

The second Ms. Rutherford saw me enter the room, she bolted right up and grabbed her campaign manager and both of them ran out the door. Her campaign manager then went to the leader of the League of Women's Voters women's group who was putting this event on and they went outside and they held a secret impromptu meeting—with no one else privy to what was being said or discussed--they 'solved' Ms. Rutherford's dilemma without any further input. (I however, knew what they were discussing and why they were doing it.)

Well, when the time came for this "live" show to go air, it was predictably immediately announced by the League of Women's Voters women's group who was running this 'forum' that there was a 'change' in the format; and that the "public" instead of *asking* questions directly to the candidates, must now put these questions on a three by five card, and submit these to the moderator who would ask the remaining censored 'hard-hitting' questions from the public directly to the candidates herself...

So, dutifully, following their instructions; all forty of us filled out the three by five card, each and every one asking the same questions 1.) and 2.) listed above; and submitted them along with a signed petition of 40 signatures asking to please have these two questions raised to the candidates running for this office so "We the People" at the ballot box could make 'informed decisions' as to who to elect...

Needless to say (and I knew they wouldn't do it) the questions were never asked by the League of Women's voters moderator. During this televised conference, I had to restrain people from getting up to scream these questions out to the candidates, but being a gentleman, and trying to 'use systems of redress' I stopped any public outcry. We will have another day...but let it be *noted* here, let it be written for all to see; that we didn't use a gun, we didn't 'blow up a building', we didn't yell,

## CHAPTER SIX

scream or hold riot's—we used "the system" just like we were supposed to do, just as people within the government and media plead to us to use, just like Hillary wants--and we used *their* 'the system'--and it completely, unremittingly, and miserably failed us... We won't be as kind again, for the next time; because the 'system' has shown us—that 'the system' categorically doesn't work *because it is not supposed to work*. It in fact, is only there to send people down a never-ending Labyrinth, to keep them busy from outright revolt. Now we have cause, and now we can show 'corrupt intent' and unfair control by those within the system, that only use it, to pervert the system, and to impose corruption and criminality upon us all.

The idea that *the League of Women's voters* were willing conspirator's to this corruption, clearly indicates that they are a thoroughly corrupted institution also, and thereby; we can fully understand why the 'vote' is not only suspect, but liable for such perverse political expedencies. To allow one corrupt "Judge" to win, they have disgraced their good name, and they have compromised the integrity of the vote; but they don't care...because under this Feminist Totalitarian regime, good names don't mean anything—integrity even less--only power means anything. And they have it, and they are wielding it with a vengeance, which is the exact reason why we must take it away from them and all people who are abusing it as such, and never allow them to have it again.

We can also document from what happened here is that our media is totally held hostage to these amoral and corrupt individuals. I went to a television station right after the debacle in the Chico City Council Chambers, to a woman who was there reporting this event, in fact we walked across the Street together to KCPM, Channel 24 and I talked to the female reporter who resisted even addressing the story. Finally, I asked her pointedly: "Where do we 'the citizen's' ask our public officials these tough questions if not in a public meeting? In the safety and comfort of our own homes underneath our own beds?"

To this the female reporter turned beet red with embarrassment and stammered: "I just *can't* air this story. I just *can't*..." She was caught in the paradox of the Feminist making, she was ashamed of herself, and she admitted it. But there was nothing she could do—something like the truth is no longer marketable in this Feminist dominated mindset, as the media, in adhering and now protecting feminism outright—especially its eminent collapse—no longer is engaged with news: but rather; propaganda. No longer do people respect the news, in fact; people openly scorn it:

Onward to that self-aggrandizing bastion of freedom, the Fourth Estate. Accurate? In a blind pig's eye. For about 40 years, Time editors re-wrote copy from their Chinese bureau to reflect Henry Luce's hero worship of the brutal and corrupt dictator Chiang Kaishek. An egregious ex-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ample? Not really, editors and producers do the same thing every day. New York Times editors in the early-to-mid-60s routinely rejected, delayed or emasculated stories from Saigon because the eyewitness reports from their own reporters didn't square with what the stateside State Department flacks were saying.

And that was all before the curse of "objective journalism." Objective, that's good right? Wrong. What it's done is turn reporters into a kind of glorified screen-capture utility.

The Concept of stories based on what a reporter saw, or knew or found out has been obliterated by a form of he said/she said "reportage", similar to the used by such bastions of truth as Jerry Springer and Jenny Jones. Take the classic newspaper story of the man-biting dog--while a reporter happens to be driving by. Old style: I saw the man lunge at the dog, his teeth bared. The dog yelped as the molar met mutt. Objective style: A man accused of biting a dog told Eyewitness News, "I didn't do it, it was a coyote. He ran off." Veterinarian D. Duck, however, told us, "the teeth marks are more consistent with homo-sapiens than canines." The hound declined comment on advice of counsel. Eyewitness News, hah. I witness nothing news. [Portable Computing, Maximizing the Technology, May 1999. (A Petersen Publication) "Resolved: Internet info is highly unreliable. Rebuttal: So is every other information source." by Elliot Borin, p. 16]

This is the house that Hillary built. This is most certainly the way she and her Feminist sisters want this world *because they control it*. In her world, the "Village" model, there are no heroes...only slaves who obey petulantly, unquestioningly. There is no 'robust' or 'fully informed' society, because there is no need for one. In this tribal model the "Village" will know and fully take care of most of your wants, just like it does presently for the Welfare underclass, which is Hillary's best accomplishment for her model. There will not be a free society, we will have a 'cooperative' society—where the many will be held to the lowest common denominator of all. Children will have no heritage, but they will have a new Father within the embodiment of the state, and that Father will be the father of former Tyrants, one that must be obeyed completely. And those who dare to stand up and try to do the right thing will be stammering just like many reporters and those in government now do who dare attempt to do the right thing but wind up stammering: "I just *can't*..."

Hillary and social engineers like her are using the vehicle of feminism to put forwards their agenda in direct opposition of the American model of governance, and Hillary's model is clearly overtaken any semblance of what remains in America today. It is the embodiment of Garbage In equals Garbage Out. We are living it, and seeing it within our lives and that of the Welfare State.

Again, Lawrence H. Tribe has documented what the mainstream of America doesn't know, that this nation has gone far beyond its formative



## CHAPTER SIX

legal construct a long, long time ago, to where now, Hillary's Model VIII, NCPGI is the direct antithesis of what our government should be. Ms. Clinton and those like her love the way things are presently. In fact, Ms. Clinton will use these same, corrupt, sealed institutions; open to only a very, very select few...in which to attain the Senatorial Seat for the state of New York in 2000. So she, and Ms. Rutherford can share the power they've forged together—upon the rest of us, and many, many, many innocent and unsuspecting people.

### BOOK OF JUDGES

---

You cannot have such a corrupt system impose such Draconian laws against the father, without first knowing that you can accomplish such illegalities and discriminations in the first place. Government along with the courts are ancient institutions—being created at the dawn of Patriarchy (Western civilization). Under the opposite system of Matriarchy; a system which was formed over a quarter of a million years ago on the plains of Africa, and existing relatively unscathed for that whole period until about 7,000 to 8,000 years ago, man didn't need governments, or courts—because tribal anarchy ruled. Anarchy, as we have discussed earlier, is a component of Matriarchy, and in that lowest and rudest state of mankind, you don't need government, courts or institutions of any kind. So, to impose the system of Feminism upon a free people, they needed a vehicle in which to transport and inoculate the disease upon the rest of Western society. That inoculation device was what is always has been: the Judiciary...or more aptly put: the legal system.

"...The Judicial authority of such a sovereign, however, far from being a cause of expense, was for a long time a source of revenue to him. The persons who apply to him for justice were always willing to pay for it, and a present never failed to accompany a petition.

In the Tartar governments in Asia, in the governments of Europe which were founded by the German and Scythian nations who overturned the Roman Empire, the administration of justice was a considerable source of revenue. Both to the sovereign and all the lesser chiefs and lords who exercised under him any particular jurisdiction, either over some clan, or some particular territory or district. Originally, both the sovereign and the inferior chief's used to exercise this jurisdiction in their own persons. Afterwards, they universally found it convenient to delegate it to some substitute, bailiff or judge. This substitute was still obliged to account to this principal or constituent for the profits of the jurisdiction. Whoever reads the instructions which were given to judges of the circuit in the time of Henry the II, will see clearly that those judges were a sort of itinerant factors, sent round the country for the purposes of levying certain branches of the kinds revenue. In those days, the administration of justice not only afforded a certain revenue to the sovereign, but to the procure this revenue

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

seems to have been one of the principal advantages which he proposed to obtain by the administration of justice. [p. 203.]

...In all barbarous governments accordingly, in all those ancient governments of Europe in particular which were founded upon the ruins of the Roman Empire, the administration of justice appears for a long time to have been extremely corrupt, far from being quite equal and impartial even under the best monarch's and altogether profligate under the worst [p. 205] [*Wealth of Nations*, Adam Smith, pp. 203 and 205.]

Those with an agenda, went to the place where historically such corrupt people were able to compromise it before: to the Judiciary. Indeed, slowly these people generationally have changed the scope of this nation's precepts and foundations to where presently, most common Americans cannot even understand that socialism is the de facto form of government under a mythological American government of Freedom and Liberty which many Americans by design, will never be able to attain. These concepts are juxtaposed between each other, as they are exactly the opposite of each other...they cannot exist together...however, if you speak to the average layperson, he will mouth the precepts of Model I governance under a Constitutional system of law, (under the Lawrence H. Tribe VII [7] models) then; in the next breath he will tell you that government will not let you drive, be married or be able to work without a license of some type in which to 'allow' you to do these natural things! The average layman doesn't even know what our laws or system or government is really *supposed* to be, for exactly as a dumbed-down generation—they are all thinking with "their gut feelings" and have no comprehension of their true rights and duties as American Citizens because they have never read them, nor have they ever been taught them in our public schools! Ask any average Policeman and he hasn't even read his own State Constitution! (Trust me, we've asked.) "Supposedly," these people have *sworn an oath to that sacred document*—yet don't know the first thing about it—most; having never read their own constitutions, which by law, and by their job descriptions---they must know!! Yet, they (like the Father's Rights movement) have a visceral gut feeling' the way our modern government is supposed to operate—and they have a 'gut feeling' about what their own constitution says and means, but unfortunately, most certainly nine times out of ten—they wind up wrong.

*Supposedly*, those ignorant citizens whom have never been taught American Constitutional rights, whom have never even read their own State Constitutions are 'finding' Father's' guilty of a crime they've *never* committed and are blindly "going along" with whatever the DA and the Judge want them to hear and believe as "THE LAW" which is not even REMOTELY the true organic, 'real' law of the United States of America!!!! Yet, these 'juries' are happily 'obeying' the Judges and

## CHAPTER SIX

DA's in which to find these poor fathers guilty! Innumerable times these juries 'after the fact' when they have erroneously convicted a poor citizen, or poor father; when they are 'really' informed of the 'real laws' or the 'real' incident become indignant and outraged and wind up meekly declaring: "OH! I DIDN'T KNOW THAT!!! Jeez! I would have NEVER voted if I had been informed of the [real law], [real circumstances], [the true background] of what 'really' happened!" Yet those the erroneously convict by the intentional 'protocol' or 'program' levied by the present system still sit fetidly in jail, with no real hopes of *ever* because our court system is so broke, so completely perverse.

Government is working off of *and depending upon* the ignorance and outright stupidity of 'normal' people in which to solidly form an anti-theoretical base which is in direct opposition to the American form of government and all its laws. To do this, they have made it clear that the American Bar Association trained lawyers along with the ABA certified and approved "Judges" will implement the 'new' law in our government through our 'activist' court systems. Like the Papal authority of the 12<sup>th</sup> and 13<sup>th</sup> centuries, they will 'interpret' everything for us, and; if we dare resist and try to read the bible of the law and interpret it ourselves—then they will try to destroy us. The ABA and Judges think they own American law, just like the Papacy thought it once owned all the words in the Bible.

They have silently done this by approving and implementing Anti-American, Anti-Law Feminism; which is what the Russians first called "Bolshevism" in the early part of the 20<sup>th</sup> century in which to capture that country under a communist form of government, or what Kennedy comparatively called, "the struggle for supremacy between two conflicting ideologies: freedom under God versus ruthless godless tyranny." [*The Soviet Experiment, Russia, the USSR, and the Successor States*, by Ronald Grigor Suny, ©1998 by Oxford University Press, Inc., Oxford, New York, 198 Madison Avenue, New York, New York 10016; ISBN 0-19-508104-8; p.415.] "Bolshevism" was 'equality' and women entering the workforce, which started off Socialism in its infancy in that nation. Unlike the conflagration that followed Bolshevism, modern Feminism imparts socialist dogma directly at the root of government: directly within the American home. Consider Russian Marxist history:

"The Russian Revolution opened opportunities for a new agenda for women. After February the Provisional Government granted women the vote for the first time, and after October the Soviet government steadily dismantled the whole edifice of tsarist family law. Under the old regime marriage and divorce had been left to the churches. A wife was obligated to obey her husband, to live with him, take his name, and assume his social status. Up to 1914 a woman could not take a job or enroll for further

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

education without her husband's consent. The husband was obligated to support his wife according to his status and abilities. A father had almost unlimited power of his children for life, and parental consent was required before a child could marry. Divorce was almost impossible according to the teachings of the Orthodox Church. Only in cases of impotence, prolonged absence, or adultery witnessed by two or more people would the Church allow divorce. A woman had only a few rights. She could control her dowry, special purchases, and gifts and hold property separately from her husband. But an illegitimate child had no legal rights and up to 1902 could not be adopted or recognized without explicit imperial consent.

The early record of the Soviet state in the area of female liberation was mixed. The intentions and legislative record were the most progressive of any major country, but their actual effects on the position and power of women were meager. Lenin became the first head of state to address a woman's congress, at which delegates cheered the suggestion that the derogatory Russian word for a woman, *baba*, be outlawed. Already, in December 1917, the state had mandated the principle of equal pay for equal work and granted paid maternity leaves for women workers. Marriage was secularized, and common-law marriages were legally recognized. The language of submission and dominance in the marriage ceremony was eliminated, and spouses were free to choose either the name of the wife or the husband or a combination of the two. Soon "**Red Weddings**" replaced church weddings for dedicated Communists. Complete sexual equality in marriage was declared the law of the land. The first Soviet Constitution, in July 1918, declared men and women equal, and the Soviets adopted a new code of family laws. Divorce was simplified to the point that mutual consent meant immediate divorce. If only one party wanted divorce, a brief court hearing was held. No grounds for divorce had to be stated, no evidence presented, and no witnesses heard. The courts then decided matters of property and children. Alimony was granted to either party if he or she was needy. No distinctions were made between children born in or out of wedlock. The whole concept of "illegitimate children" was eliminated. This most radical family law in Europe was extended in 1920 when abortion was legalized--fifty-three years before *Roe v. Wade* in the United States--and the costs of abortion were borne by the state. [The Soviet Experiment, Russia, the USSR, and the Successor States, by Ronald Grigor Suny, © 1998 by Oxford University Press, Inc., Oxford, New York, 198 Madison Avenue, New York, New York 10016; ISBN 0-19-508104-8; p.186.]

"They" have established the identical system here in the United States...without one shot being fired.. Again, the compendium of facts and figures show us: remove or usurp the Father from the home, then; government becomes the ultimate parent there. To implement this against the authority of the father, to overthrow him in his own home—you need a countervailing authority: and that is imposed by the 'Sovereign' (the

## CHAPTER SIX

Elite's with this Social Engineering agenda), and as Adam Smith noted above, this is done by proxy: by the Judges.

"Yet today, too many Americans [read fathers RLCII] are bound in bureaucracies and antihuman regulations by which families are destroyed. The work ethic is undermined, male responsibility is made irrelevant, and the young mothers find themselves trapped in a world where "income maintenance" replaces opportunity. No civilization can survive long with twelve-year-olds having babies, fifteen-year-olds killing one another, seventeen-year-olds dying of AIDS, and every night on the local news, you and I watch the Welfare State undermining our society. The vast majority of Americans (96% by one recent poll) is ready to admit, that the Welfare State has failed. They have lost faith that government can improve the lot of the poor, and want their children reeducated in core American values. We simply must abandon the Welfare State and move to an opportunity society." [*To Renew America*, by Newt Gingrich, Harper Collins Publishers, ISBN- 0-06-017336-X, p 116]

Speech like this uncovering the Tribal Welfare state is marked as 'hate speech' by Ms. Clinton and those like her as inimically being 'being oppressive'. Ms. Clinton and those want the quiet sanctitude of their agenda only to present one view or one-side in front of the plebiscite masses. Indeed, the failure of the Welfare State has been well documented, and although most of that documentation has been overtly kept from the mass of the citizenry; yet everyone *knows* that something is severely amiss—they just can't quite put their finger on it...so all they wind up with are 'gut feelings' about all of this. But when those like Hillary, (and even Newt Gingrich whom is embedded quite deep within the system that even he reprehends himself); immediately both place the blame on the "bogeyman" called the American Father. All within this system (including Newt Ginrich) know where their "daily bread" comes from; and they not willing to attack it. They will vilify and harvest it through the American Court systems, like all such "hunter" regimes did in the past. They do it by the corruption of the Judges imposing Anti-Constitutional decisions upon unsuspecting fathers who are brought up to 'think' they have rights.

For instance, in the California Code of Judicial Ethics it states:

### PREAMBLE

Our legal system is based on the principal that an independent, fair, and competent judiciary will interpret and apply the laws that govern us. The role of the judiciary is central to the American concepts of justice and the rule of law. Intrinsic to this code is the precepts that judges, individually and collectively, must respect and honor the judicial office as a public trust and strive to enhance and maintain confidence in our legal system."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

[*California Code of Judicial Ethics*, 1997 by the Supreme Court Advisory Committee on Judicial Ethics. P. 4.]

What is infinitely humorous about this preamble found previously directly on the Preface to the whole document:

### PREFACE

"Formal standards of Judicial conduct have existed for more than 50 years. The original Canon's of Judicial Ethics, promulgated by the American Bar Association were modified and adopted in 1949 for application for California by the Conference of California Judges, (now the California Judges Association).

In 1969, the American Bar Association determined that current needs and problems warranted revision of the Canons. In the revision process, a special American Bar Association committee, headed by former California Chief Justice Roger Traynor, sought and considered the views of the bench and bar and other interested persons." [*California Code of Judicial Ethics*, 1997 by the Supreme Court Advisory Committee on Judicial Ethics. P. 1.]

If in fact, the California Judiciary, or any Judiciary for that matter, is "based on the principal that an independent, fair, and competent judiciary," then; why are they using the American Bar Association to 'determine their needs' and 'promulgating' their code of Judicial Ethics?!?? If this is, in fact, part of what the founders envisioned as being a 'separation of powers' under our form of government embodied by the Montesquieu Doctrine, why are we allowing the ABA to establish ethics and procedures within the separate sovereign branch of the Judiciary?? This lends itself to the question: who is establishing the Code of Ethics for the other two 'independent' branches of government?? Would the Executive Branch of government be fit to hire the Catholic Church to establish its Code of Ethics and to promulgate procedures on how it is to be run? I think not!

It must be obvious to you that if the doctrine of separation of powers and the independence of the Presidency is to have any validity at all, it must be equally applicable to a President after his term of office has expired when he is sought to be examined with respect to any acts occurring while he is President.

The doctrine would be shattered, and the President, contrary to our fundamental theory of constitutional government, would become a mere arm of the Legislative Branch of the Government if he would feel during his term of office that his every act might be subject to official inquiry and possible distortion for political purposes. [*The Anatomy of Liberty, The Rights of Man Without Force*, by William O. Douglas, ©1963, A Trident Press Book, New York; Lib. Cong. Cat. Card No., 63-12572; p. 73.]

## CHAPTER SIX

Unfortunately, this warning which was written in 1953 by President Truman in response to a subpoena issued by a committee of the House is *exactly* how the Legislative branch is now corrupting our present Judiciary. The emasculated court Judges will wink at them as they solemnly turn and inform you that there is nothing that they can do about the injustice that they are about to impose upon you, because the "Legislature" passed an unconstitutional law. "Their" hands are tied, they will petulantly grumble. Meanwhile, your friendly representative will inform you that there is nothing *he* can do about an errant Judiciary enforcing his unconstitutional laws, because there is "an impenetrable wall" between him and the Judiciary. Of course such arguments are not only a lie, they are treasonous, for they are each joining in the license of their unlawful acts—and having open knowledge of these illegal acts which they each feign ignorance in regards to providing remedy—which is why we created three separate but equal branches of government in the first place!

Again, many must think us stupid, not to understand what Adam Smith and many others noted about the Judiciary. The Judiciary and the ABA have become in fact, 'the enemy'. It didn't used to be this way. For although they are in fact, mandated by law to provide us with "truth, justice and the American way", they are providing us with a consort of special interests, which accrue and gravitate within the embodiment of the ABA, and thereby are transmitted directly to the Judiciary. They have made themselves the enemy because they in fact have made *us* the enemy!

"Expansion is everything," said Cecil Rhodes, and fell into despair, for every night he saw overhead "these stars....these vast worlds which we can never reach. I would annex the planets if I could." He had discovered the moving principal of the new, the imperialist era;.....and yet in a flash of wisdom Rhodes recognized at the same moment its inherent insanity and its contradiction to the human condition.... [*The Origins of Totalitarianism*, by Hannah Arendt, ©1951; Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc., New York; p.124.]

Through feminism they are 'reaching' these worlds which were once denied Rhodes and pre-Imperialist Western cultures. This is why Fatherhood has been openly persecuted in the light of day. Like the Nazi's of WWII, they don't hide the illogic, the 'insanity' Rhodes noted above, of the imposition of illegal "discretion" that they apply against every father in intruding, overturning, and stealing from his home by their ever expanding empires.. They, as Smith indicated, became profligate when presented either with law, or special interests—for again, they knew where their 'daily bread' comes from, and are unwilling to stand separate and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

impartial within the law, rather; they too gravitated to the base inequalities and perversions of the "Tribal" system, and implemented Practices, Policies and Procedures which were and are in direct contravention to the rule of American law.

John Locke agreed with Hobbes on the existence of a social contract but to the contrary contended that humankind is naturally sociable and endowed with the right to personal liberty, the right to work and consequently the right to property, and that the State is formed for the sole purpose of guaranteeing these rights. Locke said that the State was formed because in nature there was no guarantee to secure these rights. Similarly, Jean-Jacques Rousseau believed that humankind was born good and was born happy. He taught that the social contract was "a postulate of reason" and not an historical fact and explained how it came about: For an instant, the individuals confer all their rights (natural ones) to the State which thereafter gives them all back (civil rights) with the name changed; by this novation or transformation, the individuals have been assured by the State of those rights by which they already possessed by nature. [*The Judicial Process, Text, Materials and Cases, Second Edition*, by Ruggero J. Aldisert, ©1976; West Publishing Co., 610 Opperman Drive, P.O. Box 64526, St. Paul, MN 55164-0526, 1-800-328-9352; ISBN 0-314-06776-0, p.10.]

Indeed, if law worked, such a system such as Feminist Jurisprudence would not have ever been able to exist in the first place! If law in fact existed in this society, the fact that anywhere from 87% to 98% of all custody decisions wouldn't have been given to women. If law did in fact exist within these courts, you would have seen the Judiciary stand on its heels and wail at the injustice and profligate illegalities which were being mandated to them to be served on an unsuspecting male public. Indeed, if law worked, you would have seen some Judges refusing to implement these terms of Anti-American destruction and persecution that were in fact burdened against the American father as Lord Mansfield clearly noted earlier. You'd actually see men of conscience resign from institution of this upside-down legal theories...yet like the Judges of the Weimar regime of WWII; not one Judge has resigned in protest upon the implementation of Feminist Jurisprudence within these courts. Not one Judge has made a peep. No Lawyer has risked his profession or his legal abilities in even challenging this system. IF the law worked, we wouldn't be hunting men and trying ever so hard to place them into jail—just because they do not agree with this Socialist, Tribal system of law. If law worked, this present system would have been eradicated the instant it first began.

[The rights of man] do not preexist and condition civil society. They are in their totality the right to decent, wise, just, responsive, stable government in the circumstance of a given time and place. Under such a government, a partnership Burke calls it, "the restraints on men, as well as



## CHAPTER SIX

their liberties, are to be reckoned among their rights," and "all men have equal rights, but not to equal things," since a leveling egalitarianism, which does not reward merit and ability is harmful to all and is unjust as well. [*The Judicial Process, Text, Materials and Cases, Second Edition*, by Ruggero J. Aldisert, ©1976; West Publishing Co., 610 Opperman Drive, P.O. Box 64526, St. Paul, MN 55164-0526, 1-800-328-9352; ISBN 0-314-06776-0, p.12.]

This Feminist Jurisprudence can not exist legally in our courts, yet, they not only exist, they flourish!! It is now the de facto mindset throughout our courts. The miscegenation of logic and untenable law that has been required of the American Judiciary to implement under the fraud of law, clearly indicates that like the Weimar Judiciary of World War II, they were and are cogently complicit in their crimes. This illogic, is factually creating yet more anarchy, for the logic that binds this Feminist Jurisprudence together cannot be reasonably explained in the light of such Judicial 'discretionary' havoc. This law holds no allegiance to "the law of the highest reason." The GIGO construct is killing children, fathers, women, Judges, Police, and American law. They simply, exactly like the communists, want to kill and destroy the family.

"Even more telling was the failure to implement the Marxist social program so essential to the emancipation of women. Lenin polemicized against housework as "petty and containing nothing that can in any way further the development of women." He called for the creation of daycare centers, communal kitchens, and other institutions to free women from compulsory labor in the home. Bukharin spoke of the family as "the most conservative stronghold of all the squalors of the old regime," and Kollontai declared, "The family ceases to be necessary." Society was to take over the bringing up of children." [*The Soviet Experiment, Russia, the USSR, and the Successor States*, by Ronal Grigor Suny, © 1998 by Oxford University Press, Inc., Oxford, New York, 198 Madison Avenue, New York, New York 10016; ISBN 0-19-508104-8; p.187.]

**THIS** is the bedrock of what Ms. Clinton is building. This is her 're-design.' Yet some actually think she is American just because she lives with an elected government official. Just because she resides in his country. This socialism is what her book "*It Takes a Village*" openly entreats us with, which is in direct defiance and opposition to true American law and most especially, the American way of life. The Clinton's and those like them that are pushing this "lowest and disgusting" condition of mankind upon us all, are fully aware and understand the perils and destruction it waged upon Russia and they *know* what it is doing to this country. This is why Judges insolently have abandoned their mandates and their maxims of law—they fully understand the course they are plotting.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

"The illiberal feminist legal theory (also known as "radical feminism"), which emerged during the 1980s, urges women to renounce traditional notions of rights and justice, now viewed as perpetuating male dominance. Some of the new feminists charge that the reforms achieved by "equality feminists" have dismantled protections beneficial to women while doing nothing to eliminate the disadvantages....The new feminism attempts to replace those notions with a new breed of philosophy and jurisprudence premised on "connection" between persons. Law is seen as an instrument to "change the distribution of power." [*Feminist Jurisprudence, Equal Rights or Neo-Paternalism?*, by Michael Weiss and Cathy Young, Cato Policy Analysis No. 256. P. 2.]

One might first ask, who gave anybody the right to radically change a branch of government without a vote from "We the People?" Another question that must be posed is what was wrong with truth and justice in American courts? Finally, as a last observation, one might wonder as to who is implementing these 'changes' and more importantly; 'what if' the wrong element, an Anti-American element was able to subvert the Judiciary so? To supposedly 'help' us implement their form of government against us. Wouldn't this in fact be a treason against this nation?

Yet, this contemporary Judiciary goes along with this Feminist doctrine blindly.: What the real tragedy is, that their own hallowed Canon's mandate one set of rules, and they arrogantly implement another. The laws of the United States of America embodied within the Constitution mandate one set of laws: they promulgate another. The history of fairness, truth and justice which were imbued to the Judiciary from millions of American men dying upon the field of both foreign and domestic battle who defended such precepts; mandated one set of expectations: they however, betrayed that trust with another. Clearly, through their own aggrandizement and their own arrogance, this fallow road has misguided the Judiciary and sown barren crops for millions of American citizen's world-wide. To wonder if this has higher meaning, or whether it is linked to more international conspiracies is not the question here; the fact remains is that we have masters that rule a universe which have knowingly set a plague upon this nation.

Our forefathers forged something different from the corrupt government's and judiciary's which plagued mankind's past. Our Founding Fathers knew these tyrannies and oppressions intimately; and they built a different form of governance. Our legacy was new upon the face of the earth, that individual 'men might be free'. We did not encompass Title's of Nobility nor a master race, but held our set of laws in the promise of self-governance, not in what other governments across the planet display: and that is government by Autocratic function, "rule of another".

## CHAPTER SIX

"The separation of the Judicial from the Executive power seems originally to have arisen from the increasing business of the society, in consequence to its increasing improvement.

When the Judicial is united with the Executive power, it is scarce possible that justice should not frequently be sacrificed to what is vulgarly called politics. The person entrusted with the great interests of the stage may, even without any corrupt views, sometimes imagine it necessary to sacrifice to those interests the right of a private man. But upon impartial administration of Justice depends the liberty of every individual, the sense which he has his own security. In order to make every individual feel himself perfectly secure in the possession of every right which belongs to him, it is not only necessary that the Judicial should be separated from the Executive power, but that it should be rendered as much as possible independent of that power. [*Wealth of Nations*, Adam Smith, viI, p. 210]

The precepts of the 'rule of the highest logic' has been completely abrogated within the contemporary American Judicial system, and it has been replaced with Feminist Jurisprudence. Now, this is an institution set on vengeance, as established by the GIGO doctrines of radical feminism. What the Nazi's were to the Weimar Republic courts of WWII, modern feminism has become in the postmodern American era. Judges no longer hear Lord Mansfield's testament that Justice should prevail as though the heavens themselves fall...instead, this treasonous Judiciary now follows an alien and foreign path, more dedicated towards our destruction for their pecuniary benefit, than it is to their mandates of providing simple justice...

Many criminals within this system now called "Judges" will pooh-pooh the idea of the common law or the rule of law through the Maxim's of law. Many argue: "this is old law," "outdated" and an "anachronism" to a more Victorian sartorial past. No...the law is the law...truth, like gravity, it reign's eternal. They will actually get angry if you speak of "Republican Form" which only means that government and the peoples interests are closely tied together, and like marriage, united as one. How can concepts as these cause such dissention, especially from people 'supposedly' swearing to the document that itself; mandates "Republican Form?"

When a society does not know the law by the modern massive obfuscation of law by the volumes and volumes of law; and when men cannot understand what is wrong or what is right in their normal every day actions or rights within the law—we have a disparate reality between the principals of Republican form of government (where government is very close to the people, and the people are very close to the government and they act in unison as one) and between the mass of the peoples themselves. This is not a antiquated doctrine.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

"To embarrass justice by a multiplicity of laws, or to hazard it by confidence in Judges, are the opposite rocks on which all civil institutions have been wrecked." [Johnson – Engraved on the Minnesota State Capitol outside the Supreme Court Chambers]

Clearly, a "house divided cannot stand." When people in contravention to the principals of the common law, do 'not understand' the law, by either the processes or 'codes' of the new laws, or by the Judges: then we factually have a state of anarchy. This is in fact, the state we are in, and government, accords this structured anarchy in the breadth of its laws and in its performance to the people.

"Perhaps, however, a reference, tending to illustrate the general principle, may with propriety be made to a case which has lately happened among ourselves. If Shays had not been a DESPARATE DEBTOR, it is much to be doubted whether Massachusetts would have been plunged into civil war." [*The Federalist Papers*, No. 6, Hamilton]

History past marks a similar paradigm a thousand times over. The Fathers of America and most males who find themselves suddenly under excruciating, intentional attacks by both Federal and Local government's are driving this society to the brink of if not outright anarchy, then to civil war. They most certainly are hunting for 'debtor's' which somehow has superseded all other crimes and has become the greatest crime on earth.

One can see how this works exactly in how our 'modern' tax system is applied. Apparently there is over 50,000 pages of codes, practices, policies and procedures that nobody really understands, even the 'law-makers' themselves. In fact, a study was done in 1992 when 50 accounting firms all trained by the IRS were given a test. All 50 firms were given two family budgets and asked to compute the taxes...

The result?!? The result from the 50 accountancy firms gave 50 different formulations and 50 different disparate tax returns! This is the beauty of modern law, as far as government is concerned.

They don't care about GIGO, they don't care about the conflagration of millions of laws upon our daily life—what they do care about is that they can ensnare you within the infinite matrix of the law, for like the 50 different 'government trained' Tax consultants—nobody 'really' knows the law. For they all have different answers... Many men, like Shay who started the Shay's Rebellion in Massachusetts, have no intent for crime—like Ann Ranyd stated in *Atlas Shrugged*, most are invented into criminals by this system by the attenuation and sheer volume of our laws.

This has established a doctrine of "Original Sin" within contemporary laws. Like one insipid juror was heard to say at one trial in deliberations:

## CHAPTER SIX

"Hey, the D.A. charged this guy with a 100 crimes....*he's got to be guilty of something!!!* At least, one thing..."

The fact is through the ignorance of this woman and many others like her, you are guilty...of everything!!! It's just that now the D.A. charges you with everything, and then hopes 'something' sticks. More certainly than not, the District Attorney gets the type of juror that ignorantly thinks like the female juror above, that you've got to be guilty of *something*...simply because the DA charged you with *something*, didn't he!?!? This is yet another reason why our children have been 'dumbed down;' it is because District Attorneys across this nation bank on stupidity, and verily, not many jurors wind up disappointing neither our Judges or District Attorney's.

In his 1871 book *Roughing It*, Mark Twain described a murder trial in which the judge excluded all prospective jurors who had read the news of a case. In the court's view, he concluded, "Ignoramuses alone-could mete out unsullied justice."

What is new is the length to which lawyers go in the effort to shape juries that will be sympathetic to their cases or, especially if the case is a weak one, easily confused. Stephen J. Adler, a newspaper editor who has written extensively on jury reform notes: "Many of those who are currently removed via lawyers' challenges appear to be more alert and unbiased than many who are seated." [*America's Courts on Trial, Questioning Our Legal System*, by Elaine Pascoe, ©1997, The Millbrook Press, Inc., 2 Old New Milford Road, Brookfield, Connecticut 06804, ISBN 0-7613-0104-6; p. 32.]

Because of this nations total volume of laws, everything is currently against the law, and if it isn't—then like the poor 50 Accountancy firms who tried to simply compute taxes suing their own laws, there are 50 different answers for each problem which is illegalized by government. Thereby—everything comes under discretion. Unfortunately, this 'discretion' leaves society with 50 different criminals, all who had no idea what the real law was, nor what they were really doing. Yet, an ever increasing amount of such prisoners now inhabit our prisons, and an ever increasing amount of money-hungry District Attorneys are being able to let absolutely ignorant juries be led down the rosy path and allow them to enact the crimes in which government creates from nowhere.

With the Fourteenth Amendment mandate in §4 that: "The validity of the public debt of the United States, authorized by law, including debts incurred for payment of pensions and bounties for service in suppressing insurrection or rebellion, *shall not be questioned*." With a public debt (in which Hillary's media no longer informs us of) on the order of 5.7 Trillion dollars, and climbing—the Judges in allowing the Krell Machine of Welfare to accrue it's "daily bread," is not liable to let mere mortal citizens have the wealth of law and justice that they deserve. They are inclined to get 'discretion' in which to discharge this massive debt that no-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

body every speaks about any more...by imposing terrorist Feminist Jurisprudence court systems upon unsuspecting Fathers. When fathers, most of whom are poor and cannot pay, who ask for justice, they are summarily sent to jail, so that their warehousing can accrue anywhere from \$20,000 to \$50,000 for the counties who receive these monies in per diem and other special program rates and other special 'mandated' federal grants. Not only that, while they are in jail, their indebtedness "Child Support" owed amounts continually rise!

The Judges have mainly turned to the family in which to accrue public Wealth because this is where they have always turned to impose tyranny:

"However, by the end of the sixteenth century and beginning of the seventeenth century there was increasing criticism of the system of wardship. As part of 'fiscal feudalism', wardship had become one of the major rackets of Tudor England. At the beginning of the sixteenth century, classes from the peerage through the yeomandry were liable to discover they were sleeping-tenants-in-chief of the crown. Wardship endangered family fortunes and undermined the authority of the parents. Abuses of the system were a frequent cause of complaint in the commons. In the early seventeenth century emphasis shifted from abuses to the system itself. In 1646 the court of wards was abolished along with feudal tenures, according to Lawrence Stone, as the crown monopolized more of the profits for itself (rather than allow peers and courtiers to prey upon and patronize the gentry), and at a respect for individual freedom of choice began to be accepted, the overthrow of the court was inevitable." [*The Law of the Father? Patriarchy in the Transition from Feudalism to Capitalism*, by Mary Murray ©1995, Routledge, London and New York, 11 New Fetter Lane, London, EC4P 4EE, p. 109.]

The courts and government have knowingly embraced Feminist Jurisprudence upon the American society in direct opposition to our form of government. This was a planned assault, just as planned as the invasion of D-Day or the Apollo space launch to the moon. Their pure intent was and still is: to harvest the Family. They can only do this by destroying the Father.

For example, we can see the Welfare Machine of this Feminist takeover even in some state constitutions. In looking over the Constitution of the State of New York as Amended and in Force January 1, 1982; we can see the Socialist and Feminist impact on the American society; it starts at Article 6 §11 of that Constitution. In the heading of that section and subsequent sections it is overtly like nothing I have ever seen.

### NEW YORK STATE CONSTITUTION

**Article 6, §11** – [Surrogate's court; composition; term of office; jurisdiction]

## CHAPTER SIX

§12 – [Family court established; composition; election and appointment of judges; jurisdiction]

§14 – [Discharge of duties of county judge, surrogate or judge of family court by single person outside New York City]

§15 – [Civil and criminal courts in New York City; merger into single court; judges, election and term of office; jurisdiction]

§19 – [Transfer of actions and proceedings]

§29 – [Allocation of cost of maintenance and operation of courts; determination of annual financial needs of the courts]

§31 – [Indian courts excepted from application of article]

§32 – [Children committed by courts to be placed in custody of persons of same religious persuasion]

§35 – [Abolition of certain courts; transfer of judges and pending actions and proceeding to other courts; abolition of official referee's office; continuation of non-judicial personnel; appeals taken after effective date of article]

**Article 7** §9 -- [Short Term State Debts in anticipation of taxes, revenues and proceeds of sale of authorized bonds.]

§10 – [State debts on account of invasions, insurrection, war and forest fires]

§11 – [State debts generally; manner of contracting; referendum]

§12 – [State debts generally, how paid; restrictions on use of bond proceeds]

§13 – [Refund of State Debts]

§14 – [State debt for elimination of railroad crossings at grade; expenses; how borne; allocation of funds for reconstruction of state highways and parkways]

§15 – [Sinking funds; how kept and invested; income therefrom and application thereof]

§16 – [Payments of state debts; when comptroller to pay without appropriation]

§17 – [Tax revenues stabilization fund]

§19 – [State debt for expansion of State University]

**Article 8** §1 -- [Gift or loan of property or credit of local subdivisions prohibited; exceptions for enumerated purposes]

§2 -- [Restrictions on indebtedness of local subdivisions; contacting and payment of local indebtedness; exceptions]

§2(a)-[Local indebtedness for water supply, sewage disposal and drainage facilities; allocations and exclusions of indebtedness]

§3 -- [Restrictions on creation and indebtedness of certain corporations]

§4 -- [Limitations on local indebtedness]

§5 – [Ascertainment of debt-incurring power of counties, cities, towns and villages; certain indebtedness to be excluded]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

§6 -- [Debt-incurring power of Buffalo, Rochester and Syracuse; certain additional indebtedness to be excluded]

§7 -- [Debt-incurring power of New York City; certain additional indebtedness to be excluded]

§7(a)-[Debt-incurring power of New York City; certain indebtedness for railroads and transit purposes to be excluded]

§8 -- [Indebtedness not be invalidated by operation of this article]

§9 -- [ When debt-incurring power of certain counties shall cease.]

§10 -- [Limitations on amount to be raised by real estate taxes for local purposes; exceptions]

§10(a)-[Disposition of local revenues received from public improvement service]

§11 -- [Taxes for certain capital expenditures to be excluded from tax limitation]

§12 -- [Further limitations on contracting local indebtedness authorized]

**Article 9** §1 -- [Bill of Rights for local government's]

I have put down the compilation of the various Articles and Sections within the New York State constitution to show you the magnitude of the problem. Indeed, in comparing this constitution to the original ones, or better yet; to the National Constitution that in 1777 only had 10 Amendment's to it, even the most intellectually challenged can connect the dots here in regards to the pestilence that now ranges throughout our court systems.

The 5.7 Trillion dollar federal debt along with what debt the States can accrue, is the enemy of the Father and people of this nation. When the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment states that no citizen can question the debt—and then you see Legislation such as what is documented here in the New York State constitution that is insanely trying to accrue public debt and is working directly off of debt, you can easily understand why there must be accountability to this Welfare Machine: the accountability is found by creating slaves in this society...the slaves turn out to be the main producers within the society...men. The slavery is incurred to pay off the debt. The courts have now enforced the unlawful Martial Law of the Debt driven government who throws us further into debt by such treasonous laws, thereby empowering the Socialist "Village". They then let the court system violate their oaths of office, in which to support this underground "Emergency" government that no one truly understands that it even exists.

So, criminal Legislatures are not running this country off of the profit of the National Productivity of this nation (otherwise knows as true, or



## CHAPTER SIX

positive Wealth), rather; they have in violation of law; established their own magical money system, to where any Public Program or corruption they can think of, is immediately realized.

"The ability of a country to pay taxes must always be proportioned, in a great degree, to the quantity of money in circulation, and to the celerity with which it circulates. Commerce, contributing to both these objects, must of necessity render the payment of taxes easier, and facilitate the requisite supplies to the treasury...The hereditary dominions of the Emperor of Germany contain a great extent of fertile, cultivated, and populous territory...and yet, from the want of fostering influence of commerce, that monarch can boast but slender revenues. He has several times been compelled to owe obligations to the pecuniary succors of other nations for the preservation of his essential interests, and is unable, upon the strength of his own resources, to sustain a long or continued war...

Tax laws have in vain been multiplied; new methods to enforce the collection have in vain been tried; the public expectation has been uniformly disappointed, and the treasuries of the States have remained empty. The popular system of administration inherent in the nature of popular government, coinciding with the real scarcity of money incident to a languid and mutilated state of trade, has hitherto defeated every experiment for extensive collections, and has at length taught the different legislatures the folly of attempting them.

No person acquainted with what happens in other countries will be surprised at this circumstance. In so opulent a nation as that of Britain, where direct taxes from superior wealth must be much more tolerable, and, from the vigor of the government, much more practicable, than in America, far the greatest part of the national revenue is derived from taxes of the indirect kind, from imposts, and from excises...

In America, it is evident that we must a long time depend for the means of revenue chiefly on such duties... [*The Federalist Papers*, No. 12, Hamilton]

"Taking into account the existing debt, foreign and domestic, upon any plan of extinguishment which a man moderately impressed with the importance of public justice and public credit could approve, in addition to the establishments which all parties will acknowledge to be necessary, we could not reasonably flatter ourselves, that this resource alone, upon the most improved scale, would even suffice for its present necessities. Its future necessities admit not of calculation or limitation: and upon the principle, more than once adverted to, the power of making provision for them as they arise ought to be equally unconfined. I believe it may be regarded as a position warranted by the history of mankind, that, IN THE USUAL PROGRESS OF THINGS, THE NECESSITIES OF A NATION, IN EVERY STATE OF ITS EXISTANCE, WILL BE FOUND AT LEAST EQUAL TO ITS RESOURCES." [*The Federalist Papers*, No. 30, Hamilton]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

We see here that Hamilton recommends a positive form of taxation...not the present sublime 'unlimited' system of debt as taxation we incur today. Clearly, taxation was to be used for 'general' even, 'future' necessities (ergo: the normal things) in which to make payment for, but it could only do this by equaling its own resources. The modern Welfare Machine, surpasses the resources of this nation...of all nations!...and has placed us in a state of insane debt and more importantly, it has placed future generations into debt, many whom *must go to jail* in which to feed money by their storage and warehousing, to the Welfare State in order to pay off this debt.

A comparable analysis of what they are doing now by imposing massive public debt can be seen in the classic science fiction movie, *Forbidden Planet*. The story-line of this movie told of a race of beings that created a huge machine they created within the interior of their whole planet which through their own imagination, would instantly gratify them and create anything they wanted. However; they couldn't 'think abstractly' enough to see the concomitant danger of man's subconscious power of the subconscious *Id*, (what we know as the ancient, primitive, tribal mind). That *Id* would ultimately destroy them. This ancient subconscious mindset that was ingrained in even the most meek of them, in which everyone had. That base and ancient *Id* gained instant almost infinite power from this machine and from that power, and their own hidden lust, sophistries and ultimate desires; they killed-out their whole race in a single night; to where only the machine remained.

This is the exact same construct of this debt fraud that is presently granting the feminist and socialists and Legislatures anything they want or can dream up—all by using the power of their Krell Welfare Machine: infinite debt. Like the magnificent Krell's alien race in *Forbidden Planet*, most Fathers and ordinary laypersons have no idea what is killing them. They just see the anarchy of the machine in which people like Dan Quayle, Rush Limbaugh, Newt Gingrich and a host of other media and government personalities constantly complain about. And their complaints go unabated—the perversions persist—because Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine is still on; and still silently killing Fathers, Families and Children, (and others) all in the name of "The Best Interests of the Child". What is odd, is that all these 'experts' none of them are making the connection between fatherlessness, or the loss of our Secured Liberties, the draining of our Wealth, and the social pathology throughout our society!

All anyone really sees is some faceless individuals getting crushed by this machine causing pure anarchy which the likes of which no society has ever seen before. "Ah, Richard Story just killed his two sons...what a murderer."

## CHAPTER SIX

"Ah, Susan Smith just drowned her two children in the backseat of her car...what a murderer."

"Did you see that guy drive that tank and crush all those cars and cop cars in San Diego? What a madman!"

"Damn...I just paid \$934 out of my paycheck in taxes! Damn government!"

Like the Krell, nobody knows what 'really' is going on—but we can see the inhumane effects of the Krell machine by a rapidly devolving society. Like the Krell who were millions of years more advanced than mankind—they never saw it coming—they never new who or what the real enemy was. They never knew what hit them...nor do we. Hillary knows this as do the Elite's in charge of this nation.

The proof of this is not just that this debt exists, the proof lies in the fact that neither government, the Feminists, Hillary, nor special interests will dare even discuss this matter. Indeed, when Fathers and other citizens demand to understand 'the legal nature and cause of the action' before us in court; we are met with silence. The 'accusatory party' usually the 'District Attorney' (representing the Executive Branch) never answers!

Why?!? All we are asking to do is to 'see the machine'...so we might be able to turn it off.

If this system were all on the up-and-up, they could easily say who they were, or what court we were in—or how they are coming after us. They don't! They never answer the Bill of Particulars, and as the maxim of law states: XXXX So, nobody 'really knows' who or what these 'courts' are, even to this day.

So we can only conclude that debt is driving this invisible Krell Welfare Machine that now is in operation against all of us, especially fathers; is an uncontrolled power. The subconscious *Id* of government cannot have Fathers exist, because it needs to steal the money from the home and family in which to pay for the debt—which is so huge—it can never be paid for! It's eternal. So, these ingenious treasonous, and unseen Elite's, have established a government over our government...all so they can pay for the Social Altruism that their Krell Machine provides: and that is unlimited Social Engineering. Simply put: this machine lets them have anything, then; they turn to us—hand us whatever bill they accrue, then say: "Don't even question it" in accordance with section §4 of the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment.

Our organic government operates without this system, as long as there is no emergency. Once there is an emergency, under the powers of the Federal (and State) constitutions; the state declares that it must protect itself and the Krell Welfare Machine automatically turns on. (Seems reasonable.) To protect itself, the Founders gave government, *under these*

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

*temporary, exigent circumstances*, the power to impose martial law. Under martial law (or the legal term: Law Martial), government suspends the constitution; and imposes its own government.

Because of the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment, and other mysterious Legislation, this debt is eternal and thereby; the Martial Law Government becomes eternal because we can never question why in order to turn it off.

This is how this secret government, "looks" and "operates" almost exactly like the last government we had, let's say under Model I form of government which Tribe described. However; when the government starts stealing from Fathers, and Fathers pleadingly demand their 'Constitutional Rights' the Judges are right there: "You don't *have any Constitutional Rights!*" They respond arrogantly back to the Father, most who likely are War Veterans...because the Fathers' system of government no longer exists: just the Krell Machine exists (under Model VIII NCPGI), letting other people with their agenda, squander the resources of the nation (mostly Fathers) to realize their super-rights, and thereby; drain the national wealth of the nation through the resultant imposition of anarchy upon us all, while their special interests profit. (The special interests are only part of the Krell Welfare Machine.)

Such a man who has been persecuted as such in virtually all our present court systems has instantly become one of the alien Krell and has been killed by the machine. Frankly, American men are virtually being killed in one night, just like the Krell in the movie...

If you note the New York Constitution in which I abbreviated the most pertinent parts above; you can see part of the machine. First, they make considerable laws in sections regarding the "Family"; then immediately, other sections go right to Debt. Clearly, this is telling us outright, that they are claiming (or capturing) the family (under the Doctrine of *Parens Patriæ*) and they are harvesting it to discharge the debt so they can realize anything they can dream up—through Welfare. (To sustain the Krell machine that gives anyone with access, anything they desire.) Just like the fiscal Feudal Wardship of the Tudor's, this society has abandoned the clearly recognized American sovereignty of either of the home, Family or individual, in violation of Statutory construction, American Law, the Common Law, and the Maxim's of law, are what this nation is 'supposed' to operate by. We have also allowed this insane machine to violate the Foundational directions of the Founding Fathers, that we will only use what we earn to fund our tax-base. This system by the creation of it's Krell Welfare Machine has not only enslaved us; it has doomed future generations, who will curse us for the creation of this machine.

"If" there were any protection from law against these errant practices by Ms. Clinton and her cohorts, it would stem from the Father from within his perfect rights within the home. She, as well as the Legislatures

## CHAPTER SIX

and most Judges recognize this, and they do everything possible in which to usurp the proper authority from the Father and thereby leave the home naked without any form of protection. The only residual protection left, comes from the State—which is not protection of any kind for the Family. (It is factually a reversion to the "Village" Hillary wants us all to join.) This lends itself well to the tribal condition of using the home to impose social change.

"Citing Engels that 'it is the law of the division of labour that lies at the basis of the division into classes.' And utilizing his observation that the original division of labour was between a man and woman for the purpose of childrearing—that within the family the husband was the owner, the wife the means of production, the children the labour, and the reproduction of the human species was important economic criteria in itself." [*The Law of the Father?*, Mary Murray, pg 21, cited from S. Firestone, *the Dialectic of Sex*, London, The Woman's Press, ©1979; p. 14.]

Remember: in a tribal society Hillary wants no classes, and she most certainly wants the woman to 'control' that institution and get *anything* she wants; all by accessing the infinite, debt ridden Krell machine of Welfare.

This is why our court system's do not work anymore. It is because there is an organized crime syndicate of Judges, using and sustaining the Krell Machine...and this creates their secret emergency government that turns off the old Constitutional government and all its bad old 'common law' and 'Constitutional' laws. All the new laws coming from Judges aren't laws at all, because there are no more courts of law, they are now, courts of law and equity. Law is rule. Equity means compromise and fairness.

Merging law and equity is like being on a deserted island where you are the only one there. You find food there, but you do not find any water or salt. You can live for a while, but without salt and water you know you are going to die! Searching the island one day you come upon and find a great obelisk salt tablet, right next to it a pond of pure clear water. In this scenario you can live, you are saved! Because your body will have everything it needs...food, water and salt.

Then, you get someone that wants to be 'efficient' visiting on the island...like Hillary. She gets smart and figures (because she loves the Village and she wants you comfortable in the Village and she wants to help) that she can help you by making things more efficient. So, she gets the idea that to help you she'll just push the salt into the water, and thereby; you won't have to make as much effort distinguishing between the two, they'll just be combined into one—just like law and equity. She leaves because she figures he's so smart and that she's helped you so much that

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

she must go on to another Village and help more people. It's what she does.

Three weeks later you die an agonizing death, because, even though it 'sound's' like a good idea—to combine salt and water, for efficiency--it's not. The proof is in your eventual death.

This is what merging law and equity together are doing in our present court systems. They are killing a nation by the Judiciary, through its 'efficiency', which; is in fact—only an excuse to make the judges informal 'discretion' the highest law in the land.... This is what Solzenesken complained of in Russian courts when Stalin established the Russian Gulag's. All the courts became 'famously' efficient. Combining law and equity does not establish some new form of efficiency, just like combining pure water and salt makes the water unusable for drinking—doing this really only leaves a destructive equity in our court systems. Of course, the courts do this to 'help' us, just like Hillary is 'helping' us.

So, through these courts of equity, the "Judges" are only using Discretion. The District Attorney uses the same discretion when he refuses to file your countercharges against your wife or ex-girlfriend with the court clerk. "We're only doing what is efficient and just," they will lie to anyone who asks. This discretion and efficiency are the tools of Despots, and these courts are using them expertly, to harvest as much as possible from as many people as they can in total violation of our law. Simply put: our courts are there only to provide law and more importantly: justice. But there is neither anymore in today's courts. (They are only there 'sometimes' as a facade.)

This is why, when you hear of some person winning on a particular motion or in a particular legal question, others who quickly follow with the same exact defense are found guilty. Somehow, some law which seems to work, suddenly doesn't work the very next day!. Because through the 'efficiency' and 'discretion' of this Krell Machine, the bulls-eye that was the "law" just moments before—has purposely been moved. I call this the sliding bulls-eye effect of our court systems. This is yet another reason why our court system's don't work anymore and why there is no law or remedy available to American citizens any longer. As the record proves: sometime the law appears, sometime it doesn't. This again, is to mask the facade that we are in our Constitutional, Model I, Separation of Powers form of government...which we are not...we are in a despicable clandestine Model VIII: NCPGI.

It is due to this fraud, that most men are becoming unwitting slaves to this system. Fathers are 'trying' to do the right thing. They understand the changing palpitations of society. This is why most mouth that they want "Joint Custody," which is another outright fraud. Frankly, as I pointed out earlier, in their minds our courts are eminently fair, and already disburse

## CHAPTER SIX

"Joint Custody" out fairly already. When you utter the first "J" in 'Joint' in open court—you've lost—and more importantly your family has lost, because you bought into the fraud. Again, no two people can be both Lord and Tenant over the same property. Joint Custody is responsible for more Female Single Headed Household's than a reconverted needle factory making a 100 year production run of used condoms. Most DA's and Courts are very excited about pushing Joint Custody upon unsuspecting Fathers...which should tell us something right off the bat. Lawyers line their pockets off the words similar to: "I worked fought hard as hell, but I just think I got you 'Joint Custody'!" and then will ply every bit of coercion he has to force the father to take the 'deal.' It's no deal. It's unadulterated fraud. There are millions of men who sat in prison, who have lost their children, and haven't seen them in decades, all because they won this "privilege" of Joint Custody.

The law, American law, clearly defines the father as the ultimate authority and owner of his own children. Fathers, are 'giving up' this incredible blessing—for chump change. Not only that, they give up the massive authority and control and ownership of their families...which they have as a birthright, **and then they actually have to pay exorbitant sums of money for ten, maybe twenty or thirty years, for getting the privilege to let the courts fraudulently strip them of their palladium of absolute rights!** Then from the plateau of this openly coerced fraud, we watch as fathers are destroyed exponentially by this system, our children become amoral and lost within a mist of destruction and families undergo needless havoc; all the while watching this war propagate more wars which continually devolve our nation and incur huge amounts of monies each year to combat!!!!

This is why these courts have become our enemy. They are there not for their original purposes, but they are there to serve only special interests. They are abjectly corrupt systems in which we can no longer tolerate, and we have to eradicate them, and we must go after those criminals who have willingly enslaved us to their tyranny. Listen to one story and the result of these contemporary criminal institutions and, more importantly, look at their relationship to the Krell Welfare Machine:

"Like many African immigrants, Girma Molalegne, Rowland Nwankwo, and Ani Ebong came to the United States in search of opportunity. After settling in Denver, they followed the employment path of many other blacks and immigrants, taking jobs as cab drivers.

Before long, the three men discovered a market niche in the poorly served low-income neighborhoods in Denver. Joining with fellow driver Leroy Jones, a transplanted New Yorker, they decided to go into business for themselves as a taxicab co-op called Quick-Pick Cabs. The idea seemed to benefit everyone: improved service for residents of poor

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

neighborhoods, better wages for cab drivers, and opportunities for entry-level entrepreneurs.

But when Jones and his partners filed an application with the Colorado Public Utilities commission to start their company, they received the same verdict as every other applicant for taxicab permits in Denver had received for the past 50 years: application denied. The result was not attributed to any deficiency of Jones and his partners, but rather the effect of classic protectionist policies, designed not to protect the public but to safeguard politically powerful companies....

Leroy Jones and his partners challenged the taxicab monopoly in federal court. They did not seek a handout, or a minority set-aside, or any other sort of special privilege. They sought their civil right to earn an honest living—a right they possess not because they are black but because they are Americans.

But the court turned them away. Of all the rights most Americans think they possess, economic liberty—the right to pursue a business or profession free of excessive or arbitrary government interference—receives the least protection from the courts. No matter how oppressive, economic regulations are routinely upheld by the courts. Thus the anomaly that in a nation doctrinally committed to economic opportunity, today the "right" to a welfare check is much more protected than the right to an honest living." [The Affirmative Action FRAUD, Can We Restore the American Civil Rights Vision?, by Clint Bolick, ©1996 by the Cato Institute, 1000 Massachusetts Ave., N.W., Washington, D.C. 20001; ISBN 1-882577-28-0; p. 20]

Of course, the Father's plight in today's court is much worse than this. When Fathers attempt to enter these hated Draconian courts, they are annihilated but with a religious furor which would terrorize mere license seekers such as Mister's Molalegne, Nwankwo, and Ebong above. Indeed, like most Fathers do with Family court, they wouldn't even show up for they would fully recognize its futility. What these gentleman in attempting to start a Taxi-Cab company went through is nothing compared to the illicit behavior of our contemporary courts against Fathers. "You have no Constitutional Rights." Judges don't even say such things to murderers, but they say this to Fathers on a daily basis. The final observation here that "the 'right' to a welfare check is much more protected than the right to an honest living." Is just barely starting to uncover the truth about the Krell Welfare Machine, and how it not only is destroying Families, but Free Enterprise as well. The avocation by modern feminist towards Socialism and against Capitalism and all other modes of Americanism, should send a nation of American citizen's into their courts with torch and pitchfork. As we have recognized here, something is terribly, terribly wrong, and very much amiss in our nation's courts.

We are progressing while still moving backwards all the time.



## CHAPTER SIX

### THE FOURTH BOX

---

Many of us wonder how all this could have happened. Many Fathers wonder why they were destroyed. All of us like the magnificent Alien race, the Krell, cannot even comprehend why this is happening, nor who the main protagonists are. Indeed, the parable that unfolds in *Forbidden Planet* revolves around the main character of Dr. Morbius, a man who has accessed the power of the Krell Machine. Strangely, after doing so, the crew he was first with died, leaving just him and his baby daughter marooned on the planet. Twenty years later, a rescue ship lands to save both he and his daughter, and strangely again—the unexplainable terrors and murders begin again, until the unknown monster from the subconscious *Id*, in the final scene, comes to claim everyone, even his daughter. It is then that one of the heroes in the movie makes the connection that it is Dr. Morbius' own mind, using the infinite power of the Krell Machine that has created the invisible monster which now seeks to destroy them all, including his own child who now has defied him.

This is what I term the *Morbius Complex*, which is inherent in all government workers. They are there just like Dr. Morbius for a supposed higher purpose, yet; somehow through the power of government's machinework, wind up destroying us all. Their subconscious *Id*, cannot comprehend the fact that the power of government is unlimited just like the machine, and soon their intellect is overshadowed by the power of government whom impresses its will over all whom work within its domain. The base and subconscious mind which government is usually want to gravitate to the lowest common denominator of mankind, overshadows even the most conscientious moral being. Soon, through the inner workings of the machine, they are pushed out to where only a virulent strain of government worker remains: the mindless masses. These are the ones who belligerently mouth the words "I'm only doing my job."

The Morbius Complex is driven through one of mankind's most basic instincts, and that is irresponsibility. When something isn't directly affecting the person actually being destroyed by the policy or procedure of government—then why should they care? We have seen this callousness throughout hundreds of regimes, yet; it is most persistent and virulent here. Indeed, the Founding Fathers recognized these potential faults and established a system of government which was held in check with fail-safe after fail-safe. Yet, as with any human design, all those fail safe's have been dismantled, to where now none remain. Indeed, in the past, a government worker was held to his oath of office scrupulously, if he varied any distance out of alignment with that oath, he was personally held liable—he lost property, *not the citizen!* He was held personally liable, *not the American citizen!* In fact, the system was designed so that if any citizen were to be arrested—that government employee had to have

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

every "T" crossed and every single "I" dotted. If just a mere mistake, such as not getting the name right, would instantly free the American citizen. It took mountains of such precise paperwork to get the citizen in jail...and every government employee along the way had to be precise.

Yet now, they can have virtually everything wrong! Now, they just kind of check boxes...and if they miss one...well, they can just check it later after you are in prison. Now, all the government employees just 'wink' at each other and 'stipulate' to the new agreement even without you there!

Again, in the past, it took the government official mountains of paperwork in which to fine you or place you in jail...now—a mere single sheet of paper, with no legible signatures...and barely any boxes checked. I've seen indictments to where the only thing on the sheet was the defendant's social security number and drivers license...*and that was it!*

Conversely, in the past, a wrongfully convicted citizen could take a single piece of toilet paper, scrawl a Writ of Habeas Corpus on it, and submit it to his jailor, and get out of prison!

Now, things have reversed. Now the government employee is using a single piece paper with little or no boxes checked on it—no verified citizens complaint, no seal, no signature of properly sworn in public officials...really—just a piece of toilet paper; and this is what is being used to crush American citizens. Yet—when an innocent person is trying to get out of prison, he has to now, submit reams of paperwork, cross all his "T's" and dot every single "I" or his case is thrown out. Even if he gets everything right, it is still thrown out. Now the government employee submits the single sheet of paperwork and the citizen is required to file mountains of paperwork in which to respond.

Something has severely gone wrong. Something is categorically broke.

All these government employees, calmly sitting behind their 3" thick bulletproof plate glass steel barricades, belligerently assume the Morbius Complex and will insolently not even do the most civil things. They won't even accept proper legal service, then; they will arrogantly threaten you if you protest. Many American citizens have been wrestled to the ground right inside public institutions just because their supposed "Public Servants" are insolent and criminally malfeasant. All such "public servants" have assumed the Morbius Complex and many American citizens do not recognize them, and have no idea who or what they are. To many, they are as alien as the mythical Krell themselves.

## CHAPTER SIX

### YOU ARE THE SPENDER

	YOU	SOMEONE ELSE
YOURS	Category I	Category II
SOMEONE ELSE'S	Category III	Category IV

From: *Free to Choose; A personal Statement*; by Milton and Rose Friedman, Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovich, New York and London, c 1980; ISBN 0-15-133481-1; pp. 116-117.]

Why do public servants do this? Why do most American citizens allow this? Why do Feminists and Welfare Queens assert their claim to the unlimited benefits of Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine?

It's because of the Forth Box.

The Forth Box concept isn't anything new...in fact...it was the main component which kept mankind stuck in the Matriarchal Tribal state for at least a quarter million years.

Simply put, the Forth Box is a box, equally divided into four boxes.

I have shown this box in figure XX and most people recognize this instantly. However, the concept behind this is a little more subtle. Milton Friedman in his book *Free to Choose*, gives an exemplary explanation of its impact, and how it relates to the Morbius Complex.

**Category I** in the table refers to your spending your own money on yourself. You shop in a supermarket, for example. You clearly have a strong incentive both to economize and to get as much value as you can for each dollar you do spend.

**Category II** refers to your spending your own money on someone else. You shop for Christmas or birthday presents. You have the same incentive to economize as in Category I but not the same incentive to get full value for your money, at least as judged by the tastes of the recipient. You will, of course, want to get something the recipient will like—provided that it also makes the right impression and does not take too much time and effort. (If, indeed, your main objective were to enable the recipient to get as much value as possible per dollar, you would give him

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

cash, converting your Category II spending to Category I spending by him.)

**Category III** refers to your spending someone else's money on yourself—lunching on an expense account, for instance. You have no strong incentive to keep down the cost of the lunch, but you do have a strong incentive to get your money's worth.

**Category IV** refers to your spending someone else's money on still another person. You are paying for someone else's lunch out of an expense account. You have little incentive either to economize or to try to get your guest the lunch that he will value most highly. However, if you are having lunch with him, so that the lunch is a mixture of Category II and Category IV, you do have a strong incentive to satisfy your own tastes at the sacrifice of his, if necessary.

All welfare programs fall into either Category III—for example Social Security, which involves cash payments that the recipient is free to spend as he may wish; or Category IV—for example, public housing; except that even Category IV programs share one feature of Category III, namely, that the bureaucrats administering the program partake of the lunch; and all Category III programs have bureaucrats among their recipients. [*Free to Choose, A Personal Statement*, by Milton Friedman, ©1980, Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, Inc., 757 Third Avenue, New York, NY 10017, ISBN 0-15-133481-1, pp. 116-117.]

What we essentially have here is a Boolean expression, visually represented by these four boxes. The Morbius Complex encompasses both boxes three and four, but the forth box most exclusively. It is due to the removed nature of the government employee to the concerns of the average citizens he supposedly services as a sacred duty, which causes our problems today.

The original construct of Republican form, held the public servant *severely* accountable so that your interests would be closely related to his interests. Indeed, if he was writing you up for a speeding ticket—and he was *wrong, well*, he might be reprimanded, lose his job, even lose his house and HIS bank account! This ministerial duty, as bound through his oath of office—meant that he was personally liable for his government acts. *He therefore, and everyone in the chain of enforcing the action against you, were personally liable, each and everyone of them, for doing the correct thing.* To simply being held to their oath of office, and to put up a personal bond to promise us all, that they were held personally liable for all their actions. If they didn't uphold the letter of the law then their own disaster would ensue. This is how the American society, kept a government in check.

This moved the government employee into Category I with you! NOT THE FOURTH BOX WHERE HE SAFELY RESIDES NOW. He and all

## CHAPTER SIX

others could care less what happens to you or your family. They could give a damn. This is why they are happy sitting at their Pentium class machines, driving their brand-new automobiles both on and off the job; mindlessly typing away and paper-working their fellow American's lives, because they are completely immune from any error that might be made. Even if they make the most egregious, and fallow errors, even if they intentionally hunt you for a personal vendetta and use the law for their own personal means...no longer can the mere mortal American citizen decisively either protect himself or defend himself from these overt criminal acts, nor can they go after the government official, (their supposed "public servant") and hold him accountable in a court of law. All these people know and fully understand that they are 99.9% protected by a Leviathan of "immunity" procedures to where a mere mortal citizen even 'daring' to enter the 'procedure' is a penalty in itself against that citizen. Few dare even try to hold their out-of-control public officials accountable...yet...amazingly; even that number is rising!

Presently, all such safety barriers have been eliminated so now, the average citizen is defenseless from such abuse. Now, there is no more Republican Form of governance—all due to the fact that all government officials enjoy the safety and comfort of destroying our lives being removed to the Fourth Box in Category IV above. They have no liability. They are so far removed from the rest of our lives—as to establish a separate class of citizen, a new public entity with "super-rights;" one never dreamt of by the founding fathers and one despised by those same people as they developed laws and procedures to hold the public servant *more accountable to law, held to a 'higher standard' of law, and subject to the exact letter of the law*. Presently; such exacting standards are but a myth...beyond that...they have become a mere joke.

These 'new' public servants are using their infinite powers of the machine, obtaining immense power, monies, wealth, and careers—yet—if you try and go after such an official, and hold him to *his own standard of law*...you will fail. For now he too, just like the Feminist-class person, enjoy Super-Rights, never before granted or allowed by either the constitution or our form of government. Going after Judges is but a futile act—even writing the "Judicial Commissions" to hold them up to their own standards of ethic's is futile.

[pp. 123-125] First, although the commissions claim to protect the public from dangerous judges, the lawyer- and judge-run commissions rarely impose public discipline (public censure, suspension, or removal from the bench) on one of their own. For example, one of the state's top judges in Connecticut was suspended for six weeks in 1994, after hearing a murder case argued by a lawyer with whom he had a close personal rela-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

tionship; his suspension was notable because it was the most severe punishment meted out to a judge in Connecticut in twenty years.

Follow-through rates of the state judicial ethics commissions are dismal nationwide. The state commissions reject as invalid the overwhelming majority of complaints citizens make against judges. The 1993-94 record for Florida, for example, shows that citizens made a total of 474 complaints against judges (455 in the year 1994 and 19 pending from the previous year). Out of this total, 99 percent were dismissed. During the same years in California, out of 1005 complaints, 94 percent were dismissed." Between 1991 and 1993, with a total of 14,887 complaints made against judges nationwide, only twenty judges were removed from the bench and another fifteen suspended for improper conduct. Of course, not all complaints against judges have merit. A person on the losing end of a lawsuit has the incentive to strike back at the judge who made the decision. But without public scrutiny there is no possible way to assess the fairness of the Judicial Commissions' decisions.

...When a judge is sued for violating his or her responsibilities, the little guy or gal has little chance of prevailing. It's like fighting City Hall. [*Divorced From Justice, The Abuse of Women and Children by Divorce Lawyers and Judges*, by Karen Winner, ©1996, HarperCollins Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10032, ISBN 0-06-039184-7;]

All these people within the corridors of power, from the lowliest clerk or mailroom boy, right up through the police, throughout our Judiciary and Legislative branches—right up to the President of the United States himself—are protected by the massive impenetrable form of the Krell Welfare Machine.

They all know this, and most of them feign that they do not know that they are totally immune, thereby assuming the Morbius Complex. You will find these people throughout the breadth of government, and unfortunately, the American citizen can no longer protect either himself or his family, from any of them, and again, unfortunately their interests are no longer that of yours. They now have been isolated into the Fourth Box mindset—to where their interests are more aligned with government, than it ever will be with yours.

This of course happened in my final case. Indeed, here I was, doing a lawful "Appearance without an Appearance" to combat being forced into court by Judge Howell, who as we remember, stated on April 29<sup>th</sup>, 1999: "I have no jurisdiction in this matter," thereby legally ending this case. The new "Judge" Cumming, now tried to get me to jump back into the frying pan, and couldn't do it. Because I didn't contract to the court, or even address it (my counsel's did), contracting nor giving my name to the court in any manner; and Cumming being fully informed that he had no jurisdiction—thereby having knowledge of the law—instead of again; holding himself up to his own standards of law, he had three court Bail-

## CHAPTER SIX

iff's forcibly grab me *outside the court building* and drag me across the bar into his court! This is a clear violation of both his procedure and law...but *he assumes full immunity for doing so!* He was fired under CCP 170.1(a)6C, yet; refused that also! I arrested him, formally writing up a PC 142(a) against him, and legally serving it upon the Butte County Sheriff, yet—nothing was done! Still this fraudulent trial went on. So, I then wrote up a Writ of Prohibition to the next Superior Court—trying to stop this obscenity of law--and that was met with total silence.

Law does not work any more. Courts are only our enemy. We must recognize the facts—and scientifically catalogue their result. Only then will the Fathers Rights community, begin to address their problems. We cannot go into something that is broke and expect justice, logic or "the law of the highest reason" from these tribunals.

When I finally told Cumming's in open court, that he was a fascist, he actually took offense at this. He boldly declared: "I fought against the Fascist Axis powers in World War Two!" Yet, when I then demanded how he could hold this fraudulent trial with me never having contracted my name to the court, and without having any Jurisdiction as stated by Judge Howell, he wouldn't answer. To this date, there has never been an answer. There were no answers to my Writ of Prohibition which I submitted that next day. No answers to my Writ of Habeas Corpus, five of them which I sent all the way up to the United States Supreme Court.

Yet they placed me in jail with no crime having occurred. They did it, they did it here in the United States, and they did it using "Law" which only came out of Fascism: the power of the gun.

This is not the real tragedy. The real tragedy is that this is being done not as the exception to the rule—violating law now has become the norm in today's courts. Yet, these court Judges, all embedded within the nest and safety of the Krell Welfare Machine's Fourth Box, arrogantly will assert that, "they aren't fascists."

All of them encompass the best of what Fascism, Totalitarianism, and Communism has to offer. They don't have to prove anything any longer. They are no longer part of this nation—they are in the machine of their own design and making, and they enjoy the temporal safety of their boxes; while they last, for they all are deeply entranced by the Morbius Complex, and never would see their sins and mistakes, *even if you showed it to them on tape*. I think the Clinton sexual debacle has more than proven that.

This is the house that Hillary built. This is where she lives, and the garden she grooms, and the bed she, and others like her, make.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**



---

## CHAPTER SEVEN

---

"Senator Daniel Moynihan: *"We knew this was coming. In the early 60s we picked up the first tremors of the earthquake that was about to shake the American family. The single most powerful indicator is the ratio of our out-of-wedlock births. Today it is 43% and in some districts, it is as high as 81%."* (Human Events, 28 Jan., 1994.)

### ABSTRACT REASONING

---

The Krell Welfare Machine exists because of one flaw of human-kind. This flaw has been prevalent since time immemorial and is the *exact* reason why the American system of government was created, with emphasis on the individual, and not Hillary's Tribal "Village Model." Western Civilization was developed and created because of the establishment of secure, stable families which accrued and developed wealth, and of course secure, stable families required a Father. The centerpiece Father established and led a two-parent household which made families operate in the common interests of the family, acting in unison as one. These families created robust individuals, who understood their position and responsibilities within the family, which secured their individual liberty. This meant that such an independent individual would share a concurrent responsibility to those rights gained by his duty and allegiance to his family...

However, the flaw of Ms. Clinton and those fellow "multiculturalists" like her is that when a group of men, (or society) collectively get together, they start to think in a collective format. From this, they lose the association of liberty being shared with responsibility. This is of course, soon devolves mob rule. This is a devolution of the creative analysis and abstract reasoning capabilities that afflicts the intellect of the individual through the dissonance of the mob. This is what John Stuart Mill spoke about in his quote in chapter one when he discussed mob rule, and more importantly, this is why the Founders of this nation, created a new nation, not one based upon mere Monarchies, Tyrants, nor even the safety and security of a collective mob; but one based on families—and the individual.. This nation was forged in the era of enlightenment, the age of reason—and thereby, America became a nation of *families*. These *families* developed sovereign, capable individuals, who went on to create robust families once again, who handed their wealth down to their children and created even stronger families and individuals—whereby, society gained as a spillover effect, a dynamic, tightly bound culture, one held together by familial bonds, and heritage; who transmitted law and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

order and structure throughout the society—not by police; but through the basic interaction and moralities of successful families.

Benjamin Franklin, after disembarking the ship direct from France with the Treaty of Peace, which ended the Revolutionary War, boldly announced: "I have made you all Kings!" As in France, he forced King George to sign the treaty to every 'individual' American, as there was no single-collective government in which the King could sign the treaty to. Thereby; at that very instant, every single American became the "sovereign" within his own home. We all became Kings. However, with such individual title comes a concomitant *responsibility*, and this is what the Feminists have always erred through their implementation of 'mobocracy.'

There are many incidences throughout human history which demonstrate this devolved state of mob consciousness at work: Pontis Pilot asking the crowd to choose between the thief Barbarous and Jesus Christ; and the Nazi extermination of the Jews during WWII. As historian Dr. Klaus B. Fisher noted about this ability of common men to quickly assimilate the mob consciousness:

"There were two types of murderers—those who sat behind the desks and gave the orders—the desk murderers such as Hitler, Himmler, Heydrich, Muller, and Eichmann; and the men who carried out the actual executions or gassings—Hoss, Wirth, Mengele, the men of the *Einsatzgruppen* ["task forces," or mobile killing squads], and the concentration camp guards."

According to Dr. Fischer, their "crimes against people can be grouped into five broad categories: (1) slave labor (2) abuse of prisoners of war, (3) torture and execution of hostages, (4) cruel and unusual medial experiments, and (5) organized atrocities."

Given the heinous nature of the crimes, a reasonable person might readily conclude that most of the perpetrators were sadists. But the evidence indicates otherwise. Dr. Ella Lingens-Reiner, a physician who survived Auschwitz, observed:

"There were few sadists. Not more than five or ten percent were pathological criminals in the clinical sense. The others were all perfectly normal men who knew the difference between right and wrong. They all knew what was going on." [*Nazi War Criminals*, by Earl Rice Jr., Lucent Books, P.O. Box 289011, San Diego, CA 92198-9011, ISBN- 1-56006-097-2, p. 15.]

As Dr. Fischer noted about Nazi War criminals—Hillary and the Elite regime that supports her and their planned Socialist program's against men and fathers, are 'exactly' such 'normal' people of the same ilk described by Dr. Fischer. However, what is most criminal is that these people are fully cognizant and informed of what they are doing, and they

## CHAPTER SEVEN

know it is patently wrong. However, they don't care about these acts, for in the end, it isn't they who are being destroyed by the Krell Welfare Machine—it is just some 'commoner' who they will never meet. (Again, this is "Fourth Box" mentality). All they see is their jobs, their pay increases and job benefits, they see the 'social good' they are supposedly doing by 'helping' other poor and unfortunate persons—they never see the pestilence they have created, they never meet the faceless men who have to be destroyed by this machine in order to feed its sustenance. In their minds—they are good people, just like the Nazi's who put Jew's in to ovens during WWII considered themselves 'good people.' They were all, "only doing their job." (This is being said *way too much* in America today).

Conversely, it is the individual mind which propels civilizations and governments to excel and reach new plateaus of human thought and reasoning. We can see this progression from time immemorial:

Hillary and the Village cabal she represents, want and need the Tribal-collective consciousness. It is upon this known base platform, that socialists understand that the cognitive performance of the masses. They know and understand that the Village mob will not be able to use the individual capacities to abstractly think through any problem, and will thereby; will not enjoy such 'abstract' reasoning capabilities. They fully understand that the 'mob' will only act through their first visceral instinct, without ever thinking of the larger issues at hand. Those in charge of the Krell Welfare Machine know, that the "Village" machine will instead devolve into a base 'ancient' "visceral" intellect—and thereby; can be easily led by Elite's into the Welfare State. This is why, Hillary and those are within the Krell Welfare Machine have a death-grip upon the Mass Media, and other social institutions, as they want to control not only content, but also presentation (or 'spin') to the masses.

We can see this in laboratory studies of animals. For instance, if you take a bb monkey, and you train him to like Fruit Loop cereal, to where he loves it (and they do); you can establish such a test.

In this test, a lab technician takes a box, that has three tubes at the top un-connected (in other words, with air between the tubes and the receiving boxes below them) to similarly aligned three boxes below with a little door on each bottom box. Note again, the tubes at the top are not connected to the boxes below, but if you take something in the top tube it will drop of course (because of gravity) to a corresponding box below, where the little BB monkey will open a box and collect his prize. When presented to the BB monkey, the lab technician takes the Fruit Loop, shows the BB monkey he has it, which gains the BB monkey's intense attention and focus—and then the lab technician takes the Fruit Loop and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

places it over one of the three tubes at the top of the experiment box and drops it.

Logical reasoning tells the monkey that the Fruit Loop will be in whichever box, 1, 2 or 3, that the Fruit Loop was dropped in, namely tube 1, 2 or 3. If the BB monkey sees the Lab Technician drop the Fruit Loop in Tube 2, he knows that it will wind up in Box 2, and he dutifully opens the door, and retains his prize and quickly eats it. (Positive reinforcement).

However, then the lab technician changes the experiment.

The Lab Technician then takes a connecting pipe, and changes the box so that the BB monkey can now see, that when the lab technician presents the Fruit Loop, he is dropping it in tube One, however; the CONNECTING PIPE is now guiding that Fruit Loop to end up in box three. No matter how many times the lab technician tries this experiment, the BB monkey cannot turn off his ancient mindset that tells him that if the lab technician drops the Fruit Loop into box one, that GRAVITY has nothing to do with it anymore because of the installation of the CONNECTING PIPE (which the monkey can readily see). Uncontrollably, the monkey is held hostage to his ancient mind and cannot make the connection about the pipe, so he always wrong. He continually is a slave to go to the numbered tube that the Fruit Loop was originally dropped in. If the lab technician drops it in one, the BB monkey will open box one—even though any small child would soon ‘get it’ and follow the concept of the CONNECTING TUBE and open box 3. The monkey however, thinks: 1.) See Fruit Loop Dropped in tube one. 2.) Gravity goes down. (The hell with that little adjoining pipe that joins tube one to tube three). Then 3.) My Fruit Loop has to be in box one!

It’s not.

Every time this experiment is done, the BB monkey goes through this!

Yet, again; the lab technician does a small change. He then takes the experiment and moves it horizontally so that now the experiment is level on the table and not going up and down where he can drop the Fruit Loop in the tube and not just let gravity let it fall into the adjoining box below. Now the Lab Technician must flick with his forefinger the Fruit Loop into the ‘top’ tubes (now horizontal) to get the Fruit Loop to get it to travel to the correct box (because gravity doesn’t work anymore with the experiment on its side).

Now he repeats the experiment with the BB monkey. The result? The BB monkey is no longer held slave to the idea of gravity. He ‘gets it’, the whole experiment. When you flick the Fruit Loop in any top tube—he correctly follows the CONNECTING TUPE to the correct box where he now knows the Fruit Loop will be. When you add a connecting pipe, tube 1 to box 3, he correctly follows his reward to the proper box 3.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

Stand the whole experiment back up so that gravity is added into the equation and the BB monkey reverts to his old ways and can't figure what is happening.

This is exactly what is happening to the American populace. When Fathers Rights groups inform society that "we have to control our own families with no outside control", they instantly revert to the Tribal or "Village" mindset: "But what about the man who beats his wife and kids?" They asked with great concern. "What about the woman??"

When like the BB monkey to try and abstractly reason with them, and you show them the massive facts and figures in regards to this subject (the adjoining tube in the lab experiment above) they will nod and agree about all the facts and figures (they'll agree the tube is there, just like the BB monkey knows its there) but when you come back to the premise: "Therefore; a man must control his own home." They "just can't get it." They just can't do the abstract reasoning in which civilization made 5,000 years ago. They are held hostage to the concept of indoctrination of which government and the Feminists have imposed upon the American mindset.

When you then, inform them that yes, in allowing men to control and rule in their own homes—again; they just can't 'get it'. They cannot follow the abstract reasoning that in allowing the 'danger' of a man to rule within his own home, creates social stability. Ancient societies 'got it' 5000 years ago...and all subsequent Western Nations did...up till about 70 years ago, when the American mindset was radically changed by Feminists, in collusion with the creation of a new Socialist form of American Government.

We can see the loss of this social stability in our schools, on our buses, in prisons, and in the massive compendium of facts and figures that show complete anarchy is raging within this village model—just because the Father cannot rule within his own home.

You show these people the massive war and conflagration which has transpired directly at the hands of Welfare, and they will nod in agreement. "Yup, the connecting pipe is there." They will earnestly tell you. But again; when you make the case that a Father must have the right to rule in his own home; their 'Tribal' and "Village" conditioned mindset instantly takes over: "But what about the father that beats his own wife and children?" they again revert to again and again.

We have to have the courage to incur those losses, of aberrant men, beating their wives and children because that 'evil' is at a far, far end of the Bell Curve. Out of a nation of 350 million people, a total of 1,215 children are killed by abuse a year. And that number is *dropping*. To be most succinct: we are sustaining a war, an outright conflagration to fight a problem—that really, statistically—never was there from the beginning!

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

When again, you present this idea to them, their faces go white with fear. They cannot make the abstract connection that when you do so, and allow men to have ultimate authority and control over their own homes, thereby; instantly pushing government forever from that venue—then, statistically, you have less death and murder and killings than if you allow the "Village" to intrude upon the home. When you show that it is *feminism* that is developing the crisis—again; they will rationally accede to the facts and figures which nationally show that this whole thing is being engineered and marketed to sustain the Welfare empire.

At no point, exactly like the BB monkey, can these people recognize the abstract reasoning of either bell curve or statistical analysis upon the reality of getting Government, and Feminists and other "opportunistic" industries out of the home—that from this the 'imagined' problem would in fact, drop and virtually evaporate! They cannot 'follow the pipe' of this form of abstract reasoning, that in allowing men to individually control and more importantly *protect* their own homes, wives, children and wealth, that in the palladium of families under such a sovereign construct, fair much better than those under the "In the Best Interests of the Child" "Village" construct.

This "Best Interests of the Child" "Village" construct has been responsible for more deaths and more pain and suffering than a world of abusive fathers in charge of their own homes ever could have inflicted. The Krell Welfare Machine which is exploded across the mindset of the masses everywhere by the mainstream media, is the 'gravity' that stops people from thinking rationally. Hillary, in her quest to save each and every individual child has killed tens of thousands, if not millions to realize her personal philosophies. When you point out to her and the collective masses that children are brought up best in households that contain their own biological fathers, they don't want to hear it. "I'm only doing my job," will come the refrain.

Hillary wants protection via Foster Homes and Mentoring (programs of surrogate fatherhood and family—definitive proof that their 'Village' doesn't work). These programs, when you look at them in light of the Fathers whom they are supposed to be protected from, are killing, wounding and debilitating more children and creating future social pathologies than in the families with Fathers they are supposed to be protected from!!! Yet again, bring the facts and figures (the CONNECTING PIPE) to the recognition of the masses, and their eyes will dully glaze over. "We must save the children" they respond dully in the predictable visceral feminist Mantra.

Ms. Rodham Clinton and her "Village" cohorts use the mass media and the vehicle of extremism in which to present this mindset to the

## CHAPTER SEVEN

American public. Ms. Clinton and the media, impose their social programs by using the extreme cases from the bell curve upon any subject.

For those who don't know what a bell curve is, or do not understand its operation, simply, it is a graphical chart, or a visually graphed representation of any set or system. From any system, we can show in a bell curve, how it behaves. For instance, if you are having a concert and do a bell curve on those who like the concert compare to those who don't like the concert, you would get a bell curve that most certainly would look like a drawing of a wave in a box, with the majority of the wave, pushed to the right. This shows that out of all the people there, the greatest majority loved the concert. However, on both ends, you would see a very narrow amount of people of those who extremely hated and loved the concert, representing Ted Bundy on the left who hated the concert, and the Dead Head on the right, who loved it.

The Dead Head goes to all Grateful Dead concerts, as he is addicted to them, he travels the country and buys everything and anything in which to sustain his addiction. In fact, one time he got arrested in Minneapolis for stealing a sweater out of a K-Mart so that he could sell it and buy a ticket for the Grateful Dead concert there.

Ted Bundy on the other hand, hates all concerts. In fact, he only went to this one, because his wife Peg won tickets by trading the transmission in Ted's Dodge to a Grateful Dead roadie, whose 1964 Dodge Bus was stuck on the side of the road right in front of their house. So to avoid sex, Ted went as an unwilling companion to the concert, however; he did beat the hell out of the roadie in which to compensate for his trouble.

Now, the analysis in relation to the current subject is that most people, in making laws will look at this Bell Curve, will say: "Hey, wow! A lot of people love going to concerts, look at this bell curve! Gee, perhaps we should make laws encouraging concerts—because revenue goes up, and the most people there (90% of them) have a good, clean fun time—the greatest majority benefits!"

Hillary on the other hand, and her cohorts who control the media, want to maintain their monopoly on concerts, so what they will do in order to stop the other people from encouraging legislation that might favor more Grateful Dead concerts, they will begin an ad campaign, even have News stations which they control, do stories informing us all of the terrible plight of having concerts in town. They will do such things as show the trash, and fights, and other dastardly things which accompany these, what are no more than "Right Wing Conspiracy" group meetings.

In support of this, they will show Ted Bundy, (who only represented one out of the thousands in the concert) and will make pointed observations about him. That this is what is being brought into such concerts, and we don't want this element. They will then go to the other end, and show

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

the addicted Dead Head, and show make a large point how he stole that sweater from K-Mart and how this poor man is addicted to concerts.

"Save our families from Sweater Thieves!" will come the headlines. "This child is cold because of no sweater" will rage the TV ads. "Not one more sweater" will contemplate the billboards plastered across the countryside. Soon, Mary Sue, a spinster who again, is way on one side of the Bell Curve will write Hillary, informing her how on this night, she lost a sweater and how her son was addicted to Grateful Dead concerts. Hillary along with her media buddies will go to this poor spinster's home and film several tales and highlighted stories about her missing sweater.

CBS will host "The Missing Spinsters Sweater: 'The Real Story'".

Soon, anyone but borrowing a sweater has to have three forms of ID. If they don't have an ID, they are quickly wrestled to the ground and filmed for the 10 O'Clock news.

This just isn't insanity I'm speaking of here, it is a cold, meticulously planned altruistic attack in benefit of those socialists who want something from us all. To do this they use the exact procedures (and more) that I've represented here. Soon, the incessant media has made this such an issue that the society begins to inculcate and 'watch' for markers that Hillary and her cohorts want monitored. Soon this old Spinster just isn't on TV anymore, she is in front of Congress passing legislation, now she has a battery of "statistic's" with her, and several watch groups and splinter groups are calling for legislation.

No one during all the many months or years this is going on, from the mass majority is noting: "But wait a minute; the Bell Curve shows that this *rarely* happens, and if it does, it is the exception and not the rule." No one is saying: "We shouldn't even be passing legislation!...how did *you* get here??" No one even notices: "If we enter this area we will be violating the Constitution, the majority of people have a right to go to concerts!" No...instead everyone just 'wink's' at each other, and they all just "go-along-to-get-along," to justify their existence. Then in the next breath they hire 100,000 more police for our nations streets....

No one notices anything...the Krell Welfare Machine just clicks on and collects the power for Hillary and those like her who feed off that perverse power. The old spinster who used to work at Aton's Department store now heads up her own state funded Feminist Sweater Collective, where she once made \$11 dollars an hour with little or no benefits, now she has a \$50,000 a year job, and a dozen Female workers under her avidly and expertly pushing paperwork to fight this new 'sweater' menace to society. Because *now* she's part of the machine.

The masses are thusly led by the nose, and at no point can they, as the masses, use abstract reasoning. Those individuals, who do—are quickly sequestered and are either directly attacked or are outright ignored. The



## CHAPTER SEVEN

old-Spinner however; is now meeting with the president to talk about the scourge of Grateful Dead concerts, fighting and sweater stealing and "Deadhead" addiction. From this, programs on Dead Head addiction are created...taxes are raised. Hillary is going on tour to 'raise consciousness' or on a 'fact finding mission' to make citizens aware of the dangers of Rock Concerts...soon Feminist Deadhead centers pop up in every town where free sweaters are handed out, wiping out most free market sweater companies in the U.S. Anything happens in regards to this issue, a Feminist machine gears up and calls its network, who are on the inside track to the media, both local and national. All 'expert' opinion come from this monolith of special interests. If you are not with these special interests, Rodney at CBS is telling you, that your views "Are not news."

This is exactly how the Nazi's created animals out of the Jews for an all too willing Nazi plebiscite who saw them in theatres groveling in the dirt and *wanted* to believe all Jews were animals because that was the national mindset. These propaganda films affirmed to that populace that the Jews are nothing more than inferior animals, and that Germany is doing them a service in eradicating them. The mob mind was thereby justified and affirmed.

Indeed, Hillary and her "Village" people have created a similar "bogeyman" within the American father. They have presented the same mindless propaganda flotsam as the Nazi's did in their mainstream media. Upon any occurrence happening in the household, the Father is to blame. Upon just a suggestion of that blame, the Krell Welfare Machine winds up, and backed by facts and figures of its own creation, it tears apart, vilifies, and if need be; criminalize's the father. This has gone beyond just mere reporting of the facts, it now has become a religious doctrine that is willingly supplanted and documented week after week within our media. The mainstream news media has become the feminists publicist...they would have never gotten where they are, without that help.

In establishing their Krell Welfare Machine from the rare exceptions contained by each end of the Bell Curve, the Elite regime has now have moved their draconian laws inward to the majority. Now where the law originally went after "only" those who savagely beat their wives and children who were at the end of the bell curve, and in who really abused their homes and families, Hillary has 'broadened' the crimes to all occurrences. The Krell machine no longer hunts those at the ends of the bell curve, they are now hunting the whole curve in its *entirety*. Silence is now abuse. Raising your voice is now abuse. Being aggressive is now abuse. Being dominant *if you're male*, is abuse. Keeping your own money, is now abuse. Watching TV is abuse. Essentially, via the Krell machine, they have made everything a crime—and the male the main culprit of these ever broadening "crimes.". (If a women does these *same*

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

*exact things*, she's expressing her individuality...she is affirming her right to be equal...)

Listen how Hillary describe her own father and how he disciplined his own family:

"My father, not one to spare the rod, articulated and emphasized his expectations for us. He told us repeatedly that he would always love us but would not always like what we did. We used to test him by asking if he would love us if we murdered someone. He would replay that he would never stop loving us but would be deeply disappointed and hurt by what we had done. Occasionally he got carried away when disciplining us, yelling louder or using more physical punishment, especially with my brothers, than I thought was fair or necessary." [*It Takes a Village*, pp. 155-156.]

This may appear quaint in some third-party way, but realize under the broad brush which she created Hillary along with her Feminist partners have changed the rules within the home, presently any man doing the exact same disciplining that Mr. Rodham distributed throughout his family in the 1950s, would possibly, and most likely now, be imprisoned. Hillary and her brothers under these circumstances, would probably have been taken from their own home, and most probably; what could have had long-term effects on that family to where—she and the other children—could have been destroyed for life. They would have entered the mindless rolls of the eternal masses of young children whom are not expected to survive the Krell Welfare Machine that she built, and most of whom most likely won't. By the fate of God and 25 to 35 years, Ms. Clinton may have been one of the mindless masses silently being destroyed within the safety of her Krell Welfare Machine, in some inner city, with children embroiled in crime and government services...instead of Lawyer and wife to the President of the United States.

The masses have willingly gone along with the broad spectrum of feminist sophistries, due to the fact that like the Germans, and like the BB monkeys, they cannot apply abstract reasoning into this equation. Like the BB monkey, they cannot make the connection that eradication of the Father's rule and authority within the home, (what the upper-class Rodham's apparently enjoyed), is the cause of massive debt spending, and is the direct link to a multitude of profligate social pathologies, all which must be attended to, by an ever growing Krell machine-work. (BB Monkeys' = Scientific American's Frontiers (Alan Alda, PBS)

The "Village" like the Nazi's of WWII clearly recognizes that social change will *not* come from the masses, it will not come from elite Legislation, and it will not come by proper operation of our courts, which are complicit criminals in this illegal field of endeavor of criminalizing the

## CHAPTER SEVEN

American male. The abstract reasoning capability of the public masses are too well entrenched to the propaganda machine of this Krell Welfare Machine, they will reason only with what they are presented with by the elite regime. Books such as this, will never be read within the mainstream field of their observation. Because of this, and these facts, the continued anarchy due to the constant conditioning of social pathologies raging about them is creating even more anarchy and uneasiness. The mainstream media will not touch the contents of this book or bring up to the field of public scrutiny these contents, for to do so is directly challenging the breadth and power of the machine itself.

Hillary and the cabal of her "Village" cohorts will not allow these things to happen. Just like Chastity Bono did not let audiences cheer at the vicious murder of a homosexual character portrayed on a movie screen, and let that natural response from the audience occur. Under this doctrine, no longer do you have independent thoughts—you only are allowed those observations politically allowed by the Feminist elite regime.

Thereby; the masses; have been well conditioned and programmed only to see the male as a harbor of abuse and beating, because this is what they are supposed to see. This not only refutes documented history, but present realities. When one man, beats and kills a child, all men are now accused by default, because the way the mainstream couches and spins such information in its presentation to the public.

Because of this, and because of the fact that the past few generations have had less than rigorous education's, the capability of abstract reasoning is lost to them. They cannot see, that the outright attack against the American male is not about abuse, they like the BB monkey, have to comprehend another set of analysis beyond the first scalar fact, they have to go beyond their initial set of reasoning's, into the more sublime causal effects about abuse, its relationship to the greater society, and its implications on the form of government in which we have. Factually, we cannot have a free and independent form of American government while the construct of Socialism applied to every individual household.

"No, my countrymen, shut your ears against this unhallowed language. Shut your hears against the poison which it conveys; the kindred blood which flows in the veins of American citizens the mingled blood which the have shed in defense of their sacred rights, consecrate their Union, and excite horror at the idea of their becoming aliens, rivals, enemies. And if novelties are to be shunned, believe me, the most alarming of all novelties, the most wild of all projects, the most rash of all attempts, is that of rendering us in pieces, in order to preserve our liberties and promote our happiness. But why is the experiment of an extended republic to be rejected, merely because it may comprise what is new? It is not the glory of the people of American, that whilst they have paid a decent regard to the opinions of former times and other nations, they have not suf-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ferred blind veneration for antiquity, for custom, or for names, to overrule the suggestions of their own good sense, the knowledge of their own situation, and the lessons of their own experience? To this manly spirit, posterity will be indebted for the possession, and the work for the example, of the numerous innovations displayed on the American theatre, in favor of private rights and public happiness." [*The Federalist Papers*, No. 14, Madison.]

The good sense Madison speaks of here, has been obfuscated by Hillary and her Krell Welfare Machine. Now, everyone suspects the worst from individual men, even though the basic cell of a free society is the building blocks of the main body politic, which we are missing due to the imposed and invented destruction of the Krell "Village" machine-work. Private rights equaled public happiness in the era of independent men and families. We have now by mass authority circumspected by the Krell machine work, abrogated such private authority and replaced it with the 'safety' within the "Village" compromised the 'rights of the many,' and shared 'mutual obligations' which can instantly intrude into a man's home and dictate to him how he will run his family, what modes of discipline are proper and which are not, how to dress his children, what he can or cannot say to his own children or wife, and how much he will pay for their maintenance, and how he will ultimately educate them. Again, this has usurped the authority of the father within his own home, the cell of sovereign liberty.

This is why the Krell Welfare Machine that Hillary maintains is in fact a cancer, and thereby, from the destruction of each cell of each sovereign household, you have what amounts to a cancer upon the freedom of the body of mankind.

Hillary along with the Legislators and Judges whom impose this Autocratic Despotism against the father and home speak of lofty goals, ideals and moralities; all of course which take the highest abstract reasoning to understand. Listen to the slight of hand analysis which directly controverts our form of American governance:

"Freedom is s tenable objective only for responsible individuals. We do not believe in freedom for madmen or children....paternalism is incapable for those whom we designate as not responsible.

Children offer a more difficult case. The ultimate operative unit in our society is the family, not the individual." [*Capitalism and Freedom*, by Milton Freedman, ©1962, University of Chicago Press, p. 33.]

This of course, was the analysis of our Founding Fathers...for it directly sustains their assertion, given within the intent and embodiment of the Federalist and Anti-Federalist Papers and with John Winthrop's Colonial idea that we be a nation upon a hill for all to see.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

"Let them speak for themselves. This one tells us that the proposed Constitution ought to be rejected, because it is not a confederation of the States, but a government over individuals. Another admits that it ought to be a government over individuals to a certain extent, but by no means to the extent proposed. A third does not object to the government over individuals, or to the extent proposed, but to the want of a bill of rights. A fourth concurs in the absolute necessity of a bill of rights, but contends that it ought to be declaratory, not of the personal rights of individuals, but of the rights reserved to the States in their political capacity..." [*The Federalist Papers*, No. 38, Madison]

Yet the flat affirmation given by Madison in Federalist No. 14 clearly constructs this conundrum by declaring that [we will have our rights] "in favor of **private rights** and public happiness." He was, along with the rest of the Founding Fathers, were crucially aware that the private, individual rights, clearly had a direct causal relationship to public happiness through the creation of independent families. But under the new present construct of the Krell Welfare Machine which Hillary supports, clearly—the public is not happy, nor can they be in the present state of anarchy which has now been devolved upon them.

Our newspapers scream this anarchy from the front Headlines of our morning papers. "PATAKI ABUSES SCHOOL CHILDREN" [Times or Post week of Jan 23?], "Eight punks set upon and killed a teen who was...GOOD AS GOLD" "Michael Bennet, 12 was stabbed to death after playing in a school basketball game." [New York Daily News, Friday, January 29<sup>th</sup>, 1999 p. 1 Headline]; Lt. Gov., Hubby Split Up—2 to seek divorce After domestic dispute [NY Daily News, Friday, January 29, 1999 p. 3]; Clinton's Message to Women, 'Clinton ripped [Jane Doe No. 5's] clothes and bit her lip,' by Nat Hentoff [The Village Voice, January 26, 1999. P30.]

All this planned propaganda is hitting their mark. It is pushing the mass populace to viscerally act upon any incident that happens at the end of the Bell Curves, and to attack their sensibilities so that they cannot think in more abstract terms in order to analyze what is really going on, or even to research the intrinsic causal factors for such occurrences. These few incidents are normally at the end of the Bell Curve in regards to the population, however; because of the virulent intensity of such things happening (all being driven by the Welfare engine which is responsible for these pathologies), this of course makes the public response even more pronounced, even more visceral—to where in the final analysis, we have a total disparity between the various camps trying to solve these issues.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

- **THE DISCIPLINE OF ABSTRACT REASONING**
- **APPLICATION TO FATHERS RIGHTS ISSUES**
- **CREATION OF THE 100<sup>TH</sup> MONKEY**

The Fathers Rights community must become very knowledgeable to the issues in which effect them. They must "know their product." They must do this not only to coalesce the Fathers Rights movement as was stated previously in Chapter 2, but they must have command of the domain of facts and figures and laws so that they can raise themselves out of poverty, bondage and slavery.

This of course, means that they must develop the empirical discipline of abstract reasoning. This discipline of the ability to abstract reasoning, will spillover to the general public. One of the main goals of this book has been to give a voice to all Fathers Rights advocates of every kind, and also to make men stand up and assume their proper place in the home and family. This requires not being told or commanded by an outside influence, when your authority must reign supreme within your own home. In doing this, you imbue not only your intelligence and heritage upon your own home, but you throw out the "Village" tribal model which, is a much more debilitating influence on your home or family, than what most men can inflict upon their families. Again, there will be some men that will abuse this authority, but under discipline of abstract reasoning, we know and understand that, they are a rare occurrence on one end of the Bell Curve—and are not the mainstream occurrence.

Understanding this, and knowing the facts, figures and laws in regards to this issue, we can annihilate the "Village" model...not only in intellect, not only in morality, but also by the facts and figures which will accompany the implementation of Patriarchy. This is Hillary's and the Feminists greatest fear. That the populace of this nation, might actually revert again to the Law of Patriarchy...its a valid fear...because what we are addressing, is two diametrically opposed systems, one based upon Liberty and success, the other based on Socialism and Cooperative distribution of wealth. The present Feminist model which has been unlawfully imposed, and implemented against unsuspecting Nation, is a system based on slavery, and greed of special interests.

They fully recognize, that reimplementaion of Patriarchy will quickly decimate the Welfare Village Superstructure that will soon run out of 'product' when children start stopping becoming criminals, or victims, and when drug usage, gang affiliation, teenage pregnancy, suicide, and a host of other social pathologies—exponentially drop or disappear outright as homes once again become sovereign, and resilient. This is their worst

## CHAPTER SEVEN

fear: that someone or something might actually solve the imagined ‘problems’ within the family. This, in that light; is absolutely unacceptable because of the fact that Hillary and her cabal has captured; and now expects to harvest the wealth from many more generations of Families.

This again, proves that there is an outright war against these two disparate systems of governance. The Krell Welfare Machine will resist being turned off at every instance. Again, lying, cheating or anything that can undermine patriarchy will be used, especially in the media, the feminists main weapon.

This is why the Fathers Rights movement is so important. When a nation of Fathers can correctly articulate pretended crimes and accusations made my ex-wives, and stop funding District Attorney’s through "Child Support," this insanity will quickly stop. Once Fathers can ‘connect the dots’ for the normal layman, and artfully explain the reasons why he cannot ‘Pay Child Support’ or "Give up Custody", or even why he is going to spank his own children in the middle of the Mall—then others will know he is right and a new era of sovereignty will start to return to the home. Many of the disasters within America will cease to exist.

Fathers presently have no voice. There is no government Representative I know of either in the State Legislature’s or the Federal Legislature which claim’s to either be a Patriarch, or will uphold the laws and tenant’s of Patriarchy. You could find members within these institutions of power that would happily defend the rights of child sodomizers (MBLA), or the gay and lesbian coalitions than you could ever find anyone who would merely support Fatherhood. (And some wonder why this nation is so screwed up...)

For instance, when some people approach me with disdain and tell me I ‘must’ pay child support, I demand from them why?

Their usual answer is because they (society) doesn’t want to be burdened with it.

I respond with: "Would you have the Jews of WWII, subsidize their own destruction? Would you allow the Germans to compel them to pay for the ovens that later will consume them?"

"No." They usually meekly respond.

"Then why must I subsidize my own destruction?" I ask them. Now they are no longer thinking viscerally, now I’ve presented them with a viable abstract reason as to ‘why’ Fathers shouldn’t pay. They cannot refute this argument, because they know it is true; especially in the light of a system of government and Jurisprudence that is supposedly done only through "consent of the governed." We as Fathers, must understand the maxim of law, that our children follow OUR condition, and NOT government; and we must do everything to preserve the best merits of who we are. This means protecting property. For doing that one thing,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

allows this nation to ascend, and it allows our own families to keep strong and thereby add to our own experience and thereby help civilized society ascend.

This form of thinking must also be forcibly be presented to the "Judges" whom impose this despotism against Fathers. They must be held to *their own maxims of law* which mandate these functions.

Again, if others continue with other pedantic arguments, bring this other incontrovertible abstract point before them:

"You state that I 'must' Pay Child Support, which I categorically refuse to do."...I begin.

"Yes," is their normal reply.

"You don't want to have your taxes, or society to be burdened by my child being on Welfare, correct?"

They will again concur.

"Well, am I not a taxpayer? Haven't I already paid into this same exact system that you have also paid into? Isn't it a fact that I am being asked to doubly pay for something to which you take offense of paying once into?!? In fact, isn't your 'request' that I pay once again in direct violation of all constitutions both State and Federal in that it forces me into Double Jeopardy?!?"

This to date has brought only silence from the contemporaries who have been presented with such abstract reasoning. Again, this form of being forced to pay taxes which supports Welfare, and then; they steal your child and mandate how it will be brought up, and they again come after you a second time and demand you pay again! For having your own child stolen from you, and for having it brought up in a criminal household with 'unclean hands'—a Welfare household which neither you nor society believes in! This categorically goes against the "Double Jeopardy" clause of the fifth amendment, and Judges, Legislatures and District Attorneys know this. There defense is an eloquent disjointed defense, which goes again to the Moss v. Moss decision in California: that it is a "special debt" and not a normal debt already paid for by taxes... In other words, they are lying.

It is a circular argument that couldn't hold up in any normal court other than the 'martial law' 'admiralty' or 'undefined' war courts that we presently suffer through. Take this material fact to any court out of the United States and D.A.'s would lose every time. Take this "legal" reasoning in front of a class of fifth graders, per se—and even they would blow it out of the water—naming what these present courts do as patently criminal.

The DA's and Judges know this. And they *know* they must keep this *Alice in Wonderland* "legal" reasoning within the contemporary aus-



## CHAPTER SEVEN

pices of the present corrupt judiciary where it is the only place where it can find any semblance of being upheld.

Nonetheless, the ability to argue abstractly, will very quickly raise the consciousness of the American society, once that happens—this evil system will most certainly collapse.

There is a learning set that relates to this, something called the 100<sup>th</sup> monkey. What this relates to is a island of monkey's in the Caribbean that is normally a study reserve for psychologists, anthropologists, and other scientific personnel who study these monkeys stranded on this island. What they saw was a peculiar transference of learning, something that was suggested in the movie, *2001 A Space Odyssey* written by Arther C. Clark and directed by Stanley Kubrick. What this was is that the psychologists noted that in presenting a monkey and training it, then releasing it to the other monkeys; the special learned skills were not picked up by the populace of the monkeys. Monkey after monkey would try and failed the learned procedure...

Then, miraculously, the 100<sup>th</sup> monkey would 'get it'...

Suddenly, all the other monkey's would be seen doing the same learned response throughout that society. It was a threshold response, once the first 100th monkey learned it, it was quickly distributed throughout the rest of the populace somehow.

This is what will occur when the Fathers Rights movement "learns its product" and more importantly, understands the importance of abstract reasoning. Right now the public is acting viscerally, because the government and media is intentionally keeping them in the dark through propaganda, which fuels their visceral, non-intellectual *Mobocracy*. In speaking with normal individuals about this, it is amazing seeing the shift in their mind set, after speaking with them, they fully understand, the position I have taken is eminently legal, and they begin to see the Judges, DA's and the Lawyers as the real criminals, which they are.

For instance, I spoke to a fellow individual while working on a construction site. I was speaking to him about the perversions of this system, and then I said, I would rather give my money to MBLA (The Man Boy Love Association—a gay pedophile organization, otherwise known as MAMBLA), rather than pay Child Support.

This person was just about to become a Butte County Sheriff's bailiff within the local court system, and he went absolutely ballistic after I said this, yelling: "How could you be so crude!! MAMBLA rapes little boys and girls! Child Support just supports your own kid!!!"

I let him vent, then, when he was quiet I brought him into the realm of abstract reasoning.

I said, "Listen, paying Child Support only explodes the Single Mother Household's, and this screwed up Welfare system which hurts us all. It

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

factually is responsible for the creation of the pervers that inhabit MAMBLA." I then informed him of the facts and figures, such that 80% of all sexual predators come from 'Female Dominated Household's' with a strong female dominating figure within the home. Again, I told him fact after fact—of the social pathology (See the Fathers Rights Fact Sheet in Appendix B) in which destroyed the children and led to sexual perversion. Most of the MBLA organization was getting their members statistically from Single Female Headed Household's...

"These reasons," I said, "clearly show that if I give my money to support Child Support, I'm going to statistically supply that organization with the creation of pervers that come from Single Female Headed Household's—where the majority of them come! If, however; I give to MBLA, I stop the 80% of pervers from being created in the first place! Then MBLA dies out because their base input of pervers isn't there anymore because I haven't supported their creation! Thereby their membership drops."

He was stupefied into silence. I then told him: "And one last thing, MBLA can be defeated, no matter how much money I give them, but if I give money into Child Support, it just goes into government which grows exponentially larger and larger and creates a monster within our own government that because of this wealth, which cannot be defeated. I'd rather give my money to the smallest monster MBLA which I can defeat."

He knew I was right and very politely nodded his head in agreement.

If the Fathers Rights movement establishes a grassroots intellectual base that is able to abstractly conceptualize the perversion in which government supplies to the public via the propaganda machine of the media—we will incur the exact paradigm of the 100<sup>th</sup> monkey. At some point (and we are very close to that point now) their system will break, as the 100<sup>th</sup> monkey will recognize what they are implementing is pure despotism in direct contravention to this form of government. Under this scenario, the impending collapse of the system and all those within it, will occur just like in *Forbidden Planet*, it will happen overnight.

Talk about extremism and why 'save the children' attacks everyone. Examples.

Our system of government links into the home and family.

---

## CHAPTER EIGHT

---

*"I don't think you can make a lawyer honest by an act of legislation. You've got to work on his conscience. And his lack of conscience is what makes him a lawyer." --Will Rogers (1879-1935)*

### WHAT FATHERS SHOULD DO

---

Sometime in 1998, I went into a bar I hadn't been in for a long time and met a long time acquaintance there named Steve, who worked there as a bartender. He was rather desolate, when I walked in, he immediately came to me and began telling me a harrowing tale to me. I noticed his demeanor and asked him what was wrong. He seemed ruffled, scared. He then opened up to me.

He told me that the local District Attorney was after him for Child Support after he had a one-night stand with a lady that he had previously met in that same bar. He said that his 'blood test' had just come back earlier that day, and luckily, it turned out negative. He was drained by the whole experience which took months and thousands of dollars, and he was white as a sheet when I spoke with him in fact, and he said that he barely escaped "by the skin of his teeth."

He was right. Most men placed into such an untenable situation are directly attacked by the District Attorney and admonished by 'visceral' thinking citizens that "if you had sex and get the girl pregnant—you must pay!" This mindset existed in England in the 14<sup>th</sup> century, and was soon-thereafter dropped because all it did was make men run away. It didn't work then, it will never work today.

Clearly, people such of this cannot think abstractly, for when you ask them how this effects women getting pregnancy, they will reluctantly admit that it has exploded such illegitimate births, and thereby; holding the male responsible really isn't the way for society to prohibit such births. When you again ask them to think abstractly and you ask them how this solves the problem of errant woman who intentionally go out and have one-night stands in order to get pregnant, again; these dull thinking people have no answer—because the answer is obvious—it factually in no way does it address the malevolent women who intentionally uses 'any man' in order to get pregnant. When you again; ask these people what would happen if you stopped 99.9% of the men from having any type of one night stands, would the remaining 1% still get the same amount of girls pregnant? The answer is an obvious yes. It only takes one bull to impregnate a heard of cattle, and many of these women, there aren't clear estimates; *intentionally* get pregnant so they can collect Welfare or at minimum, instantly obtain a subsidy.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

So clearly, holding the man responsible for pregnancy is a false doctrine which hasn't worked, has never worked throughout history, and never will work throughout the present or future history of mankind.

Therefore, we must again hold the 'only' the woman responsible (for her own body, for her own sexual freedom) for such pregnancies, and miraculously such unwanted or unplanned pregnancies instantly disappear. Cite these facts to those individuals who mistakenly hold only men accountable for such births—and you get very silent people—because their whole mindset is flawed. Again, what they are espousing is classical Radical Feminist mantra. It doesn't work, it has never worked throughout history, it never will work *no matter how much money any society can throw into it*. But again, the proof of this whole book is that the present feminist system is completely flawed and it doesn't work, and must categorically be not only abandoned, but outright fought against; resisted at every level of society. Simply put, we must rediscover the obvious and re-implement Patriarchy throughout this nation, either by force or outright war if need be. For we are addressing the fundamental configuration of governance within this society.

Both laws were evident violation of natural liberty, and therefore unjust. It is in the interests of every society that things of this kind should never be forced or obstructed. The man who employs either his labor or his stock in a greater variety of ways than his situation renders necessary can never hurt his neighbor...He may hurt himself, and generally does so...but the law ought always to trust people with the care of their own interest, as in their local situations they must generally be able to Judge better of it than the Legislature can do." [*Wealth of Nations*, Adam Smith, p. 30.]

This concept has echoed throughout not only American history, but the whole history of Western civilization. It has only been in recent times when this foundational concept has been lost to us.

"Every American ought to have the right to be treated as he would wish to be treated, as one would wish his children to be treated. This is not the case." [Television address on Civil Rights, after the registration of two negroes, at the university of Alabama. (June 11, 1963)] [Bartlett's Familiar Quotations, by John Bartlett, Justin Kaplan, General Editor, @1982; Little, Brown and Company, Boston Toronto, London, ISBN 0-316-088277-5; p. 742.]

"What you do not want done to yourself, do not do to others." 15:23 [p. 61]

## CHAPTER EIGHT

"No one ought to harm another in his life, health, liberty, or possessions. [*Second Treatise on Government* (Indianapolis, Ind.: Hackett Publishing Co., 1980) p. 9

We must again remember that with freedom, comes an attendant responsibility. Presently, feminists who have demanded, and in turn received so much freedom, share none of the responsibilities. In fact, they have developed into a gender, a separate class of people with "Super-Rights." They can commit crimes, even murder—and they do not have to pay the price for their crimes. Of course this is not only anti-American and consummately unlawful, it is illogical as well. Yet, this is the present unjust system that has been implemented through radical feminism, and presently this whole nation is suffering because of this.

In talking with my bartender friend Steve, I found that everything he did was exactly the wrong thing and conversely, it was the perfect thing for the DA and the County in which was actively trying to destroy him. Like most men, he got a lawyer. He dutifully took blood tests. He paid large sums of money. He said the right things about taking 'responsibility'...he put his life in jeopardy because that is what Hillary and her "Village" have inculcated into men over the past half-century. That they should give up everything, and willingly fall on their sword and civilly kill themselves so that the "Village" can accrue the benefits from his, and most like his own child's impending destruction...just because some criminal female wants the safety, security and comfort of being 10 to 20 years on Welfare. Again, these women are *knowingly* accessing the Hillary's Welfare machine for instant gratification, and the result is that the machine instantly destroys another human being: Steve...the father.

During this time period I was working on another book called *American Thesis*—which I was just about a third the way through. I recognized that that book had to be put on hold and that this book *Suffering Patriarchy* had to be pushed to the forefront and completed as soon as possible, in order to save good people like Steve, who were just trying to do the right thing, but were being led down a rosy path to personal destruction by the present 'system.' Hopefully this book gives such effective answers in order to help him and those Fathers like him.

The things the District Attorney was trying to do to Steve, and the things the DA's across this nation do to Fathers has *nothing* to do with law, and everything to do, with *fraud*, *theft*, and most importantly: *slavery*. Steve, like so many fathers before him, are willingly *consenting* to be destroyed, because men, for the greatest part, want to try and do the right and moral thing. They go along with this system, because factually; there is nothing else they can do. They 'think' they are dealing with a legal system when in fact they are dealing something more akin to a corporate business deal. The system is designed to destroy men,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

children and families all under the guise of 'law.' There is no other redress by or from the current system in which Judges, DA's, State Legislatures, Congress and the Lawyers have designed. Hillary, and many DA's and Judges have taken advantage of fathers willing to be fair and honorable, and who 'try' and do the right thing; and by this; they have build this ruthless Welfare machine which has destroyed generations of people and which has harvested Trillions of dollars in the wake of all this war and destruction.. This Welfare machine winds up destroying them, their families and their future; and they don't even know its happening. But those like Hillary, most certainly do—and they are literally banking on how fathers will react.

## RECOMMENDATIONS FOR SINGLE MEN NOT MARRIED

---

1. Recognize who you are and what your duties are. First, if you have sex with a woman in a one night stand, make it understood that this is for a one-night stand only, or secondly, that if you are engaging in a long term relationship (if in fact, you are) and that you do not want children tell her this. This is fair notice. You can say this anyway you can...in any manner...just say it or do it. Hell, if you want to tape record it, do it—but any type of notice is fair enough. "Let's party," should be sufficient.

**Reason:** If at any point in time you get into court over this, an affirmative defense that you gave this fair notice, and she understood what was happening and this gives basis for a contract. The government then has to prove that it has the right to add to that contract which it cannot do because of Constitutional restrictions. (This comes under the *Slaughterhouse* cases—and we are speaking as to a rats nest here, and trust me; they'll want to avoid this indomitable question.) Therefore, any responsibility for the pregnancy ultimately falls on the women, which it already is supposed to, but the courts don't recognize this. Bringing this issue up will make life difficult for many, many, many courts. Your job is, to fight your enemies, the D.A., Family Court, the Judge and everyone involved in this are your enemies. If you give your money to them, you will most certainly destroy yourself, other fathers, and probably your child, (not to mention society itself, who ultimately winds up funding these sophistries) and many others who will suffer from the pathology this system breeds. Not only that, you will be empowering the enemy, which have become the DA's, courts and State governments, *all who profit by and from your destruction.*

2. If the District Attorney sends you anything in the mail, REFUSE IT. Do not open the envelope. Write on the envelope clearly, WRONG VENUE, WRONG JURISDICTION...and send it back. This is legal for anyone to do under the Uniform Commercial Code, (or UCC) 1-

## CHAPTER EIGHT

207: REFUSAL FOR CAUSE WITHOUT DISHONOR. If you do open it, place on it "OPENED BY MISTAKE, and then do the same exact thing above, return it to the District Attorney.

**Reason:** In Legal procedure, your enemy; the District Attorney is trying to stop you from protecting yourself. He wants you to answer his letter, or to respond to it in order so you submit to his venue and jurisdiction. Ergo: YOU ARE VOLUNTEERING TO BE DESTROYED BY OPENING AND ANSWERING THIS MAIL SUPPOSEDLY ADDRESSED TO YOU. This is HIS notice to you. When you answer as such, you enter his venue and jurisdiction, and no Father can enter these corrupt courts. These are courts of INQUISITION. They are only there to steal and destroy from you, then to allow her Super-Rights. (The court for instance will pay her attorney representation, they will start special programs for her, all Carte Blanche). Just think of this as a tennis game, He sends something to you, and then you send it back, now—under law, since you have refused his ‘Military’ or ‘Undefined’ Jurisdiction, he must lawfully **serve** you under law. This must be done by a proper summons, and proper service. He doesn’t want to use lawful process, because that will personally jeopardize him, and he may lose his own property over this. They never use the law, because that binds them and places them into jeopardy. They’d just rather stick to the ‘business deal’ which they are fraudulently inducing you into.

A proper summons must have these following things to be legal.

- Signature of the Judge
- Signature of the Clerk of the Court
- Seal of the Court attached thereto.
- Proper names of the parties (NOT ALL IN CAPITALS!!! This is a fictitious ‘artificial’ name representing either a corporation or a 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment slave or ‘artificial’ citizen. The courts feel they can do anything to such an artificial entity, because those make-believe citizens have ‘privileges’ and no natural ‘constitutional’ birthrights as united States of America Citizens do.) If there is no proper name, you must refuse it, when the ‘server’ hands you it (presentment) you read it, then hand it back as refused—turn around and walk away. Never accept it again, never listen to the person serving again—just leave. You will soon be writing the District Attorney a Bill of Particulars. These are your rights under law. If the server drops it on the ground, all the better, do not touch it, you will address the improper service in the Bill of Particulars. Let it rot where it sits.

3. Do a Bill of Particulars and present that document to the District Attorney. This is your right. He, under your state constitution and the National constitution *must answer the Bill of Particulars!* All the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Bill of Particulars is going to ask him is simply: what is the nature and cause of the accusation before you, who are the persons bringing the action, what is their nature and character as parties, what venue is he coming at you under, and what jurisdiction does he claim?

- You must have a server, serve this document to the District Attorney. This person must be ‘an disinterested third party’ or it can be a paid server, or even the Sheriff. Make sure all copies are stamped as received and initialed by the receiving clerk. Do not serve the Judge—we aren’t even procedurally there yet.
  - Again, do not serve any copies to the court. They are not within this process.
  - The District Attorney must answer this document within the correct time period...if he doesn’t, then; factually he has no case—he has defaulted.
  - In the Bill of Particulars he must answer 14 questions, all which question him and the accusatory instrument, the nature and cause of the action, the venue, the jurisdiction and the nature and character of all parties involved. Because the DA is working in an ‘undefined manner’ many of these are unlawful, what many people consider "organized crime" tribunals, he will not answer the Bill of Particulars, informing you of these simple things. If he in fact, has a real case, (such as if you murdered somebody) it would take him 10 minutes to respond to these questions. But because he is coming after you for a ‘victimless’ crime (no crime as of yet has been committed) because the crimes are *malum prohibitum*, he factually has no case, what he is waiting for YOU to do is to ‘jump into the frying pan’. He wants you to answer, or to get into court and plead, for you to give your name to the court, or something that will silently and surreptitiously ‘contract’ you with the court. Your job is to refuse his fraud, and bring him into law. He will *not* like what you are doing, and will try and have the court force you to ‘join’ with him. YOU WILL NOT.
4. The court will want you to go to all proceedings. If you know there is an arraignment against you on April 15<sup>th</sup>, 2000 for instance, go to it. If they give you a ‘Commissioner’ REFUSE HIM CATEGORICALLY, this is a make-believe "Judge" and he is there to NOT ACT UNDER LAW. When you accept him, you are accepting non-law. (You are essentially contracting and ‘allowing’ an arbitrator otherwise known as a ‘business deal’).



## CHAPTER EIGHT

- When the court calls your name, stand up and say "For the record, I am not the party you seek in this matter." (Because the name THEY address is all in Capital Letters)
- When the Judge starts asking you things like "What do you mean? Aren't you Joe Smith??" Answer: "I have in the first instance of this matter timely served upon the District Attorney a Bill of Particulars. He has not answered my Bill of Particulars. I am ignorant of the nature and cause of the action before me. I stand on my paperwork and further, Affiant Sayeth Not. **Now** show the Judge the proof of service stamped copy of the Bill of Particulars (hand it to the bailiff).
- The Judge will not like this, he will want you to plead. Your duty is to keep on saying: "Your honor—I respectfully decline any offer by you. I will not engage with this tribunal, I do not join. I stand on my Bill of Particulars." **DO NOT PLEAD!**
- The Judge will further harass you—just keep repeating "I stand on my Bill of Particulars." Be respectful and parry any thing he might want to do.
- When he knows that you understand what is going on, he will then try and Plead for you. Refuse the plea, tell the Judge you have not contracted with him to plea. That he is violation of his Constitutional oath, separation of powers (he is the Judiciary, and not the Executive Branch, in pleading for you his is doing the District Attorney's, or your lawyers job—the ABA--thereby becoming part of the Executive. He thinks he has the right to do this, but he does not.) The "Judge" will then just steam roll over you. Don't worry, because he knows everything he's done is illegal, and 'you' are just a poor father, and won't be able to defend yourself through ten years of intense legal battles in order to hold him to his job and his oath of office.
- After court you will immediately file a "Refusal of Entry of Plea" negating any plea that he has made in your behalf.
- The Judge will set another trial date. Go to that also.

You have just successfully resisted jurisdiction and entry of plea. This is not that hard, and does not take that much paperwork. You have probably just conservatively saved yourself \$200 to \$2000 or more in attorney fees. If you had 'hired' a lawyer (\*snicker\*) he of course, would have immediately joined with this court, plead, and thereby; you would have been destroyed. After you had joined issue, then; the lawyer would have actually helped the court destroy you. He would feed you into it, and split whatever monies that they both would steal from you with the court. They fully know this and understand this, because Lawyers are officers of

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

the court. They work for your enemy. Just like the D.A., the Bailiff, the Clerk of the Court, they are working for the Judge.

5. Meanwhile, the District Attorney will try and get you to establish Paternity. DON'T DO IT. Give him NOTHING. Zero. Nada. GIVE HIM NO INFORMATION!!! Just keep on doing your UCC 1-207, Refusal for Cause, Without Dishonor. Keep defending your 5<sup>th</sup> amendment rights.
  - o Under the 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment to the Constitution for the united States of America, (1787-1789), you have the unalienable right (not inalienable right—those are rights given to you by government called 'privileges'), to resist self incrimination.

"No person shall be held to answer for a capital, or otherwise infamous crime, unless on presentment or indictment of a Grand Jury, except in cases arising in the lawn or naval forces...**nor shall any person be subject for the same offense to be twice put in jeopardy of life, or limb; not shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself.**

Giving any type of bodily evidence, verbal evidence, or anything to the District Attorney (your enemy) is just helping his case. (Process Server on the Stand on your case for example: "Yes, he refuse the summons, and then laughed and said it was his kid, and he was going to beat it.") Poof! Anything you say to this enemy will be used against you—they don't need any Miranda Warning like in the movies. They are your enemy and will try to do everything to destroy you. KEEP QUIET!! Be respectful, but do not talk with them. Give them no information. Zero. Nothing. **When they ask you: "Don't you know Ellen? " Respond with "I give you no information." When they ask you: "You had sex with her, we know that." Respond with "I give you no information."**

**"You worked at Burger King last month right?"**

Response: "I give you no information as secured by the Fifth Amendment."

**"You know your girlfriend Sally, right?"**

Response: "I give you no information as secured by the Fifth Amendment."

**"Don't you want to take responsibility?"**

Response: "I give you no information as secured by the Fifth Amendment."

**"Is the sky blue?"**

Response: "I give you no information as secured by the Fifth Amendment."

If you enforce this right, the DA is effectively screwed.

When they hand you information to fill out: do *not* fill it out. Do not sign anything. Do not work with them in any way shape or form. Don't even put you name on it. Just in large bold letters across all the writing put: "I give you no information as secured by the Fifth Amendment."

## CHAPTER EIGHT

REFUSAL FOR CAUSE WITHOUT DISHONOR: UCC 1-207, then do not sign it.

All these people are is terrorists. They are not doing law. They are using "Equity" and "Discretion" against you to get around the law. They are committing *worse crimes in which the British committed against American citizens 250 years ago*. They are not there for your welfare, the child's, or even societies...they are only there only to line their own pockets with your money, to create slaves, and to build empires. It is the duty of every single American to resist these corrupt court systems. Money is not only killing you, and children, but also these courts are applying terror throughout the land. And again, they are doing this *against their own foundational precepts which established our system of law in the first place*. They are in gross violation of their own oath's of office. And they are doing this *against their own citizens whom they have sworn an oath to protect and defend*.

Just remember this simple construct: information are the bullets in which they use to destroy you.

The biggest thing they are trying to have you do is to 'volunteer' or to 'consent' to them through their coercion.

6. The court will keep on demanding you go to court. Go to every scheduled appearance. Do not cross the bar, keep behind it, and when they keep on threatening you will procedure, just calmly keep on informing the Judge: "I have given the District Attorney in this matter timely service of a Bill of Particulars in the first instance, He has not answered it. I stand on my Bill of Particulars. Without his answer I am ignorant of the charges against me, of the nature and cause of the action. I cannot proceed in accordance my absolute and perfect rights in law."
  - The Judge might say: "Oh, we'll answer the question's right here." Inform him that you refuse, and that the District Attorney must respond in a written matter specifically to each and every question in the Bill of Particular. (The Judge is the Judiciary, under the constitution, he cannot do the DA's job and thereby become part of the executive, not to mention totally unbiased.)
  - If they try and proceed, DO NOT OBJECT. Remain silent. (That is the key.) Do not give them any jurisdiction. When they finish their fraud, politely tell them you will refuse anything they have done, and again, demand a written response to the Bill of Particulars. Tell them you still stand on your Bill of Particulars.
7. When court day finally comes, be calm. These are some of the things that could happen.
  - A. Judge will come in and tell you the case is dismissed (and give some procedural reason): "officer didn't show up" or "Ms.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Ellen didn't show up." Or some other 'procedural error' that supposedly occurred. "Lost the file."

- B. They might do trial. If this happens: Stand on your Bill of Particulars, say nothing to the court, remain silent—and let them play their game.
  - o You will write your local Judicial Council and Refuse Judgement and Demand the Bill of Particulars within five days.
  - o They may place you in Jail. Have a Habeas Corpus ready, and have a friend ready with the Refusal of Judgement above to the Judicial Council noted above.

Most likely, they will know that you have not entered their jurisdiction, and then it becomes only a matter of time: how far they are willing to carry the fraud. We have personally witnessed the courts dismiss every action we have used a Bill of Particulars in.

We have knowledge of some cases going to Appeal, in which they were categorically dismissed. The DA, if he has not answered the Bill of Particulars (and they never do for *Malum Prohibitum* crimes...at least we have never heard of it) the DA and Judge are really putting their rear-ends on the line. Without informing you of the 'nature and cause of the action' he has violated the Sixth Amendment:

"In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the State and district wherein the crime shall have been committed, which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, **and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation**; to be confronted with the witnesses against him, to have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and to have the assistance of Counsel for his defense."

## RECOMMENDATIONS FOR MEN MARRIED

---

1. If you know you are going to be soon divorced, and want to maintain full control over your children: or
2. Your wife suddenly walks out on you, and steals your children, in both instances, you must file a Habeas Corpus action against the mother, in your name, and in the name of your children:
3. You will file this Habeas with the Court in which to have a hearing. The Judge will sign an pre-typed Order that you have submitted with the habeas, and a Command in the name of "We the People". The Order forces the person in the name of the Court to "bring the body" of the child forward, and the Command, commands the same under the common law in the name of "We the People" (which is superior to the Judge).

## CHAPTER EIGHT

4. Once the Judge has done this, you must again, have someone serve your ex-wife or even ex-girlfriend, as the Habeas is a powerful instrument, especially done in the common law here, it is a supreme authority "of right" that must be obeyed by not only courts, but by the person it is served upon. It is best to have the Sheriff serve the Habeas, and the Command and Order upon your ex. This is best for two reasons.
  - a) It formally documents the service.
  - b) If she disobeys, it makes her act an actionable criminal offense.
5. If your wife has stolen your children, file criminal charges against her for kidnapping. Under the California Penal Code, this comes under section PC 277.
  - o Do this by filing a verified criminal complaint PC 142(a), citing PC277 as the crime.
  - o File also an Affidavit with the PC 270 which documents the events of the stealing.
  - o File these with the District Attorney, and the Clerk of the Court. Get stamped copies in return for your files.
  - o Most likely, because most District Attorney's are the enemy against fathers, and because the Feminist Hive is deeply embedded within his organization (as a symbiotic arrangement—we can see this effect with President Clinton, and the National Feminist movement who didn't make a peep when his deeply criminal transgressions and rape against various women became public knowledge—the DA again, fully understands where his 'daily bread' comes from: the Feminists) the DA will not file your charges, he will have the Court Clerk 'RECIEVE THEM BUT NOT FILED' which essentially means they have just thrown your documents into a legal garbage can. Your criminal complaint under these circumstances is in total stasis: its dead for all practical purposes. The DA is doing this under his "Discretion" doctrine, which again; this practice is illegal—and cites such as the People v. Pope prove this. They don't care, because under this system of government, laws have no meaning; and fathers have no rights.
6. The common law action KIDNAPPING is essentially a California Penal Code §277 violation. File a common law action of Kidnapping and cite only constitutional authority. File this with the court, and with the Sheriff or Constable of your county.
7. There is also something called a Writ of XXXX. This is a common law action to challenge theft of property. In this case, what the law books cite to do is to go and reclaim the property, then; walk di-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

rectly into court with the Writ of XXXX and then publicly *challenge* any other persons who claim authority to your property or title to a thing.

### DIVORCE

---

I want to digress here in order to expose a rather large point in regards to the court and in which total fraud has been perpetrated upon them. In this, we will study the feminist institution of "Divorce" and how this institution has been perverted to the "Red Wedding" or communistic model, and how fathers are being unlawfully obliterated by these new communistic courts which have abandoned the law.

First, we will look at the modern meaning and definition of divorce. In a comparative analysis between the legal definition and then the contemporary legal definition.

First, the contemporary legal definition of "Divorce" is surprising to say the least.

**Divorce, dissolution** of bonds of marriage, 61 Ca. Rptr. 178, 180. It is not a punishment for a wrong done by one spouse to the other, but is the result of the determination by the state of domicile that the continuation of the marital relationship between the parties concerned with be contrary to the policy of the law. 75 A. 2d 889, 892.

While a divorce puts an end to the marital relation, it does not relate back to the act of marriage and render it null and **void**. It is based upon the theory of an invalid marriage for some cause arising after the marriage ceremony. This is to be contrasted with an **annulment** proceeding which relates back and erases the marriage and all its implications from the outset on the theory that for some reasons existing at the time of marriage no valid marriage existed. 104 A.L.R. 1290

**NO-FAULT DIVORCE** a divorce which is granted without the necessity of finding a spouse to have been guilty of some marital misconduct. The most common "no-fault" ground is voluntary separation for a period of time. Prior to the enactment of no-fault divorce statutes, the traditional concept of divorce required proof of marital misconduct as a prerequisite. There had to be a specified fault, a wholly innocent **plaintiff** spouse and a wholly **guilty** or aggressor **defendant** spouse.

The Uniform Marriage and Divorce Act §§302(2), 305(1971) supports a pure no-fault concept. It allows for divorce unilaterally upon the application by either spouse without proof of marital misconduct and without mandatory waiting period either before or after the divorce is **decreed**.

**SEPARATION [DIVORCE A MENSA ET THORO]** – Lat: from table and bed. A partial divorce decree, usually entered in the course of divorce proceedings, which directs the parties to live separately—indeed, forbids **cohabitation**—but does not dissolve the marriage. [*Law Dictionary*, by Steven H. Gifis, ©1996 by Barron's Educational Services, Inc. 250 Wireless Blvd., Huppauge, New York 11788; ISBN 0-8120-3096-6.; pp. 152-153.]

## CHAPTER EIGHT

Just as the incongruence of family law noted between the Century Digest and Sub Juri Secundum in Chapter X, look at what Bouviers Law Dictionary states in regards to Divorce, paying special attention to the last item, number 12.

**DIVORCE.** The dissolution of a marriage contracted between a man and a woman, by the judgment of a court of competent jurisdiction, or by an act of the legislature. It is so called from the diversity of the minds of those who are married; because such as are divorced go each a different way from the other. Ridley's Civ. & Eccl. Law, pp. 11, 112. Until a decree of divorce be actually made, neither party can treat the other as sole, even in cases where the marriage is utterly null and void for some preexisting cause. Griffiths v Smith, D. C. of Philadelphia, 3 Penn. Law Journal, 151, 153. A decree of divorce must also be made during the lifetime of both the parties. After the decease of either the marriage will be deemed as legal in all respects.

Reeves" Dom. Rel. 204; 1 Bl. Com. 440. See Act of Pennsylvania, March 13, 1815, 5.

2.) Divorces are of two kinds; 1. a vinculo matrimonii, (q. v.) which dissolves and totally severs the marriage tie; and, 2. a mensa et thoro, (q. v.) which merely separates the parties.

3.) - 1. The divorce a vinculo was never granted by the ecclesiastical law except for the most grave reasons. These, according to Lord Coke, (Co. Litt. 235, a,) are causa praecontractus, causa metus, causa impotentiae, seu frigidity, causa affinitatis, et causa consanguinitatis. In England such a divorce bastardizes the issue, and generally speaking, is allowed only on the ground of some preexisting cause. Reeves' Dom. Rel. 204-5; but sometimes by act of parliament for a supervenient cause. 1 Bl. Com. 440. When the marriage was dissolved for canonical causes of impediment, existing previous to its taking place, it was declared void ab initio.

4.) In the United States, divorces a vinculo are granted by the state legislatures for such causes as may be sufficient to induce the members to vote in favor of granting them; and they are granted by the courts to which such jurisdiction is given, for certain causes particularly provided for by law.

5.) In some states, the legislature never grants a divorce until after the courts have decreed one, and it is still requisite that the legislature shall act, to make the divorce valid. This is the case in Mississippi. In some states, as Wisconsin, the legislature cannot grant a divorce. Const. art. 4, is. 24.

6.) The courts in nearly all the states have power to decree divorces a vinculo, for, first, causes which existed and which were a bar to a lawful marriage, as, precontract, or the existence of a marriage between one of the contracting parties and another person, at the time the marriage sought to be dissolved took place; consanguinity, or that degree of relationship forbidden by law; affinity in some states, as Vermont, Rev. Stat. tit. 16, c. 63, s. 1, impotence, (q. v.) idiocy, lunacy, or other mental imbecility,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

which renders the party subject to it incapable of making a contract; when the contract was entered into in consequence of fraud. Secondly, the marriage may be dissolved by divorce for causes which have arisen since the formation of the contract, the principal of which are adultery cruelty; wilful and malicious desertion for a period of time specified in the acts of the several states; to these are added, in some states, conviction of felony or other infamous crime; Ark. Rev. Stat. c. 50, s. 1, p. 333; being a fugitive from justice, when charged with an infamous crime. Laws of Lo. Act of April 2, 1832. In Tennessee the husband may obtain a divorce when the wife was pregnant at the time of marriage with a child of color; and also when the wife refuses for two years to follow her husband, who has gone bonafide to Tennessee to reside. Act of 1819, c. 20, and Act of 1835, c. 26 Carr. Nich. & Comp. 256, 257. In Kentucky and Maine,, where one of the parties has formed a connexion with certain religionists, whose opinions. and practices are inconsistent with the marriage duties. And, in some states, as Rhode Island and Vermont, for neglect and refusal on the part of the husband (he being of sufficient ability) to provide necessaries for the subsistence of his wife. In others, habitual drunkenness is a sufficient cause.

7.) In some of the states divorces a mensa et thoro are granted for cruelty, desertion, and such like causes, while in others the divorce is a vinculo.

8.) When the divorce is prayed for on the ground of adultery, in some and perhaps in most of the states, it is a good defence, 1st. That the other party has been guilty of the same offence. 2. That the husband has prostituted his wife, or connived at her amours. 3. That the offended party has been reconciled to the other by either express or implied condonation. (q. v.) 4. That there was no intention to commit adultery, as when the party, supposing his or her first husband or wife dead, married again. 5. That the wife was forced or ravished.

9.) The effects of a divorce a vinculo on the property of the wife, are various in the several states. When the divorce is for the adultery or other criminal acts of the husband, in general the wife's lands are restored to her; when it is caused by the adultery or other criminal act of the wife, the husband has in general some qualified right of curtesy to her lands; when the divorce is caused by some preexisting cause, as consanguinity, affinity or impotence, in some states, as Maine and Rhode Island, the lands of the wife are restored to her. 1 Hill. Ab. 51, 2. See 2 Ashm. 455; 5 Blackf. 309. At common law, a divorce a vinculo matrimonii bars the wife of dower; Bract. lib. ii. cap. 39, 4; but not a divorce ti mensa et, thoro, though for the crime of adultery. Yet by Stat. West. 1, 3 Ed. I. c. 84, elopement with an adulterer has this effect. Dyer, 195; Co. Litt. 32, a. n. 10; 3 P. Wms. 276, 277. If land be given to a man and his wife, and the heirs of their two bodies begotten, and they are divorced. a vinculo, &c., they shall neither of them have this estate, but he barely tenants for life, notwithstanding the inheritance once vested in them. Co. Litt. 28. If a lease be made to husband and wife during coverture, and the husband sows the, land, and afterwards they are divorced a vinculo, &c., the husband shall have the



## CHAPTER EIGHT

emblems in that case, for the divorce is the act of law. *Mildmay's Case*. As to personalty, the rule of the common law is, if one marry a woman who has goods, he may give them or sell them at his pleasure. If they are divorced, the woman shall have the goods back again, unless the husband has given them away or sold them; for in such case she is without remedy. If the husband aliened them by collusion, she may aver and prove the collusion, and thereupon recover the goods from the alienee. If one be bound in an obligation to a feme sole, and then marry her, and afterwards they are divorced, she may sue her former husband on the obligation, notwithstanding her action was in suspense during the marriage. And for such things as belonged to the wife before marriage, if they cannot be known, she could sue for, after divorce, only in the court Christian, for the action of account did not lie, because he was not her receiver to account. But for such things as remain in specie, and may be known, the common law gives her an action of detinue. 26 Hen. VIII. 1.

10.) When a divorce a vinculo takes place, it is, in general, a bar to dower; but in Connecticut, Illinois, New York, and, it seems, in Michigan, dower is not barred by a divorce for the fault of the husband. In Kentucky, when a divorce takes place for the fault of the husband, the wife is entitled as if he were dead. 1 Hill. Ab. 61, 2.

11.) - 2. Divorces a mensa et thoro, are a mere separation of the parties for a time for causes arising since the marriage; they are pronounced by tribunals of competent jurisdiction. The effects of the sentence continue for the time it was pronounced, or until the parties are reconciled. A divorce a mensa et thoro deprives the husband of no marital right in respect to the property of the wife. *Reeve's Dom. Rel.* 204-5. *Cro. Car.* 462; but see 2 S. & R. 493. Children born after a divorce a mensa et thoro are not presumed to be the husband's, unless he afterwards cohabited with his wife. *Bac. Ab. Marriage, &c. E.*

12.) By the civil law, the child of parents divorced, is to be brought up by the innocent party, at the expence of the guilty party. *Ridley's View*, part 1, ch. 3, sect. 9, cites 8th Collation. *Vide*, generally, 1 Bl. Com. 440, 441 3 Bl. Com. 94; 4 Vin. Ab. 205; 1 Bro. Civ. Law, 86; Ayl. Parerg. 225; Com. Dig. Baron and Feme, C;-Coop. Justin. 434, et seq.; 6 Toullier, No. 294, pa. 308; 4 Yeates' Rep. 249; 5 Serg. & R. 375; 9 S. & R. 191, 3; Gospel of Luke, eh, xvi. v. 18; of Mark, ch. x. vs. 11, 12; of Matthew, ch. v. v. 32, ch. xix. v. 9; 1 Corinth. ch. vii. v. 15; Poynt. on Marr. and Divorce, Index, h. t.; Merl. Rep. h. t.; Clef des Lois Rom. h. t. As to the effect of the laws of a foreign state, where the divorce was decreed, see Story's Confl. of Laws, ch. 7, 200. With regard to the ceremony of divorce among the Jews, see 1 Mann. & Gran. 228; C. 39. Eng. C. L. R. 425, 428. And as to divorces among the Romans, see Troplong, de l'Influence du Christianisme sur le Droit Civil des Romains, ch. 6. p. 205.

First off, look at the date of the Uniform Divorce act noted in Steven H. Giff's contemporary law dictionary. The year? 1971. Again, this is the year when the feminists floodgates opened and the feminist plague with no-fault divorce when that was really set loose upon America. This is the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

year when the U.S. Supreme Court decided that the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment, which has previously been applied to males only, and slaves only—but *now* was including women under its sweeping state privileges enforced by the Federal Government. Again, this shows collusion on the part of the design of this system.

Secondly, as I mentioned earlier, look at the last part, item number twelve. This is what is very astounding. It again bring up the fact in the law of the **clean hands** doctrine, a doctrine by the way, the criminal courts have all but abandoned in which to enforce this fraud against American fathers. It reads: "By the civil law, the child of parents divorced, is to be brought up by the innocent party, at the expense of the guilty party." Well, how are criminal courts different in actions at law?? Aren't the criminal courts established to apply law and justice within their reasoning? Isn't morality and this concept of clean hands at the very basis and foundation of criminal law and indeed, its most intricate part??? Of course it is! And they *know* it is, and that is why they got rid of it, or at least ignored it through their creation of courts of both equity and law, which now embodies the ultimate paradox of having a human Judge use his errant and collusive powers of *discretion* in which to ply not law but discretion against unsuspecting fathers, most of whom, like me, have had their children outright stolen from them. Again, the lawyers never bring this glaring controversies to the forefront—nor do they apply succinct laws, maxims of laws, justice or procedures which would provide not only closure to many of these contumacious family arguments, but more importantly, provide this nation with stability and efficiency within our laws and our court systems. In re-establishing such well documented laws and procedures, these present courts could cut their caseload's *instantly, by 80 to 90 percent by re-implementing such well documented laws and procedures*. They would also re-establish a Renaissance within Family Law which would stop the present wars and anarchy's that are destructively raging across America right now, and which would ultimately stabilize the home and family.

Would Hillary and her feminist cohorts do this? Of course not! Would they re-implement Patriarchy even if they fully knew it would solve many of these problems which they pretend to be so concerned about? NO!! These wars under the guidance of Feminist Jurisprudence are the exact reason why they established these fundamental changes within the system in the first place!! Do you think the Krell mind-set built that all these jails, court systems, prison probation facilities, counseling, youth shelters, family shelters, Child Youth Authority's, Child Protective Services, Foster Homes, and a panoply of other attendant superstructures—were built—*just so they wouldn't use them?!?! No! This needless war of feminism was a well-engineered assault against an unsuspecting American public.*

## CHAPTER EIGHT

These feminists in collusion with a government elite overturned our laws with 'new' "modern" laws not to help us or families (as every social indicator exemplifies) but rather, to use a system in order to subrogate our form of government for another system of opposing governance. They are simply using Feminism to build and maintain their Krell Welfare Machine empire. Nobody really wants to solve anything or to allow civilization to ascend. This is the last thing on their minds.

Even they recognize the disaster they have leveled upon the home, families and children—and they fully recognize and understand the perversion and despair that they now eternally are happy to manage and profit from. Listen to what Louise Armstrong uncovered in talking to a Social Worker in her book *Rocking the Cradle of Sexual Politics*;

"One young woman told me she'd gone into protective services work two years earlier thinking she could protect children. She said, 'I'd tell them, 'Trust me. You can tell me the truth. I'll protect you.'" Now, she said, "I'll still tell them, 'Trust me. You can tell me, ' But—now I know—I can't protect them." [*Rocking the Cradle of Sexual Politics*, by Louise Armstrong ©1994; Addison Publishing Co., Reading MA, ISBN 0-201-62471-0; p. 90.]

Of course they can't protect our children! And as this woman who is knee-deep in the social infrastructure fully comprehends, *they never will be able to protect the children!* Because the child's real protectorate "The Father" has been forcibly removed directly by and through this new fraudulent system of 'law' that has disenfranchised him, thrown him out of his own home, proactively stolen great wealth from him, openly and incessantly publicly vilified him, and then allowed him no access to either law or redress in which he may be able to assume his proper role and authority within his own home and with his own children!! This feminist superstructure for the past 30 to 50 years has been slaughtering children's fathers and they are 'just' getting it that they cannot protect the children? Do you think this woman who made this succinct observation quit her job? Do you think she is 'changing things' from the inside? No—most certainly she is not, nor are those like she and Ms. Hillary Clinton who have come to love and depend upon the profits of war and conflagration of which this thing has wrought such havoc.

What is most odd here however is by the facts, that the Feminist scream and vilify the Father, and attack him further—as more men get separated from their own children's lives—more and more children get abused! You would think, that with the trillions of dollars spent on this problem, and the complete eradication of the male from the child's domain—that we would see such facts and figures steadily decline, but oddly—they are on the eternal rise! Another odd thing is, that the figures

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

of actual sustainable and legally provable abuse figures, are in truth low. We are speaking of 1,215 cases of actual child death—of which an unknown percentage of that being "actual" abuse; along with roughly 25,000 cases of actual child hospitalization, again, an unknown percentage of those being 'actual' child abuse. Strangely, more than half of all documented child abuse *occurs after the child has been removed from the Father's presence and protection*—yet, no significance is given to this. But still, the problem exists as a daily documented national crisis.

But, trust me, Hillary and her cohorts are waiting in the wings to solve these crises with even more government programs to help replace the father. They'll come up with even more programs, provide even more grants to undermine what it wouldn't cost society 1 penny to let succeed if they would only let the Father alone and allow him under the law to rule in his own home. This must be done as broadly, and with as much protection as we can freely allow him to do this, again; all in accordance with the law.

Once this tenor starts rippling through society, Ms. Clinton and her radical feminist cabal will even start 'studies' to show the American people statistic's of how these problems are now being presently 'solved'! Wow. *Finally*. But all any American has to do to uncover this fraud is to watch his paycheck get whittled away by this incessant war and insanity, each and every payday. All they have to do is watch the growth of our prisons, and the ever expanding social empires. If Ms. Clinton cannot solve these problems outright, then; she'll present disinformation proving she's and her feminist sisters have solved the problem.

If you present to these people the simple solution of: "Hey...why don't we just save a couple of trillion dollars and just allow the father to assume his own role within his own home with his own family?" You'll get shrilly shouted down from all quarters of the Feminist culture. Again, they want to bury the most obvious answer in a combine of various studies, experts, commissions, and legislative reports. You start rediscovering the obvious, like a man should rule within his own home and his children should be as close as possible to him—you'll chart hearing classical feminist chants about abuse, rape, incest and a panorama of classical feminist doctrines: "Save the Children" "Not one more child!!" "Abuse!" and "Take back the night!!"

Therefore, it is the duty of all men to vocally and openly resist this criminal system, to belligerently enforce their rights, and most importantly—to allow the District Attorney NOTHING. This man is not your friend, he is not your child's protector: YOU ARE. It is time that men seize control of their own home, their own children and their own destiny, by denying this cancerous system money. If this system is intent on destroying men, it can get no help from them. It will obtain no monies, no

## CHAPTER EIGHT

funds, court costs, filing fees: *nothing*. When the money equation disappears, so will this system, and upon that realization—will come the first healing of the disease which has permeated every segment of society, from the inner sanctum of the home, to the workplace, to the highest office of the land.

Therefore, when a woman comes up to you and informs you that she has mistakenly gotten pregnant, these men like Steve have to file criminal counterclaims in court for simple ROBBERY. Again, if a man has recreational sex with a woman; it is *she* not he carries that the burden of procreation. This comes under the maxim of "He who accrues the benefit, also carries the burden." And if a woman used your sperm in a manner not contracted; and the term recreational sex is the controlling factor here, then she should not have gotten pregnant in the first place. More importantly, such misuse is theft: a robbery; and she is responsible for the damages: *not the male*. We must remember, that this nation has suffered decades if not centuries of radical feminists screaming to obtain their supposedly sacred rights to control their own body, and their own sexuality. If this is true, and they have secured those rights—which they most certainly have—*then they must also be held responsible for the performance of that liberty which they have not yet been held to*. For that is the cost of gaining such liberty, and that is the responsibility to use it wisely, morally, and justly. Presently, the radical feminists have secured their liberties off of a putrid foundations of irresponsibility, immorality and outright injustice—all subsidized through the ensuing destruction of the male.

She of course only has one legal answer to this, and that is that it wasn't recreational sex...that it was either planned—or rape. In that case, the 'contract' is null and void in ab initio (from the beginning) because there was no meeting of the minds. From this, her only real alternative is to charge rape—which again; under these present perverted court systems is a woman's greatest weapon and is unjustly being used as a weapon against men. Unfortunately, I believe World Heavyweight Boxing champion Mike Tyson, as powerful as he was financially, was unjustly imprisoned upon such false testimony. But a woman charging rape *after* she realizes that she now has become pregnant would have a precarious legal stance in which to bring such a fraudulent charge.

These women have screamed themselves into a frenzy making sure they could enjoy sexual promiscuity, abortion, birth control, lesbianism, multiple partners, etc., etc., ad infinitum, ad nauseum. Since they obtained these things—they enjoy the benefit—and thereby *only they* should assume the responsibility. Start addressing 'responsibility' or better yet, just start the public debate on this and you will see illegitimate births drop from 5 to 10 percent. Just by discussing this issue.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Such a shift, again; back to the common law will completely devastate the present Krell Welfare Machine. Once this paradigm again is enforced within the courts, you will factually see three things.

- A. An immediate and drastic drop in illegitimate births.
- B. An instant collapse in court cases to establish paternity.
- C. A drop in the incoming Welfare rolls of anywhere from 5-15 percent or *higher*.

I generally estimate these due to the fact of related facts and figures in regard to this system.

Now the courts will go apoplectic over such defenses and will brazenly state that "Oh! But we must save the children! The child here has clean hands and cannot suffer from the sins of both the parents!"

Well, wow. Isn't it reassuring that Judges understand common law, once they have a need to use it. But again, it is the duty to reinforce the fact that the father has clean hands too! *He* cannot be burdened by the contract of sex in the first instance as that contract has been criminally abrogated by the woman. He is only doing what he is genetically predisposed to do. Therefore, 'if' the Judge upholds his duty to the child, he will fully understand and recognize that it is **not** in the best interests to penalize the father, for in doing so, the court will be establishing the fallow precedent of law, that the child will have to someday inherit this perverse system of law which will propagate such future injustices against the Father and society and more importantly; in the final analysis, the child itself who will not be able to live and flourish in a free and just society. And **that legal fact** is not in the child's best interests...and more importantly **it never has been. It is more important for the Judge to secure the child's future Liberty, than it is to create a slave and destroy his father.**

For such idiotic judicial doctrines which have attacked the father have only burdened generation after generation from realizing the American dream, which is most and best realized under the protection of a home and family—which factually requires as its main component: **a father** which the courts (for criminal altruistic purposes) have criminally been denying children for generations. It has also established a state of affairs where anarchy is the normative rule rather than the exception. Again, by these realizations, we can see that such a system of holding the father accountable for these births, has been a gross mistake, and a complete undermining of our law.

But they fully understand these facts, and this is why such pregnancies continually rise—and that is because they are being subsidized and affirmed through these criminal court systems.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

What is most perplexing, is that nobody noticed that in doing all this, the Feminists are demanding total sexual anarchy all under the absolute guise and rights of Matriarchy—the right to breed with any man they choose, even several men. Then, in circumspection to their own feminist doctrines they are turning right around into the Patriarchal system to demand immediate subsidy from men (or society) to sustain their Matriarchal doctrines. The fact is, that such a countervailing system cannot work both ways, it never had, and it never will. It is completely Anti-American, and succinctly Anti-Law, and must be destroyed at all costs.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**



---

## CHAPTER NINE

---

*The first trial in history for crimes against the peace of the world imposes a grave responsibility. The wrongs which we seek to condemn and punish have been so calculated, so malignant and so devastating that civilization cannot tolerate their being ignored, because it cannot survive their being repeated. [Opening Address Before the International Military Tribunal, Nuremberg, Germany—by Robert Houghwout Jackson, 1945]*

### **THE DEATH OF MODERN FEMINISM**

---

After the postwar period from 1945 till about 1968, the U.S. economy had no equal. This postwar economy raged on practicably unabated, and in reality, no one is sure what would have happened to the American experience upon the rising profits and economy of America, if it had been left alone to flourish and not burdened by the Vietnam War. American Big Business during this timeframe had no equal, and the American male, family, and society greatly benefited by that era of economic expansionism.

American industry because of this however; still could not see the inevitable. They arrogantly kept to their massive antiquated consumerist production models, and engineered products that became bulbous, and very inefficient. Nowhere was this demonstrated better than in Detroit, to where the American car manufactures industry had stagnated because of their relevant inability to change and through competition, to develop better products.

While Detroit rested arrogantly upon the spoils of its postwar economy, an American, named Robert Deming went over to Japan, and began teaching them the systems of American manufacturing and excellence. What foundational American rules and precepts that built American industry into a giant, were now lost to it due to its own incompetence of having a sheer monopoly over cheap raw materials, labor, an educated healthy, long-term, non-war torn society, and with no effective competition; it was now being challenged by the rise of Deming's inculcation to postwar Japan.

"For decades the U.S. auto industry employed more workers than any other, consumed more raw materials than any other, paid more taxes than any other, and dominated world production for than any other [industry]. Yet, today that industry is contracting, packing, and leaving America, forever, if we do not change our national policy.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

..."When the war ended, Detroit converted its assembly lines with Yankee efficiency and began churning out the powerful, fashionable, and fancy new cars that were the prewar specialty of the United States.

...."Half a century later, Detroit had become the symbol and standard of urban decay, a burned-out city of a million where on Devil's Night vandals set fire to trash cans, gutted buildings, and abandoned homes. In 1996 I was driven downtown to an interview with the radio legend J.P. McCarthy. For blocks on end, we silently view the hollowed-out ruins and vagrant homeless people. Detroit seemed a city fought over by hostile armies, then abandoned. *This looks like pictures of Beirut*, I thought. [*The Great Betrayal, How American Sovereignty, and Social Justice Are Being Sacrificed to the Gods of the Global Economy*, by Patrick J. Buchanan, ©1998, Little, Brown and Company, Boston, New York, ISBN 0-316-11518-5; pp. 75-77.]

In the 1970's American Industry got blindsided by the inevitable. The 1973 "Oil Embargo" established an 'oil crisis' within America and the consumers of America were reluctantly forced to admit that American cars were in fact obsolete, not efficient, and oh-by-the-way; these Japanese cars ain't that bad...

This was a reluctant decision upon the part of the American consumer. Plighted pleas from American Industry to "Buy American", went unheeded, and although many American's felt ashamed at having to make the 'free market' choice of selecting a better product; the effects of Adam Smith's *Invisible Hand* proved all too clear: Americans were buying superior Japanese products, for a cheaper price. This was classic economic theory, and in retrospect; one of the best things ever to happen to American Industry.

Soon, industry recognized it had to retool, change, and keep efficiency of their product high in a fluid, changing marketplace.

The rise of American feminism has presented us with an equally puzzling paradigm. Because of the women's revolution of the 1960's and 1970's, American men are posed with a similar problem which effected the American Consumer during the Oil Crisis: he has come to face the fact that American Feminism through their doctrines of gaining 'Super-Rights' for women all in the name of 'equality'; has in fact wrought an inferior product. The feminized American woman is something men just don't want. The present American woman imbues within her the same anachronism's and failure of a 1973 Cadillac...and American men 'just ain't buying it' anymore. The rising divorce, and plummeting marriage rates are but shared proof's of this fact.

This was clearly demonstrated recently on *Roseanne*, a daytime talk-show starring Roseanne Barr which essentially espouses feminist propaganda and/or mindset to the mass audience of mostly women. In the show I refer to here, Gloria Aldrich was a guest, and Roseanne also had what I

## CHAPTER NINE

assumed was a new young female actress—I don't know who she was—because I tuned in late to the show. However; I was intrigued at the interaction of the show, I couldn't readily put my finger on it because I was mostly writing this book at the time. However; upon secondary examination, I picked up that Gloria Aldrich was not a happy camper with a young female guest who was also on this show. She sat back, with her arms stiffly folded in front of her, in which this young actress on this show was cruelly admonishing her: "...We don't agree with you past feminists who feel that all men are bad," this young woman said. What surprised me was this young woman was contemptuously talking *down* to Ms. Aldrich. I immediately stopped my writing and turned up the volume on the TV, as I couldn't believe my ears. I just couldn't believe what I was hearing nor did I know exactly what was happening.

This young woman virtually tore into the classical doctrines of Feminism and ripped Aldrich a new you-know-what. She was like a Pitt Bull, and she just didn't stop.

I was utterly stunned. This young and apparently capable woman was tearing down a wall that took a century and a half to build and in which a nation of men has tried to tear down—and this young female was doing it on her own on the *Roseanne Barr Show*!!! In front of national television audience, all by herself!!!!

The ensconced conversation took on comic proportions, as Roseanne, who was clearly shaken by seeing Ms. Aldrich get wiped by this woman that she tried to deflect the tenor of what was happening to something more light and effacing, in hopes to somewhat shield Ms. Aldrich, who was being intellectually torn apart. Ms. Aldrich who was absolutely pale white, with her eyes staring directly ahead, like the eyes of a startled deer in the lights of a nighttime car, could only weakly parry these attacks on the whole NOW doctrinal foundation's by placing forwards the lame old 'classical' feminist doctrine of: "Lets Save the Children" and "All Woman are Abused" arguments. It clearly wasn't working. And this young woman (whom I never found out who she was) kept on-point after point unabated, dissuaded by either supposed power of Ms.'s Barr or Aldrich.

I practically got up in front of the TV and cheered!

What we see here is something a long time coming—and although Ms.'s Aldrich, Barr, Walters, Roddham-Clinton, Steinhem, Friedan, and others within the same contemporary feminist hive are extremely powerful and consuming Matriarchal archetypes within their separate fields of endeavor--like the casual observation of the Death-Star Commander made to Darth Vader, this young female guest was essentially saying: "You are the last of your dying religion."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This chronic death is not due to any sustained attack by Fathers Rights groups or by the unseen "Radical Right Wing Conspiracies," rather, it is due, like the dinosaurs of epoch's past, and like Detroit of the 1970's, to their own repression of truth and to their religious attendance to a false system ideology. What I am saying here, is just like the fallow, misguided policies of American Industries of the 1960's and 1970's which drove many companies into bankruptcy, and which lost both national and world markets to (most) Japanese Industry, Feminism is now suffering from being destroyed by the weight of their own misguided theories and premises.

"All men aren't bad," this young woman kept saying. Ms. Aldrich responded of course, in predictable feminist fashion—by holding up the tired and overused mutilated beggar doctrine which they have effectively used for the past 200 years: "Oh! But we have to save the Children and women from abuse!!" Again, as I have shown in Chapter Seven, these mutilated beggar's that actually exist within the American society—are way, way at one extreme end of the bell curve. Not in the middle. It has become predictable, that this tired feminist doctrine is *only* being used to keep feminism in power. The idea that this young woman spoke the obvious sounded almost revolutionary: "not all men are bad," she continually affirmed. This shows that society, especially modern womanhood is no longer buying into the anachronistic myth of feminism any longer. Clearly, this young woman did not read all the scientific periodical abstracts, and rote social science papers all which support her innate thesis that "all men aren't bad." But what she is doing however, is telling Ms. Aldrich, and the dying feminist Matriarch's, that they have lied in establishing their own false doctrines to assume power, and now a younger generation of woman know the truth, have rediscovered the obvious through the American experience, and that they aren't buying into the feminist lies and disinformation any longer.

Again, these Feminist Lies and Disinformation which we spoke of earlier in this book—have been a sustained, what has become pure mythology--only propagated by the power of Government, and through the mainstream media. However; the rote realities of day to day life (as well as scientific study after scientific study) are factually showing many Americans the obvious, that "all men aren't bad."

Yet, again, remember; for Feminism to live and for the Krell Welfare Machine to propagate, there must be a sacrifice: a bogeyman. If this system loses that (slave), then; the system gets instantly turned off. Ms. Aldrich didn't directly respond back to this young woman, not because of any adhesion to decorum or etiquette, rather; she didn't respond to this young woman because *she factually couldn't!!!* Because her system is based off of the extreme end of the Bell curve and it is based off lies and

## CHAPTER NINE

disinformation. This young woman was stating the truth, as many other Americans along with her, are just beginning to 'rediscover the obvious.' The fact is that Ms. Aldrich along with a coterie of fallow Matriarch's are now dying by their own sword which they themselves forged through lies and disinformation, is somewhat prophetic. Like the fable of the little boy who cried wolf too many times—the feminists have gone shrill in holding up the Children as mutilated beggars in which to rage upon the Father, unholy and illegal attacks against him, his home, and his wealth! Feminism and these aging Matriarch's are like Darth Vader, "the last of their dying religion" of their own perverse religious mindset. This has to happen because—their religion is a false one—it doesn't work! It is based within the Dark Force of lies. If it did work, women wouldn't need subsidy, they wouldn't need to vilify and invent men into criminals, they wouldn't need to lie, they wouldn't need to hold children up as 'mutilated beggars.' The palladium of their own filth, is dragging them down. This, unfortunately, is the house they built; and in accordance with the natural laws which accompany the fallow foundation in which it was established—it is now falling in upon itself by its own weight of decrepit lies and distortions and human injustice. We have seen this same house built by racists, religious zealots, and other charismatic political figures—and what happened to those entities—is now happening to feminism, because it is part of the false doctrine in which they have bred themselves. The only thing that has sustained this unnatural order is the inhuman amounts of money and direct subsidy given to it by a criminally complicit government, and media by the enslavement of men, who keep on paying into it because of fear...which exactly like the Krell Welfare Machine, is powered by almost unlimited amounts of money.

This era of Matriarchy has also unfortunately; established an unacceptable subset of womanhood. This new power conscious, genderless entity, is inferior products which cannot be even approached by men, as it is the final development of an anachronistic postmodern Industrial amoral American society. Contemporary men do even not want these feminized women. And *exactly* as the mainstream American consumer did in the 1970's, contemporary men are going to 'foreign markets' in which to find wives. This again, is clear proof of the failure of modern feminism. Yet in its dying death throes, radical feminist will still scream out that this is okay...that women don't need men; that gay and lesbian lifestyles is 'okay' for this society; that children don't need a father, just 'surrogate' substitute fathers; Mentors; Big Brothers; Foster Homes—all which can be a viable lifestyle. Many still chant the mantra that sperm is a virulent poison; and that all men are evil, *Deadbeat Dad's*; and abusers. In this light, who would want to marry or even be involved with such women? Our answer to this question, comes easily from marriage statistic's cited

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

earlier which have been on a steady decline since the imposition of feminism upon this nation.

The modern Fathers Rights movement must see Feminism in the real light in which it is—and by its destructive force not only in their lives, but in the lives of our children who will, like this young woman courageously chastising one of the Fountainhead Matriarch's of Feminism, that this system is wrong; it is dying; and it just is not the right thing for the American people—especially young women—which are turning their backs upon its radical doctrines. The modern Men's Movement **must** have the same courage as this young woman: to call a spade a spade—and to tell the simple truth--and to be damned of who we are telling it to. The time has been long overdue for the despicable institution of 'Political Correctness' to be overtly, and publicly taken in the back of the yard, and ceremoniously shot directly in the head.

Patriarch's and most men recognize that the Feminist woman is not good for either him or society. They recognize that upon separation or divorce that men are being civilly killed, raped and screwed in court; driven into poverty and slavery; and handed an antithetical system in direct opposition to our form of government. "*You don't have any Constitutional Rights*" these 'supposed 'constitutional' Article III tribunals are telling only fathers! This feminist system is based off of unfairness, and abject tyranny. The political maxim stated so many times before, that a 'house divided, cannot stand', such is the leading rule here.

But men are so terrorized by this system, they pay into this madness. They then submit to the theft of their hard-earned wealth, and *more importantly* they obsequiously give their own personal, and their own children's inheritance away to the same enemy we fathers must collectively fight: the local DA and State and Federal Governments. These sums fathers pay out, some reasonable, most frighteningly despotic—is loss of the wealth of the Family and the greater Society, and this is in fact the real *abuse* occurring in this nation. It is the abuse of seizing a child's inheritance through killing primogeniture, or from and by the direct theft of his parent: mostly the father, and this is patently both unlawful and illegal under our form of governance. Trillions have been acquired by this theft, into a Black Hole of Government budgets, which in turn; produce nothing for America...just prisons, welfare and debt.

Most men don't have the courage to directly face the dying feminist regime that was encapsulated so well by Ms. Aldrich on the *Roseanne* show. Most men wouldn't think of challenging this Matriarch at her weakest most vulnerable arena: with the simple truth: "all men aren't bad." "All children aren't abused." "All Fathers don't abandon their children." "Fathers and Families are good."

## CHAPTER NINE

Talking in these terms is alien to most fathers, *because* for the greatest part they are fair; they are considerate; and they don't want to take undue advantage of people. The Feminists along with government play off the inherently fair nature of men's character and use the innate disposition of his own sense of fair play against him to his own disadvantage to egregiously compromise him. The Fathers Rights movement must begin to learn to speak in this aggressive tenor, they have to—because we are factually engaged in a war that is greater than ourselves, which concerns the intrinsic rights of every home in this nation; and which, effect every individual.

This war encompasses the fact that Feminism has been directly and irrevocably changing our system of government—from the inside the power of the Krell Welfare Machine. These are the domestic enemies who are more dangerous to we the public and our personal families than anything else this American Society has faced in previous generations. Through the 'altruism' that they contend concerns our own homes, our own children—they are building empires. They conspire these exigencies upon our own children, using the whole system in a concerted effort against Fathers. Then with but the slightest of assumptions; they turn off any normal avenues of redress or self-governance that is imbued by birth-right to the American male. They 'invent' problems, then mandate that we don't even have the right to fix these pretended problems ourselves. They just allow our children to be taken from us, or to be stolen, and placed into systems of care and maintenance that are but Social Experiments which have become nothing but a national disgrace and disaster.

### THE PRODIGAL SON

---

Can we make a contract with God that is binding to man?

This is the essence of the problem which is reserved to all Fathers and the American experience as a whole. Whether you believe in God or not is not the issue here, it is rather, the underlying question of allegiance that effects the domain of the conditional agreement of law and order. The point of God in reality has no binding consequence...because the fact remains that as a society, representing a civilization; in which the torch of mankind has been handed to us—do we abrogate or allow an *repudiation* towards those foundational principals and precepts of a higher order to which we as the eminent society have originally compacted with, to betray that contract to serve the more base and visceral system of a new Socialist Feminist order of governance that had not been compacted to earlier?

This exact issue was addressed in the case: Dartmouth College vs. Woodward. This case affirmed that an invested right implied in a contract

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

cannot be divested or interfered with by Government. Chief Justice John Marshall wrote the deciding opinion on the case saying:

"A corporation is an artificial being, invisible, intangible, and existing only in contemplation of law...It possesses only those properties which the charter of its creation confers upon it...By these means, a perpetual succession of individuals are capable of acting for the promotion of the particular object, like one immortal being..." [*John Marshall, The man who made the Supreme Court Supreme*, by Bill Severn, ©1969, David McKay Company, New York, Lib. Congress No. 69-13784, p.190.]

Are we not fathers, holding the intangible, invisible rights imbued by Natural Rights and/or the blessings of God which exist only in contemplation of American, Christian, and Common Law?? Is not the 'corporation' or Constitutional order of the Several Union States a social compact which is the vehicle to allow the succession of Fatherhood to continue 'as a perfect and natural right' "acting for the promotion of the particular object (the State of Fatherhood) like one Immortal Being? (The Immortal Being, being the stability of law granted by the blessings by God or the Compact of Natural Law, Man and Government).

Are we men not allowed to continue the Natural Law, or Common Law, or Mosaic Law, or Judaic Law, or even the Legislative Statutory Law that in the past was conferred and consecrated by our society by law and application, granted by perfect and unalienable rights. When did we abrogate this legal right, to be the Father to rule within our own homes?? If not, then; **when and how did these perfect rights change?!???** Quo Warranto: by what authority? Clearly, we are not speaking of mistakes of law here, we are addressing the foundational natural order in which our society, intellectually, collectively, and socially chose as the foundational precepts, of law, order and operation of this particular society.

Dartmouth gained the protection it wanted against state interference, but so did American Business, which soon took far more advantage of the decision. Protected from state interference, the power of corporations was enormously expanded, and there was a scramble for charters as the full import of the decision became understood.

Shortly after the decision was announced, Justice Story wrote a friend, "Unless I am very much mistaken the principles on which the decision rests will be found to apply with an extensive reach to all the greatest concerns of the people..." He was not mistaken. Within a year, the *North American Review* Noted that "perhaps no judicial proceedings in this country ever involved more important consequences." [*Ibid.* P. 191.]

I am already familiar to the pedantic (and erroneous) response to this conundrum. The Elite Regime will erroneously state that it is by the Leg-



## CHAPTER NINE

islative will mandated through will of the people by voting for their 'Representative's' which can change the formation of government. To this end, this response is both categorically and eternally wrong.

"Where rights secured by the Constitution are involved, there can be no rule making or legislation which would abrogate them." [*Miranda vs. Arizona*, 384 U.S. 436 p. 491]

"An unconstitutional act is not law; it confers no rights; it imposes no duties; affords no protection; it creates no office; it is in legal contemplation, as inoperative as though it had never been passed." [*Norton vs. Shelby County*, 118 US 425 p. 442]

"The general rule is that an unconstitutional statute, though having the form and name of law, is in reality no law, but is wholly void, and ineffective for any purpose; since unconstitutionality dates from the time of its enactment, and not merely from the date of the decision so branding it.

No one is bound to obey an unconstitutional law and no courts are bound to enforce it." [16 Am. Jur. 2d, Sec. 177, late 2d. Sec. 256]

"All laws which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void." [*Marbury vs. Madison*, 5 US [2 Cranch] 137, 174, 176]

These laws have clearly established the precedent, that not the Legislature, not the President, not the Judiciary, and not "We the People" ourselves can change the foundational bedrock of government.

In this reality, in the face of these overwhelming facts—even in the desolate world of the most contemptuous atheist: the Government of man becomes the God to that atheist, and thereby—civilization and man can contract to that corporeal corporation, for all men are held to that compacted consensual dominion. That is the lowest common denominator that we have through our Constitution contracted to. Those whoever, believe in a higher Supreme Being include that same compact but also go beyond the mere corporeal barrier erected by the delimiting constructs of the atheist mind. It is those people who incorporate the basis of that contract and leave their minds behind to a superset of contract of the real God.

I do not bring these things up to argue the disparate dissonance of Separation of Church and State. I cite these truths declaratory in regards as a Father and for Fathers within the Domain of the American experience. By my own recognition of Fatherhood, I immediately stand above the mist of a conspiring demeaning world and capture the aspiration of my Natural and Perfect Right to be a Father. At the point of that inspiration and cogency—I am protected by the penumbras of Laws, issued from the Creator and confirmed through the Compact of the Constitution, (or in an atheist's case, only by the Constitution on down)...it is all inclusive

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

within the main set. Upon that declaration, my law rules above the subfe-rrior laws which Government uses to attack me within the domain and protection of my own home; for in the fact of law, Fatherhood was foundationally protected through Constitutional common law doctrine, thereby, being the constitutional foundational rule of law, as a natural, God-given perfect right.

Upon this affirmation, under our system of American governance, the state must recede to the incurring precept "That a man rules his own home." In that domain, he and no one else is superior. The state must bow to God.

### **PROOF OF PERFORMANCE**

---

The Failure of Feminism is ingrained within Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine itself. It's performance against Fathers has been reprehensible. Such performance, in the light of American doctrine and law—cannot exist, yet it does. Such performance, cannot be explained in the light of either justice or logic, or reason. The proof of performance of feminism, and what it has done against Fathers and thereby against the home and family, has encompassed a litany of wrongs which now is profligate to the society itself. To be succinct: the system was designed for failure, its remedy is failure and slavery, and it imposes this injustice by outright lies and brutality against the American male.

### **DEMAND FOR MONEY, NOT FOR TIME**

---

The first thing the District Attorney demands from Fathers is all information relating to his wealth. This clearly, shows the primary intent of this whole system, as it is not a system that is concerned with children—it is however; very, very cognizant of money. The District Attorney, alone with the Welfare and court machines which support him, do not ask the Father the higher order questions of his home and family; such as, how much time can you spend to care for your child? Do you have better resources to determine the child's well-being over anyone else? Or other questions which hold a Fathers superiority to rule within his own home which would relate to the protection of his own children. No. The DA does not want to know about these.

He does want to know about the complete range of the Fathers Wealth. Where he works, his social security number, his bank accounts, his property, his holdings, and other bonds and securities. This fact proves the fallow platform and intent of the DA, which is that his concern is not about children; rather it is about theft and structured maintenance of the children as they relate to the mode of production. The DA is stealing in the supposed name of the people, for the benefit of the children, but in

## CHAPTER NINE

fact, he is profiting by these acts in themselves, through the system which is designed to burden all to pay for such illegal operations of law.

This fact that the DA is insane over the wealth which is accrued within the family is a specious indicator to his sole intent—and that intent is *not* the well-being of the children—but rather his capture of the family through the bribing of the Female in which he offers Welfare, or instant Krell gratification upon the destruction of the home and family. From the DA (and government) promising the woman support to harvest the wealth of her home, either by the security of Welfare subsidy for the rest of her life, or by the direct destruction and ‘cashing’ in of the Family’s accrued wealth, the District Attorney and his infrastructure are directly benefiting.

He is mining the home, just as if it were a mineral to be extracted. The fact of the DA’s ‘need to know’ and demand that you as a Father, tell him everything in regards to your wealth, is proof of his intent to destroy the Father.

Fathers, therefore, **MUST NOT GIVE THE DISTRICT ATTORNEY OR GOVERNMENT OFFICIAL ANY INFORMATION. DO NOT GIVE HIM ANYTHING! NOT YOUR DRIVERS LICENSE; NOT YOUR SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER; DO NOT TELL HIM WHERE YOU WORK; OR YOUR BANK ACCOUNTS OR ANYTHING. GIVE THE DISTRICT ATTORNEY ZERO.** Do not even admit the children are yours...because using information is how they kill Fatherhood...and therefore; no Father can go along with this system. More importantly: **YOU ARE NOT REQUIRED BY THE FIFTH AMENDMENT TO GIVE HIM ANYTHING IN WHICH HE CAN USE AGAINST YOU LATER.** Since he can use all information against you—give him **NO INFORMATION. NOTHING. Zero.**

Remember: information is power. Any information is power. Deny them all information at all costs.

If the District Attorney gets the information by other more sinister means and tries to use any of this information against you in court, Motions in Limine, and other motions to strike, should be used. He doesn’t have the right as a non-party to bring in information against you in court. This is a violation of procedure, and it is a violation of the structure of our courts...only the *plaintiff* can bring in information against you...not the District Attorney...otherwise, the DA would become the plaintiff. This is why the Bill of Particulars is so important, as it properly demands the nature and character of the parties involved, the forum, venue, and the right of standing to jurisdiction.

The mandate of all Fathers should be to resist the criminal District Attorney at all costs, so that the Father, through his own perfect rights as a Father, can enforce the terms of how his family will be raised. This is of much importance to the Joint Custody faction of the Fathers Rights com-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

munity, who want fairness in distribution and maintenance of their children. Presently; that faction fully understands the corruption of the DA and this Feminist court system. In empowering themselves through Patriarchy, *they* will be able to properly contract away how their children will be raised, by the wife or ex-girlfriend. In this context, under enforcement of Patriarchy, they are well-protected *and finally* so are the children.

The fact that the District Attorney and this whole system is so intent on money is proof enough—yet it goes beyond this. Those fathers who are driven away by the shame of not being able to control their own household's, or women; or who are abused, or ruled against in court—and the plethora of other reasons why men leave their children (because they are the weakest link of the Family) who keep on paying their child support and never see their children—are **PROOF** of the corruption of this system.

"IF" this system is 'in fact' about the Welfare of the children, then; in fact—money isn't *just the only issue or requirement* for the District Attorney. If the fathers support is two-fold (as DA's and the Krell Welfare Machine pretend) then shouldn't **TIME** as well as money also be a requirement? Shouldn't the interest in the Fathers TIME be as much, if not more concern as MONEY?!????!!!

But it is not. Yet, those fathers who are driven away (many like me, by the system itself which is too intent to civilly kill us at the first instant) and still pay monies into Child Support are viewed as not being criminals even if they never see their children again.. However, those who do not pay or cannot pay, and who do see their children (*for the greatest, almost exclusive part, only poor fathers*) are criticized, hunted, vilified by not only DA's: but the media, Governor's, President's of the United States, every single State government, and a host of other sub-systems and special interests; all who are making money off of this endeavor hunt this poor father. The poor father who is involved with his children winds up attacked and in prison, and the rich father who never sees his children again is venerated as being a 'good citizen.' I think many citizens can make the case, that the real criminal here is only government who has placed his remunerative interests above everything else.

This isn't about the 'well being' and 'support' of children. It is about using children to steal from a nation of fathers. It is about imposing Socialism upon America, without a vote. It is about usurpation of the Father and in destroying families, *because, there is considerable money in doing these things*. If the government and feminists were truly worried about the home and family and 'especially' the children; **there would have been a factual requirement for DA's not just to collect child support, but also to make sure fathers were never separated from their children**. If this system was about truly defeating Welfare and helping poor people

## CHAPTER NINE

rise from poverty, then; from the very beginning, there would have been a requirement to collect child support AND demand continued contact from both parents, especially the father!

In fact, the greater crime that Fathers commit, may be in fact from those Fathers who have blindly paid into this corrupt system due to their outright fear of this government, and because of this, have not seen their children. From their actions, which were only done out of fear, ignorance, and convenience, they have unwittingly, and mistakenly funded a terrible enemy which now is waging war upon us all. This well-paid domestic enemy, has done more damage to America than most of our wars combined. Instead, this government only sees the father who cannot pay only as a criminal. Yet though poor, this father may still sees his children, and be an invaluable influence to their lives. This can only mean, that the only concern of government in regards to this whole issue is in fact, is only about money and power. Fathers are inconsequential, as long as they pay the money. They can pay for 15 years and follow the national statistics of a 90 percent probability of never seeing their children again—and the District Attorney, the State Legislature, and Bill and Hillary Clinton will be *thrilled* that the money has dutifully been transferred quietly from the Father to the Mother, who will share it with the state. Those fathers will never be considered criminals.

This paying of money (all the while being responsible for creating an anti-father environment that drives them and the next generation from their homes and children) is, in the eyes of Hillary and her consorts, the ‘only’ real need from Fathers. This and being a temporary sperm donor. This follows exactly the feminist doctrinal mindset. The whole premise and past performance of Hillary and her Krell Welfare Machine by these sad facts, is nothing more than despicable.

Money and power, have been the sole reasons why Fathers have been disenfranchised from their children and Families. This is the real reason for Fatherlessness in America. There is a genius to this engineering, and Hillary knows what it is, and she knows where it best resides and that it is coming to a nation near you: and that is the American superghetto. They have attacked the Family at its weakest known point: the Father. Disenfranchise the Father so you can openly steal from him, and when you destroy him you destroy families which creates endless social pathologies which creates an ever burgeoning government. A government, a society, a children, all to be endlessly controlled and managed, by Hillary and her Krell Welfare Machine...

What is very odd in the analysis of this supposed lack of responsibility, which is somehow only gestated within the American male in respects to his own children and family, is that most men leaving their first families (many whom are patently pushed out), start second families to where

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

they become excellent fathers! What is odd about this is that if this abuse pathology were in fact pervasive in the male as a gender flaw within his species, shouldn't such abuse and abandonment also transfer over to the second family which he starts and supports? Surprisingly, this is not the case, even though the second family suffers much more abuse by the first family when the male is continuously financially attacked and destroyed. The second wife and child is abused all in order to save the first wife, who most probably made false allegations against the man in the first place! This pressure is indeed, the most prevalent cause of second marriage failures, which are statistically supposed to have a 75% chance of failure. We can see the reasons why.

### COURT'S ABROGATION OF THE COMMON LAW

---

The persecution of fathers, and the theft of their wealth by this system could not have ever been accomplished without the complicit consent of the American court system. Why this is an issue at all is indeed, a perplexing paradox for the courts—and the American people. The fact remains is that they have disenfranchised the American male by direct violation of the foundational concepts of this nation, of known maxims of law, and the common law, in which was the main causal factor for making a difficult situation progressively worse. They have been complicit in destroying the law within the home. They have destroyed the heritage and legacy of the Family. Then, they feign ignorance when massive social pathologies explode from the 'Feminist Solutions' in which they have errantly imposed against Fathers explode across the face of society. Hillary, along with the Judges will make vituperative arguments that these pathologies are caused by Television, or wide-spread use and proliferation of guns, or any other disinformational campaign they can dream up. If they could blame it on the alignment of planets or Area 51, they would. Strangely, this is not out of the realm of possibility from these people.

While Hillary and her coterie of Feminist approved Judges impose this criminal Feminist Jurisprudence (which is directly related to the social pathologies within society), they are also knowingly, directly benefiting from those pathologies: the Judges by teaching 'seminars' and other Child and Family Court issues, and Hillary and her Krell Welfare Machine, by the documented Superstructures we have noted here before are accumulating great profit. Yet, they still are willing to manage these Child and Family Court problems, all the while knowingly watching them devolve and exponentially causing yet more and more problems not only within the home, but also throughout society. Then, when you get them on the witness stand, as I did in court, and ask them how much they are making off this system: they will to a person tell you that they are not

## CHAPTER NINE

making a thing. Nothing. Zero. "No benefit whatsoever, John Blalock lied to me when he gave such testimony in court. Clearly—his own job is the benefit. He knows this as everyone in this system. They all know what they are doing and they fully understand where their 'daily bread' comes from. They don't care, because they have the job, and you don't—and somehow, that makes them superior, legal, even untouchable.

### **FOUNDATION OF LAW AND AMERICAN TREATISE OVERTURNED**

---

It isn't just in law which has been overturned without any American really knowing or understanding what was happening, it is in fact, the outright overthrowing of the American way of life, the overthrowing of Common Law, Natural Law, and the Maxim's of Law and replacing them with Feminist Jurisprudence. Of usurping the Bible, and the tenants and principals of its message, within our Christian society. Of undermining our American heritage and replacing it with Radical Feminism.

Feminist hate the Bible, so—they simply got rid of it. They couldn't work with American law, so they invented new law under color of law to overshadow it. They were in direct defiance of morality, so; they offered and marketed immorality as a way of life and now, teach this in our schools under the guise of 'tolerance.' The Elite Regime within government, has been going along with this feminist sophistry, arrogantly, intentionally. Right in the light of day. This is how most tyrants gain power: by doing their crime in the light of day; then, hoping none of the Plebiscite's have the courage to challenge them on their crimes. This is why College Campuses have no problem with radical Feminist women's studies teaching classes about homosexuality, lesbianism, and alternate lifestyles; even fisting; yet, if you dare place a Christian symbol on campus—they instantly have a cabal of well-paid lawyers like Ms. Clinton there to tear such "Vast Right Wing Conspiracies" down.

If their doctrines were truly legal in America, then; they wouldn't have to change them, nor the foundational basis of America. Feminists, Judges, and the Ruling Elite have all but thrown out every tenant and law to our American past. They have shredded the constitution to where; in fact it now has no meaning or force or protection in law for virtually anyone. There pragmatically is no constitution in this nation any longer.

To: The Honorable Arlen Specter

From: Bob Worn

Dear Senator Specter...I have seen my government turn from a fully functional government of the people, by the people and for the people...to a regime of self-serving politicians and bureaucrats who think law enforcement has to destroy the Constitution....Recently we have seen governmental agencies completely out of control...in incidents such as the murder of the wife and son of Randy Weaver at Ruby Ridge...and the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

completely barbaric, senseless slaughter of innocent adults and children at Waco....I feel I must prepare to defend myself and my loved ones, should this government perpetrate unlawful, unconstitutional acts against any member of my family....[T]here is a great number of American citizens who are firmly convinced that the blood of those killed and injured at the Murrah Federal Building bombing are on the hands of you and the rest of Congress for your complacent inaction to hideous crimes against American citizens perpetrated by harsh and tyrannical agents of their government....[N]othing will change until Congress is awakened from their "politically-correct" slumber.

Bob Worn

Concerned patriot, USA Patriot Magazine [*Rebellion, Racism & Religion, AMERICAN MILITIAS*, by Richard Abanes ©1996, InterVarsity Press, P.O. Box 1400 Downers Grove, Illinois, 60515; ISBN- 0-8308-1368-3; p. 41.]

This recognition is wide spread with regards of the American populace 'fearing' their own government. It is said that "Where the people fear the government, you have tyranny; where the government fears the people, you have liberty." There are many "Angry White Males" who are Angry White Males, just because they have been persecuted like no other class in history; by the government and courts in tandem.. Now, in every aspect; all of us fear now fear their government...for good and compelling reasons, to one extend or the other.

Hillary's Feminists and special interests multiculturalists have factually overturned the basic precepts and foundations of American government. People can no longer be free and independent...Randy Weaver and his wife Vicki proved that in 1993 at Ruby Ridge. It is clear, that in the new 'proactive' NCPGI environment of Police, Courts, along with the Alphabet Soup of Government agencies—that government will hunt and attack even the most benign family, like the Weavers. Beyond that, empowered by the Information Age, it now has become virtually impossible to flee from its World Wide despotism. As the letter indicates above, and as the countless examples or errant intrusion of government into our own homes, government now overturns Laws, Christian precepts, and foundational American values in order to hunt and gain access into any American home. No longer do we live by the common law ideal that "A man's home is his castle." More than this, as the Weaver incident shows, government is willing to throw away, literally *millions* to attack these families. Randy Weaver and his wife, were white separatists, basically fundamental Christians, who just wanted to get away from government. They were insignificant in the real scheme of things. For Randy's crime of "wanting to provide" for his own family, the FBI set him up—and we now know the rest as it has been entered into history.



## CHAPTER NINE

Feminist have as already documented, like a opportunist scavenger, seized upon this flaw of changing government, and have embedded themselves throughout its structure and other concomitant institutions such as the media. The father no longer rules within his own home, because he isn't protected any longer, rather; he's now hunted. Modern fathers, unlike Ms. Clinton's father who she says may have gone to far sometimes with discipline, are immediately destroyed by 'well meaning' people within the system. These fathers, the majority of them poor, are seen only as a wild resource, like a herd of seals, or a preserve of wild ducks and geese, or a range of deer. They are not supposed to enjoy the blessings of freedom of man. Instead, through the magic of feminism devolving them into a condition of slaves and animals, they are to be managed, just like the Department of Fish and Game manages deer herds, sometimes letting them grow wild (offering many Welfare Programs) or 'managing' the range by letting hunters 'thin the herd' when it becomes overpopulated (Welfare to Work Programs and Quota's). The Constitutional concept of the individual's right to solve his own problems is totally alien to Hillary and those within the Krell Welfare Machine, for upon any problem, they have the 'right' (remember: government doesn't have rights, only enumerated authority), to 'administer' the 'problem' by anyway they see fit. Because they believe they are the ultimate parent.

This 'right' however; is conditional upon wealth and power. Hillary and her Elite cadre families don't suffer the same problems the poor do with these systems. Indeed, we only have to look at *Mr. Clinton*, to figure out how far the Feminists and the Krell Welfare Machine will back off when those who feed it and support it are directly involved.

Again, if this system had any semblance of being lawful, it wouldn't need to change the institution of America in which to operate. This system does however, and it not only has changed the American system, it has directly perverted it.

### **EQUALITY IS NOT EQUALITY**

---

This is the most ostentatious proof that this system is corrupt. The Bolshevik Revolution first started to scream for this in the early part of the twentieth century. Less than a hundred years after this cry, Russia fell.

American Feminists and those who support them in the media and government have screamed for this same concept: "equality".

Well, being a 'fair' nation we have implemented their "equality" and guess what? Weren't we surprised when we found that not all things are equal...especially when it concerns the feminist ideals of equality.

The 'equality' Hillary pleads for is in fact outright preference and subsidy. A transfer of wealth from males to females is equal to her. This is the "equality" of the modern day Feminist. When you as a white male

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

(or any male) go for a job against a Feminist, well, you are being judged 'equally' they will tell you. This means the Feminist instantly obtains Affirmative Action, because she's a protected class, and that says she gets the job over you. Welcome to the wonderful world of Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine. This means that women do not perform up to men's specification or work load, but; they pretend to—so that makes them qualified equally for everything.

If you are a Union Construction foreman and you need to hire a laborer, you cannot hire Gus, the 245 pound, 28 ounce hammerin' Alabama Slammin' nail cruncher—nope—you have to hire Jennette, a 152 pound Feminist card carrying tribe member who has, by the grace of three feminist legal teams, just won the construction job via Affirmative Action hiring practices challenge to your Construction Company. When you, the foreman note after the fact that although a erudite and dedicated worker, Ms. Jennette cannot carry two 4 by 8 sheets of 1" floor plywood up four flights of stairs that a normal male worker does, regardless of Gus who used to bound up the stairs quickly with three sheets of the intensely heavy material, you soon begin to add up the lost labor costs due to the extra time it takes Jennette to precisely move the plywood up, one laborious sheet at a time. Above and beyond thanking and paying for the three feminist legal teams that forced you to hire "Jennette" in the first place you then hire Gus and pay him under the table so the Feminists or Government won't find out...but it has to be done all off the books, so that you can get the job done in the proper time limits.

When you then complain to the Labor Review Board that in a Free Market, that this equal Affirmative Action system 'just ain't working out' because you are in fact getting  $\frac{1}{2}$  to  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a 'real' laborer, you are losing money, and you want to hire Gus back anyway's to make-up the difference, you are forced into the same "equal" hiring constraints of hiring a second woman. Soon, you've hired two "Jennettes" and they get along famously passing the book *The Feminist Mystique* and earnestly discussing its social implications on company time.

I'm being somewhat facetious here, but there is a major truth here also. The truth is in the point that the Feminist system of equality, really isn't equality. This equality is just as Bastiat noted earlier, is being used only as a tool, as a crow bar in which to factually implement inequality or even injustice, and establish these unlawful systems by force of "law"...what we now recognize as Feminist Jurisprudence.

[In the large scheme of things, America really didn't need the artificial force of Feminism. We could have gotten along just fine without it. The need's (of past injustices) would have been figured out in the long run. Feminism, 'is something else'. Blacks—for example, didn't get su-

## CHAPTER NINE

per-rights, they didn't overthrow American system of government and laws. Feminism did however..]

### CLINTON

Talk about how Femism has protected criminals

### FEMINIST LIES AND DISINFORMATION

### TAKE BACK THE NIGHT AND OTHER SUBSYSTEMS

Talk about how exigent programs to help women keep on going via lying. Etc.

### DEATHGRIP ON CAMPUSES

If Feminism needed and really a social movement—why have a deathgrip on campuses and the media? Nepotism. Talk about what some professors go through when they dare speak out. Compare to Trotsky and Stalinist regimes.

### INSIDE THE FEMINIST HIVE: YOU WANT THESE AS FRIENDS?

### NEW TURNS FOR THE FUTURE—REFINDING THE ERA

American's and women are turning away from Feminists in droves. Membership laughable.

### LAST PROOF—SEEDING THE PROBLEM FOR FUTURE CROPS.

Judges...Feminism, rates of growth within superstructure—giving drugs away. Abortion: if control—why all illegit births?

Next Chapter: Clinton without a Con is just lint

Talk about evil people, talk about evil ways, evil bedrock from Marx

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER TEN

---

*"The world seems to be progressing, while at the same time; it is moving backwards."* [Casual observation by unnamed Cab driver quoted on the Television show *Debates- Debates* CH25 NYC, Saturday, February, 6th, 1999]

### THE REAL PRICE FATHERS PAY

---

We should start this chapter by reminding the reader that much of the duress of Feminism and what has been wrought against the American male, takes place before divorce or separation. Simply put: that when a male associates himself with a woman, the constant drain of Feminism starts to immediately drain the family from the outset. This is a new social pressure which families have not had to deal with before, like a foreign virus, it is constantly wearing upon, or at any point it can instantly destroy the relationship.

This manifests itself from the beginning; by not allowing both the partners assert their own gender attributes. This unseen social pressure, immediately manifests itself as a constant bias of one of the partners against the other. If men try and 'assume' their own well-defined rolls as the provider, main disciplinarian, and protector within the home—there are leagues of Feminists who will scream that he is subjecting the woman to an eternal slavery of drudgery. Conversely, if he doesn't assume these roles, he may be abusing her. If the woman, however, tries to assert her domestic role as the female, of caring for the house, her man, and her children; she is chastised as not fulfilling some greater destiny, and by her domestication—she is 'somehow' oppressing all women! Listen to what has become classical feminist dogma in regards to marriage and the home:

"I had a sexist husband who thought he was helping me if he did any chores around the house. But I came to realize that I, too, was sexist, for I felt grateful to him for "helping" me. [*Marriage and Family*, 1995-1996, Kathleen R. Gilbert, Editor, ©1995, The Duskin Publishing Group, Inc., Sluice Dock, Guilford, Connecticut, 06437, ISBN 1-56134-363-3; p. 32.]

This insane outside pressure upon the American family is the untenable application of foreign dogma upon a once stable institution. Both men and women whom entered into such an association, were protected from such influences by the stability of the marriage through the empowerment of the Father as the unquestioned leader within the home. Now, this new feminist 'social theory' is blindly set upon the American

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

home—thereby pressuring it to fail--and many succumb to such failure not even knowing or comprehending the impact of its dissonance. Now, we find a complete role reversal within the American culture, while having no idea of the long-term effects of such actions:

Not long ago I attended a child's birthday party and saw an extraordinary sight: While the mothers sat upstairs in the living room, drinking and complaining about their jobs, the fathers were downstairs, jiggling babies on their shoulders, cutting cake, and running the games. Occasionally, a father would emerge to hand off a wailing baby or emptied bottle. Otherwise the party was a perfectly reversed scene from the 1950s, when the fathers would have been the ones upstairs drinking and perhaps watching a football game, if they were there at all.

...This little scene was similar to another I witnessed one winter's afternoon at an indoor children's playground. Although it was a weekday, the place was packed with fathers, dressed in the New Dad uniform of the 1990s: a flannel or cotton shirt, open at the collar, jeans or chinos, and running shoes. They bore their little charges along with great patience, their lilting voices unnaturally high and overly pacifying: "Honey, do you want some Teddy Grahams, sweetie? No? How do we say it? No, thank you. That's a good girl! Now let's... sweetie, sweetie, hold on, I know you're thirsty let's have a juice box. How do we ask for it? Yes, please. That's great, honey!! Now, do you want to go pee-pee? Pee-pee with Daddy?!"

...I know we're supposed to regard this new kind of Dad - and Dad involvement in general - as one of the great modern improvements, like Tetra paks, cellular phones, and the Internet. But whenever I see men like this, I can't help being reminded of the Amazon husbands in Greek mythology, who stayed at home weaving and cooking while their warrior wives went to battle. No doubt these modern men are married to women who are out slaying the corporate world, and bully for them. But they belie the progressive view that we can somehow merge our roles as parents without sacrificing some of the valuable, let alone attractive, qualities of each sex.

...You can see the uneasiness with the man's role, too, on display in the larger problems of fatherlessness and paternal abandonment. Outside the middle class, in which men are willing to be New Dads, there are often no dads at all. Many of today's social ills strongly connect to the absence of fathers in the home, whether it's a teenager's propensity to commit crimes, abuse drugs, get pregnant, drop out of school, or even commit suicide.

Yet it's difficult to speak frankly about the problem of fatherlessness without facing the fact that we have denigrated the importance of fathers as fathers. Indeed, men are often told that they have no special role outside of being surrogate mothers - changing 50% of the diapers and doing 50% of the housekeeping. What men are not being told is that their presence as men is vital. The mother intuitively knows her unique importance to her children - and when she forgets, they let her know. But who is Dad? Why

## CHAPTER TEN

is he important? Today it's hard to say.... [*Boys Should Be Boys, And so should middle-aged men*, Danielle Crittenden, National Post, March 27, 1999.]

The idea; that 'perhaps' male and females are different for a reason: is a sacrilege to Feminist dogma...it is an outright attack on their radical belief systems. Thereby; instead of finding comfort and a cohesive alliance within the disparate gender attributes between male and females, Feminism imposes a new theory that they are in reality, one and the same, and that each separate gender should assume the same 'equal' role's within the home and family. This of course belies a mind-set that approaches that of a cult organization: the man must willingly emasculate himself within his natural job categories within the home, and the female must endanger her natural attributes and subordinate them to the male role. Clearly, this is insanity, and unfortunately; because of government and media—the majority of couples are 'attempting' this idiotic gender juxtaposition—to the consternation of both the family and the internal social relationship within the home. Simply put; a man and a woman should assume their proper, natural roles as a man and a woman in the home and family.

Saying this simplistic truism is absolute heresy as far as the Feminists are concerned. No!!! They will decry. "Men must share in the domestic domain of the family, and women must find themselves outside the home and family!"

This insanity has imposed an outside social pressure to hit the home, and the home and family have not been the same since. Both Couple failures and Family destruction over this outside Feminist social pressure, has waged havoc upon the American home and family. Worse than this, the final product to society, business and industry—has been a fallow one and not the proposed revolution that feminists once envisioned.

To illustrate this I bring up an incident in a past happier time.

My buddies and I decided that we were going to rent a Motorhome and drive it up to the Red Bluff boat drags in 1992. This was a tremendous affair, and there were thousands of people there attending in one great party, behind the dramatic backdrop of racing power drag-boats who dominated this spectacle. Well, to put this mildly, the group I hang with is extremely gregarious group and where ever we wind up, we usually take control of the spectacle at hand, and party like no other group I've seen or been in contact with. We have been thrown out of towns like Carson Nevada, then; invited back in the same day by the same people damning us to leave. Red Bluff was no different.

When we got there on Thursday night, there was already a line of motorhomes all neatly parked to the right of the road that stretched for miles. Literally: miles. We took our place way back in line, then; began our

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

conquest of hedonism. We instantly took out all our toys outside and started playing with them. While hundreds of motorhomes held their people quietly inside each motorhome, we began assaulting our fun in our normal fashion. We had volleyball, baseball and a host of other games and toys set up and were partying pretty hard. Meanwhile, the girls who had come with us, were dutifully cooking dinner inside the motorhome while we (Both boys and girls) played outside. There was no sexism here...just fun. Everyone just 'assumed' their responsibilities...and that was that.

Soon, we noticed hundreds of people were slowly gathering around our play-games. Like little kids they wanted in. So, we let all these people join in our games and the fun began in earnest. We played like this for approximately an hour and a half, having hard competition and a lot of fun; along with a continual flow of the Kegs we had brought with us—everyone was having a ball. Suddenly, out of nowhere, the girls from within our motorhome called us: "Dinners Ready!"

"Awww...." went about one-hundred people.

We apologized and dutifully went in like little kids to eat. The girls had prepared a wonderful meal for us and we ate again; until we noticed person after person still milling-about aimlessly outside. All our toys were still outside, but instead of playing with them, they patiently waited for us to finish dinner. We were enjoying a satiating meal, until one-at-a-time, by their own childish petulance...about every fifteen minutes a person would poke his head high enough above the window for us to see only their nose and eyes and they would pleadingly say: "Can you guys come out to play!?!?"

"No—no—we're still eating," we'd politely replied back several times.

Soon we finished though and went outside and rejoined the now burgeoning crowds who knew where the fun meter was. We played outside until it was way too dark, then invited everyone inside (those who could fit) to party inside our motorhome.

We had a group of about 30 people, then; maybe 20 that stayed with us until about 4AM in the morning, where, by the end of our party—we were letting everyone "gator" (dancing wildly) on our 2x3 foot table one after the other (it was mandatory, everyone had to do it), all night long with one song blaring over-and-over the whole time: Aretha Franklin's "RESPECT."

Morning came. I awoke with surprisingly no discombobulation—although a funny taste in my mouth did persist--and woke to a urgent pounding on the outside walls of the motorhome.

"Hey!" about 15 people screamed at us. "The motorhome line is moving!!!" they said urgently. "Wake up! You got to move along with us!!"



## CHAPTER TEN

I looked around and saw, from what used to be a neat and ordered environment—the worn torn city of Lebanon. Bodies were randomly placed over a battlefield strewn with dead bodies, beer-cup's, and the assorted flotsam of trash, clothes, arms, legs, all strewn about, the casualties of what attended the skirmish the night before...Oh...the *humanity*.

"Come-on!!!" they yelled urgently outside. "You're being left behind!!!" as motorhomes now past us on our left.

We searched frantically for our keys—but the attending conflagration the night before made any search impossible by the mess strewn all over the floor. The dead as well as the living among us were pushed over in their sound sleep in which to frantically locate these keys. Somehow we got caught up in the urgency...but then realized...hey! There's no need to hurry. Most of our crew were just meeting a bright new morning, waking up off the floor, blinking and sucking the film off their teeth from the night before. A few "who are you?" could be heard sleepily coming from throughout the cabin...

We then shrugged and told the people outside we couldn't find our keys and "sorry" you'll just have to leave us behind..." However, they were undeterred. There was massive disappointment until one guy said: "You're not getting away from US!!!" and frantically began pushing our motorhome to catch up with their column ahead. Soon others joined him. We could see this was the only game in town so, assuming our rightful roles as the party elite, we searched for and finally found our keys and rejoined the cadre of motor homes that were screaming for us to join them.

I relate this story to the reader because it has a point, a message to which relates to the gender differences between men and women. Our place was a complete disaster. It was getting high use and traffic, and we were in a battleshort party conditions of partying until everyone lost at least 40% of their brain stem function.. After that, THEN we'd clean everything spotless. Like we always did many times before.

Well, when we woke up—this one girl—who'll we'll name "Marcy", just couldn't stand it. She was a petite and very beautiful woman, and politely said: "This motorhome is a mess." Those who still had higher functioning cognitive abilities agreed.

But we didn't do anything about it. All those within the motorhome stopped for a second, looked at her in earnest—then we continued whatever trivial functionality's we were formally doing. We could all hear Marcy regularly tell us every hour on the hour: "This motorhome is a mess. We have to clean it."

After the first few times we'd stop, listen to what she said—then just continue on with our daily affairs consisting mostly with having a good time.. By Saturday, we weren't even hearing her anymore. Soon her

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

pleaded cries were ending with: "...and *I'm not going to clean this!*" But her assertions fell on deaf ears.

Finally, by noon that same Saturday, she silently began cleaning up the whole motorhome by herself. No one berated her or chastised her...we could see that this poor woman was fighting a losing battle of over a quarter of a million years of raging gene implantation. She *had* to clean. It was her domestic nesting side, that was an intrinsic part of her, she couldn't help it. Her feminist indoctrination was telling that the clean-up should be 'equal' and a sexless role...that everyone 'should' participate...but a quarter of a million years of gene evolution were telling her something different. After a robust cleaning session (which never-ended the whole weekend...she just cleaned and cleaned and cleaned) we no longer heard her say another word about it. In fact, she was happy about finally being able to clean.

Now we men (and some woman also) were not 'abusing' Marcy by not helping her clean. This wasn't some sexist battle that would eventually wind up in some faceless court with a battery of counselors and psychologists reading a panorama of psychotherapy postulates as to why we wouldn't help her, that we were 'discriminating' against her. No! The time of the moment told our cogent side that in getting away from the drudges of daily life (cleaning being one of them) and having good food and good drink along with pleasant people and mindless fun at hand, that putting Windex on a motorhome window was way, way down on the "food chain" of things to do.

We didn't hate her for cleaning or complaining that the motorhome was messy. Everyone just was living the moment—and in all truth—if she didn't clean one thing, that would have been okay. No one would have had an accident, the same exact weekend would have transpired. We all noted Marcy's intent to want to clean the motorhome. We all saw that she wanted us to all do it. But we all knew that there were better things to do, and we found a little humor (well deserved) in watching her female nesting side win out over her desire to have everyone 'equally' share in the household duties. In the final analysis, she was just a woman who *had* to clean. It was in her nature.

Now this same concept applies within this discussion. Feminist argue that men *must* pick up and clean the house, even if it is against their innate nature or training. Women *must not* clean the house and force their men (just like Marcy) to enjoin in something that *they* might want to do, even though a quarter of a million years of gender genetics is screaming at them to clean the goddamn house!!

This of course creates a dissonance, and social stress within the natural workings of the home...which again...manifests itself in arguments that may have not have occurred if this stupidity was not waged within

## CHAPTER TEN

the American home and family. How many families have been destroyed by this? How many women (or men) have picked up weapons and killed their partners over this issue? We don't know, because no-one is really tabulating these figures on such innocuous things. However, it is safe to say, that this is a low level, needless stress within the home and 'just perhaps' we should leave the home free enough for the people within it to assume their own god given talents and apply them to their own proper roles!

Our belief is also confirmed by several findings of a recently concluded long-term study of married couples: (1) husbands "who do more household tasks are less satisfied with the way the tasks are distributed," and this division of tasks "is associated with declines in their love for their wives"; (2) the "more fathers in dual-earner marriages are involved in child care, the more negativity in the marriage," and those fathers "who report more negative interaction tend to be less satisfied with the division of child care tasks and also tend to be less in love with their wives"; and (3) the extent to which husbands who are the sole breadwinners are involved in child care is unrelated to the amount of negativity toward their wives, and "the more single-earner fathers are in love with their wives, the more (rather than less) involved they are in child care and leisure activities alone with their children."

That mothers provide daily care for their children is in the interest of those men who would resist the feminist effort to refashion into mother-substitutes, a role for which men are usually well-suited. It is in the interest of those children who would have both a father and a mother, each filling different roles, and who would be spared the day care and surrogate mothering that can be a source of misery and are likely to be inferior to care at home from a competent and contented mother. And it is in the interest of those women who could find a motherhood that is unencumbered by marketplace commitments to be an incomparable joy. [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Carolyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Suite 450, Dallas, TX 75202, ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; p. 25-26.]

Above and beyond this is the fallacy, that woman don't want to do these domestic chores, or to be wives and homemakers. I'm not saying that I'm such an anachronistic Patriarch that I want to return to a time where women were chained to a bucket and mop—no. I am pointing out that the nesting side of woman, gravitates to such duties and, **that that is not such a bad thing after all...** In fact, I was listening to a television show while I was writing this book, (I usually keep it on for background noise), and I could hear a woman say I believe it was on the Oprah show, that she *enjoyed* doing the dishes. That doing them, in the soapy suds, doing the repetitive movements *calmed her down, and gave her time to think*. Now...ask me if doing the dishes would calm me down. Ask the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

whole male population of the United States, or the world for that matter—and most certainly, *to the greatest degree*, the men will not come to the same conclusion in which this woman freely admitted on national TV. Now the question remains; would *most woman* make the same observation this woman did? *Perhaps they would*, because I contend, it is in their nature. Not only that, an ever growing amount of women, are beginning to ‘rediscover’ the home, family values, and their contentment within their assuming that role. We must poignantly look to the bedrock of feminism to qualify the success of removing women from their proper function, and allowing them to embrace the joys and freedoms of manhood:

That *Time* [magazine] would have women trot forward on life’s journey constrained by the blinders of feminist ideology is evident from its failure to question any feminist notion, no matter how silly, or to explore solutions incompatible with the ideology’s script. One of the silliest notions *Time* left unexamined was that young women want “good careers, good marriages and two or three kids, and they don’t want the children to be raised by strangers.” The supposed realism of this expectation lay in the new woman’s attitude that “I don’t want to work 70 hours a week, but I want to be vice president, and *you* have to change.” But even if thirty hours were cut from that seventy-hour work week, her children would still be raised by surrogates, and the norm would continue to be the feminist version of child-rearing that *Time* itself described unflatteringly as “less a preoccupation than an improvisation.”

The illusion that a woman can achieve career success without sacrificing the daily personal care of her children—and expect among the very wealthy, most of her leisure as well—went unquestioned by *Time*. It did not, however, the dissatisfaction expressed by Eastern European and Russian women who had experienced as a matter of government policy the same liberation from home and children that our feminists have undertaken to bestow upon Western women. In what *Time* described as “a curious reversal of Western feminism’s emphasis on careers for women,” the new female leaders of Eastern Europe would like “to reverse the communist diktat that all women have to work.” Women have “dreamed,” said the Polish Minister of Culture and Arts, “of reaching the point where we have the choice to stay home” that communism had taken away. But blinded by its feminist bias, *Time* could only find it “curious” that women would choose to stay at home; apparently beyond the pale of respectability was any argument that it would serve Western women’s interest to retain the choice that contemporary feminism—filling in the West the role of communism in the East—has sought to deny them. [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Carolyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Suite 450, Dallas, TX 75202, ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; p. 10-11.]

## CHAPTER TEN

I can safely say that within the Patriarch community the idea of gender diversity is an important issue to this matter, and the treatise of *lazziese fair* should rule within the home. Leave the home alone. Make it an American construct once again, not communist model as the Feminist intently want it to devolve into. Let the men, be men, and let the women be women...and nature will run its course. Presently, in the Feminist mindset, every woman that 'succumbs' to their genetic disposition is an enemy to all women! This is an incredible psychological barrier and weight to the inner workings of the home and family. Indeed, you see this displayed by men actually going out and buying false breasts so that they might 'emulate' motherhood. What intrinsic psychological stresses and pathologies is this placing on the home, and more importantly, our children?!?

Isn't the model of the two parent family, with male and female gender differences have some value to young forming minds that might *need* that imprint to properly grow and become a normal valued citizen?? Doesn't the fact that I'm a man have value and worth in as much as *not cleaning the house*, and *not taking care of the kids*, just as valuable as my contribution of fixing the car, or painting the house, or moving the furniture? Even going to a bar, and watching and playing sports may have this intrinsic weight.

Yes, I believe everyone recognizes that women *can move furniture*. But they don't do it as good as most men. I also recognize that men *can breastfeed*, (with artificial or even hormonal help), but they can't do it was good as women...

This reality of assuming ones own station in life was well recognized not only by our Founding Fathers, but the ancients as well. It was also recognized to have a relationship between individuals, their freedom and their government.

### Confucius and Confucianism

Social Reform—Misgovernment and the attendant political disunion, tyranny, welfare, poverty and plague were the main causes of people's plight. The King was just a puppet in the hands of the Lords, who, having inherited their position, were not interested in good government.

To cure these ills, Confucius devised a profound social and political reform. First of all, "Let the Prince be Prince, the Minister the Minister, the Father the Father, and the son, son" each bearing his responsibility (L. 12:11) Though he despised the King and his theocratic title "Son of Heaven," Confucius could not advocate their elimination without jeopardizing his own mission. Hence, he would reduce the King to a status of a figurehead: "To practice noninterference and have the state well administered—Shun was such a one. What did he do? Nothing, but mind his own business and manage his royal household."" (L. 15:4)

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Confucius championed a unified country under a central government whose executive power would be invested in the ministers appointed by the King on the basis of honesty and ability. Indeed, "He who governs by virtue [moral and intellectual power] is like the north star that is fixed while all the lesser stars turn around it." (L.2:1) [*Confucius and Confucianism*, New Catholic Encyclopedia, Volume IV Com to Dys; ©1967, by the Catholic University of America, Washington, D.C., Library of Congress Catalogue Card Number 80-84921; p. 161.]

These were self-evident truths, and just like today where we have Hillary and her Socialist elite embedded throughout government on their requisite feminist religious avocation rather than ability; we now have a clerical government class, which are most certainly not interested in good government. They are only interested in keeping their own power base, and securing their 'daily bread.' Most certainly, the function as noted by Confucius, that those within a society assume their proper roles—*by ability*—was a powerful concept even back then. No longer do we as a society believe in these concepts, as the Feminist are intolerant towards such self-evident truths.

Clearly, the feminist would have a whole American society deny these basic human facts in order to impose a social agenda with social experimentation whose real effects upon society nobody really knows nor have they quantified. What if all the mass murderers in this society were breast fed by their fathers instead of their mothers and thereby that imprint initiated a series of other thought processes that created monsters? Can we disprove this?

We know this, that *most* mass murderers come from *fatherless* household's...so this issue I present here not only has merit, it has importance. Feminist want to deny this importance of the ying and yang between the disparate and different functions between the male and female within each home. Nobody, and I mean nobody within the realm of these experts (that I know of) has negatively asserted or refuted the Feminist premise of gender equality within the home.

I feel as such that such equality within the home is wrong. It is inefficient only by the fact that it takes the best gender suited for the job out of his or her natural job function, but also in the fact that stepping outside these duties may imprint some unseen disaster that cannot be quantifiably proven. Maybe, just in contravention to Feminist doctrine and dogma; there is a structure between male and female and just maybe by the law of nature men are supposed to rule over women and just maybe women are suppose to be subordinate to men and maintain the home by doing chores. Just 'maybe' Marcy was right in the final analysis by 'just cleaning the goddamn motorhome' while we partied. I don't know—for I, like the taxicab driver quoted above and everyone else, know and recognize that

## CHAPTER TEN

something is terribly, terribly wrong within the home; and it stems directly from Feminism.

This nature of the male and female is best exemplified not only by what many have seen by countless other 'Marcy's' nesting needs, but also in the realm of the apes.

Jane Goodall who has done extensive work in observing the behavior of the Apes in Africa had noted an event that speaks to this issue. She had been studying a close knit loving family of these Apes and had come to love the great "Silverback" the prevalent alpha of the pack who was the leader of that group.

She then went one day to begin her studies, and to her horror, the pack was missing. When she later found them they were in distress, and XXX was missing. They later found him, dead, killed by poachers.

Her analysis of the scene showed that XXX had cogently let the pack run forwards into safety, while he knowingly turned and sacrificed himself and faced the poachers to where they brutally murdered him and decapitated him. This was a cogent act done by the male, and not the females within that group. It was a great tragedy, even I feel some discomfort in writing about it here, but it does exemplify the fact, that unlike a mindless social theory, there are intrinsic gender differences between the male and female, and both the male and female will act out those differences, even to the death.

Such realities infuriate the Feminists; because their doctrine defies nature. Their doctrine says that a woman can go out and be a soldier, and just as good a soldier as a man—when by nature—we all know this to be false. What Pandora's Boxes the Feminist have unwittingly opened by playing this game of 'equality' upon the American society; when the exact opposite is true, we are just beginning to realize and have yet to receive the full accounting of their damaged made upon this society. "Things' aren't right." And we can quantify the reasons why as they relate to the true differences between male and female.

This sophistry, has allowed women into the panorama of the American experience, while, at the same time, burdening the male with atrophy. In taking a woman and 'making' her a carpenter—you have stopped a male from becoming one. By making a woman a soldier, you have helped the enemy who doesn't have the associated position filled by a woman. By making a woman the man within the family, you have removed the father from his rightful role. This effect has burdened society, it has raged havoc upon the men, and the Feminist know it. More importantly, the government knows this as well, and is directly profiting from the resulting anarchy.

This effect has caused many underclass women to declare outright "*I don't need a man!*" Of course they don't because they embrace femi-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

nism, which in turn places her ghetto tribal society "into that of slaves and animals." Most particularly, animals: as all this woman really needs is a sperm donor, which she most certainly finds because that is what the Black male for the most part in these societies, has been relegated to. The American society has seen illegitimate births explode because of these perversions in establishing sophistries which drive civilized mankind into a state of animal herds. Yet, men are chastised and prevented from fighting these perversions when they dare attempt to assume their normal function as a man. If a man tries to control his woman or his home, such as in the Black model of the ghetto, then; he is arrested for doing so. He is forced out. Suddenly, the courts get involved. All the government will allow him to do is to talk, and not to have any real control or authority within his own home, especially his money card. If he denies the woman that, then he is imprisoned.

This has factually created a state of anarchy and resultant slaves within this society. Government could care less about allowing men to have their children follow the condition of that father, that of freemen. Government's main enemy is the freeman, for it is the freeman that controls and owns his property, it is he who keeps it and distributes it to his family. To create a freeman, you must create a sentient sovereign individual, which in turn breeds a nation of freemen—and between a nation of men and slaves, all despotic, and power hungry government's will choose the herd of the slave masses every time. Because such slaves can be easily controlled, they can become slaves to the state, and they can accrue more wealth to such governments than those who have the intelligence of self-determination to stand on their own independently by themselves.

Because herd and slaves are harvested for their labor and for profit, and not to institute freedom.

## HEALTH ISSUES

---

In the social sciences, the facts are incontrovertible that married life, the union of a man and woman in a state of matrimony is the best condition for both them, and their children.

Men *and* women who live outside the state of marriage have higher rates of disease and death. With just men alone, the combined effects of Feminism along with the social pressure of a malevolent government has in fact, taken a huge toll directly against men's health:

Men die younger than women on average. The life expectancy of men born in the United States in 1975 is 68.7 years, compared to 76.5 years for women—a difference of 7.8 years. The difference between men's and women's life expectancies had increased over the century. In 1900, they were 46.3 and 48.3 years respectively, and differed only by 2 years. (Har-



## CHAPTER TEN

rison 1976). [*They Myth of Masculinity*, by Joseph H. Pleck, ©1981, The MIT Press, Cambridge, MA, ISBN 0-262-16081-1; p. 150.]

Here are more statistics from Andrew Kimball, in his book: *The Masculine Mystique, The Politics of Masculinity*.

- Though few are aware of it, men life expectancy has propped dramatically as compared with women's over the last several decades. Due to a variety of causes including accident, suicide, disease and stress, far too many men are dying ahead of their time. Through 1920, the life expectancy of males and females was roughly the same. Since that time, and increasingly in the 1970's and 1980's, the gap between genders has widened. Now women are expected to out-live men by approximately seven years. Currently African American men have the lowest life expectancy of any population group (64.6 years). White males have a lower life expectancy (72.9 years) than do African American women (73.8 years) or white women (79.6 years). During the last 30 years the ratio of male mortality to female mortality has increased in every age category.
- The toll on the mental health of Fathers is high. The suicide rate for divorced men is four times that of divorced women, and higher than that of other men. Divorced men also have higher rates of drug and alcohol abuse and depression than single married men, or single, married or divorced women. [*The Masculine Mystique, The Politics of Masculinity*, by Andrew Kimball, ©1995, Ballantine Books, New York, ISBN 0-345-38658-2; pp.4-11.]

However, those men who have been forced from their own homes, and disenfranchised and attacked and ruined by the state, are exponentially at higher risk. Cancer, heart attacks, and other stress-related deaths across the board go off scale exponentially when this injustice is burdened on them. These men, have merit for a class-action suit to be filed against all counties and states and federal government's whom have collectively burdened these men into disease. Again, because the male has become inconsequential within the Welfare state, no studies have been done on men whom have been unjustly attacked by these issues. However, studies must be done, for talks are already being commenced in regards to bringing a class-action lawsuit against the government in regards to this issue.

What we are speaking of here is about anywhere from 35-40 million men being possibly eligible for a class of men who have been damaged by this system in the cost range of anywhere from \$25,000 to \$500,000 each *or higher* as, both health and legal costs spiral upwards. This is a probable settlement cost of \$20,000,000,000,000 dollars. More money than there is in each and every government liable, to be placed against those government's because of the ravages of war that they have need-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

lessly waged against men; all in order to pursue an Anti-American Feminist program within our own nation.

Now, as we know, the courts will never allow this justice. As we intimately know these corrupt regimes, there job is to protect government at the cost of everything; to them, justice, responsibility, and accountability are 'old laws' and 'old concepts' that will be dismissed in routine order. However; unfortunately, they are facing a potential of 40 million men, and their message and highlight of this issue upon the American consciousness will bring this nation to a conflagration of issues that may destroy the Judiciary as we know it, for the terms and conditions of this silent war which has unjustly persecuted Fathers is going to become a pre-eminent issue for this society to face. It is going to make the shame and outrage of past health issues like Environmental contamination and Agent Orange look like a small Public Relation snafu's in comparison. This class action suit brought against the government due to its unlawful imposition of foreign and private law of Feminism and Socialism will be a watershed within the next ten years.

But there is even a larger indictment against those who have propagated this needless war against men, in regards to men's health issues.

In 1967, two researchers named Holmes and Rahe's did a study on stress analysis and quantified certain stressor's within our life, and developed what they labeled as the Life Change Index. They published these findings in *The Journal of Psychosomatic Research*, in 1967, Volume II.

What they did was to simply extract certain events within our lives, like moving for instance, then test a sample of people to quantify the actual stress involved in moving, and build a chart to where you could start adding up these Life Stressor's in your life. This Life Change Index could be then taken by anyone and used to indicate how what relationship their stress had against their health.

Well, in 1998 when we were down in Anaheim California protesting against the "Fathers Rights Summit" held by the California Department of Health and Human services—I attended one conference which directly dealt with this perverse fraud and how it relates to men's health, in which one of the speakers actually addressed this Life Change Index, and how it related to Fathers and Child Support issues, and most strikingly; what it did to Fathers when they were placed into Jail. The results of his analysis using Holmes and Rahe's Life Change Index; was staggering.

Here is the Index, so you too can add up the effects of this government war against men:

### **LIFE EVENTS**

---

Put a tick against the events you have experienced during the last 12 months, then turn to page 198 to check your list against the scores for

## CHAPTER TEN

each item. Write your score in the box for each item and then add up the scores. Write your total score. [**Note:** I have entered the individual weights in each box by each category. RLCII]

Death of Partner 100	Child leaves home 29
Divorce 73	Trouble with in-laws 29
Separation from Partner 65	Outstanding personal achievement 28
Jail sentence 63	Wife begins or stops work 26
Death of a close family member 63	Child begins or ends school 26
Injury or Illness to yourself 53	Change in living conditions 25
Marriage, (Your own) 50	Change of Personal habits 24
Given the sack at work (Lost Job) 47	Trouble with Boss or Employer 23
Reconciliation with partner 45	Changing in working hours/conditions 20
Retirement 45	Change in residence 20
Ill health in member or family 44	Child changes school 20
Pregnancy, your own 40	Change in recreation 19
Sexual problems/difficulties 39	Change in church activities 19
Addition of new family member 39	Change in social activities 18

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Change in financial state 38	Take on a small mortgage or loan 17
Death of a friend 37	Change in sleeping habits 16
Changes to a different type of work 36	Change in number of family get-togethers 15
More arguments with partner 35	Changes in eating habits 15
Take on a large mortgage 31	Holiday 13
Mortgage or loan foreclosed 30	Christmas (coming soon) 12
Change in responsibilities at work 29	Minor violations with the law 11

### EVALUATION [Page 198]

---

Your risk of illness during the next two years if you score 300 or more is 80%. For a score of 150-299 it is 50%; for a score of 100-149 it is 30%. Less than 100 indicates no change in risk.

Well, this gentleman who was speaking, showed us this list and stated that men who were incarcerated due to child support 'civil' violations got a score of over 400! When of course I added this up, my total came to 680. I think most men adding their Life Change Index are in fact coming up with similar scores. What this means is, as the speaker at this conference highlighted—was that such scores tended to lead to debilitating health—even death!

Of course when the speakers finished and started taking questions, I was the first one who raised my hand. I pointedly asked that gentlemen and all within the room, "How can you people justify your existence by destroying fathers and incarcerating them for a debt, when you are fully aware of these facts and figures that you are both civilly *and physically* killing them, or at minimum, *permanently ruining* their health? How can you do this when you know this is intentional killing *for profit*, for the most part, poor men—by placing them into prison for no crime?!?"

"How does that help anyone?" I said finishing.

## CHAPTER TEN

This gentleman, who was most certainly was paid well to speak at this tremendously well-funded trade-show, was visibly embarrassed. "I can't answer that question." He flatly informed me trying to drop this bomb as quick as possible. I could sense that everyone in the room was momentarily devastatingly ashamed. But it didn't last. Because they were a part of the Krell Machine and really didn't care. They'd all continue working in their slave-trade industries, pulling down considerable salaries, eternally burdening the taxpayers to: "Save the Children." Every single one of these people resides safely within the Fourth Box, safely away from all impact and consequences of their tyranny, unlike those of us who live in the First Box, and are forced to suffer such as the impacts of the "Life Changes" test above. (See "Fourth Box" discussion in Chapter Six).

These perverse facts and figures which display the actual injustice being burdened only against men to sustain this needless Welfare war against them, is paralleled by facts and statistic's which sent men into the same conditional state that now this war does.

- The millions of American male veterans who have returned home from war with broken bodies or minds have been grossly neglected. One in three American men is a veteran. The toll of war and our national neglect of these men has been high. Fifty thousand Vietnam War veterans are blind, and 33, 000 are paralyzed. It is estimated that nearly 100,000 Vietnam Veterans have committed suicide since the end of the war, almost twice the number of men killed in battle. Researchers also estimate that 20 percent of all Vietnam Veterans and 60 percent of combat veterans were "psychological casualties." With the first decade after the war, a presidential review found that 400,000 Vietnam Veterans were either in prison, on parole, on probation or awaiting trial. Now 25 percent of the men in prison are Vietnam Veterans. Furthermore, on any given night an estimated 271,000 of the nation's veterans are homeless. Adding insult to injury, government reports show a shocking lack of adequate hospitalization and mental health facilities to veterans. [*The Masculine Mystique, The Politics of Masculinity*, by Andrew Kimball, ©1995, Ballantine Books, New York, ISBN 0-345-38658-2; p. 10.]

Of course that war was at least understood as war. Presently, Fathers are involved in a larger conflagration, and they are suffering the exact post-shock trauma which Vietnam Veterans suffered through. Yet, they are unable to connect the two, that the effects of this war are presently debilitating their health, and concurrently that it due to outright war made against *them* which is causing it. The real tragedy is that if you take these staggering statistic's above and apply them to the present state of fatherhood, you won't get similar statistics—you'll get statistic's on aggregate orders *higher* than you would for men during the Vietnam war. This

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

marks the point of what the feminist have criminally done against Fatherhood, is again, beyond a treason—what we are addressing here are crimes that align themselves to crimes against humanity itself. Clearly, men have become an ‘indicator species’ as to the alienation of their own society:

*Suicide*, the famous study by Emile Durkheim, published in 1897, revealed the fact that people do not commit suicide simply because of mental health problems: suicide also has social causes. Society to which people have a strong sense of belonging show the lowest rates of suicide; as the norms governing social order disintegrate, suicide rates increase. [*Absent Fathers, Lost Sons, The Search for Masculine Identity*, by Guy Corneau, ©1991, Shambhala Publications, Inc., Horticultural Hall, 300 Massachusetts Avenue, Boston, MA 02115; ISBN 0-87773-603-0, p. 84.]

### A MAN NAMED SISSY

---

The palladium of external stresses and outright persecution being placed against men by modern Feminism has embodied itself within a new aberrance within the male gender itself. Because of the intense pressure by feminists, government and media against men assuming their proper roles as men and fathers—we have now observed a rising skew of identity within the male gender itself. It is a complete displacement of the male which is being forced by unseen feminist social pressure, to devolve into something else.

Men are no longer becoming men. The incidence of sex change operations and transvestitism has exploded. Ranging from the benign homosexual excursions to full operative transsexuals. Cross-dressing and other aberrations most exemplified by Dennis Rodman and ‘shock-jock’ radio talk-show host Howard Stern.

“When a man sleeps with a modern women, he actually get into bed with all her lovers. That’s why there are so many homosexuals today, because modern man is sleeping spiritually with countless other men. He constantly wants to excel in sex because he knows that his partner is comparing him to the others. This is also the cause of impotence, from which so many suffer. They’ve transformed sex into a marketplace with competitors. Today’s man must convince himself that he is the greatest lover and that Casanova was a schoolboy in comparison. He tries to convince the female, too, but she knows better.” --**Issac Bashevis Singer** [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Carolyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Suite 450, Dallas, TX 75202, ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; p. 204.]

This follows the corollary of identity, just as government does not want freemen so they can more easily control society, Radical Feminists do not want men so they can more easily control the family. A recursion

## CHAPTER TEN

of this corollary is that men are becoming less and less men. For factually, neither the present Government nor the Radical Feminists really want men in their monopolized systems. They want something more compliant, more controllable which will not inhibit their social experiment (and especially their profits). Unfortunately, they are getting their wish.

This is a willful project imposed by both feminists and government in which to control males within the American population. No longer are such aberrance's of transsexualism and perversion subject to social condemnation or persecution. No. In the modern Radical Feminist society, such perversions are openly advertised and tolerated so that the destruction of the male can be complete. The mainstream media in order to capitalize on this sensationalism openly markets and distributes such perversion against the male icon. Indeed, government imbibes in these same conferences by introducing this perversion into the mindset and programs of the institutional learning systems or school settings, teaching such things as lesbianism, gay and homosexual life choices, and imposition of "tolerance" in accordance with the doctrines of Radical Feminism. This perverted mindset, then causes or at least greatly contributes to the impending causes of perversion that then leak over into the home, family and most certainly; the male.

The resultant anarchy from the inappropriate models between these two doctrines, one based in perversion and sexual freedom, and the other based on American precepts of the Judeo Christian moral ethic, wage wars and anarchy and other pathologies within the mind of the American public and most certainly the male. This leakage of government endorsed tolerance towards those basic precepts of perversion and excess which foundationally are discordant with the American Christian model of social order create conflagration within the mindset of individual American's. They create paradox.

Thereby, a growing number of American's lose in trying to analyze this intellectual paradox that is presented to them, and thereby devolve to the inspiration of the easiest model to assimilate with is the one of the lowest common denominator. This of course, entails many of them who do not have the intellectual acumen to abstractly analyze these perversions, to devolve into the excesses and allowances of lowest common order: the natural state. They go the path of least resistance, and thereby devolve to the natural order or state which is Matriarchal order—the lowest common denominator of mankind—the most base, which allows these perversions of the lowest order of animals and slaves to proliferate. The society is thereby indoctrinated to these perversions by the admission or tolerance of such perversions by the guardian of the civilized community:

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

the government. This is eminently paradoxical, because government as the guardian of the civilization; is supposed to not allow these things.

This is why we see the leakage of Matriarchy within those who have devolved within its ranks. We see those who instead of abstractly reasoning and restraining themselves from such perversion or immorality, upon such qualifying veneration and outright legal protection of Government, Feminists through the embodiment of the State, they allow themselves to lose their resistance to resist the perversion, and thereby they succumb to its immoralities, verifying its natural order of what Adam Smith called: a base and disgusting condition of civilization". It takes discipline, and the higher-order of abstract reasoning inculcation's imbued to the keepers of morality to recognize that to have an advanced civilization or an ordered society, that anarchy cannot reign—that there is a price to pay for each of our individual actions against the whole of society. Many who have devolved to this lower state of consciousness, verify their perversions and immorality by recognizing that the predilection is innate yet it is a discontinuity within the American civilized society, and thereby prohibited. Those like a man named Sissy, have devolved to the lower order and because of this establish elaborate legal or social theories and circular theology which again reaffirm their 'right' to such a 'natural' lifestyle, all without the final incursion to the real impacts of their morality. They intentionally skip over the pragmatic long term impacts on the whole of civilization.

This is why we see the sexual confusion raging within both males and females of our species. The pressure of opening the Pandora's Box of admission to immorality, has allowed those people the veneration of the feminist and government supplied social pressure which grants privileges of this society into the continued devolution: to that of slaves and animals. The male however; it the most important part which catalogues the depth of this perversion as he is an indicator species within society that adumbrates the health of not only the family, but the society (civilization) as a whole.

Unfortunately, this leakage has now created men like a man named Sissy. He is devolving to the innate messages society is giving him.

Here is a man who in a mid-western conservative town, 'snapped' one day, and just started wearing women's' clothes. This same exact problem occurred with a minister in England, who suddenly, in defiance of the morality within his own church started doing the same thing. They are not gay, they just wear women's clothes and have no idea why.

Why such men at such times?

The reason is because of the disparate morality messages that the American society is communicating to men are causing these men to 'devolve' into a lower ordered state of sexual identity, sexual regression and



## CHAPTER TEN

sexual confusion. Devolving into these states is easier than maintaining sexual discipline for these people. This is now being seen throughout the United States and Westernized World where feminism is having huge impacts upon unsuspecting people within it who have no idea what is happening to them. They can't even begin to articulate it, and thereby; they blame it on genetics, or some other tribally secured maladies.

The man named "Sissy" and men like him cannot articulate why they are doing this. All they can really say is: "that it feels right". These men are willing to risk themselves and their families in order to devolve into the lower order. In fact, they cannot help themselves. I suspect they think they are being free, or they are filling a genetic requirement or message that their brain is supposedly seeking. They are wrong.

This devolved state of Sissy I believe, is due to the psychological miscegenation and social pressure that has been presented to his subconscious by the implementation of Radical Feminism in this nation. Radical Feminism has inculcated a belief that all men are bad, that all men are abusers, that they hate men, and that men are not needed. This has found expression within the society by actions and support of the present government. The government through their propaganda arm of the media widely disperse this mindset upon the society. These new feminist ideals which are in direct discordance with American civilization and religious and moral thought, causes the social pressure which becomes an unsolvable paradox within the average mind. The imbedded message and inculcation of such truism's along with the realization that society, because of government's outright refusal to enforce morality, allow the augmentation of the Feminist primal mindset to evolve. This augmentation is an affirmation, and with the affirmation comes a realization of no negative reinforcement by and through society by government such aberrant behavior. Essentially, everyone is being told that they are 'free' and under feminism, this means no responsibility. Once this process sets in the paradox becomes circular until the primal release of the lower ordered mind rises from the paradox. Thereby such men as Sissy, devolve, because their minds cannot solve the paradox between the two disparate sets of Radical Feminist Doctrine within an ordered moral state or civilization. In this paradigm, the ordered moral state will lose virtually every time, because it is the mindset of the highest most difficult abstract thought processes. Whereas the Radical Feminist Doctrine emulates the 'free' tribal state. This condition does not take any thought processes, it only takes a wish, or an enticement.

This abstract thought process is difficult, as Marshall McLuhan intimated, it is looking to our future through a windshield using the rearview mirror. This type of analytical reasoning ability uses a higher coefficient of difficulty in reasoning. Those who do not use, refuse to use, or ignore

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

this process, cannot 'get it' why men don't wear woman's clothes; thereby they will devolve into the less ordered state of aberrance which we now see manifesting itself within the males of our population. The underlying paradox between Feminists imposition of Matriarchy upon the more higher order Patriarchal American system is tearing it down male by male.

Therefore, those males who have succumbed to the devolution of the natural state now are displaying these immoral (or anti-Patriarchal) qualities. This is why we have men like Sissy, (and we will have more and more like him in the future), this is why we see rape, destruction of the both male and female within our society, because the Patriarchal order is being torn down through the privilege of government and the feminist allowing the perversions to exist openly in direct defiance to the male Patriarchal model. These perversions of course, are in turn benefiting government in which those resultant pathologies are creating industries within the Krell Welfare Machine it has established to allow these aberrations and immoralities to exist in the first place. Thereby, men; without the direction and civility with which Patriarchy imbues them with, and conforms them to the terms of their morality—are lost as a species. As we see from the ghetto Welfare Class subculture, the males are in reality, 'not needed'—and have no definable role that they inherit by default under Patriarchy. Thereby, with no definable role; they drift into the lower order as Matriarchy has no commission for them except as sperm donors and as attendant slaves to the hive, allowing the greatest part of their wealth to be transferred to the Matriarchal Krell Welfare Machine.

Therefore, with no definable role under the Matriarchal system, males become part of societies problem and pathologies; as their sexual energies are redirected into more base devolution's. This is why Sissy is Sissy, because his place as a father is under attack. For example, he is told that now he *must* be a housewife, that he *must* give up his job to Affirmative action which will hire someone else *lower* or less qualified from him. In replacing males with those lower than his capability, this has a huge social impact on the male psyche. He has been taught by the Patriarchal society to groom himself, to become the best at what he does, and the Matriarchal condition over-rules his investment and replaces him with something lesser than himself. This drags men's psyche down as being less than the lesser for the incongruence within the Matriarchal paradox presented him says that someone better will get his job than him, yet, with someone lesser getting his job—it means lesser is better than he. Therefore, he is lesser than the less that seized his position through Affirmative action.

This paradox weights heavily upon men's subconscious. As being replaced by the better selection of the lesser qualified person in reality,

## CHAPTER TEN

makes him less than the lesser person in his mind. This is again a displacement.

Again these Feminist paradox's are spread across the American experience in order to destroy Patriarchy. The ideals of morality, fair play, justice, formal institutions and hierarchies throughout are culture are being subverted silently by these illogical paradoxes. "The lesser" is replacing "the better." When men rise up to challenge them in court, they are treated harshly, actually inhumanly with abject injustices. So the institutions which provide this American society with stability in which man helped to build, have turned against him. Both Institutional America and Societal America have turned against him, thereby further exacerbating his aberrance. The paradox of paradoxes within the Feminist system however; is that this new system is being oppressed upon him, all for the 'best interests' and in the name of freedom of society. When men look at the insanity this devolution has caused in establishing an absolute police-state within the freer Patriarchal domain he created, again; it is replacing the best with a lesser circular argument...and he watches society devolve as it is replaced with the inferior devolving Matriarchal archetype which is done in societies 'best interests' which is dragging it down further to the tribal state of mankind's lowest-common-denominator ... Matriarchy.

The average mind doesn't comprehend this. It snaps like Sissy did, and just assumes the lowest devolution possible. We could label this "The Hell With It" syndrome. There is safety from paradox in the anarchy of the natural free feminist state, without any of the burdens of morality that a civilized state would impose upon the Citizen. In that civilized state under Patriarchy, there is freedom, but; with a concurrent responsibility attached to it.

These two disparate social models of Feminism and Patriarchy, and their covalent systems of Government, of Socialism and Americanism, impress the convergent paradoxes upon the society and are the cause of social pathologies which cascade into greater and greater pathologies within the society. This cascade creates the failure within one model of Governance to the benefit of the other. The higher form cascades into the lower form and the lower form is imprinting the paradox upon the higher evolved state which causes further cascades. This circular cascade of devolution, assures the Feminists and those who understand what is really transpiring (within the system of the Krell Welfare State), of protection and continued growth of their future industries, which grow in accordance with the breakdown of the civilized state.

This continues until the society reaches the lowest form: the pure tribal state or ultimate freedom. With a massive technological and wealthy state such as America, this takes some time to devolve. But

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

pretty soon, people recognize that "we seem to be progressing while at the same going backwards."

At any time however; this cascade devolution can be stopped, and reversed by and through the affirmation of Patriarchy, or the formed imprint of responsibility and morality within the society, the positive abstracts and discipline's once again take over, and society flourishes.

Like the anonymous cab driver noted above, "As the world seems to be progressing, it is moving backwards at the same time." This is the weight of the inexorable devolution pulling at civilized society. This cab driver, as well as many citizens, clearly recognize that 'something' isn't quite right. They know and can feel the immortal pull from the paradox's that are presented to the normal persons mind. The incongruence of what Feminism is applying by an errant government run by special interests and elite regimes, has diffracted society to where "the law of reason" has been replaced by the law of 'anarchy' labeled under a thousand different monikers: "Equality", "Welfare", "Best Interests" and a host of special code words in which those who are inside the inner sanctum of the Krell Welfare Machine superstructure, fully understand and act upon.

Also failure cascades...also Law of thermodynamics 2<sup>nd</sup> law.

### THE CRYING GAME

---

This is perhaps the hardest chapter to write.

I have suffered personally through this tragedy which was planned against me and other fathers and men, by those whose arrogance and power supercedes their office. As both a Father and a Patriot to my country, from the outset of this disaster within my life, I have met and listened to hundreds if not thousands of fathers who have been humbled, and shamed by this egregious disaster which was planned to ruin them from the start. How anyone could design a law, which intrudes and rips apart the family then; applies not just civil death upon the father, but wages an unholy war against the father, superceding all other laws and penalties of this country and all other nations of the earth? Then they actually make a case, that they are protecting the children when this war, this conflagration has destroyed, and left so many people and especially children in the wake of this destruction?!? How do people go along with this?

Hillary and her elite cabal did it because they are using the interior wealth of the home as a natural resource, which they have laid claim to under the doctrine of *Parens Patriæ*, and by pretended laws and mythological abuse figures, they have knowingly annihilated generations of men. These are men, for the greatest part, simply poor, who are now 'invented' into criminals by very broad and sweeping applications of the law which are patently illegal under our form of government.

## CHAPTER TEN

These supposed criminals never existed before the advent of Radical Feminism and Welfare. Other nations which do not have Welfare, do not have these staggering statistics nor have they created bogeymen out of fatherhood—and imprisoned and civilly killed a huge segment of their population to satisfy Radical Feminism.

I have watched and spoken to fathers who have been desolated to extents of suicide, and self-destruction. I have seen fathers wane away and physically become debilitated and cancerous by the psychological, civil and social pressures and oppression placed on them, as they see their past ex-wives and girlfriends flourish from their criminal acts and court systems which are no more than organized crime syndicates established to allow their crimes to give everyone within it profits and a career. I have seen fathers, good people, who have never been criminals in their lives try and get up and speak, and break down in front of people. I have seen their lives kicked from the innermost portion of their chests. I've seen and experienced myself, these criminals who harbor and gain protection from within this system, laugh; as they arrogantly violate laws—openly—in direct and arrogant view of the public to solidify both their power and abilities above mere mortal men.

I have seen sick fathers, bedridden; be forced from their bed and imprisoned. I have seen a dozen or more Fathers do hunger-strikes at great cost to their lives and their health and safety to protest this foundational injustice; and I have seen the media mostly turn away in silence. I have seen others with shame in their eyes, impose these injustices upon us; then walk with their heads in shame as they leave the court room. Even more insidious, I have seen people within the system, hiss with delight when men go to prison, or get destroyed from this perverted machine. I have watched while police, with a dead countenance behind their eyes, just blindly follow their masters and invoke injustice and crime all under the name of the law, and under full color of authority, when; they knew it was not.

I have seen the insane look from people within the system, actually salivate upon a "Deadbeat Dads" trial. I have met fathers in jail, some, the most common of laborers who cannot even spell the phenomenal amounts of money they owe. I have seen the 'justice' system not file court papers or affirmative defenses—in direct violation of their job orders and oath of office, thereby closing all doors to redress or justice for fathers. I have seen the media pro-actively take part in arrest procedures, to "help" police knock on doors, to give 'false' news interviews in order to lure poor fathers out from their homes so that awaiting police can arrest them, all for the delight of the 11 o'clock news. I have seen District Attorney's like Mike Ramsey, do massive arrests on Fathers day, then arrogantly say we

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

are a 'nation of laws and not of men,' when factually, he is the biggest criminal of them all.

I have asked these fathers, what how they got into this insanity, or what 'contract' makes them liable to this slavery—and to a single man, not one has been able to answer that question. Nor can I.

I can only catalogue the lies and disinformation from the other side of this insanity. I see this willing propagation of lies like President Clinton, giving out false and misleading information, so that their fascist ends justify the socialist means of their criminality, of course all in "the best interests of the child."

This has created a paradox for Fathers, where all their natural acts in the past have not placed them into jail, however; now—their greatest and most basic and powerful act a person can do; to procreate—somehow makes them criminal and establishes government industries. Now, it proactively hunts for their criminality, imbuig special "super-rights" never authorized anywhere within law, to the female; to police; social workers, government; Judges and the courts themselves--while absolutely destroying and denying even the most basic rights of Fathers...Just to be Fathers.

In 13 years, in every court...in every single telephone call and communication I have sent to the Courts, Media, Government President, Legislatures both State and Federal, to the Senate, the Judicial Council and a host of other people, I have only been met with abject silence. They will not answer me and very simple questions. In these communiqués, I have always demanded my child. "Give me my son, get out of my life." Somehow, they don't understand the obvious.

From the theft I originally suffered that began this nightmare, through my two hunger-strikes, to my journey underground—I have belligerently resisted an overwhelming, out-of-control power. Not one single human in this power construct has asked me, my son's only father one simple question: "Can you handle the care and upbringing of your own child without our intrusion?!?" Or even, simply: "What do you want?" Yet I have attempted to demand and communicate this in every court and in every forum in which government offers to me as 'redress'.

All this system has done is to steamroll over me from the first instance this started. It has imposed a fraudulent system against me, planned by unseen regimes, and implemented through our court systems and our State Legislatures. This system which inhaled me, and ruined me and invented me into a criminal (where none every existed before) is destroying **legions** of fathers, generationally. These 'supposed' evil men who only abuse, like myself, who were never in trouble before, who dutifully paid taxes, who got jobs, who played softball, created art, volunteered and went to war to defend this nation—inspired both men and children by their capabilities and goodness: suddenly, by a stroke of the pen—they

## CHAPTER TEN

have become dead. Beyond dead: Civilly Dead. Murdered. Actually—an Imperialist Annihilation. Our sin?

We had children. We demanded them. We stood by them and didn't run. We stand in front of a Leviathan too huge for human comprehension and have categorically stated: "This is my son, I will own him, care for him over the will of the State." The system in its madness for power and to impose Feminism for unseen ulterior purposes, without a hesitation—waged an unjust, unlawful war against a specific gender and destroyed not only me—but millions of fathers. All in the name of the best interests of the child.

Now men sob because the wound is too critical, too unjust. I see men who no longer pay taxes, who refuse to work. Who no longer have companies in the United States. I see men who fought wars honorably, with distinction, past leaders and rising stars, sit sullenly with gaping wounds from their chest. I see them in poor health, some with cancer who are the growing list of dead and missing from this needless war. I see men leaving this country—gladly, rather than try and fight a useless cause, and an overwhelming enemy.

I have witnessed men flee in terror, move completely out of the country. Not only them, but their companies. These men, are no longer men. They have been disenfranchised by a malevolent nation willing to aid in this sophistry. They have pragmatically added up their losses, and look elsewhere for freedom other than their own country. In reply, the government has instead, become even more and more belligerent, even more insolent, even more draconian if that is at all possible. I mean, what's left? What more can they criminalize this?!? Now, State and Federal Lawmakers are passing even more draconian laws against an already decimated male/father populace who cannot fight this beast, who cannot obtain any redress, who only file meekly into court to be warehoused into prisons so that counties and states can be paid Federal monies for warehousing them. We now have a crisis, that is bigger than this nation. One only has to turn to our contemporary media and the scientific journals to understand, that something has gone quite amiss. Scientific Periodicals and research papers have been asking an immutable, embarrassing question for the past five years: "Where are the fathers?!?!" There have been no answers; just a furtive silence.

"I once met a man named Jules who had convinced his friend and even himself that his seven-year-old son was dead because, he said, "It was the only way I could deal with the pain of not knowing him." P.20

"Steve is a former law enforcement officer. I know him now as a big sunny man, gifted as a musician and generous as a friend. I know him to

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

be kind, honest, and gentle—no a man who would leave his children. And yet, like me [author Mark Bryan] he did." P. 23

"Carla is a college-educated single mom of thirty-two. Her son, Nicky, is two and a half years old and does not know his father. His father has chosen not to know him." P. 42

"David, a graying, barrel-chested mountain man, was divorcing after twenty-five years of marriage, having raised two sons and a daughter who was still in high school." P.49-51.

"John is a computer operator who was recently divorced..."After a great deal of arguing, I moved out. Our divorce followed swiftly after that—too swiftly....I did not know how adrift I would feel without my home and my daughter." Pp. 51—52.

"Janine is a nineteen-year-old from Pittsburgh. She is gifted artistically, but her promising professional trajectory is shadowed by her haunted past. When she was six years old, her father left the family and slipped into a deepening alcoholism." P. 59

"Estrangement, of course, is not always the man's fault.

Terry lost his child under very different circumstances. He did not run away; his wife did. While Terry was out of town on a business trip, his wife took their son and left." P. 154

"Gabriel left his wife and two-year-old daughter, Angie, under the worst possible conditions: he ran off with another woman....His wife did not want to see him. What she wanted was a quiet divorce, child support, and good riddance." P. 133

"Martin was the angriest man I ever worked with. He was forty-five years old and the father of four teenage boys when he left his wife in a rage after she confronted him about his drinking....Martin had cut off all contact with his wife and kids, claiming that he was going to stay away from his children as long as they were in communication with there mother." P. 134

"Matthew is a successful thirty-eight-year-old sales manager at a large department store. Five years ago his wife left him because of his drinking." P. 136

"Melinda, a divorced physical therapist, has a fifteen-year-old son, Stephen, whose father has not been in his life since Stephen was three. She says Stephen always wanted his father desperately." P. 141

"Kathy is the young mother of a four-year-old daughter, Peggy, who has not seen her father for several years. Recently, Kathy and Peggy were



## CHAPTER TEN

in an auto accident—a drunk driver swerved in front of them on a street in their small town. Though no one was badly injured in the collision, Peggy was very frightened. As they were waiting for a ride, Peggy started screaming, "Daddy! Daddy!!" Kathy's distress over the accident was doubled by her distress over Peggy's pain." P. 142.

"Bill, a Native American from Arizona who has long black hair and tattoos, looks anything but the devout Christian and Native American Spiritual leader that he is....Four years ago he was married and, for whatever million reasons a marriage doesn't last, his didn't either. It broke Bill's heart when his ex and his daughter moved to California.

His wife and her family made it hard for Bill to visit his child..." p. 145

"Adam a construction worker, learned that he had been routinely characterized to his son as "your father the hippie who never held a real job." P. 152

"When Tony and his daughter, Bethel, were reunited, Tony promised all sorts of things in his excitement at meeting her again...Then Tony's new marriage fell apart, and his financial situation became even more precarious. Unable to keep his promises, Tony let his focus shift from his reunion time with Bethel to his problems finding a new job." P. 155

"Donald was separated from his father when he was just a toddler. His parents went through a very nasty divorce, and his mother's family closed ranks to practically drive his father out of town on a rail." P. 156

"Kevin was eager to be reunited with his son, Kenny, after a ten-year absence..." p. 173

"Barry lived in the city, and his daughter, Annie, lived in the suburbs with his ex-wife. For the first few years after his divorce, Barry lost touch with his daughter, drifting into alcoholism and despair." P. 204.

"Janet, the mother of an eleven-year-old boy, said that every Sunday night when her son returned from his weekend with his father he would go to bed and cry. "I miss Dad," he would say. "Why can't I stay with him?" Janet reassured him that in just five days he and his father would be together again..." p. 205 [*The Prodigal FATHER*, by Mark Bryan, ©1997, Three Rivers Press, a Division of Crown Publishers Inc., 201 East 50<sup>th</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022., ISBN 0-609-80203-8; pages listed after each quote.]

In just relating the documented experiences throughout just *one* book, we can see that the widely held belief that Fathers 'run away' and abandon their children; is just an outright lie. It is beyond myth. What we are

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

factually documenting, and what other such books and research shows, are that fathers are willfully *pushed* or removed from the home by *both government, women and the courts*. Factually, it has been open season on fatherhood for the past 30 years. Out of the compendium of these cases cited above, we can see that for the most part, most of the separations are from unknown reasons. Some are from alcohol abuse (strange how modern marriage cannot work through that minor problem). The mythical, raging, abusive father factually does not exist. For the incredibly *greatest part* fathers are just removed by women who want to dissolve the marriage or find a different, more ‘free’ living arrangements. Of all the men I have met who were Fathers, to a man, each one was pushed out by the court system which immediately civilly killed him or like me, enjoined and allowed the theft of their children to be accomplished by the mother and *then civilly killed them*. Then hunted them for their cash.

To do this however, government needs to pretend laws. So again, for the *greatest part* women lie and make up a mythology of ‘abuse’, which is expanded and even marketed by Feminists and the Government, all to keep their empires fully employed and constantly growing. (Some don’t even lie—they just have the courts kill the marriage.)

So presently, we have a new resurgence from Social Scientists and others, to figure out what exactly happened to fathers, and why they have been missing for ten, and twenty years from their children’s lives.

What I have personally witnessed is the fact that the father is removed by two causes.

First is the woman, who creates an abusive environment for her husband. Like those wives above who invent or exacerbate problems within the home, like alcoholism. I have had a friend personally come up to me and relate that his wife was leveling this charge that ‘he’ was an alcoholic. He, like I, went out usually Thursday, Friday, or Saturday nights. Maybe once or twice a week, but most certainly, not all three nights. Most probably only once a week. I drank cokes, sometimes I might have 3 beers...but NEVER came close to being even remotely drunk. He was the same way. Neither one of us has even come close to being accused of being a drunk by anyone within the community—yet; here his wife was leveling the charges. So we can only conclude, that such charges are being leveled at men by wives for *other* reasons.

Dear O.J.

When I was married my husband and I had a very similar relationship. I said a lot of the same things to the police as Nicole did. But what I didn’t confess, and I believe it is the same in your situation, is that I was as much to blame for the disturbance. Calling the police was more my way of gaining control.

Always in My Thoughts,

## CHAPTER TEN

Tracie Bechke

Cleveland, Ohio [*I Want to Tell You, My Responses to Your Letters, Your Messages, Your Questions*; by O.J. Simpson, ©1995 by Orenthal Productions Inc., Little, Brown & Company, Boston, New York; ISBN 0-316-34100-2; p. 86.]

We can see that my friend was having the first seeds of 'abuse' in-criminations being planted by his wife, for future consideration by a later to be announced government agency. How does a man protect himself? He can't. Especially if the wife is attempting to use this system against him and 'build' a case. And both the Government and the Feminists know this, and expectantly wait to market this planned seed of anarchy which will at some point sprout up and involve this baseless charge. As displayed above in the O.J. Simpson cite, when push come to shove, the female mind will always gravitate to the largest bully she can produce in order to 'gain control' within the home.

The state grooms and carefully markets this control issue. It provides telephone numbers, massive advertising programs, feminist indoctrination in our schools, and a host of other avenues that 'provide' the woman with instant access to the Krell machine to destroy the male. Once that is done—again, the state becomes the ultimate parent and husband within all homes. There are now 'emergency response teams' at-the-ready; just waiting for this women's eventual call. The nano-second a woman en-joins in this activity, the male no longer has ultimate authority within the home. More importantly, upon this intrusion, it most certainly cripples and debilitates *every* decision a man makes within his own home as each and every one he makes "may" or "may not" be second guessed, and scrutinized by a foreign, outside, alien authority. Once this is done, the male can no longer effectively rule nor discipline his own household. Now "experts" rule in the home, and as we can see by over a quarter century of this state sponsored intrusion...anarchy reigns.

How many marriages have been destroyed by this senselessness? We can only guess, but the smallest figure would be in the millions. How many innocent men have been placed into prison due to this power struggle? Again, we do not know the true numbers—but unfortunately, they too must be in the millions.

Government, as well as most women know, are ready, willing and able to support any accusations which can be leveled against any Father. Alcohol abuse, is an 'easy kill' for most prosecutors. Every man is 'guilty' of it. Just going out into any bar, has become possibly a crime that rises to the level that would let any judge destroy the marriage. There are regiments of social workers ready to sign the 'abuse' box from such 'alcohol abuse.' Unfortunately, there are more than just one box of abuse—and the mere accusation is all that is needed presently.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

If you posed this exact same scenario 50 years ago as a valid government function, people would have been shocked, for they would have recognized that such administration of law was too despotic, to open for abuse, too tyrannical, to ripe for corruption. Now...its the common procedure. Where marriages once weathered the disasters of famine, war, disease and pestilence, and a host of other natural disasters—few marriages today can survive the mere acrimonious *allegations* of abuse.

By such sophistries and outright lies, government has established huge business for itself, to where now American children are more subject to divorce than any other malady in society—including disease, war, pestilence, famine or nuclear disaster. Government, allowing women instant gratification of divorce from the Krell Welfare Machine are American's children's greatest danger. Presently, 'abuse' is only being used as a social tool in which to allow women to either gain control the home outright, or to eradicate the male altogether and let the woman enslave him, and thereby 'cash out' the marriage to receive subsidies in which to obtain "freedom."

There are no government programs established to save children from this divorce rate which has exploded exponentially, and which is propagated mainly by women, who love it, and who are greatly subsidized by it. Using the figures in Chapter X, we can see that divorce is killing and wounding more children than *all accidents and natural disasters listed above*. Reestablishing Patriarchy, on a conservative estimate, *could* save over 200,000 children's lives. Yet, feminist and the government do not care about this staggering figure, because they understand these are just consumption figure's for their Krell Welfare Machine, they are the lubrication that gives it substance. These deaths are Hillary's "daily bread", and she could care less about them, because—like the Nazi's of WWII--*its just business*.

Yet, fathers also are annihilated by this perversion. Unlike my situation to where I came home to an empty home where my son was forcibly stolen out of his and my own home—most fathers are *forced out, run out, or thrown out of their own homes*. None of the women in the Mr. Bryan above was noted to say: "When I got home, Gus was just gone—and he never showed up again. He just abandoned us." (\*sob\*)

No, the stories above, demonstrate the fact of Patriarchy, that man is the weakest link within the home. He leaves when either the woman or social forces throw him out. Government fully knows and understands he is the weakest link, and instead of helping the male stay with his family and with the children like all civilized societies do, the state has proactively reversed its Western Civilization heritage in protecting families and children from losing the male, and it has thus capitalized on the destruction of both the home and the male in which to obtain government em-

## CHAPTER TEN

pires. No longer do we see the principles of *Fanning v. Fanning* being applied.

Martin's case noted above, is the most radical case of this, but clearly shows that his wife's continued harassment and confrontation destroyed the marriage and drove him out of the home. Would wives or feminists consider being submissive upon the reality that such acts in supporting and deferring to their husbands would save the home and more importantly, the marriage?!??? Not under the present government supported Feminist model. Because under this present mindset, the marriage is worthless, and it is feminists task to destroy it to allow the female ultimate freedom to 'control her own sexuality' which; will destroy the home, and devolve society—and thereby the 'Village' model will be embraced through the creation of a modern tribal society.

Christopher Robin, owner of the Purple Heart hose in Hollywood California is one such man. He never left his child, but because his wife is politically connected and fully understands that the state will help her destroy him—she has used the system to its limit in which to destroy him and to try and make him homeless. He too, like many fathers has not seen his child in over 900 days. This is a powerful, accomplished, proud man, with a sense of history and heritage. He fiercely wants his child, yet; all the California courts can do with him is to continually harass him and force him to pay more child support. Or to just throw him in jail. Presently, they are demanding that he sell his only home to make back payments to fulfill his 'obligation'. But the larger issue here is: "How did his wife *know and understand that the state would do these actions?* Is there a class in which only women take to access the Krell Welfare Machine?

They have no care or consideration that he will be homeless upon him being forced to sell his only home. To satisfy the Roman lust to watch yet another father fall upon his own sword is part of the empire that has embraced these radical enclaves of Feminist thought, and outright treason within the District Attorneys offices and our nations courts. Mr. Robin has to provide for his own destruction; or—he goes to jail again, and again, and again. This is American progress which has left 40% of this nations children without a father, and scientific journals and periodicals frantically asking the question: "Where are the Fathers?!?" More importantly, it has filled the courts which now gloat and profit from the insane profits and increases within their singular industry.

This war has grown into such a magnitude that presently it has become big business for daytime television shows to 'reunite' the father with their children, who now have grown into full adulthood who are psychologically starving for their own fathers to fill an unknown void within their lives. Most of these fathers cannot even articulate the reasons why they left, but; they are most certainly blamed for the breakup...and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

they are virtually the only ones being blamed for the family breakup when the facts are that over 75% of the women are causing the divorces... Many of these shows, like Montel Williams and Oprah, (reinforcing the complete and unremittant feminization of the Black community, which will most certainly keep that community in a condition of poverty, and slavery), have fathers publicly 'apologize' for their supposed transgressions. This again, is part of the Roman circus, of the carnage engrained in the persecution of the American male, who must acquiesce to the blood thirst of the national television audience and artificially implanted Feminist mindset and thereby on many of these shows the male must profess his sins—which were intentionally programmed against him through the advent of modern feminism—to disenfranchise him from his own home, to usurp his authority, then; to harvest him for as much money that can be extorted from him in which to subsidize the government and the woman who did this to him in the *first place!* The idea that these shows *should* in contrast be venerating, and honoring these men; showing the exigent difficulties in which they suffered through, the outright war which consumed them and their children, and perhaps even to start recognizing and blaming the government, the woman and Feminist for creating an environment which led to the fathers separation, then; we would see a concomitant drastic drop in the divorce rate—and thereby save more children and stop these sad testimonials which only further demonstrate Feminists ability to destroy and blame the Father for responding to an un-winnable situation!

Instead, fathers has to publicly apologize for this untenable construct which has been placed only against him, which has destroyed him and millions of unsuspecting fathers. This has placed inhuman pressures upon him within his own home as well as throughout society. Yet the day-time television shows plow on, doing more shows in the exact same manner. Forcing those fathers to admit they were wrong, from a system that was designed to destroy him from the outset.

"It was early evening," [Tom] recalls. "I had not seen my daughter in three months and our first visit was coming to a close. She was seven at the time. I dropped her off at her girl-friend's house where she was going to spend the night.

I could feel the pain and tears building in my chest long before we got to her friend's house. I dropped her off and was barely able to mangle any words with the girl's mother.

I drove halfway down the block, pulled over, **and wept from a place inside of me that I didn't even know existed.** It was as if firemen were using white hot Jaws of Life to rip open my chest and kill me." [*The Prodigal FATHER*, by Mark Bryan, ©1997, Three Rivers Press, a Division of Crown Publishers Inc., 201 East 50<sup>th</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022., ISBN 0-609-80203-8; p. 202-203.]

## CHAPTER TEN

This crying 'from a place inside' where most men don't even know exists, proves that they are suffering battle fatigue. Just like in any war they are both psychologically, and physically decimated by this war. Many cases as such, prove that men are suffering battle fatigue, upon an undeclared war that most don't even realize is waged against them.

"All of a sudden in the middle of his dry description his tears started to flow. "I missed knowing my dad. My mom told me how I should feel about my father. *I saw him through her eyes*, and I never got to see him with my own. And now he's dead and it's too late. I miss him so much. He used to let me work with him sometimes, and the things he helped me build and the only things I remember completing as a teenager. I can't seem to complete anything now." [At my Fathers Wedding, Reclaiming Our True Masculinity, by John Lee, ©1991, Bantam Boos, New York; ISBN 0-553-07730-9, pp. 35-36.]

The fact is, that this perverted system needs as many "Deadbeat Dads" and runaway "abandoning" fathers as possible. The government *needs* this war. It needs fathers 'missing in action' from their children's lives. It's whole system is rigged by Administrative Procedures to 'write the record' in "The light most favorable to government" that the fathers are the abusers and beaters and the malicious abandoners (when the facts show the exact opposite)...so that the District Attorney's can achieve their quota's. This is why, upon a whim, any father can abandon their child, and staggering statistics created out of thin air. Many Fathers such as Christopher Robin as well as myself, haven't seen their kids in years—although they want to terribly. How can this be? Why not just drive over and see the child? In every-single courtroom I've demanded immediate and full custody of my child—how did I turn up to be a Deadbeat Dad? Am I supposed to obey and fund a criminal system which acts in the exact opposite way that I demand...when especially...there is legal precedent and outright laws supporting and defending my position?!??

This question shows the intent in the ignorance of this whole Feminist system. How can this system dethrone the father in his own home, then; invent him into a criminal; burden him with unbelievable pressures and laws; then force him to subsidize his own destruction; steal his freedom then civilly murder him; then; ask him to come back—when the system forced him from the home in the first place; then ask him to meet his child in which he has to apologize?

Experts, such as Mr. Mark Bryan (who are deeply embedded within the faults of this system) have zero comprehension of the problem. They offer many recommendations, but pragmatically zero solutions. Indeed; if fathers follow their solutions—most assuredly—this plague upon civiliza-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

tion will quietly grow even larger, become even more malevolent, and in 3, 5, 10, 50 years, our children will also be devoured by this insanity. This system isn't 'just wrong'—it is the inverse of what America is. It is *diseased*. It is overtly Anti-American...anti-law. Most of these people such as Mr. Bryan, who live on the periphery of this system, and accrue very secure living off its continued destruction (he is a counselor who counsels and mentors Fathers). These people should take a short review of history and look at such institutions of slavery and socialism to see what effects those failed systems had on societies. When we speak of the common law as the "Law of the Highest Reason" and then look at the disasters in which Mr. Bryan's book, and hundreds others now proliferating massive numbers in which to 'help save' Fatherhood—where has there been any semblance of intellectual reason within the present system?!? Where's the 'highest logic' in regards to this issue? The courts? I think not!

To find out what disaster's lie in wait for future generations from this present system, these experts should multiply this present destruction ten fold, then apply it to the present generation of men, who are suffering through this continuing illegality and outright nightmare.. Such people who ask these questions are much too close to the trees to see their own forest. Such experts are not 'experts,' rather; they are employees.

To illustrate this point, lets analyze the exact injustices one single father suffers through upon implementation of this feminist system:

- Before any incident happens, the Feminist system has conditioned society that the father is evil and an abuser. He is held to a different standard and persecution, at every place in society.
- The wife charges him with a lie, or; just leaves and lies to the D.A. or Welfare or the Courts. The wife may not charge anything—she still wins.
- Father is thrown out of the home, and disassociated from his own children. He is immediately placed in a secondary position with regards to his own children. The wife and State are the primary caretakers for the children's "BEST INTERESTS" which is always against the fathers interests.
- DA immediately demands to know everything he makes. All his wealth.
- Father has no common law rights—he is denied all of them.
- Lawyers lie to him and help facilitate the court and this fraud.
- Virtually everything mothers state to the court is taken as truth. The discretion of the courts fall to the mother.
- Any marriage contract or prenuptial agreements are shredded by the court. Those and all previous contracts are now void.
- Father loses approximately anywhere from 88% to 98% of the time in these courts. Custody retained by the mother.



## CHAPTER TEN

- Most Fathers are terrified of these courts and never show up. These men are at fault because the courts say they didn't enforce their rights, when the reality is they had no rights from the start, and just merely pragmatically recognized the obvious.
- Children are stolen from the father and he must pay for it.
- Father loses drivers license.
- Father loses professional licenses to jobs.
- Father has wages garnished.
- He loses all rights to privacy.
- He loses all rights of protection, both legal and social.
- Father is forced to sell anything in order to feed the organized crime syndicate against him.
- Father is forced into slavery, he must work.
- Father must work and make certain salary or be placed into prison.
- If father is working, and not making enough, father is told to make more.
- Father is told in court, for no crime having been committed, that he doesn't have a Constitution.
- If Father tries to bring the immoral life of mother into court, Judge says that father cannot bring such evidence. That it is worthless. "There is no morality" the Judges boldly claim.
- Family Court divisions and CPS are Feminist enclaves proactively working against the father.
- All files and documentation is written in the light most favorable to government and in the light most damaging to fathers.
- Father cannot record court session.
- If Father wants transcript he is forced to pay. They know he cannot afford this.
- If Fathers obtain the transcript, it has been changed, it is in gross error, it says different things than what were said, some portions are missing having [garbled transmission] [not understandable], etc. Throughout the transcript.
- Father has to provide all his representation, usually it is just him pro se in front of the Judge because he cannot afford 10,000 to 150,000 or more to fight the system.
- Bank accounts are seized to 'pay' for obligation. There is no safety in any banks.
- DA becomes the Fathers enemy...the mother is protected at every instance by the DA.
- Those within the system overtly lie to protect the system.
- The county attacks the Father and feeds off of him, hopefully trying to imprison him to obtain federal monies for his imprisonment.
- Father becomes a county and State 'quota'.
- Federal Government makes mandates against Fathers.
- States have new slavery laws telling Fathers they cannot leave state.
- Father no longer has constitutional rights in society.
- If father loses job it is a crime, and he is jailed.
- If father becomes sick, it is a crime and he is jailed.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

- Child Support even though paid is always kept one or two payments in default by computer records so that counties can show: large "Partial Payment" defaults in which to obtain more 'Grants' to go after 'Deadbeat Dads'
- Most of the DA's in Counties and States are for Family Services and Child Support only. Crime is very low priority compared to "Deadbeat Dads" and "Abuse" where the 'real' money is.
- Father has no redress at law.
- Legislature will not answer him.
- Governor will not answer him.
- Private companies flourish who make money off of 'finding' "Deadbeat Dads"
- Media only shows him as Deadbeat dad. Feminist and Government own media. Ads show him as 'Deadbeat Dad' and promise "We will find you"
- Employment now screens for Deadbeat Dads, he can never get hired again.
- Any job he gets monies are instantly seized.
- He becomes in default with IRS which causes more financial stress.
- Because of all these stresses and persecutions, he loses contact with child.
- Mother will withhold visitation for any reason.
- Courts and DA's will do nothing—but they will mouth that mother must let Father see child. When mother willfully disobeys—nothing is done.
- Fathers religious convictions are abrogated in favor of stealing from him. It doesn't matter if the father doesn't believe in this corrupt system.
- His automobile is seized.
- His house is leined.
- Anything else he has is seized.
- Father is only made a secondary inferior influence in his child's life, all other interests are put in front of his own. He is last in line for everything.
- Courts start fathers 'low' to get them to agree to the fraud. Once in, at about 1 year they 'up' the support rates incredibly, usually crippling fathers soon thereafter.
- DA's then keep pushing Support to highest limit in which to extort the Father to his full potential.
- If Fathers are pushed too much and are destroyed, then; they are imprisoned thereby bringing more money into the county and DA's office.
- If fathers 'dare' resist, their legal paperwork is not filed with the courts.

This is but a partial list of what transpires upon implementation of this system against fathers. The best that can happen to a father is to immediately bow to this Leviathan and pay as much and as regular as possible.

## CHAPTER TEN

From this, he will lose about 30% or more of his life's earnings over his lifetime. His children will really see less than 5% of that.

If the Father will not go along with this fraud, then; the DA will use powers never authorized in this nation to destroy the father. The DA will then try and seize all his property, everything in which to ruin the father and to keep him in line. He will do this for these reasons.

1. To prohibit any insurrection or rebellion against this unjust system. To maintain crippling fear over men and most especially Fathers. With this fear in place, the system can last centuries and control populations.
2. To stop fathers from having any opportunity to defend themselves. If Fathers have money, they can defend themselves. The last thing the DA wants is justice. He is unlawfully empowered to steal from the father, to destroy the father, that is his mission. Any defense by the father cuts into profits. He must stop all fathers from 'burdening' the courts at all costs.
3. To maintain and iron grip on the family. If the Father controls the family this whole system collapses. If the Father is destroyed by his removal from the family, then the State becomes the parent. "He who controls the children of America, rules the world."

It is no wonder that men are crying. That is the least they should be doing. The nations of the world should watch very closely the tyranny and injustice of Modern Feminism. I believe Feminism is being used as the weapon of choice to subjugate nations of the world for "something else.". For societies will not accept it outright, especially foreign societies. However; their elite regimes will, and from those silent corridors of power, Feminism will leak into the laws, directly challenging the authority of the father, (and of the society), slowly usurping his authority, and replacing "the better" laws, with "the lesser" until such nations will suffer just as American fathers do presently.

From this new Feminist Legislative authority, a people will lose control over their government. Like the United States has right now, which is **not** Republican in form; these regimes will rule with the arrogance in direct defiance of their own laws and own people. Just as the Clinton's presently do in this nation.

From this, even the most devoutly religious, or prosperous nation will not be able to withstand this attack from within by the Elite Regime of their nations, who will happily impose these Draconian injustices upon their own peoples in which to overturn the natural law and order of Patriarchy. Anarchy will reign, and soon you will see the same *exact* pathologies in those nations that America presently suffers through. Feminism, is a foreign government, in which all nations must collectively get together and kill. It is a virulent virus, and it must be stopped from spreading *at all costs*.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Many Fathers become emotional because of what has happened to them. They should not feel shame, for they have suffered through a need-less war, a war of attrition against the American home *waged during a time of profound peace*... This war has been directly waging for the past 30 years in full conflagration, and most fathers are suffering from battle fatigue and they don't even know it. This is what the father above was describing when he said "I wept from a place inside of me that I didn't even know existed."

Christopher Robin cries any time he attempts to describe to others what he has suffered through at large public gatherings, even in front of the media...

This from a quiet man whose inner strength is irrefutable.

Scott Forest, who stated outright in the movie "Father Figure," a watershed Fathers Rights film documentary by filmmaker Nick Szabo, that he 'used to pay \$150,000 in taxes and now pays nothing.' Unfortunately, now Scott has cancer...a direct wound from infliction of this war. The children who cry out for their fathers, who blink in wonderment at the loneliness from the quiet strength, discipline and security missing from within their life, are for all practical purposes: war orphans, and their missing fathers are no more than the MIA's who did not return from the constant infliction of this war.

## A KINDER, AND GENTLER NATION

---

These words were actually spoken in the United States. An even more bereft observation is that they were uttered by a President, under his authority as a separate branch of government. His flags as defined under USCA Title 4 fly within these fascist courts which are directly responsible for destroying fathers, and that branch, as well as the other two have abandoned fathers to a system which wages unrestrained war against them. A "kinder and gentler nation?!!?" Not in this country. The current "President" now boldly declares "We will find you," which exactly demonstrates how kind this nation has become. This comment hails back to the days of Nazi Germany—"Where are your papers?" and to our darkest days of slavery. The new National Employment Registry which American's citizens 'think' is just to seize "Deadbeat Dads" will in turn, be used for more malevolent purposes, against the whole public. Like every other well-intentioned Social Program, soon it too, will overstep its bounds and will soon become a willing tool in the aid of tyranny.

I am not an emotional man. I have undergone a rather remarkable life, and have even under the most derogatory circumstances, been level-headed—and a consummate performer under harsh or even battle conditions. Yet, I have had the uncomfortable task of holding men in my arms that I wasn't particularly close to because they have broken-down and

## CHAPTER TEN

wept over this issue. Doing such, is not only a humiliating and humbling experience for me, but it also documents the trial of blood which follows this fascist system which somehow has broken to the point of ruining and destroying fathers.

One has to wonder...why fathers? There is a fallow attempt by many of those within the Fathers Rights community, to hold women up to the same abuses of law that men are presently held to. They want them to start filling the jails for committing the same 'inventions' of crime. This is a visceral action held by many within the Fathers Rights community, and it is a false doctrine. We must recognize such retributions in their real light. They are only visceral and shallow attempts to make them suffer the way we have. They do not understand, just like the present Feminists don't understand that our courts cannot be used for political expediency—at least not if we are to have a viable American nation. We must have one law for all, a law which we can, and future generations can understand and easily follow. Something that again imbues the principles of Republican form. What we must do, is to re-forge those laws which are of the highest reason, once again. We must factually weed out, and destroy the complete conflagration of our present law that nobody understands, and go back to the common law. Once that is done, then; everyone will be able to understand the law, and that understanding will provide a stability within this society which is presently lost to us.

America is 'supposed' to be a system of law and governance. Clearly the abuses against fathers are not only against the public interest, as the Supreme Court noted in *U.S. v. Belmont* (1937), that they are intrinsically against public policy, they are an overt declaration of war.. Fathers are not committing crimes within the home for the greatest part, again, we are 'invented' into criminals to fill quotas or to appease the Feminist doctrine that men cannot rule and shall not rule within the home.

Why would Fathers want to subject any American's to the same injustice and illegalities in which we have unjustly suffered? Why would a Fathers Rights group want to put a woman into jail when he himself takes issue with his own innocence, thereby unjustly being forced into jail? Many American's have forgotten, because of the social pressures of war that are now waged against us, that regardless—America is not supposed to be a nation of jails. We are not supposed to be number one in prison incarcerations on earth. We are 'supposed' to be a free nation, dead last in prison populations.

Well, of course we all know why men are screaming for retribution. It is again, the first visceral attempt to 'get back' at women (many whom we should be joining forces with, and not turning away, because they are in fact 'brothers in arms' for having gone through the same illegal processes we have), and labeling them all under the same Feminist enemy flag

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

as ‘criminals’ is not right. This is also an attempt to make our enemies suffer *the same ‘laws’ and ‘injustices we do...*and thereby send the message: “How do you like it?” That may be fine in the short term, but it does not get rid of the foundational injustice which now permeates our whole society.

Some feel that this will make the other side circumspect—and ‘suddenly’ recognize the wrongs they have done. No...factually it won’t. Hillary and those who run this Krell Welfare Machine are lost to the Morbius Imprinting. This system is intentional, is has been planned with more expertise and more logistical intent that it took to place man on the moon. Those within it are blind as we have said before, to anything than what those who pay them want them to enforce. What we are speaking of here is a treason, so high, so deep as to threaten the national policy and formative foundations in which this nation was originally established for. Pushing that empirical supposition aside, we have to again; stop ourselves from such visceral reasoning, and ask abstract questions upon this issue.

One good question is that ‘under’ this supposed ‘fair’ court systems—how can fathers be treated so brutally for doing these ‘crimes’ stemming from within their own home—when women are not treated in the same manner? If in fact these courts were ‘fair’, shouldn’t we really see a 50/50 distribution rate of men and women getting children within our court systems? Shouldn’t we see the same incarceration rates for the exact same crimes? Shouldn’t we see the same release rates in similar time periods?? Shouldn’t we also see ‘Deadbeat Moms?’

We don’t, because this system is so corrupt. Unjust criminal courts and prisons appear to be for men, and men only. In that regard we do not have Feminists challenging this Affirmative Action within our courts and prisons. Upon this inequality, they are strangely quiet. In fact, there is a movement underway in the Feminist legal community to rage about the injustice of these present court systems and to actually lie and pretend that they are being treated unjustly. Nothing could be further from the truth. If this were even remotely true, then; you’d see exactly the same number, well—in fact you would see more women on these nationally advertised “Deadbeat Dad” lists---due to the fact that in accordance with SB-96-16, three times the amount of women default on child support then men. Other statistics go as high as five times child support default rates. So, understanding this, there ‘should’ be three to five times more pictures of women than you do men in these “Deadbeat Dad” wanted posters, if everything was statistically, on the up-and-up. It is not. The whole system is corrupt, from top to bottom and is costing taxpayers—Trillions.

That issue notwithstanding, in reality—we should be attaching no money to this issue, for that is the real corruption which is making this whole thing devolve into a constant state of war.

## CHAPTER TEN

A more profound observation comes from the recognition of the amazing specter and breadth of these ultimate police powers used against men by courts and government. As noted earlier, not only courts and police instantly become the Fathers' enemy the instant he is 'transformed' into a criminal, but so do an amazing array of tertiary Government Administrations and Departments...ranging from the Department of Motor Vehicles to the Department of State which grants passports and every state and federal administration inbetween. Instantaneously, men are outright attacked by every agency of government; county, state and federal combined. He cannot get a job or a bank account or own any property without having it seized.

He cannot run from this supposed 'special debt' or 'special obligation' which is a sealed obligation (which he has no idea of or comprehension of; for all fathers I have met with or spoken to do not even know this 'obligation' or 'special obligation' even exists—for they can't produce it) which he cannot run from, flee from, or move to foreign countries to ever escape... He cannot discharge it when he is poor through bankruptcies.

Now under those broad powers never before seen in any other crime, this includes even if you are Charles Manson and mass murdered 3, 10, or 60,000 people; this includes even if you are Charles Keating, and defraud thousands of people out of Billions of dollars; or if even you are mass bomber, you still retain the right to own property, to discharge debts—to declare bankruptcy—but *not if you are a father and you have supposedly committed a crime within your own home.*

Of course the insanity of this logic is unnerving, however; it is even more sobering given in the light of the true, broad spectrum of powers that are allowed for this 'supposed' crime: **why even make this crime at all!????**

If in fact, and it is a fact, that by these superhuman broad powers contained within the state, never seen before in any society upon the face of the earth—in which the government 'as the ultimate and absolute sovereign authority' retained in the state, under the doctrine of *Parens Patriæ*—if the true law is that under this ultimate, pure, omniscient power to capture and claim everything, through banks, through seizures or any other possible means by the breadth and empire of government; up to and beyond that person's own death: then why really make it a crime at all?

If the state claims these ultimate powers, and it is in fact enforcing them; then isn't it a fact that just being in America and being this ultimate slave where everywhere we work, every monetary transaction we make which is now directly monitored by the government, and since everything we own or need to do *only* comes by license granted to the slave by the state—then in the final analysis--doesn't the legal equation only come to a matter of time where the government can seize these assets? Under the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

circumspect omniscient authority of a 'supposed' "kinder, and gentler nation;" shouldn't the government just seize what it wants during the life of the Father (slave), even upon his death, to abscond with his inheritance...so that the debt or 'special obligation' be discharged in a 'kinder and gentler' way??? Why arrest, and imprison the father? Why the duress placed against the father by the embodiment of the state? Why drive him from and disenfranchise him from his own home and children? Why burden our prisons? Or through imprisonment, make it impossible to get a job? Why make fathers cry? More importantly, if this financial obligation indeed has to be accrued in such draconian manner; then why not include *both* parents in the payment? Why just the father when he 'supposedly' has 50/50 joint custody?

There are only two possible answers to this primeval legal question:

1. It was a mistake.
2. The state is claiming fascist power and control over the home and father, thereby forcing him into submission.

I am convinced, that item number one does not need any discussion, given the light that so many people, so many lawyers, so many Judges and 'supposed' third-party experts have designed this system to act in this draconian manner. Out of the thousands of people involved in this design, the probability is that at least one of them fully understood that what they were doing was a complete misdirection of American law. In redundancy alone, there can be no mistake in regards to the design and implementation of this feminist program of this perverse system which sequesters Fatherhood, and summarily destroys it. There is no mistake of its design. The elite's whom made these laws, and policies and procedures had cogent knowledge that they were violating Constitutional law.

But for one thing, nobody supposed that the king even with the consent of the English prelates and barons could alter the common law of the catholic church....Theology can be brought in to explain or to conceal any difficulty that there may be in the conception of a king, who though subject to no man, is subject to the law;--God is subject to law, and has even made himself subject to the law for man. The practical question is whether there is any mode in which the law can be enforced against the king. That no ordinary process of his courts will touch him is admitted...But there is no established orderly method whereby this can be accomplished, and the right to restrain an erring king, a king who should be God's vicar, but behaves as the devil's vicar, is rather a right of revolution, a right to defy a faithless lord and to make war upon him, than a right that can be enforced in form of law....

Again, we may see that Bracton had not our modern notions of 'authority.' He has told us how he set himself to peruse the ancient judge-



## CHAPTER TEN

ments of the just because his ignorant and uneducated contemporaries were misrepresenting the law; he appealed from them to the great men of the past... [*The History of English Law, Before the Time of Edward the I*, by Sir Frederick Pollock, ©1968, The Cambridge University Press, Bentley House, 200 Euston Road, London, N.W. 1, American Branch: 32 East 57<sup>th</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022; pp. 182-183.]

There is a clear mistake of law, and gross error of law within the new redesign for humanity now propagated by our courts under the Anti-law of Feminist Jurisprudence and Family law.. Under these broad sweeping powers the United States has declared upon even the most minute aspect of our lives, its ability to seize property has become more than legendary—it now supercedes all lawful processes of law. The American citizenry is truly in terror of its own governments. With this ability, the fact really is that the State doesn't have to criminalize this issue, it only does because the feminists, and other special interest groups, including themselves want systems to control and harvest the father. This can be the only reason for this present tyranny, and that is to destroy both fathers and families. These facts and figures have been fully acknowledged for at least 30 years now, and still—they continue with this present unlawful and illegal legal systems.

All government's state and federal government's have ingrained within every one of their Constitutional compacts that "all men have the right to acquire, enjoy, protect, and defend property." That we have the right to "life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness." The monolithic claim by the government is that Fathers no longer enjoy these rights, due to a 'special' and 'sealed' contract which no father is aware of nor can produce. Thereby, through that nudum pactum (or naked promise to which consideration is given to each side) the Father gets the comprehensive list of tyrannies listed above and the State obtains his own children, and the Fathers life with all his property to be disposed of at the will of the State. This is the supposed construct of this unconscionable contract which for the greatest part, only Fathers are defrauded into. As anyone can see this obliterates the organic promises and compacts stated above, to life, liberty and property. And upon this supposed 'contract' the state claims superhuman qualities, of seizure, imprisonment, and broad, uncontrolled state powers...only applied against men. (But as we can see, more and more women are getting caught up in this fraud).

Upon this house of cards, which no man, if he were ever presented with the real truth or contract of the state through fraud inducing him into such an unconscionable contract **would ever enter into**—then upon claim of such superhuman powers the Government, 'simply forgets' the path of least resistance, that; they could perhaps just claim the debt across the human life span. Instead, it uses extraordinary, extra-judicial procedures

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

of an Anti-American Fascist state claiming ultimate powers through all agencies of the government against that individual father. Since the government is claiming by these sealed 'special obligations' which operate through the private law of the Feminist designed Family Law Act, that the State owns everything, and can do anything with the Father who has "No Constitutional Rights." Wouldn't it just be simpler to gradually take away whatever he supposedly owes over his life span? I make this case in the light of Government claiming ultimate Fascist rights over everything, which appears to be their normal procedures now.

This is supposedly the argument of why we pay taxes...which again; this system operates by, thereby creating a double jeopardy issue in defense of the Father, yet; in which no court will ever entertain, because that paradox is negated by the terms in the forum of the 'special obligation' in which he has contracted away forever all his rights. Of course when one looks at the public policy of America, we can see the proof of my argument that these paradoxes cause a social pressure within the society that are circular and can never be solved:

"If men, through fear, fraud, or mistake, should in terms renounce or give up any natural right, the eternal law of reason and the grand end of society would absolutely vacate such renunciation. The right to freedom being a gift of ALMIGHTY GOD, it is not in the power of man to alienate this gift and voluntarily become a slave." -- Samuel Adams, 1772

This will never happen however. The state will never allow this new slave-class of people to escape their ultimate fate. This is why they provide no redress to fathers. This is due to the foundational construct of this system itself; and beyond that—it is sealed by its terrorist history. A history mind you, that intentionally makes men cry.

The facts are, that this system is a terrorist system, imposed by the organized crime syndicate of the state through and by the courts. This system is in fact, in which millions of Americans fought against and died in battle to combat it ever dominating this nation. It is not only in this nation; it is now the policy of the performance of choice for the elite regime within our own government. They want men to be broken and to cry because they want man and this society to become their slaves. They do not entreat freedom, they are repulsed from it. We have seen Judges and Lawyers sneer at such terms as 'Republican Form', and "common law rights". We have heard them proliferate doctrines such as "you have no Constitutional Rights" and other reprehensible acts and procedures.

We see Legislatures in a veritable feeding frenzy to make laws against Fathers even more draconian than before. There are more laws against the father, (the whole Anti-Father Family Law Act is in fact against the father, and has been challenged in the courts, but dismissed for obtuse pro-

## CHAPTER TEN

cedural issues) than any other species in the United States. The breath and scope of most of these laws are anti-American, non-Constitutional, and Unconstitutional in their scope, of practice, policies and procedures. Then Feminist, Politicians and the Mainstream media regale against "Angry White Males" patronizing them and speaking to them in derogatory manner and in light fashion.

This system instead of choosing the 'kinder and gentler' alternatives to self-governance, under the tutelage of Feminism and radical Feminist Jurisprudence, have followed the exact model of Civilization under Dr. Eugene Weber's study that Matriarchy was a tribal state, in a constant state of war. Their performance in creating this needless war against men, categorically reaffirms Dr. Weber's erudite research on mankind and civilization. We are in fact, in a state of war. Men are crying. Men are dying by and because of this needless conflagration.

These policies of creating war in a time of peace are not only public policy, nor just national policy, but they are special policies which have not only no basis in government or law, but they breed contempt against our laws. They contain the genius of reinventing slavery, against a gender whose participation in the American experience is the formation which makes this nation free. This is why the black male was so brutalized in the antebellum south. Governments and power constructs have no real concerns about the females, and our prisons are written testimony to this fact. This war which has reinvented slavery is being imposed and implemented against men, to control men; for an ulterior purpose as yet undefined, but most certainly contains the undermining of the male authority so that government can assume that role of being the main influence over a peoples.

### **COMMON LAW ANALYSIS OF CONTINUED ARGUMENT**

---

We have demonstrated here that there is a cascaded failure within government's and courts in regards to this issue. The logic which propagates this perversion cannot be defended in any intelligent light. This is not to say that they cannot, and will not be defended; but they will only be so by and through obfuscation and a perverse interpretation of the laws and especially of logic and reason.

The state turns to the father to provide for his children because under the common law, that is his mandate. He is to provide for the love, care, maintenance and his education. This clearly was a part of the law, and was a solemn responsibility of every father who had a child. Yet, there was a reason for this, and it enjoined a concomitant legal theory which mandated as such due to the fact that the father not only had to pay for the maintenance and care of his home, but; (and this is a huge but) he also

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

accrued, enjoyed, and expected the benefits of that home. He had the responsibilities, because he enjoyed the rights!

This of course was a quid pro quo arrangement that was easily justified separately, in both law and equity. If you enjoy a benefit, you therefore accrue the burden. Presently, fathers accrue super burdens and they enjoy absolutely no enforceable rights! Just under this construct of law, no father should pay either child support or alimony. Again, this demonstrates that Government was keenly aware that it took two parents to develop a home, and they protected them accordingly. It understood that in order to have the man stay for an extended period within the home, he would have to enjoy certain rights, privileges, or benefits; which once earned, would make the home flourish and would more importantly, bind the man to the home through thick and thin.

They also must have understood Briffault's Law, as they knew that as men were groomed for the institution of marriage, that women; in order to protect themselves and secure a happy existence within the institution of marriage, that they would have to bind themselves to the best prospect possible in marriage. Their job, once they had secured such a person; was to bind with him, become as one; then working as one team—build and develop a stable and profitable family. This was called coveture, which again, is starting to come again in vogue as the Feminist model is being discarded in favor of traditional marriage once again.

This aside, it is the male's case we are concerned with here. Simply put, it is the fact that the man had these responsibilities because he enjoyed these rights. More importantly, he not only had the responsibilities of providing for his wife and child, he was also responsible for their actions and any debts they might accrue. This, as we can see, was even a larger burden than we imagine today. But in retrospect, we can see that this responsibility has been lost to this society as childhood crime and petty theft have exploded because the Fathers influence is presently missing from within the home and family. So, essentially, Western Society said this to the Father, it said, "You take care and be responsible for this and that, and we will let you enjoy your home and family."

Today's Feminist society and especially our court systems, have taken away the Fathers basic rights to control his own family, to rule within his own home, the system of coveture which bound his wife to him and made them one, to own and enjoy his own children, to benefit from their labor, to protect his own property and life savings within his own home, and to have a system to where his own wife serves him so that he can establish a good home in the first place.

Yet, this Feminist system demands that he pay and be responsible for everything in which he tries to create, but because of the omniscient so-

## CHAPTER TEN

cial pressure of feminism, is most apt to be destroyed. From this, he is disenfranchised and enslaved.

In this system, there is no consideration for the male. It is either gone altogether, or in the kindest light, been crippled beyond recognition. Yet—he is supposed to be burdened with greater responsibilities than ever were dreamed of in the past! Now, he is supposed to fund his own destruction, even when he recognizes that this perverse system is stealing from him and insolently and unlawfully enslaving him. The woman obtains all the considerations: her new found ‘freedom’s’, the children, and various financial subsidies, sometimes for life!

Yet, upon receiving these substantial considerations, which under law "he who accrues the benefit, assumes the responsibility," she is responsible for nothing! *She* is the one living and spending time with the children. *She* is the one enjoying their company and the benefits and joy of their association. The male is pushed out, disenfranchise, and then coerced into paying for his own destruction.

These willful acts perpetrated against men, to forcibly take his children from him by such putrid legal design’s and from this allow both the woman and the state to benefit by their unclean acts is totally against the principle of American law, and against the spirit and intent of this nation.

"A State too extensive in itself, or by virtue of its dependencies, ultimately falls into decay; it free government is transformed into a tyranny; it disregards the principles which it should preserve, and finally degenerates into despotism. The distinguishing characteristic of small Republics is stability: the character of large Republics is mutability. [*Letters from Jamaica*, by Simon Bolivar 1783-1830, [Summer 1815]]

Again, remember what Lord Coke, the First Continental Congress and John Adams said: that the common law is the law of the *highest reason*, and that we as a nation adopt this law, not as "the common law," but rather, this nation embraced it as the law of the highest logic. Yet, in looking at the present construct of how courts deny men their common law rights which used to bind them to their families, and their families to them—and which by this act, made the man financially and emotionally responsible for these benefits. Now, where is the ‘law of the highest reason’ in allowing him to be denied all the benefits of his children, and total disenfranchisement from his home, and then; forcing him to pay for the resultant chaos.

The only answer the courts and feminist have is: "The Best Interests of the Child." But this is a interpretation that is left logically wanting, given the present circumstances and facts and figures in regards to this whole issue. "The Best Interests of the Child" has exploded divorce, put men in needless jeopardy, placed children into abject harms way, made

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

the institution of marriage a mockery, established a mindset that "sexual freedom" is okay even without responsibility, and has established generations of a useless underclass which is devolving this society. This catalog of failures; is but a short list of the real disaster in which the courts abrogation of its own law, has waged upon this nation. If you mention Lord Coke, Blackstone or Bacon to a Law professor, his eyes will light up with reverent acknowledgement. You bring up these same names to a Family Court Judge and his eyes will cloud with shame, and they will feign ignorance. They will inform you to 'shut up' as they scream at you that "You have no Constitutional Rights."

"Unlimited power is apt to corrupt the minds of those who possess it. And this I know, my lords, that where the laws end, tyranny begins. [*Case of Wilkes Speech*, by William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, Jan. 9<sup>th</sup> 1770.]

These 'laws' are a new mindset in the American experience. They effectively end the true laws of the United States of America. They have no true allegiance or heritage in American jurisprudence. Those who impose them, do so as enemy of we the people, and their errant Misprison of Felony has putatively ruined generations of children, and has burdened this society beyond comprehension. It has devolved war upon an unsuspecting American public and fathers who never saw this enemy from within. Many average American's still don't understand this is a law, because the media, as the propaganda arm of the government; has obfuscated its issues so well. Although American's are well aware 'something's' wrong—they don't realize that Fatherlessness is a major part, and the most important part, of what is causing the casual observation so eloquently made above: "The world seems to be progressing, while at the same time; it is moving backwards."

This is the sad and disgusting testament of their "Best Interests of the Child" mindset.

---

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

---

### Morbius Imprinting

*"Perhaps nothing reflects the chasm between the law's stated objectives and the reality of its evolution than the changed rhetoric of civil rights. Unlike their predecessors, today's self-proclaimed civil rights leaders no longer quote from the Declaration of Independence. They speak not about individuals but groups, not about liberty but entitlements, not about opportunity but outcomes, not about colorblindness but preferential treatment. The conceptual metamorphosis is precisely 180 degrees: in today's debate, to be in favor of nondiscrimination is to be castigated as anti-civil rights.*

*The changed rhetoric reflects a fundamental transformation in the philosophy of civil rights that built on the expanded power of government created by the Civil Rights Act of 1964 and subsequent enactments. What evolved over the course of the 1960s was a radical revised agenda that would come to completely supplant the traditional civil rights vision. Every basic precept of the vision was jettisoned.*

*A few years ago, I noted this phenomenon to a very liberal friend of mine who was an active participant in the civil rights struggles of the 1960s. Why, I asked him, did the movement abandon the principles it had so consistently invoked, after the revolution succeeded? He smiled and replied, "We abandoned those principles because we never really believed in them." [The Affirmative Action FRAUD, Can We Restore the American Civil Rights Vision?, by Clint Bolick, ©1996 by the Cato Institute, 1000 Massachusetts Ave., N.W., Washington, D.C. 20001; ISBN 1-882577-28-0; p. 43.]*

### A MOMENTARY WALK TO REDISCOVER THE OBVIOUS

---

I should relate something that happened to me tonight while in the middle of writing this book. I went for a late evening walk, about 7PM, and since this is February, the weather was mild, but brisk.

Now because I am considered an 'outlaw' of these present courts—I have not been my usual self. Because I am presently engaged in this war I described in the previous chapter, I have had to give up alot and have been living in abject war-time conditions in which to fight this perversion and persecution in my life. Nonetheless, I was walking and formulating new ideas of what to say and how to say it for this book, when in the distance I heard a basketball dribbling.

Well, I've played collegiate basketball, and it is by far, my favorite sport. I have played all around the country and still play to this day. I'll scrounge up a game at the drop of a hat. I have been looking for a good game of basketball in New York for months, but strangely—there are none. At least not that I can find. Not like I'm used to at least, for in the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

small California town of Chico, where I can always drum-up a game in at least several places around town. But, I had been proactively looking around town and could find no viable games. When I heard the basketball bouncing so late at night—I stopped. I couldn't believe my ears! Usually the public Basketball courts are either locked, or if not locked—they have no nets. (A casualty of the Feminist Culture). Most certainly the play was low-level and not the level to which I am normally accustomed. But here, in the middle of nowhere...was finally a game!

I saw bright lights leading me to the basketball court, and there at about 8PM at night, was a group of young Asian teenager's playing basketball. I wanted to play in the game badly, but I just decided to watch. I didn't know them, and I didn't want to intrude.

Clearly, none of these young adults could really play ball, in fact; they were terrible. However, they were very enthusiastic and having a great time and that is what basketball is all about. There were about 10 maybe twelve of them mostly rumbling around the court. In the half hour I watched them I may have seen but three or four baskets made. But here they were, running, giggling, everyone intent and focused on the game. I then noticed that there were two girls of the same age playing also, both on opposite teams covering each other. I hadn't noticed them before because they were usually on the inside of the key, and were just swapping positions as each of their respective teams went from offense to defense and visa versa. They were in the game, but in another sense, they were not. They sometimes got the ball through and errant shot bouncing off the backboard, sometimes they were passed to by other teammate's; but for the most part, they were only in the periphery of the game. The boys were clearly dominating the game.

Yet here they were, with the guys, playing ball; having immense fun. Everyone was having fun. I didn't see any of these girls stop the game and complain: "Hey! You aren't passing me the ball!!! I demand to be equal in this game!!!" That wasn't even on these girls minds. It was on nobodies mind. They all were just experiencing the moment of the game for the possibility that at some point, they *would* get the ball, and by then (it was quite cute actually) they didn't know quite what to do with it when they got it, but; they were so happy just playing. Everyone was. This respite made me smile as I watched them play.

Nobody was discriminating against these two young women. The game proceeded just like any game would. If they didn't get the ball, well; they didn't get the ball. If they did, they did the best they could with the ball when they got it and played as tough as they could muster. Everyone equally shared in what the game itself equally provided. But the girls took their place on the court, and assumed their rightful position naturally, without incident. The result? Everyone was happy.



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

Yet this playing field is not true for modern feminism. The elite cabal of feminist women have made both complaining and lying an intrinsic part of their organizations in which to implement change within the society. This change has not been either in the interests nor the charter of what this society or our government was either designed or intended for. In the ‘game’ of life, these people have taken unfair advantage of a system and subterfuged it. The way in which they did this, was under the system of Patriarchy which tried to be fair to them, and is meant to be fair to all. Now they have used this fairness against us, to impose a tyranny that abrogates the very nucleus of why this society was formed. They have in the game of civilization, made excessive and wild accusations (to a willing government with an apparent agenda) in which to force upon the rest of us, a foreign system of law and governance, which is not of Constitutional construct nor American in form. Now they have the ‘Ball’ and everything around us has turned into a war, a fight for our lives—while we constantly watch the devolution around us.

Simply put, nobody wants to play basketball with the Feminists. *Especially*, while the government pretends its a fair and unbiased referee. . It’s not, it is only a thug.

The Feminist war has waged so complete in this society that now the Fathers Rights movement (along with the rest of society) is faced with the burden of proving the obvious! That all Fathers aren’t abusers. That men and woman belong together. That marriage between a man and woman is a proper institution and it is the only institution that should be supported by our civilization.

Most people trying to argue our side, have not properly added up the argument yet. They haven’t made the concrete link of abstract reasoning to this problem and they cannot give the problem voice, nor can they give the solution because they are blind to what Patriarchy is, and where it fits in the whole scheme of things.

Sure, America is a nation whose precepts are built on *individual freedom*. However; you can do anything you want in this nation, as long as it doesn’t intrude, hurt or damage another individual. Under this construct we can see that the Gay and Lesbian lifestyle, intrudes and hurts others—all of us in fact—and it thereby, shouldn’t be supported. Homosexual marriages—cannot be supported by our civilization. The panorama of perversions—all done under the allowed banner of individual freedom by the implementation of Feminism, cannot be supported in the American system of governance.

Why?

Because if we allow these perversions and aberrant lifestyles to exist, then again; an ensuing ‘leakage’ from the base Ancient *Id* through the tribal society occurs which causes a cascaded failure within society as we

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

have discussed in chapter nine. The duty of civilization is to ascend. It can only do this by and through freedom. But civilization must order that freedom, and it must permit what is good and moral to rise and ascend, and it must prohibit that which is bad and perverse and force that down into failure. Nobody from the opposite side of this argument will disagree that society shouldn't allow what is good and moral and it conversely that we should admit and allow those things which are bad or immoral to flourish. This is proven by a Maxim of Law that states: The pig does not skin himself.

Neither does a society.

Yet, there are many within these aberrant communities that would happily drill holes in the bottom of the boat of civilization if only to provide them with the pleasure of doing it. "The boat is going to sink sometime" they will intellectually shrug. "Let me be, let me live free." "I get off on drilling holes, and it's only a tiny hole I'm drilling in this great big ship," is most certainly their biggest argument.

Well, I cannot let them be free if I'm on the boat and I want to go to Hawaii, I'll be damned if the boat is going to sink, and I'll stop anyone from drilling *any* holes in the bottom of the boat—no matter how small the holes they think they are—at any cost!

This is the charge of civilization: not to let the boat sink...or not to let the "Pig skin himself." With all freedom there must be a corresponding duty to adhere to responsibility; to morality.

Allowing Feminism and the host of other groups who share that Ancient *Id* 'base and disgusting' mindset to exist is one thing; giving them the lawful embrace and full protections of society is another. Civilization, should not be handing out immoral or even amoral drills per se, to such people—but that is exactly what we are doing, all under their perverted assessment and moniker of "Freedom." Now these people with the drills putting in the holes in the bottom of the ship of America want us to be tolerant of them—while we watch the nation of America slowly sink.

Does this mean we allow roving bands of "Angry White Males" to hunt and kill Gay and Lesbian people??

Most certainly not. But we cannot allow our Churches to marry them! We don't allow Government or Institutions to allow them the same rights of what other citizens should have. Because allowing what is good, or what allows society to ascend does not skin the collective pig of civilization.

This language may anger some, however; the intellectual thesis I do believe is solid. If society does not have this function: then who does? Conversely, if a society allows this 'leakage' of the base ancient perversions of Feminism to exist, to benefit and flourish upon the same equal footing as the higher moral standards of our society—then how is a Fam-

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

ily going to combat their children from being effected by the perversion that such a ‘society’ now permits? How can a Father protect his children from something he knows is wrong, when the media and government is pervading the society and stating that such actions based upon the Ancient *Id* are right??? How will a child choose the good and moral system of life if we do not sequester one, while advocating another?? How can even a society tell what is good or moral anymore if there is no distinction between the two?!?

In fact, under this present system, children cannot choose, and they are not making the correct choices, as a panoply of facts and figures and national headlines clearly indicate. Apparently, neither is government.

Again; this is a circular argument which only contributes to devolving the society. If government permits everyone having a dot in the middle of their forehead as a legal and preferred activity; highly publicized, and receiving not only normal conferment, but special treatment in some cases—wouldn’t it follow that by government in permitting such an activity that this activity would most certainly rise?!?? That soon, over a time-period you’d start to see more and more dot’s in the middle of people’s foreheads? Well, isn’t the proliferation of tattoo’s just an extension of the proliferation tribalism? Proof that the base Ancient *Id* is permeated through mainstream America? Isn’t the government’s attack upon Fatherhood the same thing?

There is a high probability of these residual realities occurring influenced by the impetus of a government which has lovingly embraced the anarchy and perversions within the Feminist state of mind. Therefore, civilization is allowing perversion to become normal, will most certainly increase the perversion, (which is occurring in this society right now) which will have untold effects against the society. These effects will burden that society, and such a society will devolve. This exact construct may have occurred with the proliferation of HIV and AIDS which has spread among our civilization, with the main part of it, 87% being only within the Gay and Lesbian communities. Has this been a direct causal factor induced by government by allowing them to criminalize fatherhood? I doubt this society has the courage to even broach, or even attempt to answer this question.

Therefore, it appears to be very true, that this Government, by ‘allowing’ and not prohibiting such acts, most certainly has had a rather profound effect on this society. We can exponentially estimate many more, which have burdened this society which have directly been due to the proliferation of such perversion.

One case which must be considered is: What damage has been done to the institution of marriage by the Gay and Lesbian communities?

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

I don't think *anyone* could say that there has been no damage done. Perhaps two to five percent of all divorces may be directly effected and pushed into divorce because of this immoral 'leakage' of the gay and lesbian communities imprinting upon this society. [The two to five percent figure is only a general guess on the authors part and is unverified. RLCII]

We cannot change the foundational bedrock of this society. We are held to that responsibility so that all people may be free. For instance, in recognizing that the Feminist have had way too much power and control within government, we can easily see that their discrimination has wrecked havoc across the face of America, all the while destroying the venerable institution of marriage...and most surely...destroying men.

What effects will happen when we let the Gay and Lesbian influences to infest our form of government which; by the way; originally secured their freedoms? Like the Feminists, you can be sure there will be a backlash of *less freedoms*, and *less justice*. For the basic tapestry of America will be perverted to that new order, just like Feminism has presently done.

We have a duty to maintain the basic foundation of this nation, unperturbed by the light and transient fashions which may temporarily take hold within a society. Feminism is such a transient cause and now is on its rapid decline. However; its damage has been incomprehensible to society, and totally unacceptable for men.

Because of this, we are now charged with setting things straight. We are burdened because of the pestilence which Feminism has waged upon this society, and now must go back and prove the obvious. Like the young Actress noted over and over on the Television show *Rosanne*, "All men aren't bad."

Incredibly, this is a *new* discovery for many young American women who are throwing away the false doctrines of radical feminist teachings!!! This society is going to have to rediscover the obvious, that abortions are immoral, sperm is not a poison, marriage between a man and woman is good, that the gay and lesbian lifestyle is not good, that men are not abusers, that women who love and obey their husbands are not bad nor are they losers. (They can't comprehend how important and precious they really are to us.) We have to recognize these things, and force, literally force the present errant and illegal mindset emanating from Washington D.C., to cease and desist. For their invocation of these perverse ideals is a direct threat against the Safety and Security of this nation, and thereby; under law—is actionable. If government does not adhere to these good and moral principles, then; it must be changed in accordance under law by our rights secured by the Declaration of Independence. When the safeguards of the each of the three branches of government refuse to instill

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

the safety and foundation of the well established and documented order of the American Republic; then the fourth branch of government of "We the People" is mandated to implement that realignment—by any means necessary.

### "REDISCOVERING THE OBVIOUS"

---

In 1998 both the Anglican and the Episcopal Churches made national headlines when their national congregations reaffirmed that marriage is a sacred institution and that in accordance with the Bible, the woman must be subordinate to the man. This was a *direct* contravention to government policy and ardent Radical Feminist doctrines. This reaffirmation sent reverberations nation-wide, and headlines splashed across the national specter like a shock-wave.

For many in the Fathers Rights community the affirmation was like a breath of spring air or a fresh drink of water. We had hungered to hear other groups concur with what we had been saying for over a decade and which we had formally put our names down in writing in 1997 with the Re-Affirmation and Declaration almost a year before their adjoining public declaration. These rediscoveries were of fundamental truth, and to many within the our community, we stood up and took notice and openly cheered, while strangely; which is a rife problem within the feminist movement of today—they remained strangely quiet.

In fact, earlier in 1997; I was part of a historical meeting within the Fathers Rights community which was held at the Purple Heart House, owned by Christopher Robin in Hollywood California. It was here where twelve Fathers Rights advocates who, over a weekends period of time, argued bitterly over this subject. After two days, in the early morning hours after intense debate (several friendships and coalitions were lost, or a least severely strained in bringing this document to fruition), this historical document was finally put to pen, signed and sealed on May 25, 1997. It simply reads:

#### FATHERS MANIFESTO REAFFIRMATION AND DECLARATION

*The Purple Heart House, Hollywood, California*

We Signatories to the Fathers' Manifesto, responding to both natural and Biblical laws, in defense of our nation and our families, hereby declare and assert our patriarchal role in society. America is an experiment in freedom, and the feminist experiment in freedom, under the guise of "equality," unleashed a panoply of social ills which have become a cancer on our land, led to the moral and economic destruction of our nation, made America a house divided unto itself, created a vast underclass with a bleak and bankrupt future and is the greatest national disaster we have ever faced. Recognizing patriarchy to be the greatest creator of wealth,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

prosperity, and stability civilization has ever known, we hereby demand that our children, homes, lives, liberty, and property be unconditionally restored to us. We hereby demand replacement of the doctrine of *Parēs Patriæ* with the Biblical doctrines upon which this nation was founded. We hereby recognize and reaffirm that patriarchy is the order established under God and under his Natural Law. We the posterity of this nation, hereby reclaim our ancestral liberties and God-given rights.

Signed this day, Sunday, May Twenty-Fifth, in the One Thousand Nine Hundred Ninety Seventh Year of our lord, at the Purple Heart House, Hollywood, California.

Signed:

**Christopher Robin,**

National Fathers Rights Activist, The Purple Heart House, Hollywood

**Robert Lindsay; Cheney Jr.**

Executive Director, The Sovereign Patriot Group, Chico, California

**Bob Hedrick,**

Executive Director, Parents for Family Justice

**Ron Jensen,**

Investigative Reporter.

**Jay Samuels,**

Director, Valley Compassion Center

**Vert Vergon,**

President, Fathers of America

**John Knight,**

Executive Director, The Fathers Manifesto, Newport, California

This document took these men a weekend of non-stop, vituperative and contumacious arguments, of almost daily battle and epic proportions. Our discussions were non-denominational, each of us having several religious convictions, but in the final analysis, this is the document we forged. I am proud of it. I think everyone should be who was there.

The document is groundbreaking in its truths, and in its simple affirmation of total support of the father, under the constraints of natural law, and natural common law rights. It most certainly, was a ‘rediscovery’ of the obvious. Just as the Anglican and Episcopalian Churches who would later follow in their public support of that institution: the document is valid because of the simple truth.

Yet, because of the intense fractionalization within the Fathers Rights community it was hard enough even to affirm even these fundamental truths. I could tell that the principals addressed in this document were solid, because in all our arguments; the one most ardent point that kept on

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

resurfacing again and again was: "*What about the Father who beats his child, how can we give him complete control over the home?*"

The proof of this document's strength lie in the Fact, that to a man—this was the most powerful concern within all Fathers Rights groups, the errant, out-of-control Father. In that light, the fact that they came together, created and finished this historical work, with the main concern being *not about gaining more control for themselves*, but in protecting the children from the errant out-of-control Father who beats his child. In this light, these men, who all of them argued to the bitter (believe me, very bitter) end, that in the final analysis, the Father must be a major influence and control the home to protect that child. For in the Final analysis: *that is his job and no one else can, or is doing it*. Especially government. It took a weekend of visceral argumentation to finally push through to a cold, abstract analysis which finally allowed everyone to sign this in good consciousness.

The care and concern that was placed within this document was legion. The small assembled group whose characters came in and out constantly during the weekend, (I slept as I could while the battle raged outside on Christopher's porch throughout the day and night) we argued about every single word on that document, especially any reference to religion or the Bible. The construction of the sentences were argued, and again; the all prevalent "But what about the out-of-control Father?" issue came up again and again.

We would vituperatively argue this issue no less than I would say fifteen to twenty times—maybe more—we'd argue it into the ground, and it would resurface. We would all come to agreement, and upon a different noun, article or adverb being inserted within the document: the issue would resurface and the battle would rage yet again: "But what about the out-of-control Father?!??"

Indeed, at the twelfth hour as we were signing our names to this document in Christopher's living room at about two in the morning, everyone worried that something or someone would again, might bring up the issue but one more time. But we didn't. Solemnly, we each put our names to a harried piece of paper which had the final version of our work. We veritably held our breath as each signature was solemnly signed to the document, in the very early morning hours of the final day of this meeting.

The document was forged with roots deep in history, and with basic elemental truths After signing it, I could see that each man after coming away from the document had a sense of satisfaction, of accomplishment. It was worth the battle. We had no idea what we had done, but there was an intrinsic feeling that whatever it was, it was historic, and it was right. This document presaged the same basic declarations of the churches who

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

would follow its gospel a year later. It's principals have yet to be incorporated into the mainstream of America, but those days are rapidly coming, perhaps, but one to four years away. The document is anachronistic in one sense, while being strangely futuristic in another.

It is a document that has rediscovered the obvious, which is but an adumbration of what this nation is about to do. That men need a place within the home, that more importantly, they *have* a vested and most important place within it, and as young children they should be groomed to meet that challenge. Those ideals are immutable and cannot be transgressed. And that in the final analysis, he must be able to rule within the home, freely, for this is the basis of a free and independent society. We don't have free governments. We have free families which form free governments.

Saying the simple statement that men must be men and we must take back what is ours, which has been compromised; and assume our proper roles as fathers, has become revolutionary statement. That is how far and how perverse this society has gone into the extremes of feminism. Feminists (and Government) would factually be infinitely happier having a nation full of "A Man Called Sissy" rather than to have but one man rule with absolute authority and sovereignty within his own home as the Randy Weaver case proved. That is how fragile their mindset and theology is.

From the Founders onwards, these truth's were of such import and so obvious to our Forefathers that they were "Self Evident". Yet the scope and perversion of Modern Radical Feminism has been so sweeping in its imprint of the Ancient *Id* upon this American society, that we actually lost those concepts within the dissonance of a competing and antithetical movement: the advent of Radical Feminism. Presently, this society has to relearn Patriarchy—that a man is a man, that his place is within the home beside his wife and children and that he protects, provides and rules within that home and that those duties provide for a stable society. He must have broad sweeping powers within its domain, because; in the final analysis: that is the cost of a free society: self governance.

Self governance does not mean micro-management. Self governance does not mean community validation or imposition. Those are only tools of Autocracy. Society best flourishes when left to itself, the individual; as Adam Smith and De Tourqueville and others noted...and you can only do that when freedom reigns within the scope of individuals everywhere—within their own sacred homes. If we disdain this, then we get what Hillary wants for us: this view of subservient human nature and the nature of a profligate government in which Hillary Clinton's infamous statement that "our mission is to change what it means to be a human being in the 21st Century" will become the rule.



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

By what authority does she force me to change? Or you? By what doctrines does she use to change what we American's decide in our daily lives and attributes in which to self-determine our own and best form of happiness? In which our nation, *this nation called America*, has secured for us?!??

I mean, really—who is this woman?? Who does she (and the nation of Autocrats like her who 'think' they know what is best for us) think she is?!???

I was under the mistaken pressure that she was just merely a special interest Lawyer—*not a God among men...* I would think it prudent, given the light of common understood circumstances, that simply put, Ms. Clinton mind her own garden which appears to be slightly overgrown with weeds. I would make the supposition, that Ms. Clinton be a more valuable resource to this nation rediscovering her own home and her own kitchen rather than intruding into mine with socialist flotsam and untried and failed theories of feminist social engineering....

Yet, these people would, and *are* gladly seizing from us what is foundationally ours. Like the Federal Bureau of Land Management, they are just Park Rangers, managing the wild herd of humanity for a greater purpose, which is coincidentally, *their purpose...* And if they conclude that your child will not be an artist or a mathematician, well, sorry; you lose. Because you are just a Human Resource to be used for the greater good of man under the careful and Fatherly guidance and management of *Parens Patriae* imbued through the unlimited resources and power of a mad, and power hungry government. This translates that you are a piece of equipment that will be managed as they see fit—and 'they' are implementing the first forms of this Autocracy already. They can do this, when they could have never done this previously in American History, due to the fact of the incessant, insouciant impressment of Radical Feminism upon the mindset of our national people. We through several generations of mostly the Welfare Class, have been bludgeoned with its indoctrination. Now, we accept what is most reprehensible in form as our form of governance, as the defacto will within our lives, incredibly; most without any question whatsoever. We are again, to the point where just saying that a man should be a man—appears revolutionary.

There will come a time when our Declaration and Re-Affirmation will become widely taught, openly disseminated and known. In fact, this document should be read by every grade-school child along with the Declaration of Independence, our Constitution for the united States of America and other foundational documents within that order. For the Declaration and Re-Affirmation like Marshall McCluen noted earlier, looks to our future through the rear-view mirror of our past, in those supporting foundational truths. Our words build off those sacred Documents solid

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

construction, while conversely; Hillary's words and the Radical Feminists doctrine are built upon lies, and antithetical foundational Anti-American precepts and concepts. If you hold mankind's conceptual square up to the Constitution, Declaration of Independence, and our Declaration and Re-Affirmation, you will see a tight fit. Hold the same square up to Hillary's and the Radical Feminists concepts and you will see a extremely skewed, fallow house of cards in a glaring light of disparity.

On a final note about our Reaffirmation and Declaration; I am not only proud of that historical document—which by the way—is a legal document and can be used by anyone who enjoins in the highest logic and reason it inculcates; but I am also proud of the men who forged it. Simply put they exemplified exactly what men are and always have been: **consumately fair**. These gentlemen just were not a bunch of "Angry White Males" which the media and feminist have continually portrayed us to be. No. To a man, each of them was concerned about something else higher than himself: a higher issue concerning humanity. Something which lent itself to the terms of legacy, history, family, tradition. Something most certainly lost, and dying. There were very committed men at that assemblage, erudite, with vision. Unlike what I have seen displayed by Feminists who appear to have a hidden political agenda underneath their pleaded cried to "save the children".

No man there said "I want my slice of pie and the hell with anyone else"—no! There were no agenda's here. There was just a recognition of a clear and ever present danger, something which was ruining both Fathers, Families and America; and we just restated the obvious. In the final analysis, these men were ready to capitulate their own interests to truly 'protect the children'. Again, looking at the final product, we can readily see without any hesitation; a lineage to law and an age of reason. There is nothing frivolous in this document; and in the absolute analysis, this document will become a cornerstone in defining what rights are imbued to Fathers and there role within the family. This document can withstand the test of time—and may become as important to future generations as all this nations other foundational documents. I am humbled and honored that I have had the opportunity to have been a part of it, as there are others within this movement more suited to have had their name attached to this document. In reality; all fathers names are on that document, both past and future. However, any Father who concurs with our Reaffirmation and Declaration presently undergoing persecution by any government tribunal would be wise to file this document along with the Constitution, their State Constitution, and the Declaration of Independence, in their own case, and to sign his name to the Fathers Rights Reaffirmation and Declaration under ours. Simply put, it is a legal line in the concrete, and if they dare cross it, if they "dare cross that threshold" they have been no-

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

ticed of the law, and thereby have violated their office and their oath of office. By these crimes, they are no longer immune from justice.

Doing this is going to push this system to the limits, and it will exacerbate an issue they want kept silent: "Who really owns this nation's children?" Is it the putative parents under the Father as head of household, which is clearly recognized under law, or is it 'something else'? Is it the State, which cannot run its own affairs nor keep its own financial house in order?? Under this scenario, even the dreaded Doctrine of *Parens Patriae* would come under severe scrutiny, and most likely, lose in the end. It will not be able to withstand a constitutional common law challenge made from within an American home.

For government to own humans and to be a parent—has no authorization in our constitution. If it is not a specific power delegated by the constitution, the government does not have such an authority, and is in fact, trying to go under the common-law principle of local usage and procedure. They figure, do a crime long enough to where the people accept it; and poof! It magically becomes law. Of course they are wrong; this isn't law, it is tyranny. Again, this would be a very tentative and highly charged case, one that would supercede the Feminist and even *Roe v. Wade* if such a material fact was entered and challenged into the courts. The government, and Feminist and a host of other 'special interests' would be sweating the proverbial bullets—it would be their worst nightmare come true if this case were ever framed in trial. For under this challenge, the competing and opposite systems of Matriarchy and Patriarchy would have to be entered into the record. Only one could win. The government would have to be a party—and all doctrines, "Best Interests of the Child", "Tender Years", "*Parens Patriae*", and Patriarchy and Matriarchy would have to fall under the true scrutiny of the law in the harsh reality and light of day—only one would be able to square consistently with the Constitution, and the common law rights of man. And that is Patriarchy. When this happens, there would be many doctrines falling by the wayside. There would be many people out of a job. And more importantly; there would be many children saved by this act.

Here is the groundwork of our law:

### THE OBVIOUS

---

#### The American Digest 1897 – 1906

#### §99 Custody of Infants

##### (1) In General

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

[a] The father is the natural guardian of his child, and will be awarded possession of his person, unless he is unworthy, and incompetent to discharge the trust imposed upon him.

(Ohio—C.C. 1899) *In re Coons*, 20 Ohio Cir. Ct. R. 47 11 O.C.D. 208;

(Tex. Civ. App. 1905) *Parker v. Wiggins*, 86 SW 786

(W.Va. 1891) *Green v. Campbell* 35 W.Va. 698 14 S.E. 212, 29 Am. St. Rep. 843

[c] (Ga. 1893)

The father is entitled to the custody of his child during minority, unless such right has been relinquished or forfeited. — *Franklin v. Carswell*, 29, S.E. 476, 103 Ga. 553.

[d] (Ga. 1902)

On the hearing of a writ of Habeas Corpus to determine the custody of a minor child, it is an improper exercise of discretion to render Judgement depriving on of the custody and awarding it to another, where there is undisputed evidence of the right and fitness of the former to have such custody, and there is no evidence to the contrary.

*Carter v. Brett*, 42 S.E. 348, 116 Ga. 114.

Determinations of Particular issues or question — Custody of Infants.

[j] (Mass. 1834)

In general, as the Father is by law clearly entitled to the custody of his child, the court will so far interfere as to issue the writ of Habeas Corpus and inquire into the circumstances of the case, in order to prevent a party entitled to the custody of a child from seeking it by force or stratagem. And the court will feel bound to restore the custody to the father, where the law has placed it, unless in a clear and strong case of unfitness on his part to have such custody. -- *Commonwealth v. Briggs*, 33 Mass. (16 Pick.) 203

[k] (Mo. 1865)

Upon a petition for Habeas Corpus to determine to whom the custody of certain minor children shall be given, the court has no authority to order the Father to pay any certain sums of money to a trustee for their Support. — *Ferguson v. Ferguson* 36 Mo. 197.

[l]

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

Upon a petition for habeas Corpus, the court has authority to relieve an infant from restraint; but it has no power to determine matters of guardianship, appointment of trustees, disposition of the property, or moneys of the parties, or the making of provision for the child placed in the custody of the Father. Ibid.

[f] (S.C. 1883)

Other things being equal, the claims of the Father to the custody and control of his children are superior to those of the mother, but it is discretionary with the court to which one of the parents children shall be committed, and, where they are under the age of choice, the court will exercise that discretion, looking solely to the welfare and happiness of the children. Ex. Parte Reed, 19 S.C. 604. [*Decennial Edition of the AMERICAN DIGEST, A Complete Digest of all Reported Cases from 1897 to 1906, Volume 9 – Executors and Administrators – Hawaii – West Publishing Co., St. Paul. 1909.*]

I am certain that there are Fathers reading these laws right now, whose jaws are hitting the ground. Yes...look at it. This *was* and still is the law. This comes from the American Digest, a beautiful, old and ancient set of law books which inculcated law and order into one of the greatest nations ever developed on the face of the earth: America. Patriarchy was the written law up until 1906 and beyond. This law was instrumental in bringing this nation into the world's greatest national power on earth.

Perhaps now you understand the impetus of my book. Simply put: we've all been had by the modern "court" systems. We all have—to a man. This has been one of the greatest frauds ever perpetrated throughout history...and we bought into it only because we were fair. We thought sharing might be fair—instead it became our downfall. This mistake will never happen again.

We have supposedly, somewhere down the line, either by having a Social Security Number, a Birth Certificate, or, our child having those same things, or—even your initial court case, or your signature you signed thereof, or—perhaps even your marriage license; it is all relative to this conversation, for *nobody truly knows how these courts ensnare fathers*. The fraudulent myth is that we have 'given up' these considerable perfect rights to our home, families and most importantly our children. We have been coerced into 'volunteering' to give up Patriarchy. Or at least their thesis goes. What this is really called is: *fraud by way of inducement*.

I mean look at the wording of these laws of the American Digest! The intent was dogmatic and perfectly clear! Let the Dads have their children was the clear message in the Law. Yet—in less than 50 years these laws would be turned around 180 degrees. This was done without a vote, with-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

out a mandate, in fact; with no American citizen actually realizing it was taking place. This fraud of: we as Fathers giving up our children, and then civilly killing ourselves; was invented by a malevolent, hateful group of opportunists and elite's who had a direct hand in forging these laws. No Father in the world would give up such vested rights, which, (as this book and others now coming into the mainstream are beginning to show), were so intrinsic and *mandated* by Western Civilization itself. No father would have ever done these things "if" we had been informed of the real intent of allowing the Government and Feminists to criminally harvest our homes and our lives.

Our higher-ordered Western Civilized culture chose Fatherhood, and fully intended to protect it so that both Fathers and Mothers would have a function within the home. This caused a social stability and wealth that man clearly recognized went back 5000 to 7000 years. There was a purpose to this choice, not just the mere harnessing of sex to make it work within the home, and not just to uphold the Judeo-Christian belief in the Bible—but man empirically noted and ingrained into society that which worked best and most sensibly—and a man and a woman joining as one was not just romantic, as an engineered solution to a potentially widespread problem; it was a very succinct and essential solution! As a matter of fact, I doubt that the feminist contention of a "male dominated" society had as much to do with 'domination' as it did with the proper engineering of both the family and society. Male domination by any comparison to modern feminism was not as brutal nor as warlike as they would have you think. It is a well known fact that we were not placing women into prisons because we couldn't steal from them—which is a main part of what American Feminism is all about. The 'alleged' "Male Domination" was simply putting the quarterback where the quarterback should be to play the game, and letting the lineman do what the lineman does in his game. I've never heard anyone say that the game should be stopped and they reverse their respective positions. Confucius addressed this problem earlier in chapter XX.

Nonetheless, in looking at these laws from the *American Digest 1897-1906*, we can see that as in the case noted earlier: *Fanning v. Fanning*, that the courts protected the rights of the father as a social responsibility, and thereby, they fully understood that they were protecting not only the children, not only the family, not only the father, but also society as well. This of course, brings up a question as to how either we, as a society contracted out of those rights. Society never gave them up, nor to my knowledge have men abdicated them. "Something" mysterious replaced the law, with a new foreign and alien law. Not just alien, but Anti-American law—the law which allows women to steal children and then walk into court and by this criminal act—by their 'unclean hands'—they obtain a

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

career on Welfare and profit from their criminal acts, while destroying the man who fathered their child and replacing him with the security of the state. If you look at §99, item [j] above, you will see that it states simply that the law clearly gives fathers their children, and if anyone uses any form of "stratagem" to prevent a father from obtaining custody of his child, that the court will forcibly restore the custody back to the father upon a Writ of Habeas Corpus.

This is in exact synchronicity with true law, which states that no person who has "unclean hand's" (in other words, someone who has committed a criminal act or crime, ergo: done something wrong or unjust) that such a person cannot profit from or benefit from the law. The maxim states: "He who is without clean hands cannot profit from the law." This means that a man stealing a car, cannot then go into court and have the court force by law the original owner pay the bank loan on the car...but this is *exactly* what Feminist Jurisprudence does, all under the guise of law, with full complicity from the Judges who profit by this conspiracy.

This is in direct contravention to modern Feminized courts who commonly overturn such truths and allow those with filthy and outright criminal hands to gain if not subsidy, then outright careers. A Mother who has stolen her child from the child's father is protected in today's courts and is financially and criminally protected. The courts can now be depended to allow those who have committed crimes and who have 'unclean hands' to directly profit by their act. This is one of the cornerstone foundations of law which has been usurped by the modern Welfare State. Without this perversion in law, the whole system would be severely crippled.

Because of this, women have gotten a 'green-light' from the courts and from government, to commit acts of crime of kidnapping and even egregious acts of insolence within their own home against the men they are with. And to this end, the Feminist shelters, hotlines, and Welfare advocacy organizations throughout every community in this nation; urge mothers to kidnap their children from their fathers, to enrage them by insolent or immoral acts, and then; to file either frivolous or outright lies against the father and to allege 'abuse' in which the courts will not only support—but will if need be—imprison fathers for decades. Most men, never have a chance against this system, many never see this coming, and there are many of them; (the low figure starts about 33% and the high figure could go as high as 90%) of these fathers who are totally and completely innocent; yet, sit in jail for years because of the perverse support these courts now give to mothers—who are in fact; the real criminals with unclean hands—in direct violation of law, and the maxim's of law...all to support "The Best Interests of the Child."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Conversely, our courts of the Fanning era, protected fatherhood, because the courts intrinsically knew that the Father, was the centerpiece of the home and the family. Keep him protected, and we would have a nation of two-parent families and social stability, which was the best design man devised to protect children and both the man and the woman.

"Probably no group in the country is subject to a more pervasive, firmly established and staunchly defended system of discrimination than are women. Relying on such varied arguments as biblical authority, the women's lack of muscular strength, her child-bearing function with its attendant incapacities, and the natural capacity for motherhood, male members of society have undertaken to "protect their women" from having to compete against men by assuring them, insofar as possible, a role of their own in society. States have, at one time or another, forbidden women to work at certain jobs, to engage publicly in certain sports, to work while pregnant or to collect unemployment benefits when on maternity leave. Until 1968 a Connecticut statute provided that a woman could be sentenced to three-years at the "State Farm" for a crime for which a man could be sentenced to only eighteen months in jail, and until 1982 a state could still establish a one-sex school, while one-race schools were held to deny equal protection of the laws." [Leading Constitutional Decisions, Robert F. Cushman, 17th Ed., @1987, Prentice Hall, Inc. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey 07632; ISBN 0-13-527367-6; p. 354.]

Yet, while we as a society are not upholding this once noble "Protection of the Women" any longer as now we have instituted Radical Feminism in our courts, the courts have held men up to an even more unequal burden and disenfranchisement of their own homes, the result which has devolved a plague upon this nation. This substantive inequality of removal of the male and disenfranchisement from his own children, which he and civilization understand of which he is a key component to their well-being, *and* to societies well-being has factually led to anarchy, and the establishment of new Government Superstructures and Empires. Presently, women are supposedly not "Protected" any longer (at least not by men, but most certainly by the courts), and from not being protected the courts have given them "equal" Super-Rights, never seen before in any civilization; and conversely; they have given men the "equal right" to be imprisoned, coerced and categorically erased for any attempts to either protect themselves, their homes, their women, their children or their property. Now the courts have leveled the "equal protection of the laws" so well by such vehicles as the "strict scrutiny test", the "rational basis test", and the dreaded "intermediate test" which has created a draconian legal environment with broad powers with which has led to more men being imprisoned to 'uphold' the "Equality" industry than every before. Our prisons are burgeoning with men that have been "equalized." The tax



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

rolls and 'Deadbeat Dads' rolls are overflowing with men who, factually are at the end of a Government sponsored feeding cycle, and can no longer be harvested, as they are eminently broke.

This equalization came about through a fundamental shift in the rights of men expressed within the law. Something changed, that no American had any inkling that such a fundamental change was taken place. Once the change occurred, it opened a floodgate, a Pandora's Box if you will, which has so profound as to change the organic nature, protections, and mindset of this nation itself. This change has come at the cost of basic freedom's, and at the cost of the American Republican form of government itself.

The more recent version of *Corpus Juris Secundum*, which is but a late cousin to West's Century publication quoted earlier in this chapter, we can trace this organic paradigm shift in the American law itself.

### CORPUS JURIS SECUNDUM

Volume 67A

§16 -- A parents right to the custody of a minor child is more in the nature of a personal trust reposed in the parent by the state, as *parens patriæ*, which trust imposed the reciprocal obligation to maintain, care for, and protect the child, as discussed *infra* §49 et. Seq., And in which the trust of the parent will be secured as long as the parent discharges such correlative duties.

Ariz-- *Shumway v. Farley*, 203 P.2d 507, 68 Ariz 159.

Minn.-- In re Adoption of Anderson, 50 N.W. 2d 278, 235 Minn. 192.

N.J. -- *Gardner v. Hall*, 26 A.2d 799, 132 N.J. Et. Seq. 64, Affirmed 31 A.2d 805, 133 N.J. Eq. 287—*Frank v. Gaylord* 182A. 614, 119 N.J. Eq. 427—*Lippencott v. Lippencott*, 128 A 254, 97 N.J. Eq. 517.

Okl -- *Corpus Juris Secundum* cited in *Carigan v. State* 469 P.2d 656, 659.

Wash -- In re Hudson, 126 P.2d 765, 13 Wash 2d 673.

Wyo -- *Nugent v. Powell* 33 P. 23, 28, 4 Wyo. 173, 62 Am. S.R. 17, 20 L.R.A. 199.

### **B -- Rights of Custody**

#### **§16 Beginning -- Rights of Parents**

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

As a general rule, parents have a natural and legal right to the custody of their minor children, but that right is just a *prima facie* one and not absolute, and it is more in the nature of a personal trust.

As a general rule, at common law and under statutes declaratory thereof, Parents have the natural and legal right to the custody, care, and control of their minor children, or, as otherwise expressed, a natural right to the custody, companionship, and bringing up of their children. Accordingly, if the parents are fit and proper persons, as discussed *infra* §23, they ordinarily have a primary, prior, or paramount right to the care and custody of their minor children. This right grows out of the parents' obligation to maintain and educate their children, and public policy demands that such right be held inviolate, and not easily controlled by other considerations. Moreover, under some statutes, a parent's right of custody continues unless one of the methods provided by statute for depriving the parent of such custody, has been pursued.

The right of parents to the care, custody and control of their children is an important and substantial right. It has been characterized by the court as inherent, fundamental, and constitutionally protected right. However, such right is really a *prima facie* right even though there has been no voluntary abandonment of the right, and it may be invaded or entirely nullified. Even though the right is not absolute right, it may be limited or interfered with only for the most substantial, compelling, and sufficient reasons, and it is subject to judicial control only when the interests of the child demands it.

Parents have no property rights, in the ordinary sense of that term, in or to their minor children, and, accordingly a parent's right of control or custody of a minor child is not a property right which may be bargained, sold, or otherwise disposed of. However, a wrongful injury to a legally protected interest in the custody of a minor child will support a right of action by the parent or parents as a direct injury to such interest.

R.I. -- *Bedard v. Notre Dame Hospital*, 151 A. 2d 690, 89 R.I. 195

M.o. -- *Tripp v. Brawley*, App. 261 S.W. 508.

N.M. -- *Hill v. Patton*, 85 P.2d 75, 43 N.M. 21.

**Chattle** – A child is not chattel to be bought or sold, directly or indirectly.

Ark. -- *Knight v. Deavers*, 531 S.W. 2d 252

N.Y. -- *People ex. rel. Gill v. Lapidus* 120 N.Y.S. 2d 766 202 Misc. 1116

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

Or. -- Benessen v. Taylor, 255 P.2d 148, 198 Or. 347.

U.S. -- Weinberger v. Wiesendeld N.J., 95 S.Ct. 1225, 420 U.S. 636, 43 L.Ed. 2d 514.

Newton v. Burgin; NC.N.C., 363 F.Supp. 782, Affirmed 94 S.Ct. 889, 414 U.S. 1139, 39 L.Ed. 2d 96.

Ala. -- Thorne v. Thorne, Civ. App., 344 So. 2d 165.

Alaska—Matter of S.D., 549 P.2d 1190.

Wash. - In re. Sego, 449 P.2d 881, 7 Wash. 457, reversed on other grounds 513 P.2d 831, 82 Wash. 2d 736.

W.Va. -- In re. Willis, 207 S.E. 2d 129.

### §17 -- As Between Parents

At common law, the primary right to the custody and care of minor children is generally in the Father, but, under various statutes, as well as under some modern decisions, the parents are generally regarded as having equal rights to the custody and care of the children, and when parents separate, the custody may be awarded to the one or the other. Of the parents, according to the exigencies of the particular case.

At common law, and under some Statutes declaratory thereof, as a general rule, the natural or primary right to the custody of the minor children is in the father, since such right necessarily springs from his duty to provide for the children's protection, maintenance, and education.

Mass -- Hathaway v. Packard, 82 N.E. 2d 881, 323, Mass. 501—Broman v. Byrne 78 N.E. 2d 616, 322 Mass. 578—Barry v. Sparks, 27 N.E. 2d 728, 306 Mass 80, 128 A.L.R. 983.

N.C. -- Tyner v. Tyner 175 S.E. 144, 206 N.C. 776—In re. Ten Hoopen's Custody 162 S.E. 619, 202 N.C. 223.

Pa. -- Commonwealth ex. rel. Martino v. Blough, 191 A.2d 918, 201 Pa. Super. 346

- Commonwealth ex. rel. Renny v. Murdock, 94 Pa. Super. 59.

And, if the parents are living apart and there is a dispute as to the custody, the right of the father ordinarily is superior to the mother.

Fla. -- State ex. rel. Rasco v. Rasco, 190 So. 510, 139 Fla. 349.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

The common law rule, however, has been changed in many jurisdictions by statutes and by modern decisions of the courts.

Ark. -- *Phifer v. Phifer*, 129 S.W.2d 939, 198 Ark. 567—*Southwestern Gas & Electric Co. v. Denney*, 82 S.W. 2d 17, 190 Ark. 934.

Md. -- *Ross v. Hoffman*, 372 A. 2d 582, 280 Md. 172.

Minn -- *Miller v. Monsen*, 37 N.W. 2d 543, 228 Minn. 400.

Under such statutes and decisions, subject to the considerations affecting custody, as discussed *infra* § 20 et. seq., the father and the mother as against each other, are regarded as having equal rights in the custody and control of their minor children. Accordingly, in the absence of a judicial determination, neither parent has an absolute or superior right to the custody of such children, or, as been held, even a *prima facie* right of custody. These rules have been held applicable not only where the parents are living together, but also where they are living apart.

Under these statutes and modern judicial decisions, the strict common-law rule has been relaxed, and, when the parties separate and cannot agree to the custody of the child, the court may exercise its discretion and award custody according to the exigencies of the particular case, with special regard to that disposition which will serve the best interests and welfare of the child.

Ala – *Hall. v. Donnelly*, 149 So. 867, 25 Ala. App. 481, certiorari denied 149 So. 872, 227 Ala. 289

Ariz. -- *In re Winn*, 63 P2d 198, 48 Ariz. 529.

Cal. -- *Holsinger v. Holsinger*, 279 P2d 961, 44 C.2d 132

Fla. -- *State ex. rel. Rasco v. Rasco*, 190 So. 510, 139 Fla. 349—*State ex. rel. Bonsack v. Campbell*, 184 So. 332, 134 Fla. 809.

Ga. -- *Folsom v. Folsom*, 186 S.E. 2d 752, 228 Ga. 536—*Knox v. Knox* 176 S.E. 2d 712, 226 Ga. 619—*Whaley v. Disbrow*, 166 S.E. 2d 343, 225 Ga. 145—*Waldrup v. Crane*, 46 S.E. 2d 919 203 Ga. 388.

Generally, it has been held that, other things being equal, the mother should be given the preference in matters involving the custody of minor children.

Alaska- *Glasgow v. Glasgow*, 426 p. 2d 617.

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

Cal. -- Denham v. Martina, 29 Cal. Rptr. 377, 214 C.A. 2d 312.

Neb. -- McNamee v. McNamee, 47 N.W. 2d 383, 154 Nev. 212.

N.J. -- Sheehan v. Sheehan, super., 143 A.2d 874, 51 N.J. Super. 276---Fiore v. Fiore, 139 A.2d 414, 49 N.J. Super., 219—Application of Jackson, 80 A.2d 306, 13 N.J. Super. 144.

Rule explained:

1. The maternal preference rule is explanatory of, rather than distinct from, the general principle that paramount consideration in custody cases is the welfare and best interest of the children, and, in most cases, the rule follows naturally from the general principle.

LA. – Stevens v. Steven, App., 340 So. 2d 584.

2. "Maternal Preference" should not be expressed as a consideration in a child custody case upon evidentiary facts.

Md. – Cooke v. Cooke, 319 A.2d 841, 21 Md. App. 376 70 A.L.R. 3d 255.

### **Fathers Secondary Right.**

1. Father does not have a superior right to custody of a minor child when all other things are equal.

Ill. -- Wells, v. Wells, 344 N.E. 2d 37, 36 Ill. App. 3d 488.

2. Fathers right to custody of child is secondary to that of mother.

N.Y. – Roe v. Doe, 296 N.Y.S. 2d 865, 58 misc. 2d 757.

### **Fathers Responsibility.**

It is the fathers responsibility to care for and maintain both mother and children when other considerations do not require that children awarded care to the mother or another person, and father is regarded as having legal right to custody and care of minor children when he is not show to be improper person best to conserve welfare of children.

### **Nonapplicability of Statute**

Statute giving the parents equal rights does not apply because there is another statute which gives sole custody to mothers in such cases.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

N.H. -- Sheehey v. Sheehey, 186 A. 1, 88 N.H. 223

### Violation of Foreign Statute

Mother's disobedience of foreign decree forbidding her to remove child from state has been held not such misconduct as precluded, as matter of law, from availing herself of statute providing that wife of citizen of another state who has resided within state six months successively, separately from husband, shall have exclusive custody of minor children living with her, since wife need not be blameless to avail herself of statute, but question is merely whether misconduct renders her unsuitable person to have custody.

N.H. -- Sheehey v. Sheehey, 186 A. 1, 88 N.H. 223.

Also: N.H. – Bodeau v. Bodeau, 27 A. 2d 191, 92 N.H. 183.  
[Corpus Juris Secundum, by Arnold O. Sinnow, Editor in Chief,  
West's Publishing Co. St. Paul, Minn., Vol. 67A, pg. 202-206.]

As most readers can already see, this is a complete disjuncture and severance from the basic law of the past. It is a complete usurpation of our common law. What we have here is not just a total abrogation of the common law principals and ideals, but; a complete reversal of law itself. The dogma and basis of law, and been completely obfuscated by these profligate laws being now perpetrated against an unsuspecting male, and more importantly—the public as a whole, because—this monster is now headed for everyone, not just ‘bad old’ abusive Fathers... From the absolute right of Fathers to custody of their children in the American Century, we now have "secondary rights" as written by the Corpus Juris Secundum.

"Any person's" child in which the state takes an interest, is now subject to abject, total and irrevocable seizure by the state. Notice how, what was missing before, the *Parens Patriae* doctrine immediately comes up as a solid principle in law, where before it was barely known or brought to light. Where the state once would dare not tread, presently; due to these new Orwellian Feminist laws which embrace Ms. Clinton's Village tribal model, it is knee-deep into every single home within the United States, ready to have several standing armies at the ready, force dynamic entry into your home to take your child upon any issue under the broad scope and powers of "*Parens Patriae*". These present laws are factually so broad, so sweeping and draconian in their intent to remove the common law, the maxims of law, and the rule of law in which to now state that the "Best Interests of the Child" is the paramount objective of this society *under the doctrine of Parens Patriae*. No longer are individuals entreated to enjoin in the great American Experiment of Liberty and Justice.

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

Today, we are screamed at as government officials beat down our door, seize our property, totally eliminate our rights, hold treasonous public tribunals and mask them as 'trials'—all to protect the children, or the broader public interest. In fact again, when one sees the real protection that this have levied upon our children—we can begin to understand the statement above at the very beginning of this chapter in which these people enforcing these false doctrines upon us really never did believe in the foundational precepts and principals of Americanism at all. "We abandoned those principles because we never really believed in them." Neither does Ms. Clinton. Under this light, what we are speaking to here, is: treason.

Hillary's socialists and Elitist friends now control—by law, our children, our homes, our property, and our thoughts and beliefs. If we waver upon any endeavor, they 'notice' the infraction upon a multiplicity of laws and dynamically coerce performance or conformance—and from this they build their *Imperialist Empires*. We can factually document the "legal" lineage of this treasonous transgression. Our laws have been 'changed' to support an un-American regime and ideal: Socialism: Communism: Totalitarianism.

In the American Digest noted earlier, it was clear that "The father is the natural guardian of his child, and will be awarded possession of his person, unless he is unworthy, and incompetent to discharge the trust imposed upon him." This established the stable, two parent nuclear family and the attendant wealth that created this nations wealth and security and made it the singular worlds superpower. This then; through the miscegenation of Feminist Jurisprudence, (a socialist, anti-American radical hate group), changed these laws to the "Fathers right to custody of child is secondary to that of mother." Which is a complete reversal of foundational American law, and common law, and the maxims of law. This has brought us to Hillary's "Village" model, a tribal model that now rages across our newspapers in scenes of horrifying wars and death and slaughter among our children. "This" is the benefits of Ms. Clinton's "Village" waged in real time life, and—which will get much, much worse in the future.

Neither Ms. Clinton, the Legislature, nor the Courts themselves have the right to change and reform these basic laws of this nation. They have no right, no authority, no grant of power to even enter the common law—which is completely out of their domain. Our rights, and now laws, which have been bred out of the American populace, were well defined, noted and understood in earlier generations. These lessons have been lost through and by the planned destruction of our educational systems, which no longer teach these precepts, and; as the High School students in Miami found out—once anyone tries to exercise those rights, they will be ar-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

rested and thrown out of school, and jailed, which is an education to what really is happening in our schools and nation.

"We are all Republicans, we are all Federalists. If there be any among us who would wish to dissolve this Union or to change its republican form, let them stand undisturbed as monuments of the safety with which error of opinion may be tolerated, where reason is left free to combat it. I know, indeed, that some honest men fear that a republican government can not be strong, that this Government is not strong enough; but would the honest patriot, in the full tide of successful experiment, abandon a government which has so far kept us free and firm on the theoretic and visionary fear that this Government, the world's best hope, may by possibility want energy to preserve itself? I trust not. I believe this, on the contrary, the strongest Government on earth. I believe it the only one where every man, at the call of the law, would fly to the standard of the law, and would meet invasions of the public order as his own personal concern. Sometimes it is said that a man can not be trusted with the government of himself. Can he then, be trusted with the government of others? Or have we found angels in the forms of kings to govern him? Let history answer this question." [Documents of American History, Vol. 1, to 1898, Ninth Edition, by Henry Steele Commager, ©1973 by Prentice Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey, ISBN 0-13-216994-0, "Jefferson's First Inaugural Address, p. 187.]

History has answered this question time and time again, and we as a nation have forgotten those lessons which were learned and won by outright slavery, blood and great human sacrifice. Yet today, we fetidly allow such treason's as national public policy to not only allow such un-American doctrines to exist, and permeate our Court and Legislative systems of government, but also to have these malefactors proliferate fraudulently presented social doctrines to us in the name of the law. Hillary and those of her ilk pretends that she is an Angel among us—she is not. She is this nations greatest enemy, for she is the Lifeguard, drowning the swimmer.

Again, these false laws propagated from an elite cabal of special interests who have met anywhere from 50 to 100 years ago, (and still presently meet) and their plans are just taken fruition. Clearly, this disjuncture of the law cannot be explained within any legal reason. It was bludgeoned upon an unsuspecting American public through the creation of the national bogeyman: "The Father." Again, amazingly, the people through their mass visceral instincts bought into this fantastic choreography. This is a great danger to us, for it shows, a symbiotic link with the German Judges of the Weimar regime who were so willingly employed in the overturning of their own laws which protected humanity in order to institute inhumanity. Our simplistic and treasonous Judges have similarly



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

overturned the well-known precepts of Western Civilization itself—something well documented within their own maxims of laws, and mandated through their job performance, as such as we have proven in Fanning v. Fanning. They have then overtly attacked the basis and foundation of our good organic laws of this nation, and replaced them with a fallow and inhumane substitute—which has knowingly wrecked havoc upon this nation.

For profit.

This again can be seen from comparisons between the Digest and Secundum above. The digest notes: "In general, as the Father is by law clearly entitled to the custody of his child, the court will so far interfere as to issue the writ of Habeas Corpus and inquire into the circumstances of the case, in order to prevent a party entitled to the custody of a child from seeking it by force or stratagem. And the court will feel bound to restore the custody to the father, where the law has placed it." Again, the point is clearly presented here in both reason and law that by some 'devious' "force or stratagem" a child is wrongfully taken, the court in accordance with every law known to mankind must return that errantly stolen property back to its rightful owner under the Clean Hands doctrine of law.

*Now however*, due to the inconsistencies and illogic of modern Feminist Jurisprudence in which our courts have treasonously embraced—now the mother can steal the child and move to another state, and the court will not punish her—not only that—they will proactively protect her! There are cases to where the Father is paying his child support, and the state, who knows where the mother is, and dutifully sends her share of his theft to her—yet; they will refuse to disclose the location of the child to the father! So under this new mindset, if you have "unclean hands" and are a woman—the courts will protect you by overt acts and omission of laws and procedure. "Mother's disobedience of foreign decree forbidding her to remove child from state has been held not such misconduct as precluded, as matter of law, from availing herself of statute providing that wife of citizen of another state who has resided within state six months successively, separately from husband, shall have exclusive custody of minor children living with her, since wife need not be blameless to avail herself of statute, but question is merely whether misconduct renders her unsuitable person to have custody." This is *clearly* anti-law, and many fathers including myself, have suffered from this malady of the government not performing, in accordance with law, once the mother broken the laws by stealing the child. Women, now have a license to steal against men, verified not only in law and statute, but also by voluminous outrageous and past criminal performance of the courts and all Administrative Agencies linked to them. Clearly, this is a subornation of law, it is an affront to Statewide comity issues as *guaranteed* under our form of gov-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ernment and between each of the states. Presently, under the new "Feminist" mindset—these clear acts and omissions are obliterating legal jurisprudence to where it is not only not dependable, but rather it has become arrogantly criminal in act and performance. No longer is Article IV, Section 1 of the United States Constitution have any legal effect for fathers: "Full Faith and Credit shall be given in each State to the public Acts, Records, and judicial Proceedings of every other State, And the Congress may by General Laws prescribe the Manner in which such acts, Records and Proceedings shall be proved, and the Effect thereof." This legal paradox has created an unacceptable environment for the adjudication of issues within 'our' court systems, to where presently; there is a ever widening hatred and estrangement from these illegal and criminal tribunals whom uphold such idiocy.

"Practically speaking, the paradox of totalitarianism is power is that the possession of all instruments of governmental power and violence in one country is not an unmixed blessing for a totalitarian movement. Its disregard for facts, its strict adherence to the rules of a fictitious world, becomes steadily more difficult to maintain, yet remains as essential as it was before. Power means a direct confrontation with reality, and totalitarianism in power is constantly concerned with overcoming this challenge. Propaganda and organization no longer suffice to assert that the impossible is possible, that the incredible is true, that an insane consistency rules the world; the chief psychological support of totalitarianism fiction--the active resentment of the status quo, which the masses refused to accept as the only possible world--is no longer there; every bit of factual information that leaks through the iron curtain, set up against the ever-threatening flood of reality from the other nontotalitarian side, [The Origins of Totalitarianism, by Hannah Arendt, @1951, 1958, 1966 by Hannah Arendt, Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc., New York, Library of Congress Cat. Card No.: 66-22273, pp. 391-392]

This 'new' and 'modern' gestation of laws which enslave the father, and ultimately throw the ultimate possession and control of our children away to an ever omniscient state, is a stupidity, legion in the time of man. Indeed, Jefferson's warning about finding 'Angles' among the multitude of government workers who have been intruding deeper and deeper into our lives, to allow the state such an all pervasive authority to enter our lives at the slightest provocation [please note the 'slippery slope' of gun legislation, insurance laws, safety legislation and environmentalism as well as a host of other steady incursions into micro-management of our daily lives by government], is not only creating absolute pandemonium and havoc in today's headlines, but; in the future, will have a super-deadly effect upon humanities hopes for any freedom, liberty or justice. These acts of course go directly to the root of the Fathers Rights problem.

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

First, these supposed violations of law are brought against the father by everyone receiving a benefit from his economic destruction. Secondly, the law, from its inception, flatly *prohibits* such outrageous perversion of the "law."

*Administrative agencies act as judges in cases in which they are also prosecutors and so, in effect, act as judges in their own cases.*

Many of these agencies entertain complaints, institute investigations upon them, begin what are in effect prosecutions before themselves, allow their own subordinates to act as advocates for the prosecution, and often make the adjudication's in conference with those same subordinates. All this runs counter to the most elementary and universally recognized principals of justice. So thoroughly grounded were the common-law judges in this principal that in no less than four cases between Coke and Holt the courts laid down that even an Act of Parliament could not make one a judge in his own case. As an American court put it:

*"One of the rights secured to an accused person by the law of the land is that his accuser shall not at the same time be his judge; that is a principle of law that is fundamental; it is the first requisite to a fair and impartial trial; it is a privilege that the law of the land guarantees to every man when his life or liberty, good name, fame or property is involved."* [Administrative Agencies and the Law, by Roscoe Pound, Dean, Law School of Harvard University, April 1946.]

Most fathers must be aware of this common law principal and maxim. The reason for this is because *every* single person involved in this magical 'crime' has a vested money interest in destroying him. From secret "retirement fund" deals with the County Supervisors which pay Judges \$2.00 towards their retirement fund for every guilty person the convict, to things such as Government Code 77000 or other "Trial Court Funding Acts" which allow counties, and everyone in the court system *to be 'reimbursed'* (i.e. "funded") by the state and federal governments by finding you guilty. Again, for every Father found guilty, from the pretended "Public Defender" to Bailiff, to the Court Reporter, the supposed "welfare mother," right up to the Judge himself has got his hand in the money till. All of them have a pecuniary interest in destroying you and finding you guilty. This is how the Krell Welfare Machine runs. It lets one person have a dream and absolute freedom with no concomitant responsibility while at the same exact time, it is destroying another human being. This is a huge point and a huge crime presently being committed by these Anti-Constitutional "undefined" court systems. And *everyone* within these systems knows exactly what is going on, the fully understand their

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

criminal intent and participation in this horrid cannibalistic design, and they willingly participate in obtaining their "daily bread."

Please take note of the full page ad placed in the Village Voice with the large exclamatory Please Join Us! emblazoned above the whole ad in large point type:

"Lawyers try judicial end around Federal Child Abuse Rules-- "Activist" lawyers have filed a federal class action suit designed to thwart the efforts of the Giuliani Administration to protect abused children in New York City, and to effectively block the City from complying with new federal child abuse reforms.

In the wake of the notorious murder of 6-year-old Elisa Izquierdo by her crack-addicted mother in 1995, Mayor Giuliani directed caseworkers to emphasize the safety of children rather than the failed family preservation policy that rewards child abusers with special services. Congress similarly acted to curb family preservation in 1997 with passage of the Adoption and Safe Families Act directing states not to make repeated efforts to reunify families where parents have killed, tortured or sexually abused their children, and to move to terminate parental rights in cases of death or severe injury.

As we reported two weeks ago, the NY State Assembly is preparing to thumb its nose at this new law and risk the loss of \$450 million in federal funds by passing a bill that would make it harder to remove abused children from brutal homes. The Assembly bill is unlikely to become law, however, given the opposition of the State Senate and Gov. Pataki. So attorneys with the Center for Law and Social Justice have gone to court in an attempt to do a judicial end-run around the new federal rules. In a federal court suit they accuse the City of discriminating against African-American and Latino parents (by acting to protect African-American and Latino Children) -- and ask the court to establish procedures for removing children. In other words, they are seeking the classic judicial trump card -- a court decree that will preempt federal and state law and lock in family preservation in New York. CCI is considering joining with child advocates in intervening in the suit on behalf of the kids. [The Village Voice, February 16, 1999, --Weekly Update Ad from the Center for the Community Interest, 114 East 32nd Street, Suite 604 New York, NY 10016 Tel. (212) 689-6080 or FAX (212) 689-6370. P. 27]

As you can start to imagine, this is *incredibly* big business. It's all about money—nothing more. And instead of these Elite's who now wholesale work in a theatre of anti-law and complete corporate Feminist Mythology, are not funded to buy tanks and rifles (although they do have those through the embodiment and embrace of the state), they now kill Fathers and Families through Ads such as these, and TV commercials and Radio spots. They do this to maintain the mythology of this war, and to keep "that an insane consistency rules the world; the chief psychological support of totalitarianism fiction--the active resentment of the status quo,

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

which the masses refused to accept as the only possible world--is no longer there; every bit of factual information that leaks through the iron curtain, set up against the ever-threatening flood of reality from the other nontotalitarian side." You have in this as the classic Feminist mantra's noted in this book. "Save the Children! Save the Children!!" It is the only side being upheld or propagated within the media. Any intent to bring in any other issue, or mindset—like Hannah Arendt classically notes above about totalitarian regimes—is not just a direct threat to the mythology of the feminists, it is a wartime assault, and they will call their elite cadre above them for "more funding" and "more grants," which of course, burdens not only society, but the Fathers even more.

A poignant example was brought to my attention one day when I was walking through several antique stores in Venice beach in California. There I was perusing through the various items, fascinated by their artwork, design—their smell and the way each item called back a previous history of classical Americana. I came across a bunch of War posters from World War I, and II; and fanned through them, reading their supporting treatise as to why we were going to war, how we should live, and support the war, what sacrifices we must make as a society so that we might prevail. Then one stopped me dead in my tracks as I read it's bold assertion: "Save Our Children from Autocracy" it exclaimed, warning of a fascist regime willing to overpower the American precepts of home and family. I was stunned when I read it, because it affirmed we as a nation, once used this precept to defend ourselves from foreign enemies. Now we have a domestic enemy undermining those very precepts in the full light of pretended law, and they demand we pay for this subversion.

The precept of which we fought wars over, that we "Save Our Children From Autocracy" has been lost through the ever shrill dissonance, rising from the Feminist encampment to "Save Our Children." To accomplish this, the family preservation has to be openly destroyed by government, and that destruction, is becoming marketed worldwide. No longer can we defend our children from autocracy, and no other nation will be defend themselves from it, if we can't.

### **MORE OBVIOUS: HATE**

---

W.L. George, who quoted in V.F. Calverton's book *The Bankruptcy of Marriage*, said: "The ultimate aim of feminism with regard to marriage is the practical suppression of marriage and the institution of free alliance." [p. 293] This 'free alliance' is what our courts are now emoting to Father and men across this nation. They have intentionally accepted the national Feminist doctrines of hate and persecution against the Family and the American Male, and have renounced their celebrated position as the protectorate of society, for the false doctrines of the Radical Feminist

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

hate methodology. In the passage noted above in Legal Constitutional Decisions where the court implied that either men or society were relying on 'varied arguments' ingrained in the Bible itself that somehow these were flawed. This of course, is the dead-center of Radical Feminist hate doctrines which have excoriated the Bible and not only hate its doctrine, but war against it outright. Clearly, as civilization chose and supported Patriarchy as an institution, the Bible gave it voice, under law. This once document has had a magnanimous impression upon the scope of Western Civilization and most certainly; is one of the main reasons for Western Civilization's success. To institute Radical Feminism, the feminists had to eradicate these powerful truism's which Western Civilization advocated through the teachings of the Bible. To do this, they simply eliminated the Bible—and our fallow court system, has amazingly, complied with this radical doctrine.

"The true enemy of women skulks behind the altar. The Bible is not the word of God. The Bible is the act of men written to keep women subordinate [and] written out of the love of domination." [Quoted in *The Case for Father Custody*, p. 276, from a quote in the *Los Angeles Times*, 1 August, 1988.] Somehow, now these words have become the centerpiece of all legal decisions, yet; strangely, our Legislature and the Office of the President itself, has noted differently.

Public Law 97-280 [S.J. Res. 165]; October 4, 1982

### YEAR OF THE BIBLE DESIGNATION

Joint Resolution authorizing and requesting the President to proclaim 1983 as "Year of the Bible"

Whereas the Bible, the Word of God, has made an unique contribution in shaping the United States as a distinctive and blessed nation and people;

Whereas deeply held religious convictions springing from the Holy Scriptures led to the

early settlement of our nation;

Whereas Biblical teachings inspired concepts of civil government that are contained in our Declaration of Independence and the Constitution of the United States;

Whereas many of our great national leaders--among them Presidents Washington, Jackson, Lincoln, and Wilson--paid tribute to the surpassing influence of the Bible in our country's development, as in the words of President Jackson that the Bible is the rock on which our Republic rests";

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

Whereas the history of our Nation clearly illustrates the value of voluntarily applying the

teachings of the Scriptures in the lives of individuals, families and societies;

Whereas this Nation now faces great challenges that will test this nation as it has

never been tested before; and

Whereas that renewing our knowledge of and faith in God through Holy Scripture can

strengthen us as a nation and a people: Now, therefore, be it

**Resolved** by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the President is authorized and requested to designate 1983 as a national "Year of the Bible" in recognition of both the formative influence the Bible has been for our Nation, and our national need to study and apply the teachings of the Holy Scriptures.

Approved October 4, 1982

LEGISLATIVE HISTORY -- S.J. Res 165;

Congressional Record, Vol 128

Mar 31, Considered and passed Senate

Sept 21, Considered and passed House

1 US Cong and Admin News 82-29 96 STAT 1211

Strangely, this public law accords the Bible and its doctrine, in a Christian nation—a very special place within our laws. Yet, the courts, and both Legislative and Executive Branches of government scream differently. Amneus also cites Judy Mann saying "Christianity, patriarchy, and abuse are all wrapped up together, and together they doom girls to second class citizenship." [From *The Case for Father Custody*, by Dr. Daniel Amneus p. 268] Yet, clearly, the Feminist doctrine of complete hate and eradication of the Bible and its influences is now rote public policy as dictated in error of law, by and errant Judiciary which has become the ground zero norm for Radical Feminist and other hate groups which hate the Christian heritage and teaching of the Holy Bible. There can be no disputing the facts here, feminist have undermined our Christian Heritage which supports the Father and Family, and they have

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

through an unseen elite regime implemented Anti-Americanism along with a Anti-Christian indoctrination within the law, in which, is in direct contravention to our foundational laws! Simply put: the Feminists, in conjunction with the courts, along with an unseen Elite Regime has undermined America.

What is most surprising, is that the feminists in their most celebrated document, the 1848 Seneca Falls Declaration of Sentiments and Resolutions *invokes* God as a fundamental precept in which to gain 'equality'!!

"When in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one portion of the family of man to assume among the people of the earth a position different from that which they have hitherto occupied, but one in which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them...

...That they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and pursuit of happiness... [Documents of American History, Vol. 1, to 1898, Ninth Edition, by Henry Steele Commager, ©1973 by Prentice Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey, ISBN 0-13-216994-0, "172. WOMENS RIGHTS, The Seneca Falls Declaration of Sentiments and Resolutions, July 19, 1848" , p. 315.]

Impress these factual words upon any modern Feminist, and they will be caught in the paradox of their own making in which Hannah Arendt noted previously about Totalitarian regimes. Simply put, they cannot both hate the bible and demand it's eradication, then under their own feminist formative doctrines seek equality under God, and claim those freedoms under American governance which invokes those same principals! The modern Feminist movement is proactively trying to dismantle both God and Christian doctrine within this society, all while claiming and asserting their freedoms under those same foundational precepts which they emulate and borrow from our Declaration of Independence. What they demand in his name; they deny us in application.

When we look not only at the scope of our laws, brick by brick, we see a clear discontinuity by such inconsistencies in the feminist mind-set—a complete break within the framework of modern law. We then notice a new set of Draconian laws starting out of the complete ether, with no basis in law or logic, and which have more designs on radical Social revolution or outright fascism than they do in American law, governance or even reason.

When we look at what effects such a draconian mind-set has impressed upon this society, we see that this has had a social upheaval and such a negative impact upon society that in less than a generation it has turned a free American form of society, virtually first in all social indicators across the spectrum, to a Socialist society almost dead last in every social category but a few short years after implementation. Presently, we



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

live in a highly emblematic Police State, with closed forms of redress in a Autocratic Totalitarian Fascist State which is more apt to deny freedom than to protect them.

The place in which the courts once provided protection in truth, reason, principles and justice; and even in Biblical precepts has been lost to a meaner more base agenda—one driven with special interests and purposes, based on illogic and the total acquisition of power. More importantly, a complete theft of a gender of citizens, the American male; all to fund this new Imperialistic order of Ms. Clinton's, whose intent it is to 'redesign humanity.'

Contemporary Judges, Lawyers, Legislatures, right down to individual social workers and special interest groups, fully understand their Anti-American agenda. They inculcate the Morbius Imprinting They have used this nations Patriarchal Institutions' natural endowment to seek justice, to gain a toehold upon an American mindset—and to replace that mindset with their own--which now kills the institution which allowed such fair assessments and hearings in the first place. Its intent is to replace it with an unmovable mind-set of the Socialist-Autocratic fascist society. The blueprint of this social revolution is well documented throughout feminist history. The only betrayal here has been by the courts and the Legislature's who have abandoned the free-American Patriarchal model and have replaced it with a totalitarian Socialist State. If anything, such as the Constitution or even the Bible stood in their way, these Feminists, backed by an unseen Elite Regime: just annihilated it.

From this seizure upon the American landscape, we see the legacy of the results within our society of this social revolutionary war: children no longer able to pray within our Christian societies public school system; no manger's at any public building; children seized and taken out their family's home for but teaching Constitutionalism or Christian belief; no morality issues being able to be raised within 'Family' or 'Divorce' courts; removal of the Ten Commandments from public building's; essentially a complete destruction of the moral society to be replaced by a Fascist-Autocratic amoral society.

This has proliferated generations of amoral children with no hope or dreams, who wage war upon society for they have none of the inner control mechanisms of morality and law which come from the inner sanctum of the home. Such as twenty-one year-old Jokie Para, a full-time female gangster from Los Angeles California. She related on CBS's television show *Crime and Justice*, which aired on Friday February 20, 1999 about the LA riots and how everyone was looting. "I wanted to say I done it." She says casually. She then tells about a coffee maker which she brought back into her parents house, and how her father would never use it, angry that she had stolen it in that melee. "For years, he wouldn't use it," she

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

says quizzically. "He has something—uhhhmm—called morals I think." [*Crime and Justice*, Cynthia McFadden reporting, Television broadcast on Thursday, February 11 1999, Ch. 07 NYC]

This is the feminist product of what our contemporary courts and Legislatures have knowingly embraced and continue to embrace and develop, even though they fully understand and have been presented with, and can readily see the fact that anarchy is reigning throughout the society. They have turned their backs insolently to the quiet internal regulation that once inhabited the family through their support of decisions such as *Fanning v. Fanning* which protected Fatherhood. Instead, they have created and sustain an altruistic syllogism under an iron fist of terror, applied directly against men, and more especially against Fathers, and then watch the resultant pandemonium and anarchy; all with the hopes of having the social Elite create through government yet more altruistic programs in which to manage the conflagrations in which the courts and legislatures have set upon us all.

These new amoral standards which Feminist Jurisprudence imbue have established a Leviathan of Socialist program's in which to profit from and 'manage' these new problems in which to benefit from and enlarge the problems that the courts before managed simply by allowing the home to be a home, a father a father, and the precepts of morality in the law, and perhaps even ingrained in the Bible to take their proper form and function. Now, allowing proper form and function is sexist—while amorality and draconian injustice in anarchy is considered rule of law.

A microcosm of this construct could be seen 50 years ago after WWII after the defeat of Japan. Feminist Icon Beate Sirota, a 22 year old graduate of Mills college and a Japanese American national and ardent feminist was selected by Washington to help with the restructuring of Japan. (Just as America is presently being 'restructured') She was placed on a secret committee in Japan, consisting of all Americans, to rewrite that nation's constitution. No Japanese citizen had any inkling about this Elite cabal of foreigners who were intent on changing the national character of Japan. This committee's work was done in secret and was highly classified. Ms. Sirota was in charge of implementing Feminist rights into Japan's 'new' constitution, which she did; and which now—are a part of Japan's present day constitution. [NBC *Nightline*, with *Ted Koppel*, Wednesday, February 10, 1999, 11:30PM, Ch. ]

The same exact thing has happened in the United States. There has been a take-over of this government by a Radical Feminist minority, and those Elite's who saw that they could not only profit from it, but also seize power allowed this alien mindset to take over this government behind closed doors. Then, they had public meetings and 'hearings's' and backfilled the laws so that it would look 'legal'. "Oh!" these figureheads

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

will now say; "we had open public hearings on that in the 1970's when we held the National Advisory Council on Women's Educational Programs, or the National Judicial Education Program to Promote Equality for Women and Men in the Courts; or the National S.E.E.D. Project on Inclusive Curriculum; or The National Commission on the Observance of International Woman's Year; or the National Women's Education Fund; or the National Women's Conference; etc., etc., ad infinitum, ad nauseum. They used these special meetings, only open to those select, highly radical feminists in which to 'fundamentally change American society,' in direct contravention to our laws. No 'Fathers Rights' groups or advocates representing the 'other side' were never there. Indeed, only a select few people are ever even invited into these sacrosanct assemblies.

Like the Japanese plebecite of WWII, we hardly knew what was happening as we really were never informed, although; many of us can openly see the war and more importantly—like the anonymous Taxi cab driver that noted earlier that we were ascending while devolving at the same time—everyone knows in their heart that something is very, very wrong here in the United States. "Something" is very much broke.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER TWELVE

---

*"I am Visnu, destroyer of Worlds." -- The Bahagadita*

In Reg: **U.S. Senate Report No. 93-549 dated 11/19/73** (73 CIS Serial Set S963-2 - [607 Pages]):

"Since March 9, 1933; the United States has been in a state of declared National Emergency. . . . Under the (martial law) powers delegated by these statutes, the President may: seize property; organize and control the means of production; seize commodities; assign military forces abroad; institute martial law; seize and control all transportation and communication; regulate the operation of private enterprise; restrict travel; and in a plethora of particular ways, control the lives of all American citizens. . . ***A majority of the people of the United States have lived all of their lives under emergency rule.*** For 40 years, freedoms and governmental procedures guaranteed by the Constitution have in varying degrees been abridged by laws brought into force by states of national emergency . . ." (Senate Report 93-549, Part III)

### WAR

---

Early Civilization had uncovered some odd truths. Visnu as quoted in the Bahagadita above was the Female Goddess of destruction. In the early history of man, there was a contempt of not only the female gods and religions—which were openly destroyed by edict and by the popular culture—but also the term ‘female’ itself undertook evil connotations. It is in this light that one can look at modern feminism and relate in awe to the recognition of such ancient sage logic. Perhaps, early civilization did get such definitions right. Perhaps mankind is reinventing the wheel here in relearning what early civilizations ‘invented’ 5000 years ago. We must at least wonder, why mankind who suddenly shifted from a Matriarchal society to a Patriarchal one, why they did it so quickly, and so ruthlessly.

Empirically however, we must catalogue the war which has descended upon the American culture as it relates to the Matriarchal order. This is a war defined in all its meanings: social, military, national, even religious, and with a cogent intent to capture a nations resources, if not enslave the whole populace itself. We have death figures in this war, casualties, maimed, wounded, and nightly news broadcasts from the front lines—really the whole environment and countenance of war. And men are paying to subsidize this war being perpetrated against them, and they have been hoodwinked into thinking that "it's their duty." In reality—paying support into this war is treason. It is factually, aid and comfort to our nations enemies, both domestic and foreign, for unfortunately, this

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

war has gone overseas and now rages upon all other free Western nations: Australia, Germany, New Zealand, England, and Canada.

The day I was arrested upon my second incarceration, deathly sick from my first hunger-strike, here I was sitting in prison yet again for the same invented 'crime.' I sat in prison belligerent, yet again refusing to take off my clothes and wear prison garb, refusing to book, refusing food yet again, beginning yet another hunger-strike...I was disheartened. I felt an injustice that stemmed from the beginning of the world, I felt a burden not just my own—it was very heavy. Yet, something said "May 22<sup>nd</sup>." I had no idea why this pervasive thought injected and permeated my thoughts for I believe I was re-entering the Butte county jail in March.

Seventy two-days later of self-imposed hunger strike taking only salt and water, and a body weight of now 151 pounds, the Jail quickly got me up—walked me over to my "second" Sheriff's parole—then marched me back to where my clothes were already waiting. I was out. May 22<sup>nd</sup>, 1997. That day I returned home, my phone began to ring incessantly. England; Australia, Germany; Canada; New Zeland—all the countries now under direct attack from this war—began to call me. My phone rang for three days, with calls all over the world.

"Is 'this 'Obert Chaangee???' the phone would quizzically blare at me when I picked it up. "Yes.." I would tentatively answer. There seemed to be a release here, some sort of vindication; both from me by my act, and their calling me. To this day I'm not sure of the real impact of what I had done, except to in total exasperation to have drawn a line in the sand—to make a true stand for Fatherhood which has been forcibly stolen from us all. I had, like the great ape in which Jane Goodall watched die in Africa, turned and made our first defensive stand when nobody else would, knowing that I placed my life in severe risk. My son was worth this stand, my family and family name was worth it, and the men I represented; the Fathers, once a great resource to Fatherhood and civilization; but now discarded and persecuted—they too were worth the effort. I was both humbled by the experience of answering these men (and women) from all around the earth, calling my home—thanking me for what I had done.

### 26. THE EARLIEST PROTEST AGAINST SLAVERY

Resolutions of Germantown Mennonites.

February 18, 1688

"....There is a saying, that we should do to all men like as we will be done ourselves; making no difference of what generation descent, or colour they are. And those who steal or rob men, and those who buy or purchase them, are they not all alike? Here is

## CHAPTER TWELVE

liberty of conscience, which is right and reasonable; here ought to be likewise liberty of the body, except of evil-doers, which is another case. But to bring men hither, or to rob and sell them against their will, we stand against. In Europe there are many oppressed for conscience-sake; and here there are those oppressed which are of a black colour. And we who know that men must not commit adultery—some do commit adultery in others, separating wives from their husbands, and giving them to others: and some sell the children of these poor creatures to other men. Ah! Do consider well this thing, you who do it, if you would be done at this manner—and if it is done according to Christianity! You surpass Holland and Germany in this thing. This makes an ill report in all those countries of Europe, where they hear of [it], that the Quakers do here handed men as they handel there the cattle. And for that reason some have no mind or inclination to come hither. And who shall maintain this your cause, or plead for it? Truly, we cannot do so, except you shall inform us better hereof, viz: that Christians have liberty to practice these things. Pray, what thing in the world can be done worse towards us, than if men should rob or steal us away, and sell us for slaves to strange countries; separating husbands from their wives and children. Being now this is no done in the manner we would be done at; therefore, we contradict, and are against this traffic of men-body...."

As a child, I remember reading in awe the messages, stories and historical accounts of our founding fathers. I was greatly moved. When the corrupt Butte County Sheriff, (and those power Elite backing him) pounded at my door, and dragged me forcibly from my own house, even when sick, without warrant or lawful process—I knew exactly what to do. This countries mandate is *not* to be a nation of prisons. And *no* Americans; *none* should ever be unjustly imprisoned and should fight—in any way they can—against such injustices. This goes beyond just mere hunger strikes. As American's we do not tolerate or peacefully submit to such criminal actions. We are not the Jews of WWII; we are not Ghandi; nor the Blacks; nor Mexican's; nor the Russians, Japanese or Chinese. We are the men of America, and we do not lay down when presented with war by our enemy—those who would war against us, wound us, wrong us. This is not just an inculcation within our breed—we have such mandate by law—to resist such tyranny, by any means necessary. "Resistance to tyranny is obedience to God," Jefferson boldly displayed on his personal seal. Unlike other peoples, the Natural born American is a defender, of his home and family. He has to be, because in a system of self-governance—no one else is there to do it. The ultimate responsibility is ours. Not government's.

For unlike other nations, we have a different mandate in history, and a different destiny. Feminism can exist in other nations: Russia, Sweden,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

England, and other nations who so choose across this earth. However, as John Winthrop and the first Americans, both male and female, openly accounted and declared: with the testimony of not only words but also their lives—this nation from its inception mandated a different manifest destiny. We are Winthrop's nation on a hill for all other nations to see. We are his direct descendants each and everyone one and all the rest of us who swear to become American, who are to forge a country based upon a covenant with God and his blessings of freedom and justice. Where our enemies would trifle with such facts, and scoff that this nation has any religious merit or intent, or that even the foundational precepts of this nation are even valid anymore. This is true. I have spoken to "lawyers" who openly declare that this nation's laws *only* start from 1789 (the beginning of the Constitution for the United States) and then onwards; and that everything before then; *especially* that nagging Declaration of Independence which secures us the inviolate right to "alter or abolish" any government which is destructive to our freedoms, is just a quaint history with 'really' no legal bearing. It's just "Old" discarded law. An quaint anachronism, that 'really' doesn't mean anything anymore.

This is how insane these people are to slowly remold this nation into something it never was, and to change it into another design. A 'modern' one—they will tell us. That doesn't have 'bad old laws' like those ingrained, bled and purchased outright with a nation's blood. Those imbued in our foundational documents of our history. Of course, they never tell you outright; that the "new" design—is their special interests design—a malevolent design, with ulterior purpose.

We do not tolerate this, for in the first and final analysis, we can easily recognize that these errant political animals, most certainly have a pallet for such social designs elsewhere...in other nations. However, we; here in the United States—well, our manifest destiny encompasses mankind—and if we fail, we have nowhere else to go. There will be no other place where a man's home will be his castle, as a guaranteed and secured liberty under the Constitution and the common law. There will be no other country which will allow as a declaratory function of law, a man to own and secure weapons for his own personal defense, as a guaranteed and secured liberty under the Constitution and the common law. Humanity will have no free speech or religious thought. There will be no other country that will allow us the 'palladium of freedoms' which are so insolently and arrogantly stolen outright from us by our contemporary errant, arrogant and out-of-control Federal, and State governments—but notably which are; as Americans Citizens, a *birthright* granted to us by God, and formally written upon hemp parchments upon the sacred documents of our history. We are now being told, under force of arms, by fraud, and direct coercion by this new foreign Elite regime—that we cannot depend



## CHAPTER TWELVE

on such 'old' laws anymore. That we have to 'redesign humanity...in their image. This "redesign" smacks of other attempts to eradicate such laws and legacies.

"Our beloved Chairman Mao had started the Cultural Revolution in May. Every Day since then on the radio we heard about the need to end the evil and pernicious influence of the "Four Olds": old ideas, old culture, old customs, and old habits. Chairman Mao told us we would never succeed at building a strong socialist country until we destroyed the "Four Olds" and established the "Four New's." The names of many shops still stank of old culture so the signs had to be smashed to make way for the coming of new ideas.

The Great Prosperity Market was on Janjing Road, Shanghai's busiest shopping street....the street was full of bicycles and pedicabs and trolleys, and the side-walks were so crowded with shoppers, they spilled off the sidewalk on to the street....

A big crowd had gathered outside the Great Prosperity Market, one of the most successful food stores in the city. It was full of good things to eat, with rare delicacies from other provinces....But today the window was bare. The store deserted.

Lying on the ground inside the circle [of people] was a huge wooden sign, at least twelve feet long [in which the crowd was intent to destroy]. It was still impressive, although the large gold characters GREAT PROSPERITY MARKET had lost their usual shine and looked dull and lifeless on the background.

....The board bounced twice [off the ground] but did not break. The men threw the board again and nothing happened...the board refused to break. Even under a thousand pounds it did not give way.

"Hey! I've got an axe. Let me through!"

We stood back to give the man room...the blade flashed...the wood groaned...[as the] man gave the sign another blow, and another. At last the sign gave way...

Bathed in the evening glow, we [girls] jumped and giggled all the way home...we noticed other stores we passed also needed to change their names.

"Look. This is called the Good Fortune Photo Studio. Doesn't that mean to make a lot of money, like Great Prosperity? Chairman Mao told us that was exploitation. Don't you think this is "Four Olds"?....

"Right, we should change it to the Proletarian Photo Studio."

"Here's another one. The Innocent Child Toy Shop...Innocent is a neutral word. It shows a lack of class awareness. What should we change it to?"

"How about the Red Child Toy Shop?"

"That's great," I said. "And we should change the Peace Theatre to the Revolution Theatre. After all, without revolution, how can we have peace?"

We [young girls] felt proud of ourselves. We were certain we were bringing new life to China.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

....[But] it was almost unbelievable. Within a couple of days almost all the "Four Olds" shop signs [we had noticed] had been removed.... [*Red Scarf Girl, A memoir of the Cultural Revolution*, by Ji Li Jiang, ©1997, Harper Collins Publishers, 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022; pp. 21-27.]

Exactly like the Great Prosperity Market, the sign of our ancient and good laws of our own Constitution are similarly being trampled upon, with a direct intent of breaking their design. Those cherished words which men (and women) both died for in defense of Freedom, Justice and the American way of life, are similarly tarnished by Ms. Clinton and the Elite Regime she represents who under a banner of war have aimed fusillade after conceptual fusillade against the breath of that iron hull which protects us all. No major breach has yet occurred, although major holes now riddle the breadth of our rights, freedoms and direct securities of our foundational precepts and laws. Ms. Clinton and her cabal of Radical Feminists have given government the axe in which to destroy this nation from within; and that is by the direct attack and war against the American home and family, through the legislative mandate to destroy the Father. They have done this all too efficiently, as the casualty lists grow by such conflagration waged upon our own homes.

This, is intolerable, and we as Fathers and as Americans have a duty to defend this final battleground. For a nation of Americans has in fact—no future homeland other than what we possess now. If this government does not immediately cease and desist its perverted attempts and Anti-American designs upon the home and family, then by the insolence of their own outright acts of war, from their own betrayal of our good and wholesome laws which were established, and which did in fact protect both men, women and families, which established a nation of peace and prosperity; then, we as the legacy of Americans must take up arms in outright defense of our lives, liberties, property and happiness. This is an unalienable God given right to defense from a foreign and alien entity, whether it be either foreign or domestic. This clear and present domestic enemy represented by Ms. Clinton and the Radical Feminist elite—has been and continues to be a direct, ever present threat to the lives and property of Fathers and Families, in which government entreats and enjoins in such outrageous acts of war and destruction. Beyond these acts, this needless war in an apparent time of peace, has become a corrupt and out-of-control industry, with no limits to how much it has stolen from Fathers and Americans, we can only estimate that extensive damage. Thereby, through and under our laws, we have met the enemy, and it is most certainly *them*.

Men have been particularly damaged as a class, not just for their money; but more importantly, to undermine their function as protector

## CHAPTER TWELVE

and leader of their homes. This has left a nation with generation of amoral children growing into adulthood, who then blindly accept what errant pabulum this obsidian Government dares feed such members of society. "When men cease to believe in God, said G.K. Chesterton, they do not then believe in nothing: they believe in anything." [*The Great Betrayal, How American Sovereignty and Social Justice Are Being Sacrificed to the Gods of the Global Economy*, by Patrick J. Buchanan, ©1998; Little Brown and Company, Boston, ISBN 0-316-11518-5; p. 201.] For a world now records these disasters of a nation—turning to ‘anything.’

### SELECTED NEWS EXCERPTS PROVING THE FEMINIST WAR OF: “A CHEST FULL OF REMEMBRANCES”

---

[Editorial—by Richard Lessner, Editor, Manchester, New Hampshire Union Leader, August 12, 1998.]

#### **Male Identity Crisis—Social Engineering Has Produced Killer Kids.**

The majority of violent crimes are committed by young en between the ages of 15 and 25. Increasingly, however, we are seeing horrific crimes being committed by younger and younger boys.

In an Arkansas school yard, little-boy killers dressed in fatigues gun down their classmates. In Chicago, boys 7 and 8 are accused of murdering an 11-year-old girl for her bicycle. Teachers polled nationwide say that student violence is the worst problem facing the schools; 40 years ago, it was talking in the classroom.

Here in New Hampshire, we still are trying to make sense of the slaying of 14-year-old Robbie Mills of Laconia, who was murdered, police say, for his bicycle. An 18-year-old is accused of this senseless crime.

How do we account for the rising numbers of violent children? Doubtless many factors are at work, but one of the most important may be the crisis in manliness. Writing in the current issue of the *Weekly Standard*, Walter R. Newell, professor of political science at Carlton University in Ottawa, Canada, details the rising toll we are paying for our foolish experiment in gender leveling.

For more than 30 years, Professor Newell notes, we have pursued a prolonged effort at social engineering. The aim has been to eradicate any psychological or emotional difference between men and women. The rational for this vast social experiment has been the radical feminist notion that any concept of manliness inevitably leads to aggression and violence against women and rigid hierarchies of power that exclude and marginalize.

Baby Boomers were told not to be hung up on providing distinctly masculine role models for boys and to de-emphasize differences between the sexes. At the same time, we have endured the breakdown of the family, rising divorce rates and, thanks to the misguided sexual revolution, an explosion of out-of-wedlock births and single mothers.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Many of these un-fathered boys, model themselves not after loving, faithful, hard working bread winners, but after super-macho male sports figures fathering children willy-nilly like rooting boars or the violently misogynist rock stars of MTV.

Un-fathered young men are prone to identify their maleness with violence and aggression because they have no better models. "It seems plain enough," Professor Newell writes, "that we are missing the boat on manliness; for there are forms of pride and honor that would be good to impart to males. Indeed, many honor, and shame at failing to live up to it, are the surest means of promoting respect for women."

Though there are always exceptions, the single most powerful predictor of violent behavior among boys and young men is fatherlessness. Absentee fathers, researcher Barbara Dafoe Whitehead finds, is a more important factor in adolescent crime than poverty, lack of education or minority status.

Boys and girls are different—physically, hormonally, emotionally. We need to recover a sense that to be a man means to be "honorable, brave, self-restrained, zealous in behalf of a good cause, with feelings of delicacy and respect toward loved ones." So the first step is to recover a positive tradition of manliness from three decades of feminist stereotyping that identifies any expression of masculinity with violence, dominance and aggression.

According to prevailing orthodoxy, however, there are no differences between boys and girls; all have exactly the same capacities and ambitions. Yet as Prof. Newell asserts, all that 30 years of such conditioning have done is to drive manliness underground and distort it by severing it from traditional sources of restraint and civility.

In our therapeutic society, moreover, we have psychologized normal male behavior, what once would have been regarded as boyish high-spiritedness. The object, however, should not be to suppress such normal male energies—or medicate them with powerful mood-altering drugs—but to channel them into the development of a mature masculine character.

Feminist will shriek, of course, that any effort to restore a traditional understanding of manliness would be to return to the era of patriarchy and the oppression of women. In this view, the lives of our parents and grandparents were hell holes of male aggression. Yet our 30-year social experiment has succeeded not only in liberating women, but in producing killer boys. This, it is said, is progress.

Our hubristic effort to undo biology is failing and the history of Western Civilization is not the long nightmare of male oppression of women that the feminist imagine. Perhaps a more traditional approach to our understanding what it means to be male would provide a better foundation of respect between men and women than the speculative fevers of feminism. And perhaps the best way to convince boys and young men to treat others with respect is to raise them in the traditional virtues of manliness.

[New York Post, Wednesday, December 9, 1998, by Dareh Gregorian, p. 3]

## CHAPTER TWELVE

### **SLAP FLAP IN REVOLON WAR – Cosmetic's chairman: Ex-Wife got Violent.**

The custody battle between Ron Perelman and ex-wife Patricia Duff got even nastier yesterday, with the billionaire accusing the socialite of slapping him around.

His charge came one day after Duff's lawyers claimed she had been physically abused by the Revlon head during their 700-day marriage.

The day of he-accused/she-accused attacks in the fight over 3-year-old Caleigh spilled out of the courtroom and into a corridor, where the two sides fought it out before an audience of reporters.

Perelman's lawyer, Adria Hillman, told the Post that Duff attacked her client in the presence of a witness," Hillman said, charging that Duff also attacked a woman friend of the family and three of Caleigh's nannies.

Hillman said she has an 1996 affidavit from Duff confirming that Perelman never abused her physically.

Duff lawyer Kenneth Warner angrily denied that her client ever hit Perelman, calling those charges "poppcock. My client weight 110 pounds—that's hardly fighting weight.

"They love mud-slinging because it buries the facts we tried so hard to get across—that Patricia is the primary caretaker and a fabulous mom." Warner said.

He claimed the court psychiatrist was "co-opted" by the 55-year-old Perelman's corporate takeover expertise."

He said the makeup mogul took Kaplan out to his "East Hampton estate in a chauffeur-driven Mercedes" to have lunch with rock star Bon Jovi and "A League of their Own" director Penny Marshall.

Hillman also charged Duff, 44, with being a maniac mom, firing over 18 nannies and 25 housekeepers over the past two years.

Duff's lawyers countered that Perelman is an absentee dad who's gone through dozens of nannies.

Hillman said he's "a nurturing father" and has had only two nannies, one for Caleigh and another for her 8-year-old sister.

Earlier, the two sides squared off in front of Appellate Division Justice Joseph Sullivan to argue a ruling—requested by Duff—that opened the proceedings to the public.

Then the two sides faced off in the hallway battle.

As Hillman discussed one psychologist's findings, Warner cut in, asking, "Is this the same psychologist who found your client to be socially inept?"

Hillman replied, "This is the clinical psychologist who found your client paranoid and narcissistic."

[New York Post, Wednesday, December 9, 1998, by Murray Weiss, Kieran Crowley and Tracy Connor, p. 3]

**Amy hopes lurid lawyer tale brings sexual 'release'**

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Amy Fisher is trying to get out of prison by claiming she had a steamy relationship with her former lawyer that included "intense" fondling sessions and lurid sex fantasies.

A motion filed yesterday in Nassau County Court accuses lawyer Eric Naiburg of lying to get Fisher to cop a plea so he could avoid a trial where the trysts would be revealed.

"What took place is sad and despicable." Said lawyer Bruce Barket, who is representing Fisher in her bid to set aside her 1992 guilty plea, which landed her a five-to 15-year sentence.

Naiburg, a married father of two, angrily denied the charges.

"I think it's a desperate attempt by a desperate young woman to gain her freedom. I am angry, I am hurt, I am offended," he said. "I treated that girl like my daughters—and nothing different."

Fisher, who admitted shooting Mary Jo Buttafuoco after an affair with her auto-mechanic hubby, Joey Buttafuoco, said the relationship with Naiburg began as soon as she was sprung from bail on bond.

"Our relationship quickly became very intense," she said in an affidavit. "We began to share fantasies and often talked our way through various 'role playing' games as I sat on his lap or straddled him as he sat on the chair.

"We would kiss on the mouth as we talked about acting out our sexual fantasies. The fantasies are extremely embarrassing.

"The often involved one of us being tied up..."

Fisher said she believed Naiburg had orgasms during the S&M fantasies, but he refused to have sexual intercourse with her.

"He said he did not want to do me what Joey did to me," she said.

"He was like my father, savior, lover and best friend in one person."

The exhibits in the 75-page motion include letters signed with the numbers 125/93.

Fischer claims that was a code in which the lawyer was affectionately dismissing their age difference.

Naiburg claims it's a joking reference to an innocent conversation about their ages.

Barket claims that because Naiburg was involved with Fisher, he misrepresented her and pushed her into a plea deal he knew was a sham.

Raven-haired Amy, who is now 23, insists Naiburg told her a secret agreement with prosecutors would get her out of jail in three years with early parole.

Prosecutors have denied any such deal—and were tight-lipped yesterday about the latest twist in the Amy Fisher saga.

"We think the plea should stand." Said Ed Grilli, a spokesman for the Nassau County DA. "We leave it at that."

[New York Daily News, Monday, January 25, 1999, by Pete Donohue, Alice McQuillan and Bill Hutchinson, pp. 4-5]

## CHAPTER TWELVE

### **BROTHERS WERE BUTCHERD, Little boys were hacked, bashed; dad held—cops.**

The grisly slayings of two young brothers whose bodies were found hidden in a Chelsea building took an even ghastlier turn yesterday as autopsied showed one was chopped to death while the other's head was crushed.

The boys' father, Ronald Short—whom one investigator described as a "cold, strange guy"—was held on \$10 million bail yesterday after being charged with child endangerment. The case is still under investigation.

Law enforcement sources said Short's bizarre behavior helped lead detectives to the bodies of this sons, who were reported missing by their mother on Jan. 13.

In the days before the decomposed bodies of Richard, 7 and John, 3, were found, Short was seen sitting outside the chamber that hid his dead children, crying and disoriented, sources said.

Short, a real estate manager who sources said takes the anti-depressant Prozac, has remained silent. Detectives said they are building a case against the 49-year-old that includes alleged murderous threats made to his wife.

Jolanta Short, 38, confided to a friend early Friday morning that her husband vowed to kill the children after she told him she was leaving him.

"She was hysterical," said the friend, Anna Acosta. "She kept saying, 'He's going to kill them. I know he's going to kill them.'"

Acosta said she tried to comfort Short, asking why she felt Richard and John were in danger.

The terrified mother gave Acosta a chilling answer, saying, "Because he told me he's going to kill them. I have to find them first."

But police said the boys were already dead.

Their decomposing bodies were found Saturday night hidden in a secret basement chamber of a building at 36 W. 25<sup>th</sup> St., a property their father manages.

Autopsies showed young Richard suffered at least seven blows to the head and neck with a sharp object, including one to the back of the head, that nearly severed his spinal cord.

He was found stuffed in a plastic bag with his legs tied with a telephone cord, sources said.

His little brother, John, was bashed in the head so hard he suffered brain damage, authorities said. His body, dressed in blue-jean overalls, was found on a drop cloth with his Green Bay Packers Jacket next to him.

Homicide detectives discovered the bodies by retracing Ronald Short's tracks over the past two weeks. They learned that on Jan. 10, Short got a parking ticket on W. 21<sup>st</sup> st., sources said.

They discovered Short managed the W.25<sup>th</sup> St. Building . A first search yielded nothing.

Queens homicide squad Detectives Louis Pia and Brian Quinn returned to the building after maintenance men remembered cleaning up drops of blood in the boiler room around Jan. 11, sources said.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Pia and Quinn noticed a small door behind some junk, and became aware of the smell of leaning solvent, sources said. The detectives entered the dark room. They found the bodies on a shelf 10 feet up.

"It's so terribly sad that two young lives would be snuffed out in this fashion." Said Queens District Attorney Richard Brown.

Short, who was on suicide watch last night, apparently began unraveling when his wife of nine years threatened to leave him and take the kids, law enforcement sources said.

In the following days, Ronald refused to tell Jolanta where her children were.

Detectives say the last person other than Short to see the boys alive was his sister, to whose Brooklyn home he took the children after the Jan. 9 argument.

Short left his sister's house at 11:30 p.m. Police believe the boys were slain in Chelsea soon after.

In the days that followed, co-workers said they noticed Short was depressed, sources said.

When asked what was bothering him, Short told a colleague he feared his wife was going to take his sons to live in her native Poland.

At 3:30 a.m. Friday, Short stumbled into the St. Vincent's Medical Center emergency room. He told doctors he was suicidal and that his wife was attempting to get him in trouble with the police.

Hospital officials called Jolanta Short, the sources added. She called police, who went to the hospital and arrested her husband on a warrant for failing to show at a court hearing Friday on child endangerment charges.

The charges stemmed from his refusing to answer questions from police about the whereabouts of his kids.

*With Virginia Breen, Henri E. Cauvin and Bill Egbert*

[The New York Daily News, Friday, January 29, 1999—Reported by: Virginia Breen, Henri Cauvin, Bill Egbert, Austin Fenner, Michele Mcphee, Patrice O'Shaugnessy, and Tom Raftery, pp. 1 and 5.]

### **Eight punks set upon and killed teen who was... 'GOOD AS GOLD'** (Page One)

**Michael Bennett, 14, was stabbed to death after playing in a school basketball game.**

**Gang sets upon teen after scoring dispute.**

When her studious, polite son failed to come home by 10p.m. from a basketball game, Rosemary Bennett followed her motherly instincts and walked a dread-filled mile looking for him.

She found her "good as gold" son, Michael Bennett, had been stabbed to death by a gang of kids outraged over a basketball scoring dispute.

Police yesterday were questioning several teenage suspects and dozens of witnesses and conducting lineups at the 71<sup>st</sup> Precinct in Crown Heights, Brooklyn.



## CHAPTER TWELVE

By last evening, no suspects had been charged in the senseless slaying of Michael, a promising 14-year-old who emigrated from Jamaica, quietly excelled in school and had dreams of flying an Air Force Jet.

Police said at least eight teens set upon Michael and a 15-year-old friend about 9:30 p.m. Wednesday as the two left a game held at Jackie Robinson School (Intermediate School 320) on McKeever Place.

They grabbed Michael and stabbed him twice in the chest, through his heart and lungs. They chased his 15-year-old pal for one block and bashed him in the head with an aluminum baseball bat.

"It was just a ballgame. He didn't have to die like that over a stupid ballgame," said the surviving teen, whose name is being withheld by the Daily News, as he nursed a large bruise under his right eye.

"If I didn't run fast they would have killed me, too." He said.

The survivor said he and Michael were playing on a team of Walt Whitman Junior High School kids against a team of Jackie Robinson kids as part of a community organization league. With a minute left in the game, a kid on his team accused the scorekeeper, a cousin of a player on the opposing team, of "bouncing the numbers."

The game resumed, and the Whitman team won, 51-48. Everyone shook hands and went to the locker room, the teen said.

"We left, and when we got a block away, they pounced," he continued. "The were saying 'Who was dissing my cousin,' and one kid pointed at Michael and they were beating on him."

Police said the assailants stabbed Michael on Franklin Ave. Near Sullivan Place near Prospect Park. He went into cardiac arrest, and an Emergency Medical Service crew worked on him for 15 minutes. He was pronounced dead at Kings County Hospital.

Meanwhile, a bunch of teens chased Michael's pal into an Exxon gas station on Empire Blvd.

"The guys chasing him had a gray baseball bat and a switch-blade about 8 inches long," said a worker Serac Kulus, 25.

Kulus and his fellow workers hustled the victim behind the counter, "but three of them came in right along with him and one guy grabbed a Snapple bottle and threw it at him," Kulus said. "Then the guy with the bat swung the bat and hit the [victim] in the forehead. There was blood all over."

Yesterday, Michael's mother, a 48-year-old home care attendant who came here for a better education for her children, wailed in the hallway of her Ocean Ave. Building as her daughters, Orna 23, and Meshauna, 8, mourned for their only brother.

"Oh God, please God, not my son...He's so nice, he's so quiet, he's good as gold," Bennet said, her eyes red and swollen from a night of tears.

At Lafayette High School in Bensonhurst, Michael's English teacher, Kathleen Mulgrew, broke into tears as she spoke of her student.

"He was a vital part of the classroom, extremely pleasant, a nice kid with a good sense of humor, and a good student," Mulgrew said. "He was a kid worried about his grades, so polite...I really expected a lot from him."

"He was genuine."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Lafayette Principal Robert Haberski said Michael had virtually perfect attendance and had grades well over 80.

"A loss like this can't be remedied," Haberski said. "We have to find other ways for young people to settle their differences without this mindless violence."

Michael, a 5-foot-8, 145-pound youth who worked out and won awards for karate and long-distance running, loved dancing and reggae music, and kidding around with his sisters.

He accompanied his mother to a supermarket Wednesday afternoon, and spontaneously kissed her, saying, "Mommy you're sweet. I love you."

Minutes before he left for the game he posed near a mirror, showing off muscles, telling Orna, "I'm the man."

When he did not return home by 10:04 p.m., Bennett felt a twinge of panic and walked to Jackie Robinson School.

"I saw a policeman, and I told him my son's name, and he told me to get in the police car," she said.

"I said, why, why...but then, I just knew."

[The New York Daily News, Friday, January 29, 1999, by Tracey Tully; p. 6]

### **Lt. Gov., hubby split up. 2 to seek divorce after domestic dispute**

ALBANY – Lt. Gov. Mary Donohue yesterday announced she and her husband of 14 years have separated following a "domestic incident" that took place two weeks ago at their upstate home. "We are in the process of resolving this matter," Donohue, 51, said in a prepared statement. "My husband and I share a particular concern for the privacy and well-being of the children."

On Jan. 10, State Police responded to a 911 call of an "active domestic dispute" at the couple's home outside Albany, cops said.

State Police spokeswoman Lt. Jamie Mills said the incident "was resolved prior to patrol's arrival."

After interviewing family members, troopers left the Brunswick home. There were no arrests, and the case is considered closed, Mills said.

Donohue, a former prosecutor and Supreme Court justice declined comment on details of the incident.

She acknowledges that the domestic incident in question did, in fact happen. This is a painful statement for her to make," her spokeswoman Eileen Long said.

Brian Donohue, a Troy attorney, said the incident involved "no violence, nothing physical."

"Imagine yourself in a nightmarish situation where you have an argument and police show up," he said. "Nothing happened other than we had an argument where voices were raised."

A source familiar with the incident said the couple's 10-year-old son, Justin, placed the 911 call.

Mills said State Police did not have access to a copy of the 911 tape.

## CHAPTER TWELVE

The couple is expected to file for divorce. Mary Donohue also has a 20-year-old daughter, Sara, from a previous marriage. She is a senior at Fordham University and no longer lives at home.

The marriage has been troubled for some time, sources said. The governor was not told of the Donohues' marital trouble before choosing her as his Republican running mate, another source said.

Donohue was selected to replace former Lt. Gov. Betsy McCaughey Ross, who became a Democrat after a series of public feuds with Pataki.

McCaughey Ross ran against Pataki on the Liberal Party line in November. McCaughey Ross' banker husband, Wilbur Ross, filed for divorce a day after she lost.

[The New York Post, Monday, February 1, 1999, Jack Newfield Exclusive, pp. 1 and 3]

**MOM'S DRUG DEATH AGONY, She vows to sue club after overdose kills son.**

**MOM BARES ANGUISH, Rips Gatien over son's drug death.**

MARGERET LYONS has just lived through every parent's worst nightmare.

Last weekend, her son, Jimmy, went "into the city" to celebrate his 18<sup>th</sup> birthday with three friends.

When Jimmy didn't come home, Margaret, his single mother, began to feel a sense of dread. Jimmy always come home on time.

Margaret Lyons couldn't sleep, even though she had to be at her job as a waitress at Friendly's at 8:30 a.m.

She kept beeping her son and getting no response. This never happened before.

At 10 the next morning, while she was at work, she was told her son was dead.

The police told Margaret her son died from an overdose of drugs—ketamine and ecstasy—inside the Tunnel disco, owned by Peter Gatien, a convicted felon.

Yesterday, Margaret sat in The Post's newsroom, telling me her story through tears, comforted by her sister, Kathleen Veit, who lived with her and Jimmy on Long Island.

"I want the world to know who my son was," Margaret began.

"He wasn't a drug addict. He went to school and worked at two part-time jobs. You can't work at Mather Hospital and at Friendly's if you're taking drugs.

"Jimmy was happy and popular. He wasn't alienated," she said.

"He never went to clubs. The Tunnel was the first one. All his friends told me at the wake that they wished they had the relationship with their parents that Jimmy had with me."

After her son died, Margaret Lyons needed answers and spoke to Joe Grasi, one of her son's oldest friends, who accompanied him to the club.

"Joe told me they had no drugs with them when they went into the Tunnel," she said.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

"Joe saw Jimmy buy two ecstasy pills from a dealer as soon as they got inside. He told me they sell the drugs from a serving tray.

"He told me kids were laying on the floor unconscious from those drugs all over the place.

"He told me these kids get dehydrated from all the drugs and dancing, and they sell them water for \$5 a bottle. If they don't have the \$5, they pass out.

"When I turned 18," mother recalled, "I went to a bar to celebrate. But Jimmy went to a place that served drugs instead of drinks."

Gatien's criminal lawyer, Ben Brafman, told me yesterday, "Peter Gatien has a 'zero tolerance' policy for drugs. There is no proof this kid's death was connected to any drugs purchased or used at the Tunnel."

Jimmy's aunt, Kathleen, told me "We are definitely going to sue Gatien. I've already talked to a lawyer...We will ask the SLA [State Liquor Authority] to allow the family to testify against his liquor license.

"If we can save one kid from dying at the Tunnel, the way Jimmy died, that will mean Jimmy didn't die in vain," his aunt said.

Margaret Lyons is upset that the only person who had interviewed her about Jimmy's life was a girl on his high-school paper, who is also my baby sitter.

"The day after Jimmy died," she said, "Newsday had a story about Jimmy that quoted a representative of Gatien, but they never even called me. Gatien never called me to offer his condolences. But he got his side into Newsday right away."

Jimmy Lyons was your typical teen-ager. He wanted to be an auto mechanic. He worked out at the gym, trying to build up his 100-pound 5-5 frame. He had a nice girlfriend his mother approved of.

Even though his parents separated when he was 14, and even though he was not a good student, he was a positive, optimistic kid.

An overdoes of drugs at a disco is not a fair sum-up of his short life, but it is the only reference that exists now in the media.

Jimmy worked had at two part-time jobs to help make ends meet.

Jimmy was never arrested.

Jimmy helped care for his younger sister and brother.

A hundred of his high school classmates came to his wake, and five of them got tattoos with his name the next day.

He had close relationships with all his family members.

When a neighbor felt threatened by an abusive ex-boyfriend, Jimmy volunteered to stay with her.

Jimmy, according to his mom, "lectured other kids not to do drugs, to stay in school, not to mess up their lives."

At the end of the interview, Margaret Lyons dried her eyes and put on her coat to leave. Then she said:

"If this could happen to a kid like Jimmy, this can happen to anyone's child."

[SAN FRANCISCO EXAMINER, Tuesday, December 3, 1996, by Erin McCormick]

## CHAPTER TWELVE

SAN FRANCISCO – He was a "normal 15-year-old kid," with all the usual teenage passions.

She was his neighbor – a 34-year-old mom, later convicted of statutory rape for engaging him in a romantic tryst that resulted in her getting pregnant.

However, in a case that turns the term "deadbeat dad" squarely on its ear, a California appeals court has ruled the young man from San Luis Obispo, identified only as "Nathaniel J." In court records, is responsible for paying child support for the baby born of the illegal union.

The Nov. 6 ruling by the 2<sup>nd</sup> District Court of Appeal in Los Angeles – the first decision of its kind in California – opens a Pandora's box of sticky societal questions, ranging from whether girls and boys should be treated differently in cases of statutory rape to the fairness of government's increasingly aggressive pursuit of child support payments.

"This is a really bizarre case," said University of California Berkley social welfare Professor Mary Ann Mason, who specializes in societal legal issues. "It seems unfair that he was taken advantage of, and then he gets prosecuted for child support. He's considered a victim on one hand and a perpetrator on the other."

County and state authorities, rather than the mother, have pursued the case, seeking compensation for welfare payments the infant girl has been receiving since her birth in January 1995.

Attorneys from the state Attorney General's Office, which represented the state in the appeal, say the teen-ager should be responsible for the child because he indicated he was a willing sexual partner.

"Our point of view is that the newborn is the victim in these matters," said Carol Ann White, a lawyer who heads the attorney general's child support enforcement unit. "No matter what the circumstances of their conception, babies deserve to have two parents."

"And this was a consensual relationship," she added.

The youth, now 18, won't be required to pay until he has some kind of income, said Deputy Attorney General Mary Roth, who handled the case. "Say he makes \$800 a month working at Burger King," Roth said. "He'll probably be expected to pay \$200 a month to reimburse Aid to Families with Dependent Children."

Under state law, the boy's parents aren't responsible for child support for their granddaughter.

The case began in 1994, with a 2 week-long affair between the young boy and the unmarried woman, listed in court records as Ricci Jones.

According to court records, Jones and the teen-ager discussed having sex in advance and made a clear discussion to do it. They had intercourse approximately five times, in what the boy later told police investigators was "a mutually agreeable act."

The teenagers' attorney, Pat Perry of San Luis Obispo, didn't return calls. Neither Jones nor the teen-age could be reached for comment. The case didn't become a court matter until after the pair's daughter was born

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

on Jan. 20, 1995, and Jones began receiving welfare on the daughter's behalf.

Under federal guidelines, counties must make an effort to determine the identity of the father of any child on welfare and collect child support from him to offset the welfare payments.

That's exactly what San Luis Obispo County did.

As soon as county officials realized the baby's father was a minor, they filed statutory rape charges against Jones, which resulted in a conviction but no jail time. Almost simultaneously, they sought to have the young father registered as being responsible for child support.

After being ordered to pay by Superior Court, "Nathaniel J." And his parents appealed the decision, arguing that a child who was the victim of sexual exploitation by an adult shouldn't be penalized for the consequences of the exploitation.

But the court of appeals disagreed.

"Victims have rights. Here, the victim also has responsibilities," said the opinion, written by Judge Arthur Gilbert. He cited cases from other states in which minors were deemed responsible for child support if they had consented to sex with an adult.

"We concluded he is liable for child support."

Clearly, said attorney Roth, if a teen-age boy got a teen-age girl pregnant, no one would question the state for holding him responsible. She said the teen-ager's testimony made it clear that he had known what he was doing and agreed to it.

"I guess he thought he was a man then," she said. "Now, he prefers to be considered a child."

But Fred Hayward, founder of the Sacramento-based group Men's Rights Inc., said the court was setting a horrible standard.

"This is victimizing the victim," he said. "The law is based on the premise that a 15-year-old is too young to give his consent to anything. Yet he gets a 34-year-old woman pregnant, and suddenly he's old enough to be responsible."

[THE ASSOCIATED PRESS, Friday, October 30, 1998]

WALNUT CREEK, CA –

A woman accused of giving a 16-year-old drugs and then having sex with him is now suing the boy for child support.

State law entitles the child to support from both parents, even though the boy is considered the victim of statutory rape. Contra Costa district attorney's officials said.

But the mother of the Pacheco boy called the support "ridiculous," saying her son was plied with methamphetamine for a week before the two had sex.

[THE VILLAGE VOICE, Tuesday, January 26, 1999, by Nat Hentoff, p. 30]

## CHAPTER TWELVE

### Clinton's Message to Women

Participating in December's Emergency Speakout Against Impeachment at NYU were some of this area's prominent intellectuals and moral philosophers—among them, Arthur Schlesinger Jr., Toni Morrison, Eli Wiesel, Gloria Steinem, and Jerold Nadler who, alas, is my congressman. There were spiraling cries of "sexual McCarthyism" and "coup d'etat!"

And in the January 10 *New York Times*, Gerold Lefcourt, a Clinton advocate, states baldly that Clinton's *defense* witnesses have been intimidated. Let's see *who* has been intimidated.

Lefcourt, a prominent attorney, ignores the issues of women who have been threatened by Clinton and his agents to keep their silence about his exercising his *droit du seigneur* on their bodies.

It is this relentless obstruction of justice that I began to detail last week. Also on the list of Clinton's throwaway women who should have been placed in the federal Witness Protection Program is **Elizabeth Ward Gracen**, Arkansas's former Miss America, who had a brief bout of intimacy with Clinton in 1983. During the 1992 presidential campaign she received calls to keep quiet about it—or else.

But just in case she faltered—as the *Wall Street Journal Europe* (October 27, 1998) reported—her agent met with Clinton buddy Harry Tomason and Clinton advisor Mickey Kantor and "worked out some kind of deal." She would deny any relationship with Clinton and her career would benefit.

She obeyed, but when she was subpoenaed in the Paula Jones case, the threatening calls resumed. She has told *The Toronto Sun*, according to *The Washington Times*: "I think Clinton is a very dangerous manipulative man. There was a lot of pressure on my family and friends, people who were being staked out."

Moving on, the *Wall Street Journal Europe* reveals the post-60 *Minutes* ordeal of **Kathleen Willey**.

Two days before she was scheduled to testify in the Paula Jones case, "A man in a jogging suit approached her while she was out for a walk near her Virginia home. He asked about a missing family pet [her cat]. The jogger mentioned Willey's children by name. 'Don't you get the message?'" he asked her.

**Dolly Kyle Browning**, another former Clinton bonbon, and now a Texas real estate attorney, has filed a defamation suit against William Jefferson Clinton and, among his retainers, Bruce Lindsey.

In her court papers, Browning tells of an extramarital sexual relationship with Clinton from the mid 1970's to "sometime before January 1992," when Clinton was eyeing the prize of the presidency.

In January of that year, *The Star*, a tabloid weekly, was about to print a story about that idyll. Browning refused to be interviewed, but Clinton was taking no chances.

In her complain in the lawsuit, she says that her own brother, Walter Kyle, acting on behalf of—or at the direction of—Clinton, warned her that "if you cooperate with the media, we will destroy you." At the time, her

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

solicitous brother was working in the Clinton campaign in New Hampshire.

Two years later, according to the court papers, she and Clinton made a deal—using Clinton's confidential aide, Bruce Lindsey, as an intermediary. She would not tell the truth about their relationship if he promised not to tell any lies about her.

But when Browning decided to write a romance novel, a clef about their intimacy, and word got out in *Publishers Weekly*, Clinton "acting individually and through various agents...conspired to prevent the publication of her manuscript." (Browning court papers.)

"The conspiracy involved "threatening and intimidating Mrs. Browning and potential publishers...and defaming Mrs. Browning."

In a March 6, 1998, affidavit, Browning testified that she and her former lover met in the summer of 1994 at their 30<sup>th</sup> high school reunion in Hot Springs, Arkansas.

"I reminded Billy," Browning said in the affidavit, "that he had threatened to destroy me and he said he was sorry." She was pleased to get, at last, his apology.

Then there is **Linda Tripp**. *The Wall Street Journal Europe* reports: "Mrs. Tripp says that Bruce Lindsey told her she would be 'destroyed' if she went public with criticism of the White House. Mr. Lindsey's lawyer denies this was a threat. However, Monica Lewinsky, conveying what Ms. Tripp took to be a message from the White House, told Tripp that she had 'two children to think about' and that talking to the press was 'a dangerous thing to do.'"

**Juanita Broadrick** is another woman whom feminist Gloria Steinem, Patricia Ireland, and Betty Friedan have somehow forgotten to tell us about. Lisa Myers, who has broken a number of stories for NBC, reported on March 28, 1998, that Paula Jones lawyer had filed court papers saying that Clinton in 1978, while attorney general of Arkansas, had "forcibly raped and assaulted" Broadrick in a Little Rock hotel room, and then ""bribed and intimidated her" to keep that indelible experience to herself.

Myers added: "NBC News has talked to four people Arkansas who say Broadrick told them of such an assault years ago." According to one source, Clinton "ripped her clothes and bit her lip."

The White House says that Broadrick has denied under oath that she was ever raped by Clinton, but the story will not die. On CNBC's *Hardball*, Chris Matthews asked Congresswoman Tillie Fowler (Republican, Florida), if members of the Republican caucus were willing to read material (in files not open to the public) that accuses the president of rape almost 20 years ago. And, Matthews added, "they have got some documentation." (The reference was to Jane Doe No. 5, Juanita Broadrick.)

Broadrick's lawyer, Bill Walters, says, "We're not confirming or denying anything."



## CHAPTER TWELVE

According to the *Starr Reports* when Broadrick was interviewed by BFI investigators, she admitted that he affidavit denying the rape was false. (See page 58, Jane Doe No. 5, footnote 203.)

Hail to the Chief! With credit to John Gotti.

(Do not miss *Frontline's* "The Triumph of Evil" next Tuesday, January 19, Channel 13 at 9p.m. Its about American complicity in the genocide in Rwanda.)

[NEW YORK POST, Thursday, January 21, 1999, by David Gelernter; p. 25]

### Saying 'No' Is Just the Start

#### **Even those eager to live by traditional mores don't know how**

'A RETURN to Modesty' is an important new book by Wendy Shalit. Everyone ought to read it; conservative males have a special duty to respond to it. Miss Shalit argues thoughtfully and with passion that feminine modesty was a female-protection device and that our relentless anti-modesty campaign has hurt women badly.

In pre-feminist, pre-1965 America, men had fairly narrow sexual access to women, but wide responsibilities. A man couldn't count on his girlfriend's sleeping with him, but a wife could count on her husband's support if she devoted her life (to their mutual benefit) to making a home and rearing children. Feminism set out to overturn this arrangement.

Today men have all sorts of sexual access to women, and no responsibilities to speak of. When a man wants to sleep with his girlfriend, "she has no social support," Miss Shalit writes, "in her decisions to say no." Men are no longer expected to support their wives. And if a man tires of his spouse, it is easier to delete her than to rid the family computer of her e-mail. Feminism has achieved all this and more. No wonder such men as Ted Kennedy and Bill Clinton are its biggest fans.

But a question arises for conservative males. Miss Shalit argues that women must be allowed, without harassment or social ostracism, to remain chaste until they marry. It's easy for conservatives to agree. But how many conservative men honestly wish that all *their* girlfriends had insisted on chastity until marriage? Did they pine for chaste women?

Not on the whole. Not so you'd notice. But they can still endorse Miss Shalit's thesis unhypocritically, if they proceed with care. The problem hinges on one of the central pathologies of modern life, the ruin we have visited on all sorts of delicate social ecosystems. It's easy (or used to be) to destroy a neighborhood by putting a superhighway through, but not so easy to create a neighborhood whatever you do. The sexual eco-balance was easily overturned but won't be easy to re-create.

I can't see that it's wrong for a man to try to seduce his girlfriend, if he makes the attempt in gentlemanly fashion. And the world would be even sadder than it is today if such attempts never succeeded. But it is wrong for men to treat the issue as settled in advance, to imply that a woman who values modesty and chastity is defective and ought to be sent

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

back for repairs, to approach the topic as if male and female viewpoints were the same.

And I don't think it's quite sufficient for conservative males of my own, post-World War II generation to endorse Miss Shalit's book while insisting that *they* have nothing to regret. Today's unhappy society didn't happen by accident. We made it. Our generation grew up in a culture that was based from the late '60's forward on the relentless exploitation of women, and precious few males haven't gained in one way or other; precious few can claim to have fought that culture instead of accepting it. There is more than enough guilt to go around.

Today many young men want to be gentlemen but don't know how, because they have never been taught. To reconstruct a civilized society is a painful process, step by step. Most Americans are satisfied even if they aren't happy—too satisfied, at any rate, to entertain Miss Shalit's radical proposal that men try to be manly and women, womanly. But there is an American sub-society-in-waiting, made up of (maybe) a third of the population—an incipient society of dissenters. Members of this dissenters' society believe, among other things, that a woman who values modesty and chastity, or home and children, is no worse for her exotic tastes and might easily be better.

Miss Shalit's book reminds me of the one by Katie Roiphe, "Last Night in Paradise." Like Miss Shalit's, "Last Night" is a book about sadness. The sexual revolution came barreling through like a tornado, festooning the landscape with the dumped contents of slit-open lives, exposing to daylight all sorts of stuff that modesty would have concealed, leaving bleakness behind, and a pervasive sense of violation.

Both books are moving and sometimes painful. The difference is that Roiphe (who is a liberal) leaves us mourning amid the ruins, but Miss Shalit (being a conservative and therefore a reformer and progressive) wants to change things, and arrives with proposals in hand. So naturally Roiphe attacked Miss Shalit's book, in this month's Harper's Bazaar. It's hard to be a conservative, and Wendy Shalit deserves credit not only for an important piece of writing but for courage in the line of duty.

Tuesday's Wall Street Journal underlined one of her points—that we are eager to bring out a girl's masculine urges (such as they are), and contemptuous of gentlemen. Nowadays a 6-year-old boy can be brought up on charges for kissing a classmate—but girls may fight boys in high-school wrestling matches. Only a smattering of girls want to, but these athletic heroines are mad much of. (Do they know what the boys really think of them? It's a sad story all around.) The unlucky boy in a co-ed match "can't win," the Journal notes coolly; "If he beats her, he beats a girl. And if she beats him, how will he face his friends?"

Just another amusing little anecdote, decline-of-Rome department. But where are the parents? How could they permit such stuff? When my boys get to high school they are welcome to go out for wrestling, but their parents would sooner pull them out of sports altogether (and out of school, if it came to that) than allow them to wrestle against girls. The Journal located a wrestling expert to explain why certain people might regard such

## CHAPTER TWELVE

match-ups as "improper." Members of the incipient Society of Dissenters probably grasped this point all by themselves.

[Atlanta Journal-Constitution, November 11, 1998, by Chris Burritt, Journal-Constitution Staff Writer]

### **Susan Smith's Mother Speaks Out**

**'She is not a bad person; she loved her children'**

By Chris Burritt, Journal Constitution Staff Writer

Union, S.C.-- Linda Russell cannot reach into her daughter's mind to understand why she drove her little boys to the top of a boat ramp, released the emergency brake and sent them to their deaths strapped in the back seat of her car.

So she drives the roads that Susan Smith drive that October night in 1994 trying to fathom a depression so bottomless that it could lead to murder.

"Put her in a dark car, on a dark road for mile after mile after mile," Russell said driving the desolate highway one recent evening. "The longer she drove, the more lonely she felt. She lost touch with reality."

Russell knew her daughter was upset that day. She was distraught over her broken marriage and her recently dashed romance with a wealthy lover. Smith's life had always been a highway of heartache, from her father's suicide to her twisted relationship with her stepfather, Russell's then-husband, Beverly...

For the first time since a jury convicted her daughter of murder, Russell is talking publicly about the ghastly textile-town tragedy that sent chills down America's spine. Divorced now and selling the brick ranch house where Smith grew up, the 54-year-old grandmother who has been portrayed as cold, controlling and hard-edged is showing her emotional scars, sharing her pain and trying to move on.

She recently began attending meetings to organize the Union Country chapter of the National Alliance for the Mentally Ill, a group the helps families deal with mental illness.

Her 27-year old daughter is mentally ill, Russell said, and belongs in a hospital, not in the Women's Correctional Institution in Columbia where she is serving a life sentence. She will be eligible for parole on Nov. 3, 2024, 30 years after she was charged in the deaths of Michael, 3, and Alex, 14 months....

If Smith's depression had been diagnosed and she had been taking Prozac, Russell said, her daughter never would have killed her sons.

"She's not a bad person. She loved her children," Russell said. "Something as simple as a pill could have made so much of a difference in so many lives."

"Do you know what Susan told me? That she thought the Lord had lifted that car and put it somewhere. And (the children) were somewhere

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

and they were safe and if they could just find where he had put it, she could have her children back."

State prosecutor Tommy Pope tried to convince the jury that Smith drowned her sons in hopes of winning back Tom Findlay, who had said in a letter to her [that] he wasn't interested in a ready-made family. Russell said her daughter knew that Findlay was not interested in marriage. Instead, Russell blames her daughter's despair in part of her troubled marriage to [ex-husband] David Smith.

"Susan had filed for divorce on the ground of adultery, and he was trying to get her back," Russell said. "He played mind games with her. I do not think he realized how far he was pushing her.

David Smith, who worked recently for Winn-Dixie in Spartanburg, could not be reached for comment....

"In his 1995 book, *Beyond All Reason – My Life With Susan Smith*," David Smith admitted to cheating on his wife, while accusing her of cheating on him. His portrayal of his mother-in-law was unflattering, accusing Russell of interfering with the marriage. After his wife had filed for divorce, Smith wrote, he arranged for his girlfriend, Tiffany Moss, to follow Susan Smith around in hopes of catching her with another man.

"Could it be that somehow what Susan did was a product of all that catting around and foolishness and lying?" Smith wrote. "People all over the world sneak around of each other, lie to each other, and do each other dirt. But no one kills their children. No one murders their babies."

"....Russell believes she intended to kill herself and her boys. But she got out and released the emergency brake.

The car hit the water, floated for an estimated six minutes, and sank.

For the next nine days, Smith lied, playing the part of the stricken mother. She told police, her family and the nation that a black gunman had stolen her car. She painted a pitiful portrait of herself, stranded and screaming, "I love y'all" as her sons disappeared down the dark road.

Russell said she never suspected that her daughter was lying, or that she might have killed the boys. "You know, I don't even like that word," Russell said. Later the truth came out, people recoiled at Smith's lying. Russell said, "If you go back and look at those interviews, everyone of them says, 'I love you,' Everyone of them.

"Susan was the only daughter I had," Russell said. "And I didn't have another daughter to compare. You live with things as they come along. It's like dealing with one thing, and by the time you think things are all right, here comes something else."

In one of the trial's most sensational revelations, Russell's second husband, Beverly, took the stand and apologized for having sexual relations with his stepdaughter until three months before she drowned her sons.

Their relations had begun when Smith was 15. The family got counseling, but the inappropriate relations resumed after Smith had turned 16. A counselor told Linda Russell, "Susan's in love with Bev."

"What do you do when you have a 16 ½-year-old who thinks she is in love with your husband?" Russell said...

## CHAPTER TWELVE

The Russell's called off an investigation by the sheriff's office, which had been contacted by the local social services agency.

"I mean if Susan had been 4 or 5, I probably would have killed him," Russell said. "I did what I felt like was the best thing to do...by no allowing it to be beyond my control."

Linda Russell said she separated from her husband in early 1995, after she learned about the extent of his relations with her daughter. Their divorce became final in September...

She has put a few special things—some toys, a pair of shoes, a baby book—in an antique cedar chest. She's also tucked in some of her daughter's memorabilia, including her childhood ballet slippers.

"It's a chest full of remembrances of three lives," Russell said softly as the porch swing creaked in a sad rhythm. "That's her chest."

[The Atlanta Journal-Constitution, by Lydia Longa, February, 23, 1999]

### **Atlanta Police unsure why boy, 11, severely beaten.**

Atlanta police are trying to determine how an 11-year-old boy was really injured after his friend claimed Friday he was beaten by five other youngsters for not wanting to join a gang.

Investigators, however, now think that the boy, Avery Royster, was not beaten up by classmates at Stanton Elementary School, but are puzzled about how he ended up in the intensive care unit of Hughes Spalding Hospital on Friday night. He is listed in stable condition.

"I knocked on their door, I tried to talk to them, they slammed the door in my face, and they told me to call their attorney," Sgt. Keith Meadows said.

A 17-year-old sister, Renithya Howell, said Avery had not said a word to the family about being beaten up by a gang.

Earlier Monday, Stanton Elementary Principal Carolyn Jackson said Avery's friend had told her and police that Avery had asked him to make up the gang beating story.

Hospital official told Meadows that Avery's mother called an ambulance Friday afternoon after she tried to awaken the boy while he slept on the sofa in their southeast Atlanta home. "The said the boy's eyes rolled back, and the mother called an ambulance," Meadows said. "The doctors told me he had a seizure when he arrived at the hospital."

The Department of Family and Children Services visited Howell at the hospital Monday. DFACS had opened a file on the family in 1995 and closed it the next year, said Sherekaa Osorio, spokeswoman for DFACS. Osorio said a caseworker would interview Avery in the hospital.

Howell told WSB-TV she feared this incident would cause her to lose custody of her son.

"Why would they think I am child abusing my own son? They keep saying it must have happened at home. I am sick of it." She said.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

[San Diego Union-Tribune, by Karen Rouse and Gordon Dicson—  
from the Fort Worth Star-Telegram, March 26, 1998]

### Searching for Answers.

#### **Firearms were stolen from boy's grandfather.**

Jonesboro, Ark.-- One "beet red" and appearing upset, the other stoic and unflinching, the two boys accused of executing four classmates and a teacher sat in silence yesterday as a judge ordered them detained while authorities decide how to prosecute them.

The boys, clad in orange jail jumpers, said nothing at the brief hearing and replied only "yes" when asked in their names were Mitchell Johnson, 13, and Andrew Golden, 11.

(Although it is the policy of the San Diego Union-Tribune not to publish the name of juveniles suspected of crimes, given the extraordinary circumstances of the crime and the release of the boy's names worldwide we have decided to identify the suspects.)

Last night, Golden's grandfather told The Associated Press that his grandson admitted stealing seven guns from him but didn't remember much about the shootings.

"He told me he fired some shots," Doug Golden said. "He said he shot at a car on the parking lot, but, "I don't remember anything after that."

After prosecutors at yesterday's hearing cited evidence implicating the boys in the Tuesday afternoon carnage outside Westside Middle School, Juvenile Court Judge Ralph Wilson ordered that boys remain in custody until another hearing April 29.

The youngsters did not enter a plea as they sat, wearing neither handcuffs nor shackles, beside their attorneys. Their visibly upset parents were among the spectators and the few reporters allowed to witness the proceeding.

One of the reporters allowed inside, Sandy Davis of the Arkansas Democrat Gazette, said the boys were ushered into the courtroom, through a side door with blankets covering their heads.

Mitchell, she said, was "beet red...and very upset. His mother was very upset. Andrew was very stoic. He just sat there. He looks like he's just a very little boy."

Prosecuting attorney Brent Wilson earlier indicated he would seek to charge each with five counts of capital murder, plus 10 counts of attempted murder in the wounding's of nine other students and a teacher.

No decision however, had been made on whether to try one or both as adults or as juveniles.

Golden's grandfather said that the boy admitted stealing three rifles, four handguns and several boxes of ammunition from his house...

As the boy's legal status remained in limbo, families of the five slaying victims began making funeral arrangements. Of the surviving victims, one remained in critical condition and five others were in stable condition. The other four wounded had been released by yesterday.

## CHAPTER TWELVE

Killed were Natalie Brooks, Paige Ann Herring and Stephanie Johnson, all 12, and Brittany R. Varner, 11.

Shannon Wright, 32, an English teacher, died Tuesday night after surgery for wounds to her chest and abdomen. Witnesses said she was shot when she stepped in front of a sixth-grader as the gunman took aim at the student. \. The student was not hurt.

By dawn yesterday, a large wreath, two bouquets and a candle had been placed on the sidewalk in front of the school. Classes were not conducted but were scheduled to resume this morning.

No one had an answer for why Johnson and Golden decked themselves in camouflage clothing, allegedly sounded a fire alarm and then ambushed the students and teachers as they evacuated the school. The boys were captured as they ran toward the Johnson family's van they had parked nearby after taking it from home without permission.

There's no explanation, in my opinion, why an 11-year-old or 13-year-old would do something like this," said Craighead County Sheriff Dale Haas.

Classmates said Johnson was upset over a breakup with his girlfriend and had made numerous threats in the days before the shootings.

"He said he was definitely going to shoot Candace because she had broken up with him," sixth grader Kara Tate, 11, was quoted as telling the Jonesboro Sun....

A friend of the Golden family said Andrew's father, Dennis, recently had been training the youngster to "practical shooting," a handgun competition with moving and pop-up targets.

The friend, Terry Crider, said he and the elder Golden were members of the Jonesboro Practical Pistol Shooters club and that Golden and his wife, Pat, both were postmasters in nearby towns.

One of Andrew Golden's classmates, Erica Swindle, said the boy sometimes talked about shooting people who made him angry.

"He'll sit there and say, 'Man, he's making me so mad I should just take my gun and start blasting him in the butt for it,' " Erica said. "you know he don't act like he's mad, but you really don't know about him. He's 11."

One neighbor, Lloyd Brooks, described Golden as "evil-acting" and said he had warned his 12-year-old daughter, Jeanna, to stay away from the boy.

On Tuesday, Jeanna was one of the shooting victims, wounded in the thigh but not seriously injured.

"I wouldn't let her play with this kid because—it's mean to say—he was so demented," Books said of Golden. "He was always threatening people."

Johnson, on the other hand, had become more of an enigma in recent weeks, friends said.

Once a choirboy who went to church when his parents did not, he stopped going two weeks ago and recently donned red clothing or camouflage outfits, boasted of gang membership and cropped his dark brown hair boot-camp short.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**



---

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

---

***"One Father is enough to govern one hundred sons, but not a hundred sons one father.*** [Herbert, *Jacula Prudentum*. No. 406 (1604) as quoted in *The Macmillan Book of Proverbs, Maxims, and Famous Phrases*, selected and arraigned by Burton Stevenson, ©1948 Macmillan, Sixth Printing, New York; p. 771.]

---

### THE SILENT TREATISE

---

**It is clear**, that neither the present governmental regimes, nor the feminists, nor the media, who hold a death-grip over Fatherhood and the Family, want Patriarchy or *anything else* as a solution to the war in which they've created. This is an abhorrent reality to their social model.

They will entreat programs, jails, social programs, grants, mentoring, foster care, and a panoply of other Social Engineering programs to abrogate the obvious institution that a male and female should join together as one in a state of holy matrimony, and that they as a family unit should care for their own children, above and beyond the wishes, mandates and Social designs of either a Elite regime, of their community, Society, and government. What we are speaking here to is the essential element of Americanism, the celebration of **individual** freedom and self determination rather than a mandate from a regime or a societal order which openly markets a "Red Marriage" form of institution.

This is in fact, why the modern gay and lesbian community, along with the feminist anti-family agenda, has been able to assert so much power and influence upon the American consciousness. It has gotten to the point, to where government and the feminist pro-actively cover-up the real tragedy of what government influence and the disastrous failure and impact all their social-engineering programs have in fact done to children, families and the American society to where the dictum of "tolerance" and 're-engineering' of the Nuclear Family unit is a addiction amongst the Social engineers within the ruling regimes to where they are no longer willing to leave it alone.

Indeed, presently, we see a fanatical, coercive effort ingrained within the American School systems to not only teach gay and lesbian 'tolerance' to every school child within America, but to force it down each American families throat via the implementation of the educational systems ingrained within each of our schools. Society itself has not begun to even answer the question whether this is the correct thing to do in this nation. This is why there is presently such a dichotomy between the present school theorists and families who dare but to remove their children from this special purpose environment and "home-school" their own chil-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

dren. Indeed, tragically—our schools have been transformed into the front battleground for Hillary's Socialist and Feminist elite who now are engaged in a national indoctrination of such foreign, unproven social principals upon our young, usually, in direct defiance of what Parent's want for their children:

"[Contemporary] public school textbooks commonly exclude the history, heritage, beliefs, and values of millions of Americans. Those who believe in the traditional family are not represented. Those who believe in free enterprise are not represented. Those whose politics are conservative are almost unrepresented. Above all, those who are committed to their religious tradition—at the very least as an important part of the historical record—are not represented." [*Censorship; Evidence of Bias in Our Children's Textbooks*, by Paul C. Vitz, (1986) p. 22.]

Because of this, there are presently Prison programs presenting themselves as viable alternatives to Patriarchy within the traditional family because of the impact that this has had upon the mindset of our children propagated by our own school system. They are starting to claim success in "home monitoring" of prisoners, who are electronically monitored rather than spending real time in jail. These and other Government Police/Government/Prison/Socialist programs pretend their 'success' yet; conversely are mute upon any challenge of implementation of Patriarchy, where past facts and figures show, that children borne to such a program in fact, are GROOMED by and through the institution of Patriarchy to naturally avoid any social pathology. Thereby; such families do not lend themselves to such social institutions in the first place....children coming from such homes don't need Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine.

It is clearly shown, especially in the Black Communities; whose male population has been driven into total insignificance by the full implementation of the slave/Feminist Matriarchal archetype; that Patriarchy HAS A ROLE FOR YOUNG MALES AND FEMALES, WHO MUST; BY SOCIAL REGULATION OF THE FEMALE KINSHIP SYSTEM—GROOM THEMSELVES TO BECOME VIABLE FOR THE INSTITUTION OF MARRIAGE AND SOCIAL RESPONSIBILITY...this is declaratory and thereby, is the institution of a free nation, with a sovereign, robust, individual society.

But this system in fact, totally obliterates and is in *direct* conflict with the present "Big Government" Socialist systems of micro-management forced upon a populace's lives. Implementation of Patriarchy, will; in fact; obliterate the present Feminist/Socialist/Federalist Big-Government systems...and will replace it with a truly American system of Individual rights, heritage and family order. Such rededication to that institution will in fact, factually diminish the size of Washington, D.C. This is something

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

that the Elite regime, and especially the Socialists within this nation like Ms. Hillary Clinton—do not want to hear.

What do we mean by family order? Factually it is the appellation of taking specific care of your own family. This natural system of social order invests the peace and safety of Families by regulating their life choices based on the Individual, Family, and local Community standards, all stemming from within the home. This construct of authority and security within the home was well understood and most certainly depended upon in our society. Note the following definitions from Bouvier's Law Dictionary which were once a well-understood part of the normal American society and our laws:

**FAMILY**, domestic relations. In a limited sense it signifies the father, mother, and children. In a more extensive sense it comprehends all the individuals who live under the authority of another, and includes the servants of the family. It is also employed to signify all the relations who descend from a common ancestor, or who spring from a common root. Louis. Code, art. 3522, No. 16; 9 Ves. 323.

2.) In the construction of wills, the word family, when applied to personal property is synonymous with kindred, or relations. It may, nevertheless, be confined to particular relations by the context of the will, or may be enlarged by it, so that the expression may in some cases mean children, or next of kin, and in others, may even include relations by marriage. 1 Rop. on Leg. 115 1 Hov. Supp. 365, notes, 6 and 7; Brown v. Higgs; 4 Ves. 708; 2 Ves. jr. 110; 3 East, Rep. 172 5 Ves. 156 1,7 Ves. 255 S. 126. Vide article Legatee. See Dig. lib. 50, t. 16, l. 195, s. 2.

**FAMILY ARRANGEMENTS.** This term has been used to signify an agreement made between a father and his son, or children; or between brothers, to dispose of property in a different manner to that, which would otherwise take place.

2.) In these cases frequently the mere relation, of the parties will give effect to bargains otherwise without adequate consideration. 1 Chit. Pr. 67 1 Turn. & Russ. 13.

**FAMILY BIBLE.** A Bible containing an account of the births, marriages, and deaths of the members of a family.

2 ) An entry, by the father, made in a Bible, stating that Peter, his eldest son, was born in lawful wedlock of Maria, his wife, at a time specified, is evidence to prove the legitimacy of Peter. 4 Campb. 401. But the entry, in order to be evidence, must be an original entry, and, when it is not so, the loss of the original must be proved before the copy can be received. 6 Serg. Rawle, 135. See 10 Watts, R. 82.

**FAMILY EXPENSES.** The sum which it costs a man to maintain a family.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

**FAMILY MEETINGS.** Family councils, or family meetings in Louisiana, are meetings of at least five relations, or in default of relations of minors or other persons on whose interest they are called upon to deliberate, then of the friends of such minors or other persons.

2.) The appointment of the members of the family meeting is made by, the judge. The relations or friends must be selected from among those domiciliated in the parish in which the meeting is held; the relations are selected according to their proximity, beginning with the nearest. The relation is preferred to the connection in the same degree, and among relations of the same degree, the eldest is preferred. The under tutor must also be present. 6 N. S. 455.

3.) The family meeting is held before a justice of the peace, or notary public, appointed by the judge for the purpose. It is called for a fixed day and hour, by citations delivered at least three days before the day appointed for the purpose.'

4.) The members of the family meeting, before commencing their deliberations, take an oath before the officer before whom the meeting is held,, to give their advice according to the best of their knowledge, touching the interests of the person on whom they are called upon to deliberate. The officer before whom the family meeting is held, must make a particular process-verbal of the deliberations, cause the members of the family meeting to sign it, if they know how to sign, he must sign it himself, and deliver a copy to the parties that they may have it homologated. Civil Code of Louis. B. 1, tit. 8, c. 1, s. 6, art. 305 to 311; Code Civ. B. 1, tit. 10, c. 2, A. 4.

What this does is form close ties and unity via a more sovereign family system of governance, rather than of working from the top down, which is the present, Federalist/Feminist world "Village" model propagated by Hillary Rodham-Clinton and the Socialists within America. These are the unseen elite's who are now enforcing Social Engineering upon the rest of us, in which we have no control over either their temperaments or design upon us all. Their actions and design's are unknown to us, undocumented, unverified, but just as those unseen elite's who have 'determined' that we *must* have our public institutions force gay and lesbian training in our grade-school's, high school's , our Colleges and Universities. They have imposed other Social Engineered programs against an unsuspecting public, enforced by Police and Feminist special interest groups upon the rest of society, when these programs are no more than epiphanies within Hillary's "Village."

The Individualist system predicated by Patriarchy adheres to a system that intentionally controls family members, assigns them their proper and best function, gives them responsibility, then grooms children via local customs and laws to that of the family in which to be ready for, and to succeed in marriage to propagate another even more robust family. As the Talmud dictates: "As my fathers planted for me, so do I plant for my

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

children." This *used to be* a part of the American experience, but now children; most certainly the "X Generation" is being told the outrageous lie that "you will not do as well as your parents did." [This statement is being made in the worlds richest superpower...] Now, this was a previous family tradition of Patriarchy, to hand down its inculcation of wealth, mores, and community ties; which are being lost generationally, to Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine. No longer are Fathers and Families planting for their future legacies. Patriarchy, however; is locally implemented only by the individual families, inculcated family traditions and local mores within the children who will become the progeny to future generations. From this individualistic/American inculcation, children are led by and through their families to enjoin in the system found most successful for the well-being of the community the one that use to plant for their children's futures. In short, Patriarchy does this by making sex work for America. The Feminist model, allows the female to shun such societal mores and 'find her own freedom' which in fact, turns out to be sexual anarchy throughout the community. The first thing a woman will do to assert this "freedom" is to get rid of the male, which will instantly destroy the family. She can easily do this by the help of Hillary and her wonderful Krell Welfare Machine. Patriarchy conversely, deems that all wives and all children have a job and a responsibility to use their sexuality for not only their own benefit, but for the benefit of the family. This required of course, absolute control and authority over family members by most certainly the Father. As Lincoln noted earlier, we either have a nation of Slavery or Freedom, but we cannot have both. The final determination of this paradigm will either be the system of Patriarchy, or 'something else' most likely a compilation of Feminist/Socialist doctrines blended into one; will rule this society in the final analysis. Most certainly, that 'something else' will enjoin Hillary and her coterie of experts who will be deeply involved in such 'redesign' of the family and the human species, and most *certainly* this nation—which by design—is supposed to be something completely different.

Clearly, absolutely, succinctly, irrefutably, Feminism will NEVER allow families especially Fathers to re-assume this primal authoritarian role within society or their own homes anymore, to the clear detriment of society and the social order. The resultant sexual anarchy and social pathologies clearly seen by the perversion of the family system, which takes the greatest toll from the destruction of our sexual order and the 'individual rights' of the family system. The present aberrance's of society finds itself in such sexual disarray, skewing the social order via the 'tolerance' of perverse and disgusting social systems such as lesbianism, Feminism and the Gay communities which via the artificial supplement of government and the propaganda system of the media, can only find their viabil-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ity and voice, and thereby; through various superstructure's of the Welfare State, are imposing a devolved and backwards order upon society, which is in fact, is one of the reasons which dragging this society downwards to even where the average plebecite are recognizing, that we "are advancing, while we are going backwards at the same time."

From this we leave a nation of children without a destiny, with a crippled destiny. Who instead of finding the love and safety within a Father, a family, home and community, only find the temporal sustenance of an pervasive government imposed lifestyle wrought with danger and a false road to happiness. Factually, it can be clearly seen that the Patriarchal married lifestyle to where the Female Kinship system is regulated and human sexuality harnessed for the good of the community is NOT ONLY good for society, but for individual men, woman and children who enter that hallowed and protected state. Facts clearly show, that those persons entering such a system have less crime, less social pathology throughout every family member, are in better health than those entering into the false conformist road of the 'freedom' of feminism and gay/lesbian "tolerance"...

From this, we can see a challenge to the present order to show cause, how the basic family model ingrained, supported and propagated by the Patriarchal system is inferior to the Feminist model of 'redesign', tolerance; and artificial support and backing via Socialist Government institutions which adhere to the "Red Marriage" Soviet state rather than imbue any sense of Americanism. This author cannot find any support by government to effectively meet such a challenge to it's authority to implement such a Socialist Engineered Anti-American design upon this nation. In fact, this author stands ready to meet any and all advocates of the feminist, Socialist, Governmental, Court, or Prison regimes' who would dare place forwards ANY theory or support that their system might be superior. I contend, that it isn't even *legal*. Not by the lawful support systems within this nation at least.

In fact, no model shown, stemming from the systemic avocation of the Feminist, Government, Psychological, Socialist, Sociology communities cannot even attempt an answer to this challenge. For in fact, no model is superior to that of the one that not only prevents family breakdown and criminal social pathologies, but rather; protects and defends families, their communities and more importantly, their personal acquisition and continued growth of their *own* wealth and well-being.

Conversely, it has clearly been shown, that those systems propagating and supporting the Feminist model of 'sexual' and 'feminist' freedom upon our society have in fact, brought upon this nation a plague of prisons, and both criminal and social pathologies which have not only destroyed fathers, and families, but the children they have pretended to pro-

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

tect. It has most certainly, however; exploded the growth of the Krell Welfare Machine which Ms. Clinton eminently propagates as a 'new' model in which to redesign humanity. This, of course, presupposes that the system of Patriarchy (and all other systems in fact) are bad for America, and Ms. Clinton's "new" system will in fact, be better. Nothing could be further from the truth. Just look at the inner working's of Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine.

"Consider the aggregate numbers: from 1975 to 1990, "The number of psychiatrists increased from 26,000 to 36,000, clinical psychologists from 15,000 to 42,000, clinical social workers from 25,000 to 80,000, and marriage and family counselors from 6,000 to 40,000. In aggregate, the increase in 15 years has been from 72 to 198 thousand professionals in just those four professions. (From Stuart A. Kirk and Herb Kitchens, *The Selling of DSM* (New York: Aldine De Gruyter, 1992), 8). [*Rocking the Cradle of Sexual Politics*, Louise Armstrong, ©1994, Addison-Wesley Publishing Co., Reading, MA; ISBN 0-201-62471-0; p. 6.]

All Ms. Armstrong is documented here is the absolutely phenomenal growth in these industries, which—no longer describes a sickness within the family; but more insidiously, describes the sickness within Hillary's Welfare Krell Machine and those who are in it, operate it, and live off it. Add to these numbers the ominously exponentially growing numbers of government's police-state—not to mention the explosive growth in lawyers--and we have a panorama of army after army attacking our citizens directly, from within their own homes from the bedroom, into their yards, when they travel, and directly into their office where they work. At an instant notice, anyone's life could be ruined (and are exponentially being ruined) by these roving "proactive" NCPGI armed and unarmed forces.

President Clinton has reinforced these armies, adding 100,000 new officers to his inventory around the nation. Now, with 'crime' rates supposedly plummeting; (quite strange, as prison populations continue to rise) he wants 50,000 more police on our nations streets! This Krell Welfare Machine embellishes such oxymoronic doctrines as this as the insanity of the norm.

I have incessantly tried to bring these issues to light within both a local, state, and national mainstream media over the past 13 years, and have had limited luck in disseminating Fathers Rights issues. Sadly, I have found that our mainstream media, the only private business imbued publicly with the protections of the First Amendment, have all but turned their back on Fatherhood.

This issue really snapped for me in early 1998, when I read several Articles from a local Californian weekly Newspaper called the Chico News & Review. I had been politely sending them dozens of Fathers

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Rights pieces, which they patently refused to publish. I had some success in writing them, on a variety of other issues and had been published several times, and in fact had gained the vested Guest Editorial position at least three times before. However, in regards to Fatherhood, this newspaper remained resolutely mute.

Conversely, I had seen a panoply of Feminist inspired and backed articles proliferate steadily from within this paper, in fact—one woman from Yuba City, almost monthly captured an editorial position within this newspaper. Then, there was a welfare mothers, several in fact, that wrote the paper again, taking the traditional feminist line—that these women were ‘hard working’ and somehow contributing to society by throwing away the Fathers of their children, and staying on welfare, most; predictably—getting grants in which to freely attend either Community Colleges or the University outright. To each and every avocation, I would write and try and inform the public to the contrary facts and figures in which were falsely emanating from this paper and these women. Soon, I was quite angry by their arrogance and their silence on this issue. I had several calls with both the editor and newsmen in regards to this issue. One arrogant reporter, once proclaimed “we are not your publicist!” To which I immediately retorted “That may be true, but you are most certainly the DA’s, publicist!” He didn’t have too much to say in response to that.

Nonetheless it got so bad that at one point, when yet another, Single Female Headed Household welfare mom got access to this Newspaper to once again state Feminist policy, in total exasperation I finally wrote an intensely long 28 page response to her piece entitled “**The Silent Treatise**.” In this intentionally long-winded document (there was a reason for this—to show the absolute frustration all Fathers were going through by the outright silence of the media on our side of the issues) I laid out every fact and figure I could get my hands on to attack the long-standing feminist arguments being perpetrated against the average Father and citizen, who clearly were not being informed of both sides of this issue. I sent the Silent Treatise out to every media source in my area. The result?!?

**Dead silence.** Not one peep was mentioned of this by any media. Not once did anyone call back. There was absolute dead silence. Yet, nobody recognized that I had presaged their flaccid response by boldly entitling this document “The Silent Treatise” in the first place! Still, they didn’t ‘get it.’ They should be ashamed that I adumbrated their malfeasance, even before they would read this document. This speaks infinitely to larger issues as to what is really happening within the mainstream media.

Well, shortly thereafter, our local District Attorney, Mr. Mike Ramsey wrote a predictable hit-piece against fathers in the Chico News & Review that directly attacked fathers, saying in essence that “not paying child



## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

support was the real abuse." This pedantic theory originally came from Janet Reno and papers around the country had published her Anti-Father piece, so the Fed's had most assuredly prodded DA's to take this line of philosophy and indoctrinate the mainstream media with it; whom dutifully printed this new affirmation. The paper which so boldly declared that they weren't going to assume the role of being my publicist—printed the DA's article forthwith—this paper was again, the Chico News & Review.

I was so disgusted, I picked up the phone and called the General Manager of the CN&R, Mr. Joe Martin. I railed on him pretty hard...deservedly. He responded with the same old arguments that "well your submissions are too long" or that they "weren't timely" or that the "issue wasn't relevant anymore," etc., etc. I politely informed him that he had *no problem* in giving the Feminists as much room as they needed to expound their disinformation, or making their issues timely, and forcing them down the public's throat to make them 'relevant.' I also noted that the DA had carte blanche access to his paper and anyone else, including Welfare mom after Welfare mom, who expounded the 'party line.' I even named the Feminist from Yuba City, a regular within the pages of his journal. I then asked him pointedly when he had ever done a Fathers Rights story backing fathers over the 11 year period that I consistently wrote him, but which he never published any opposite viewpoint.

He was quick to point out that they did *one* story (which I had cut out and new it quite well); I then politely informed him that this *one* story his Newspaper did about 8 years earlier, had the first two paragraphs that lamely mentioned problems faced by fathers, then immediately turned that around and made the rest of the story all about the Feminist plight for almost two full pages!! I could see these facts were making him very uncomfortable, but I persisted. I simply laid it out on the line.

"You have a duty as a Journalist to tell both sides," I said. "You clearly, haven't done that. In fact, I defy you to tell me about just one of your readers within this community that can tell me what our position is, as a nationally recognized Fathers Rights organization in our assertion that no Father can pay child support to this system any longer...what local citizen can correctly equivocate our platform or understand why we are mandating it!?" I said pointedly challenging him.

The challenge of course was met by silence. I then said, "Listen...I am demanding space in your Newspaper so that I can answer the falsehoods and outright lies that you let all the other people on the other side of this issue have a clear platform to expound."

"Well, you can submit something," he said, "but I can't guarantee anyone space." He ended purposely. To this I laughed.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

"Uh-uh." I immediately replied in the negative. "It's as simple as this. Either give me the space," I said getting angry, "or I'll have every one of my members call *every one* of your advertisers, tell them what is going on, and demand that they pull all their ad accounts from your paper."

This was a small community, with an aggressive media openly competing for a very small business community advertiser base. I had finally struck a chord. He knew me, and he was well aware who and what our organization was, what it could do, and he knew that I'd have ten people calling every one of his customers that very day. I was angry enough to where I'd double that number.

You know, as a journalist, I felt bad for doing this. Really. I believe in the fourth estate, but unfortunately, especially in Chico, I saw too much nepotism—too much malfeasance upon the great and noble standards in which I was trained with. Simply put, I was very forcibly telling Joe, that he was leaving me no opportunity to do anything but destroy his Newspaper, a paper mind you, that had in earlier times, courageously won national awards and had brought out tough stories, and had taken courageous stands for the under-dog, which I admired, but in regards to Fathers Rights, they willfully spat on their own standards of excellence, and were proactively and intentionally sequestering the real truth from their readers.

Joe was very disappointed. I could hear it in his voice. But he submitted. "You can have 800 words," he said quietly.

I took it, and then some.

February 17, 1998

SUBJECT: Editorial Response to Michael L. Ramsey -- Thursday,  
Feb. 5, 1998

Non-Payment of Child Support is Child Abuse

"Guest Editorial Submission"

Dear Editor,

This paper, along with a coterie of other Special Interests, has imbued the Guest Editorial position and the pages of this Newspaper with a party line that has supported feminism for over a decade now. This submission, is a direct response to the guest editorial submitted by Michael L. Ramsey's on February 5, 1998 "Non-Payment of Child Support is Child Abuse." First, it should be considered, that in all countries which have propped up Welfare as a solution to help the children and the poor; nothing has devastated their societies more. Welfare is destroying our children and has been the direct causal factor for the removal of fathers out of their lives and out of the home. The exact thing that is suppose to be there to help them is in fact the exact thing destroying them...for profit. It should be noted, that under these conditions, Mr. Ramsey is the main Child abuser in this county.

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Welfare is the seed and engine that directly expands Mr. Ramseys' empire, the assistant DA's he must hire, the parole officers, Sheriff's, Police, Clerks, Counselors, Child Protective Services, Special education programs, Prisons, etc. California in 1992 made 440 Million off this system, the Federal Government cleared 315 Billion in 1996. Yet, 'somehow' our children remain in jeopardy, and fathers of course cannot pay enough...even though they pay taxes....and above and beyond that--pay child support for which they've already paid their taxes for!

So, Ramsey screams fire when there is no fire. He vilifies imaginary bogeymen, whom he invents into criminals to 'verify' this system's existence. Looking into these prisons to where Deadbeat dads reside we can see that we as a society have factually only have put poor person's into jail for being poor. Any investigative news media outlet which would take the time to research who is going into jail for this "special debt" will factually find: only poor fathers in jail. Mr. Ramsey turns around and continues to scream 'fire' 'fire' along with a chorus of special interests feeding off this opprobrious sophistry, even though he gets money, at \$22,000 a year to keep one father imprisoned (which he forces you to pay for). So the inventions continue.

Indeed, our group is dedicated to eradicating this errant monster Mr. Ramsey and other special interests groups represent. Surprisingly, they will inform you in the security of their well-paid jobs, in the comfort of their Thunderbirds and Ford Crown Victoria's, their Pentium class machines sitting on their desk, the highest technologies, salaries, perks and benefits applied to their 'trades' and with a straight face inform you as they shrilly scream 'fire'—that they are not making any money off this system—that the children are starving—that all the women on this system are suffering—and if we "only" paid more (and more and more) well...they'd get it right.

Meanwhile, this system remains directly responsible for children devolving into greater and greater jeopardy. Once a child has been placed into the cancerous failure of the Single Female Headed Household, those children are 75% more likely to become juvenile offenders [Ramsey Clark, *Crime in America* (New York: Pocket Books, 1979)]; they are 83% more likely to suffer child abuse and neglect, [The Family in America, New Research December 1989)]; they are 80% more susceptible to have psychiatric problems, [The London Observer, 14 September, 1980]; they have **zero** chance of getting out of poverty [Betty Friedman, *It Changed my Life*, writings in the Woman's Movement, (New York: Random House 1976) p. 326]; they are the main suppliers of Homeless Youth living on our streets, [Paul G. Shane "Changing patterns Among Homeless and Runaway Youth," *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, 59, April 1987, 208-204]; they are more likely to fail in school and become high school drop-outs [R.F. Doyle, *The Rape of the Male* (St. Paul, Minn: Poor Richards Press, 1976), p. 145]; they supply more than 83% of the predatory Child Molesters in this nation, [Lost Angeles Times, 16 December 1986, "Child Molesters have closer relationship to their mothers than rapists do, a study of sex offenders suggests."]; they are more likely to be

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

members of gangs; be users of gun use, and Drug use; be the propagators of murders; are 71% of the teenage pregnancies; are 85% of our juvenile inmates; and are 75% of teenagers in drug treatment programs, and are responsible for 63% of the teenaged suicides in this nation. [United Census Bureau Reports]. To put this bluntly, Welfare and its attendant engines of failure have been the **GREATEST NATIONAL DISASTER THIS NATION HAS EVER FACED.**

Respectfully,  
Robert Lindsay; Cheney Jr.  
Executive Director  
The Sovereign Patriot Group  
Chico, California

Joe won in the final analysis though, for the very next issue after he ran my guest editorial he again, had a huge news story dealing with the same-old Feminist party line and discourse. Indeed, to this end, he and his newspaper has still never averted from their staunch feminist position. They are willing conspirators which make the Silent Treatise possible.

Yet, I persisted. I was done with a great majority of my research about Fathers Rights, and had developed the Fathers Rights Fact Sheet (hereby known as FRFS), to which I continually FAX'd the media. And although no one took notice of it, or published it, again; in accordance with the established doctrine of the Silent Treatise, a funny thing happened.

As I was writing late one night in Chico, California trying to complete the FRFS, I kept my small radio on next to my desk going to keep me company by providing background noise while I intensely typed at my computer. Well, I had gotten most of the FRFS done, and was just completing it when I heard Shawn Nix from KGO Radio AM speaking about the tragic school murders in which happened in Jonesboro, Arkansas where two young male school children, shot 7 persons; both his teachers and school mates, murdering them.

Well, I wasn't engaged in the conversation per se until I began hearing a consistent theme. People were calling into Shawn, who by the way, was emotionally upset (for good reason) about these tragic and needless school murders. She had callers calling up proselytizing about the reasons why these murders occurred. Shawn herself couldn't understand it and was exasperated. But I did understand what was happening, and so did many of those within the Fathers Rights movement. Nonetheless, the callers suggested everything from Television, to little green men eating away at children's brains, or the ingestion of sugar, or watching the cartoon Batman and Robin. But, it was the incessant "It was the guns." "Had to be the guns," thesis that brought me out from my concentration with my computer. I heard it once, twice...probably fifteen times and then I just stopped short of what I was doing: (a rare occurrence, because I am

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

an animal as I write and can go 13 hours non-stop if I have to), and I picked up the phone and called the station.

Well, surprisingly, and maybe even the hand of God was at work here—I was able to quickly get through, and talk live-on-air to Shawn Nix herself. I told her *exactly* what the problem was, and what most problems are with children in regards to the social pathologies raging across this nation, that these American kids are growing up in *fatherless* homes. Then, I went into the litany of facts and figures you see in my response to the CN&R above along with the FRFS. Shawn was dead silent while she intently listened. I was amazed, and knew I had a moment here, so I brought forth as much as the Fathers Rights fusillade as I could without making too many brains fill-over in the greater San Francisco and Western United States area. She kept me on for over five minutes, maybe ten—an incredible time period for a first time caller—and let me completely say what I needed to.

After finishing the litany, I then reminded her that this young kid, was intensely missing his father, of which he was recently separated from by a divorce. I'll never forget it...when I finally finished, Shawn was very quiet for a few seconds and then asked quizzically: "Do you have anything you can send me?!?"

I was just finishing the Fathers Right Fact Sheet.

"Yes!" I excitedly told her and then she gave me her fax number.

Well, the next day, I dutifully sent it off to her. I was *very* happy that I had finally gotten something out to if not a national, then most certainly regional audience. I also sent Shawn a letter, profusely thanking her for the time she allowed me, and the courage for giving me a small platform to tell these truths. Then, accordingly, I thought nothing about it and went about my daily affairs. This alone was a great victory for Fathers Rights.

Well, shortly thereafter in again circumspect experience, I was typing again at my computer, and popped on my radio to where KGO had been left on from my last encounter with Shawn Nix, who comes on very late at night. Well, I was typing away again, listening to the various shows that were transpiring as the night wore away, and then, poof! Shawn came on again...I instantly recognized her voice.

Well, she began the show by reading a litany of facts and figures in regards to: *fatherlessness*! Within about five short minutes, I realized that I was experiencing a sense of Deja Vu, because I was intimately aware of these same facts and figures: "Oh my God!" I finally realized, "She's reading from the Fathers Rights Fact Sheet!!"

I couldn't believe it! Cite after cite came over the air as she read from each category I had specified within the format of the FRFS itself. She was dedicating her whole show on the issue of Fatherless in America. Finally, the Silent Treatise was getting a voice. It was not longer staying

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

silent. I cannot thank her enough for braking the banished silence of the Silent Treatise.

This small show electrified the Fathers Rights community. They couldn't believe it. Many wanted tapes, and phone numbers—but I had greater stresses in my life, and other things to do—like defend myself from this trained monster of Hillary's grooming.

Well, from this, I started noticing something strange happening. Every once in a while when I would hand out the FRFS I'd get some strange responses: "Can I have a copy of this?!?" some would ask. But more often, I'd hear quotes which would be something along the lines like: "We have to show the pastor this."..."Have you sent the Governor a copy of this?"..."Are these facts true?!?"

It was having impact. A real impact. Just like on the Shawn Nix show. I recognized immediately why the media had established the terms of the Silent Treatise, it was because they were part of the Krell Welfare Machine, a special interests group profiting off of, and from Feminism. They couldn't expose the FRFS because if they did, then; a society would quickly end and turn off their Krell Machine. It would have as a staggering an impact as fixing the war on drugs. Hell, it would have a larger impact!

It was very humorous actually watching people read the FRFS. They would start, and then; an intensity would take over them; as they would just stand motionless and read it. It hit the Black community in LA the hardest. I gave out several copies there. Three months later Black men were standing up in the West Angeles church in East LA in the midst of sermon saying "We're tired of being the bad guys here, we are tired of being pushed out of our own homes!" When we protested the annual California Department of Human Services "Fathers Summit" held at the eminently expensive Hyatt Regency Hotel in Anaheim, California (this event, is nothing more than an institutionalized trade show to destroy Fathers and Families), I remember one Black male social worker reading the FRFS outside where we were protesting: "Can I copy this?" he solemnly asked. Of course I said yes. He left and one-half hour later returned it to me. It's impact runs the gamut from benign, to outrage, but when people finally see the pervasive facts and figures attached with the destruction of Fatherhood and the Family; a chord is touched. They suddenly realize they've been lied to. It strikes an innate human genome within people...somehow...this eminently dry and benign empirical document: *moves* people, and it is scaring the bee-Jesus out of the Feminists who read it. All it is dry facts and figures. Go figure.

---

## THE PURPLE HEART HOUSE

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

**Another** thing is starting to scare the bee-Jesus out of the Feminists and that is the Purple heart house located at 2297 Holly Drive, in the Hollywood Hills in Los Angeles California. Again, in another display of the Silent Treatise, the mass media have been all but silent towards this silent sentinel that looms as a national monument to the Fathers Rights movement. It's a dedication to fathers and their children everywhere; and, the undocumented war raging against them, their homes, and their families, and the children, whose faces are plastered across the walls of that institution. A child's death was the inspiration for it coming into being. Perhaps in that singular light—it is a solemn national treasure.

A very quiet, stoic, unassuming and gracious gentleman owns that house, and is under constant direct attack by the Los Angeles District Attorney, and a host of other government officials who would love to see this icon, and courageous Patriarch disappear from their midst. He is: Mr. Christopher Robin. Through his frustration with the present system, and again, posed with no adequate redress or remedy like most of us Fathers, he has courageously fought back the only way he can to combat this injustice; and that is by putting his home, his good name, and his sacred honor, in direct jeopardy to combat this Krell Welfare Machine. The government, as well as the Feminist, courts and everyone on the other side of this issue, categorically *hate* this house. This house is a daily testimony and oxymoron to this perverse system that pretends that all Fathers are bad, that they are evil, that they are abusers, or that they run away from their children and their responsibilities. This man isn't running away,, and more importantly; his house is a monument to that fact.

Yet, it has yet to be publicly noted. The institution of the Silent Treatise has been applied to this Purple Leviathan that stands in direct opposition to the Feminist enclave which inhabits the Krell Welfare Machine. They want to see this man destroyed. They want this *house* destroyed. It tells too large a story. Too poignant. Much too real for mere mortals.

Several times he has been arrested. Like me, he has been placed into insane asylums so that they could break him that way. Innumerable times, the national mainstream media, which is at ground zero within and around Hollywood, and around close proximity of this house, have all but ignored this national treasure.

It was once owned by several actors, the first, a silent movie actress, and then also and most notably; Clark Gable, the quintessential male icon, who once owned and walked that homes hallowed halls. Little did he know that the components of his essence of which generations of men and women once looked up to, and would tried to emulate, would in these times, become a hated representation of an 'evil' and domineering past. Where once women would swoon and jump at the chance to get such a man as Clark Gable, the components of modern feminist doctrine and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

theory now mandate such raw maleness, is anachronistic, aggressive, even abusive. Most certainly 'too' domineering. Yet, the ghost of Mr. Gable is now channeled in the likeness of Christopher Robin, and to feminists, this is a feared haunting, *totally unacceptable* in modern culture.

Christopher has had hundreds of pictures of Fathers, children, and Families neatly painted upon the walls of his house, each framed within a single painted purple heart on the outside walls that encircle his home. There are short stories written by the Fathers and children themselves who are suffering through this silent war right underneath their pictures. He has other hearts painted all over the house, each one representing one day that he hasn't seen his child. The last count: was over 900...and sadly, still climbing. I haven't seen my son in over eight years, and like Robin's son, he too is on the wall at the Purple Heart house. Sadly, a growing nation of fathers shares our predicament.

In an era where local DA's willfully propagate the fantasy that such fathers are 'abandoning' their own children—Christophers' house quietly and immutably; proves different. Most men and children that are upon the walls of this hallowed house, are those Fathers so-alienated **forcibly**, and irrevocably by an errant, "proactive" government, which is the embodiment of the Krell Welfare Machine, and which *intentionally* destroys fathers and families to pay for its maintenance and eternal upkeep. Every Father which has been upon these walls was **forcibly** removed from the Fathers life by the State. The State, in its processing of the Krell Welfare dream, instantly destroys such fathers, and as such, an ever-growing parade of children and fathers grows upon the walls of this house. Each family has been directly annihilated by Ms. Clinton's Krell Welfare Machine, in order to establish this village.

This exculpatory evidence is deservedly hated by the DA's and Government and Feminists alike; like Hillary herself, because it is visual, and tangible proof which has grown exponentially and internationally—which proves that Fathers do not leave their children—that rather, the real truth is that we are forced out. This palpable, substantive body of evidence cannot factually coexist with the government's and feminists propaganda that all fathers are evil, "Deadbeats", abusers, and abandoner's. This house is a direct affront to the 'logic' and fraud of the feminist sophistry which has been forcibly imprinted upon the American experience—and by that, and because of that, this house *cannot* exist...not under the mythology of the current Feminist background, or government supported doctrines, facts, and figures which help justify and feed the Krell Welfare Machine of war which they need to obtain their profits.

Like the Silent Treatise, something comes over people who visit this place. As I stayed there, I saw a steady stream of cars and people show up



## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

and mutely stare at the house and the hundreds of Hearts which contain individual testimonies of children and Fathers and Families whom have been forcibly torn apart by Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine. Like Lincoln's paradox between Liberty and Slavery unable to coexist,; this house cannot coexist under the logic of the present Feminist based system. It just can't be.

Like the FRFS, I have watched these visitors who come to the Purple Heart house stare very intently and quietly as they read each story within each purple heart. They look mutely at the pictures—then move on to the next one, and next, and the next. They don't end. The children's pictures, are a vindication to all our persecutions and these stories intrinsically touch people. People weep. Most however, walk the psychological gauntlet of these tragedies, and then when finished....silently they move back into their cars and drive away. There is no sense of victory as they return to their cars. The only comparison to the impact of this house would be the Vietnam Wall in Washington D.C. Yet, another silent monument towards this counties Elite regime's cataclysmic failures. Yet another indication that this is in fact, war. This is the same breed of failure that haunts the Purple Heart House, and those whom inhabit the great and mighty Krell Welfare Machine, those like Hillary, *should* be ashamed of what they have done, the program's they have pursued, the needless waste, war, and tragedy that this war has waged upon our *own people...to enslave them for profit...*

This is the real reason Hillary and the Feminist hate this house. It is because they *should* and are *supposed to* be ashamed of what they have done, but they aren't...and this house makes others ashamed of them, and they hate Christopher for this fact. Fathers are supposed to 'dutifully' exile themselves into slavery, they are supposed to willingly fall on their sword—those that make all this an ugly fuss, must be attacked and persecuted further; which—they have most certainly done.

This is why the Purple Hearts house has undergone the Silent Treatise, for like that document—it is too truthful. It tells too much.

You will never see this House on Oprah, or 20/20, or even 60 Minutes. They know it's there, because we've *told them...*and thereby you see the real underpinnings of the Silent Treatise, and why its truths, its presentment, its evidence, will never be told to an awaiting American public. The Purple Heart House suffers under this doctrine of the Silent Treatise. It's just too big a story and if it every got out to the mainstream public—it would cause revolution.

---

### THE SEEDS OF DESTRUCTION

**That** same summer, I also stayed with Mr. Le Roy Marshall, a Black community leader of Inglewood, California. He has a very interesting

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

family history, coming not from a slave background, but rather coming from a Dutch West Indies Freeborn heritage. His family were Captains, Sailors and Teachers, and you can see a proud noble distinction in his countenance from this highly educated gentleman. He is an athlete as well as holding two college degrees, and he owns his own janitor-maintenance business...

Yet, the Krell Welfare Machine has annihilated his life also, placing him into extreme financial jeopardy. He is a direct casualty of the institution of the Silent Treatise as, unfortunately, his children are too. His ex-wife however, is doing excellent. She has, thanks to Welfare and Educational Grants provided by the Krell Welfare Machine, just about obtained her doctorates degree, all the while the Los Angeles District Attorney is waging war and financially destroying Le Roy's life unmercifully to fund her pursuits of pleasure and advancement. She handed the Krell Welfare Machine her dream, and it instantly goes to kill Le Roy.

This story is a shocking one, and really rises above the occasion of most fathers. Unlike many unions in South Los Angeles, Le Roy and his wife were married. Soon, they had twins—to which they quickly divorced. What is odd about this and what many Fathers can relate to such a predictable outcome, Le Roy's children were quickly stolen from him, against his consent, and thereby—the state granted his ex-wife anything she needed in which for her to supercede her goals, all at the expense of his life, and his future.

As many men understand his predicament, and in similar fashion he hasn't seen his children going on three years now. The state belligerently upholds his ex-wife's Super-Rights at his expense, yet; this again, is all predictable, his destruction has been planned and hasn't much meaning within the larger context here. The real story to this is deeper.

Le Roy, with all his education, abilities and possibilities lives his life as his father did—as a Janitor. He is proud of the fact that he is a Janitor, and in fact, calls himself a Master Janitor, which I can personally attest he is, having worked with him for the time I was there. But he is stuck in the stasis of the feminist probability of which future generations will also have to deal with: "You will not do as well as your Parents." He is a man of consummate talents, and honor, following in his fathers footsteps because he has been effectively killed by the Krell Welfare Machine, as most fathers are destroyed in that same ongoing war. He cannot realize his dreams, or more importantly; the promise of the "the content of his character" because he is being intentionally destroyed by the government—and feminism—who is intentionally enslaving him and stealing his wealth, which in the final analysis, his children will see nothing of. They are doomed already to have none of his legacy. I doubt if they will ever meet this man, which is the real tragedy...

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

His story, however, begins before the pregnancy...

This story is that when his wife became pregnant, which was a surprise to him, they were having troubles, and as most Black women are; she was belligerent to her own husband and was having an affair behind his back. Well, again; in the Black community, unfortunately this too, is predictable, only because this is where the Krell Machine waged it war first, and where it still resolutely remains, generation after generation. However, after he found out she was pregnant, and regardless of this fact, he was a stand-up guy and stood by his children. He was a consummate father...and still is.

When difficulties arose, she threw the affair in his face—and then left him. But this wasn't the real story. The 'real' story and the story which aligns itself deep within the tragedy of the Black community is that this woman was taking fertility drugs in which intentionally become, *not only pregnant, but pregnant with twins—or more.*

Well, she had her twins, left her husband, she then accessed Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine and obtained its instant gratification and desires; having now obtained free life, and free funding for her education. All through the miracle of modern drugs.

These fertility drugs have hit not only the Black community hard and deep, but also many other poor communities where government intentionally allows them to proliferate, *in direct violation of their own laws.* Women use these drugs arrogantly in which to access as much wealth as the Krell Welfare Machine will afford them. Government requirements for access for these drugs mandate that the husband be notified, fully informed, and consent to the use of these drugs. *Instead,* such as in the instance of Mr. Marshall, these women are going to their local feminist Welfare chapters *behind the backs of their husbands,* and these Feminist Welfare enclaves are unlawfully and fraudulently handing these fertility drugs *without any proper consent or enumerated authority* to any and all women whom merely ask for these drugs—without their husband's or partner's knowledge. This of course is conspiracy in crime, a fraud against many Black Fathers and many more poor people—as well as the general populace who turns out to have to fund this massive insanity.

These people are sprinkling fertility drugs upon societies which are generationally captured into the Welfare state, and they are distributing them as if they were M+M's candy. Their actions are not only short sighted, but patently illegal. They are in fact adding gasoline to the fire. They are in fact seeding the future crops of our own destruction, and they are doing this *intentionally.* This has not only further enslaved the Black populace, but it has also burdened society and the children who are raised within the components of this fraud.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Of course Mr. Marshall is embittered by this, for it has doubled not only his financial burden, but also his emotional wishes to see his own children. He not only suffers one death by one of his children's removal like the rest of us fathers, but he suffers two emotional deaths...as there is an extra child missing from his arms, and his protections. And this fact is probably the most tragic fact about this whole affair.

What is amazing about this remarkable man is that he is not even sure these children are his, as his ex admitted her extra-marital affair (thereby asserting her right to control her own reproductively—which everyone **but her**—has taken responsibility for, and paid for in triplicate). But he is ready and willing to assume his role as father, except he now is involved in the full conflagration of the Krell Welfare Machine which is intent upon destroying him. Sadly, many black men are in this predicament; never knowing that their wife or girlfriend's pregnancy was artificially and intentionally induced by drugs, so that they could enter and obtain anything they want, all by the miracle of Ms. Clinton's Krell Welfare Machine. Le Roy's performance on this issue has been remarkable, given in the light of our 'normal' assumptions within the Feminist culture, that Black men are irresponsible, that they get these 'noble' Black females pregnant, and then; like the animal breed they are, these rude men 'just leave' and run away from their responsibilities. What I had seen from Le Roy, and other Black men within that community—such assumptions are an egregious lie.

This system of giving out fertility drugs within a Welfare population is endemic and systematic of a system that is *intentionally* destroying fathers, all for a higher purpose. No man can protect himself from this, because of the Doctrine of the Silent Treatise. The media complicit in these treason's with government have turned deaf ear upon this crisis, and has become deaf-dumb-and-blind over this issue, which—could start wars within these populations if they ever found out what was really going on, and how they were really being used by a system intentionally keeping and forcing them into the Welfare State. Forcibly keeping them into bondage. But keeping this dirty and criminal secret also means that government doesn't have to stop this destruction nor do they have to criminalize those responsible for these criminal actions which have destroyed men nationwide. So the Silent Treatise persists...and these perversions continue, undaunted.

## JEWELS OF DESTRUCTION

---

**In the summer** of 1998 I met yet another remarkable man in Los Angeles at Le Roy Marshall's home where we had a meeting in regards to what to do about government persecution, its illegalities against Fathers

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

and Fatherhood, and other wide-range of issues which were effecting the Fathers Rights movement. His name was Marvin Bryer.

Now Marvin and I did not hit it off when we first met, even today; I think he is guarded around me due to the fact that I advocate full patriarchy. He of course, unfortunately, is the Father of a daughter who was married and now divorced in which his Son-in-Law contended for custody of his daughters child, so; he has no use for hearing about Patriarchy. Yet even in his circumstances Patriarchy would work, yet; he doesn't want to hear this, nor think abstractly about the problem and see the 'big' picture, nor does he consider the future of this problem and what it will bring upon future generations. He is having a hard enough time in the present, dealing with his own immediate problems. Nonetheless, this man has done great work for the movement—and he has uncovered some ugly truths about this system. From his dogged determination, he has exposed the putrid underbelly of what all Fathers and Families are coming up against within these "Family Court" system.

He has been disqualifying corrupt judges for about eight years now, and has a huge file of corruption perpetrated by the judges. Simply put—they are raking in huge amounts of money through "Child Support" and "Family Services" divisions of the court, and these monies are going into black budes which are simply budgets to pay off corruption's, much of which the judges themselves are raking in moneys for. This of course has created great controversy anywhere where he has shown this information. I have seen it, and spoke to him in regards to this issue, and simply put: he's got them dead-to-right. Marvin helped Christopher Robin of the Purple Heart house bring a Notice of disqualification of Judge Ronald R. Schoenberg which was filed in the Municipal Court of California in Los Angeles county on December 1<sup>st</sup> 1998, Case number BD121704. In this document, Christopher charged that the "Judge" Ronald Schoenberg has a Bias, Prejudice, and a Financial Conflict of Interest and cannot judge fairly.

Due to the way the courts are constructed, NO JUDGE CAN BE UN-BIASED! Corruption notwithstanding, and Marvin's work notwithstanding. Clearly, under Government code \$77000, the courts are designed to take in money by prosecuting **any** (mostly innocent) people who enter their courtrooms, then; they get to keep a certain percentage of the monies they confiscate! There is a big pie split between all the associated parties. Beyond *this*, what Marvin has uncovered, clearly shows that the Judges and the DA's and all these people working within this corrupt system have to categorically be facing treason charges, for the war they perpetrated against Fathers, parents, and society just to steal money from them in a "different way" through the technology of the law—is a grievous offense.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

There are of course, two maxims of law that are at work here. The first says that a Judge cannot rule in a case in his own interest. The second simply states that Judges who corrupt their office corrupt the society as well. And when a society no longer has faith in its judiciary, then; the society doesn't have faith in either Judges or government. For once we have lost one branch of American government, we instantly lose them all. We have for all intents and purposes lost our Judiciary...it doesn't work anymore. It is a corrupt institution...destroying Fathers and families...again...for profit. They have left men without any rights whatsoever, and these courts are using them to advance their own corruption's, along with the government and the Feminists; all have become the dogs of war.

"The first loss which the rightless suffered was the loss of their homes, and this meant the loss of the entire social texture into which they were born and in which they established for themselves a distinct place in the world. This calamity if far from unprecedented; in the long memory of history, forced migrations of individuals or whole groups of people for political or economic reasons look like everyday occurrences. [*The Origins of Totalitarianism*, by Hannah Arendt, @1951, 1958; Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc. New York; Library of Cong. Cat. Card No.: 66-22273; p. 293.]

The destruction of the American male has become an everyday occurrence. As we noted earlier, our health, chances for good jobs, and the pressures we have been placed against Fathers **all due to money, and government and special interests corruption**, has most certainly left us with a nation of men that are casualties. Casualties of war to be more specific. What the blacks suffered in the antebellum south, is now the plight of every man who comes in contact with this system. This has created such a war and such sadness in a time of peace, that we must start talking in future terms as to what price these criminals must pay to account for their high crimes and treason's.

In Christopher's legal Notice, he documents these financial corruption's in his attached exhibits A through K (fifteen in total, as he has several C exhibits, ranging from C, C1 down to C4). In his excellently prepared work, he documents 'phantom' corporations which have addresses at the court, which is listed at 210 W. Temple St., 18<sup>th</sup> Floor, which is LA District Attorney Gil Garcetti's office. Christopher notes the disjuncture of the logic of our present day court systems, he writes "Therefore, I am apparently [being] prosecuted by a corporation." [page 8] Which, again; brings up the gold-fringe flag issue which are flying in these 'undefined' courts. What courts are these anyways?!? Nobody knows for sure.

Marvin has done his homework all too well. He documents how checks are being written on the front of the Checks to the "Family Court

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Services Special Fund," yet on the back, they are being deposited in the "Judges Miscellaneous Expense Fund." Candidly, what we have here is a simple money laundering scheme. The check in question that I am describing has the Los Angeles County Bar Association heading in the upper left hand corner of the check. The check's number is 14753 dated August 2, 1991 for \$3,848.

This again points to an earlier discussion in this book: which is proof that our third branch of government, cannot be 'unbiased' when it is so closely controlled by the ABA, (or anyone else for that matter). This corruption within the Courts has been shocking to many people whom have learned of its offense, yet; it suffers the doctrine of the Silent Treatise. You will never see this corruption within the mainstream media, you will never see judges removed, you will never see the DA's or the A.B.A. held accountable. The Silent Treatise will again prevail.

### **HOMES OF DESTRUCTION**

---

This war against the American Father has proliferated an ever increasing subset of artificial homes run by various factions within the state called: **Foster Homes**. These Foster Homes are like Mentoring and the creation of the Welfare State, a surrogate 'replacement' for the children's natural born father. They are a sad replacement for the real thing. I have seen children go into these establishments, all for the 'best of purposes,' "The Best Interests of the Child" which usually is no more than a social worker saying that the children are 'abused.' In one case, I saw a family torn apart on a blatant, incontrovertible lie, and placed in these establishments. Strangely, the children were materially better off, now being paid and having more money, more food, per se—but when they saw their mother outside the court, they would all break down, cry, and want to return home with her. Something innate that even the State couldn't buy off, and couldn't replace was at work here.

I had spoken to one woman who worked in one of these Foster Homes. She was a social worker, who along with other social workers, took care of a group of teenagers within one home. She related to me a very interesting story, about how the children, most of them in their teens, were out of control, how there was really no structure or form to this environment, and that the workers trying to maintain these kids, had more than they could handle. She said it was like trying to manage a hurricane. It seemed that the Foster Home ran at a level just below pandemonium. She said that one day, a strange thing happened. For some reason, like a lull within the eye of the storm, all the children were in the living room suddenly quiet, and around the house, everything was very, very quiet. This gave the Social Workers a chance to gain a few moments of informal composure and rest in the kitchen by themselves where they began

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

randomly speaking and bantering amongst themselves. They spoke about miscellaneous items, of successes of failures...of sports, their families and whatnot, and then; one of them queried them all a question, in which one person posed to them all: "If this was your money, and you had to use it to take care of these kids, with the result you see in them, and you knew what they were turning out to be like, would you spend your own money to run a Foster Home like this?" One by one each one of the Social Workers running the home answered the question to a single consensus, and that answer came back from each and every person in that kitchen. To a person every one of them said: "No."

There is yet another great corruption within the Krell Welfare Machine, in which Hillary supplicates the rest of society to happily throw their children into this perverse system, to have us give as much as we can to it, and that is exemplified within the testimony I just related here about these social workers. Here you see the core of Hillary's Village Model, the result of the anarchy of "Freedom" and a "Women's Right to Control Her Own Body and Sexuality." Children are either dumped, or harvested by the courts or the Child Protective Services or other Government Family infrastructures which get kids into these inferior Foster Home collectives. No one brings their children here willingly, they represent Hillary's Village plague which like a cancer is showing more and more virulence, as it slowly kills the body. Hillary's Village, and its ability to disenfranchise *both parents*, collapses any inner mechanism in which the home and family can naturally impress upon their own children in which, in that natural state—keeps them out of such institutions.

These Foster Homes get children in them and from that, they get huge monies for each child within these homes. These grants are good for about two years, then, it doesn't matter if the child is doing good or bad, all these homes suddenly 'move' all these children around to other Foster Homes who again, get huge initial sums to take them in, and then monthly per-diem rates in order to sustain them. It's big business, and it is turning out a terrible product.

More children are raped, killed and murdered within these Foster Homes than in any type of environment. The war against Fathers, still rages on upon these children who have no protectorate, other than "the State" under its doctrine of *Parens Patriae*. This is not a suitable parent, by any extent of the imagination. Again, a real tragedy here is that the Silent Treaties is keeping such facts and figures way out from the public purview. The total numbers of these deaths, rapes and murders—aren't even kept track of!! They aren't even in the public domain...because the state is the real criminal here...because *its* the parent now, and it doesn't want these ugly truths widely distributed throughout the public. So these beatings, deaths, murders, rapes and other heinous crimes go on unabated.



## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Pandemonium reigns supreme within the walls within the homes, and the people themselves running them wouldn't expend their own time or money on them—most are there because they 'need a job'—yet these Foster homes have a life of their own, and they have become another silent reality within the doctrine of the Silent Treatise, that the American public will never know about or become ever informed of.

### MORALITY OF DESTRUCTION

---

I bring this last point out with great difficulty. I bring it forwards for your purview without any proof, and this is hard as I am trying to make this book as empirical as possible. But I bring it out in the spirit of true Fatherhood, because that is what I am, and I have accrued this information, and find it palpable enough to put it into words.

When I was in prison, I was isolated most of the time in solitary confinement because I refused to consent or book into the jail, however; on my first incarceration, I was allowed to go with the general populace and live a more normal life after my first hunger strike after 63 days. Since I was placed into solitary confinement twenty three hours a day, seven days a week, with one hour a day (maybe) outside. Normally, I got out anywhere from two to five times a week on average. It was quite hard on me. Later, after my 'deal' with Sheriff Grey and my friends who literally begged me to stop the strike, I was placed into the general population. There, I met many individuals, and what was most unnerving was seeing the truly 'bad' guys get out in either 2 weeks or 2 months, while I languished in prison for no crime. But again, it is planned this way, because of the fact that I make no money for this system. Letting a truly 'bad' criminal out, creates more crime, therefore more money for the system. In fact, I actually saw two or three come in, get out, then come back in again! If the predicament were different, it would be humorous. Many of these people are institutionalized, and will be forever within our prison's revolving door.

Yet, strangely, there are those men, sadly, an ever growing number of them, who shouldn't be there in the first place. Like I noted earlier in my conversations with Sheriff Mick Grey on this subject, the innocent numbers in these establishment's are on the order of 15 percent. One egregious case I ran into was from a kid about 20 years old who was thrown into jail for having his mothers prescription in his glove-box! He didn't even know she had put it there! [It was for Naprosin or some other aspirin like substitute]. Yet, here he was in prison. There were others as just as outrageous. One Cuban gentleman, older, and very gentle, (he was a migrant worker) was there because 'probation' came to his house and found 'beer' in his refrigerator. Beer. Can's, unopened in his own refrigerator violated his probation! Many poor and rural counties pull this inane pro-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

gram because they need money—so they go out and harvest people (all of them dead poor) to support it. We know of cases where ‘criminal’s’ on parole have been revoked back into prison because the probation officer found a butcher knife in the kitchen (dangerous weapon) or a Fathers sons little league bat in the backseat of his car (another dangerous weapon) and even BB guns will revoke parole and send people back to prison for years...sometimes longer. But this is how they make money.

I relate this not because of its tragedy, but because I took notes when I was there, kept a legal diary of every moment that happened there, and from that—I uncovered something very strange, and eminently disturbing.

Some nights you can’t sleep in prison, and in these large open barracks, where men sleep in the open with no cover, sometimes a group of two or more men will quietly play cards or just talk through the night. It was upon one night when I spoke to one gentleman and he started telling me about how a local DA was taking children from the Foster Home system, then; using them in pornography. This person told me of a empty train car, where they would bring these children, and then photograph them in sexual acts and then sell the pictures.

These children, then would be moved down south to Sacramento, Modesto, down to LA, then they would to the Las Vegas, come up to Carson, and then come back over to the West Coast and the whole thing would start over again. The gentleman that told me this was very sincere. I could tell that at least *he* believed what he was telling me. And in the quiet hush of a closed prison quarters, with many men sleeping in the background, his story was very eerie. Being an empiricist, I didn’t doubt it nor did I give it credence, I know in the tapestry of life, stranger things are apt to occur to the human condition, yet; I discounted it. It was so against everything I had been taught and felt right about, and; in the final analysis; I had heard rumors about things like this happening in Butte county, and having a DA involved, well...although this was a pervasive rumor...it just seemed too much. (Of course this is one reason why the Silent Treatise is established throughout this society—because its main purpose is to prevent the populace from gaining true knowledge.)

Above and beyond that, again; with the most sincere conviction I have ever witnessed in a man, this man continued to tell of Satanic rituals where these kids were even sacrificed. Murdered! I can in all earnestness, tell you that this gentleman, sitting in the quiet magnitude of a prison barracks, speaking in a quiet hushed whisper in the middle of the night as everyone else slept was an unforgettable night. I don’t think I said three words the whole time he told me of these things.

I thought nothing about this...I don’t even think I put it in my journals, I may have. I just know that it was a story that struck me to silence.

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Well, as I stated earlier in this book, I was let out on Sheriff's Parole, and was out for about 3 months when with five days left on my parole, while I lay deathly sick in bed (it was to be the sickest year of my life, most likely due to my hunger-strikes) the Butte County Sheriff came and re-arrested me again at home for "not obeying all laws." As in my first "arrest" there was no warrant, no probable cause—nothing. They just came and seized me when I opened the door and hauled me away. This time I underwent 72 days with no food, only water. I almost died from the whole experience. After I got out, again; I got sick almost weekly. It was very bad.

Nonetheless, I was in solitary confinement this second time, for again, I did not book, would not wear prison clothes—I wouldn't do a thing. With no redress—there is nothing left that you can fight with except your body, so I fought against them with my own body, and spat at them in defiance.

Well, and odd thing happened. In moving around in solitary confinement, which is nothing more than two tiers of cells, and upper row and a bottom row, one on top of the other...about 20 cells in all. Well, as a procedure, the Prison Guards keep you in a cell for about 2 to 3 weeks then they move you. I again, had seen a lot of other 'real' prisoners come and go—while I remained. But then, on one of these exchanges I got a new neighbor, a prisoner I had never seen before. After about a month together he spoke with me and again, late one night he told me a story...and the story was about children, in Foster Homes...and how a DA was using these children for Pornography...and how they were being moved from Sacramento...to Fresno...to Modesto...LA...Las Vegas...that Satanism was involved...Train box car...It was the same exact story I heard before! I couldn't believe it.

Now, what does one make of this? I don't know. I do know that the Silent Treatise is strong enough and pervasive enough that indeed, this story *could* factually be true. It could be occurring exactly as these gentlemen say it is, and if it is, its inclusion of Foster Homes is not that far out of the realm of possibility, given their present state of affairs.

I am just certain that the doctrine of the Silent Treatise has to be broken...it must be destroyed...just like Foster Homes must be destroyed, Mentoring, and Welfare itself. Our mission as fathers has to mandate that we seize back our homes, and never allow government back into that sacred institution again (as American law dictates). Simply put, the State and all the opportunistic special interest groups so solidly attached to that institution—have lost the right to rule within its domain.

Factually, under our law system, and our system of government, they *never* had the right in the first place.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

As far as these stories—I do not have the time nor resources to weed them out. I can only relate to you what I factually heard, and I can only state that I believe that the people which told these stories to me believe them, and if they are not totally true, then; they must be at least somewhat true. In either case, something big has to be done, immediately, at least to openly disprove them.

### GENIUS

---

Let's speak of genius here. What is all this destruction about anyway's? Let us pretend just for a second, that Ms. Clinton and all the feminist elite and courts are correct in their assumptions that 'all men are bad.' That we have willfully shirked our responsibilities, and that we have done all the evil things imaginable that we are charged with.

With the incomprehensible destruction that the courts and this present feminist system levels upon men—what are the American people getting in return?

Are they getting more protection from our courts?

Well, no—for the problem increases exponentially for both the 'supposed' criminals (the Fathers) and the children, whom are devastated by all this destruction. Each year the supposed 'Failure to Provide Support' and other associated "Feminist" Family Court crimes keep rising each year. The Children, keep on getting into more and more jeopardy, and each year; they keep on getting deeper into poverty and other "Feminist" social ills.

So one has to wonder—what is the genius behind all this if the present Feminist Family Court system keeps on marketing a growing problem that never ends? They have made Fatherhood the greatest crime anyone can commit in human history—yet each year they plead with the populace that the 'crime' and the 'problem' keeps on getting worse and that the taxpayers have to fund more and more monies—'just to get it right.' The myth is, that if the American taxpayer, just pay a little more—well, then we could 'possibly' get it right.

By in large, many Great Society programs did not fail. We just did not put enough into them, for long enough, or with enough oversight to assure targeting, careful implementation and thus success. [*Families in Peril, An Agenda for Social Change*, by Marian Wright Edelman, ©1987; Harvard University Press, Cambridge Massachusetts, ISBN 0-674-29228-6, p. 79.].

Mind you, this is a Harvard University professor writing this in the mid-nineteen-eighties informing us all, as an "expert" that we need to spend more money. Again, if this person were interviewed today—they would be making the same exact plea, for more money, time, programs and expertise to 'solve' this ongoing problem. Indeed, if given another

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

chance to add input to this crisis, this person would demand even more programs, which of course would wind up criminalizing more Fathers even more, and removing more authority from the parents within the home and creating another 'subset' of "professional" experts whom would happily fund careers trying to solve this problem for another one, two or three decades.

But we again must ask the question: where is the genius here? What is being solved and to what ends?

Essentially, we have a national crisis which has been groomed into management status by successive generations of elite whom only complain the problem grows worse each year, and which need more funding and programs. Meanwhile, the penalties and attacks levied against Fathers increase to what are now frightening proportions. The terms "Draconian" and "Inquisition" are but meek understatement's when applied to these out-of-control institutions destroying the Father for profit. But we must ask, to what ends?

When the full breadth and weight of the government's finally come down against the Father, and he is economically destroyed and civilly murdered: what is society left with? In the end, society has an unmarketable individual, "with a record" under-employable (which was in most likelihood his only crime in the first place...that he was poor), who again, is eternally in debt because of this "special obligation" he eternally owes to the State and which accrues at daily interest against him while he is warehoused in prison for profit for the elite classes. When he is finally destroyed, and unmarketable, as a mere shell of a man and an economic entity: what then?

Clearly, you have a civilly murdered person who at best is going to have no savings, no retirement, really nothing to look forwards to. Again; society is going to be burdened with that individual either turning to crime in which to compete economically, or they are going to have to assume another set of needless public subsidies and Welfare burdens against that male individual as his health fails, as he grows old without retirement, as he has been intentionally ruined by a predatory monster of the feminist making. Somewhere down the line, society is *again* going to have to assume the economic subsidy of these destroyed men, who no longer can function due to these 'pretended' crimes that Family Court has intentionally invented them into.

The true destruction of these courts have not fully hit our society yet—and again; as more and more men's health fails as a direct correlation due to the needless war perpetrated against them by this system, again; society is going to be hit with phenomenal costs to subsidy these problems—*just in Medical care alone!* These realities aren't even considering the upcoming Political and Legal implications which society is go-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ing to have to answer to and defend, which are just starting to exponentially hit the courts as more and more Fathers begin to challenge this unlawful feminist perversion sponsored in "the name of society." To date, there have been at least three substantial Federal Court challenges to the feminist Family court system, and even though most of these have been dismissed or just haven't been adjudicated yet; they will grow exponentially each year, as more and more Fathers challenge this injustice...

Sadly, a bill is coming due to repay this needless Anti-American injustice in which the American society has little resources to repay. Society, in the name of feminism, has been sold a bill of goods in which it will *never* be able to repay to all the injustice and criminality which has been intentionally perpetrated against Fathers, and their children; whom most likely—once they become adults and catalogue this same destruction—will be bringing their own suits against the American society, for implementing acts of war against their homes and Fathers who were driven out, and thereby; have denied them an American Legacy in which many of them, will correctly assess will have been criminally implemented and squandered by this perverse system.

The genius of this system was to free women from a "problem with no name" and instead, has opened a cavalcade of perversions which are now beginning to cascade into an unanswerable backlash, which will have to be addressed in both the present and the future. Trust me, presently; these issues have been only met with the Silent Treatise: dead silence...but that is not sustainable. As Earl Wellwood, (a father with a broken back criminally and incessantly persecuted by this out-of-control system) told me, "I'm going to live maybe twenty, forty, perhaps sixty more years of life. All I'm going to do is spend it going after these bastards which have destroyed my life. This is all I've dedicated myself to, and I know there are more men like me. I'm *never* going to let this go."

Indeed. Society has a real problem it hasn't dealt with yet, but which will become incomprehensible to them, in the upcoming, five, to ten or twenty upcoming years. Mind you, this is all happening under the auspices of a Judiciary that pretends:

"[t]he principal function of procedural rules should be to serve as useful guides to help, not hinder, persons who have a legal right to bring their problems before the courts." 346 U.S. 946 (1954) ...to honor the goal of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure: "to secure the just, speedy and inexpensive determination of every action." Rule 1, Fed.R.Civ.P. [*Problems, Cases and Materials in Professional Responsibility*, by Robert H. Aronson, American Casebook Series, © 1985, West Publishing Co., 50 West Kellogg Boulevard, P.O. Box 64526, St. Paul, Minn., 55164-0526; p. 539.]

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Tell this to Mr. Wellwood who was forced into silence by one "Commissioner" Gunn of Family Court in Oroville, California—whom did not even let him speak in his own defense in court—even though Mr. Wellwood was *In Propria Persona* (representing himself)!!!! In the light of their own requirements written above—how can a man defend himself acting as his own lawyer, when the "Judge" (the "Commissioner" in this case) won't allow him to speak at all? Again—many of the crimes being committed against Fathers by these criminal court systems, cannot even be attempted. There is no answer to these unlawful injustices—because there is no redress to a system that was designed from the outset only to destroy men.

So in the final analysis, we have gestated and allowed a feminist system to use incomprehensible powers of the State, to civilly murder Fathers, debilitating their lives beyond repair, to where they cannot even take care of themselves because of the destruction the DA's level upon them. Society will only wind up having to support these men in other ways in the future, either by furthering the national prison empire, or other social supports and subsidies in which to deal with these men whom become a shell; totally unfit for any aspect of the American society. This must be remembered in the light of the Jewish experience of WWII, where at least *they* retained a right to flee to foreign countries in which to save themselves. Even in this humanitarian view; this insane feminist profligatery fully intends to deny fathers even that simple human right, to flee from injustice. Thereby, the final tally and impacts of this cancerous system, have yet to be realized...but one thing is for certain...the conclusion of this accounting can only lead to disaster.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**



---

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

---

*"If by the mere force of numbers a majority should deprive a minority of any clearly written constitutional right, it might, in a moral point of view, justify revolution—certainly would if such a right were a vital one."*

-- Abraham Lincoln [*First Inaugural Address*, March 4, 1861.]

---

### THE HIVE

---

THE BOSTON GLOBE

March 17, 1998

Page A01

YOUNGSTOWN, Ohio-- Three decades after the dawn of feminism forever changed the American workplace, home and mores, the second wave of the gender revolution is building.

This time it's men, fighting back against the broad brush of a woman's movement they complain too often paints all men as behaving badly, all dads as deadbeats, one that has made male a four-letter word. While sexual harassment claims and sniping between the sexes escalate, so do confusion and exasperation. As one Internet site promoting men's rights moans, "Can't we all just get along? Can't we all just get a date?"

The Million Man March and Promise Keepers mobbing the Mall in Washington were merely the most public recent displays of the new male agitation. Less visibly, it is in commissions of the status of men in several states, in the emerging power of the divorced fathers' movement after years on the fringes, and in 2 million stay-at-home dads networking to face down the suspicious stares of mothers on playgrounds.

What some are calling "masculinism" is also on scores of Web sites like "Backlash.com," tracking anti-male sexism. And it is here in this faded Midwestern factory town, where in March, young academics in stiff tweed jackets nodded intently as scholars at a conference of the American's Men's Studies Association presented papers on the wounds of boyhood...

Le Roy Marshall was at the million man march. He was there and told me that it put Washington DC into total gridlock. He described how men, out of the Blue were just getting up on soapboxes and begin to talk to the crowds, and while the main speakers were proselytizing on the Mall, other smaller sages were speaking to various groups of men everywhere. These small epiphanies occurred on street corners, in restaurants, all across D.C. It wasn't anarchy, it wasn't pandemonium—it was just the raw, uncontrolled power of men who came to D.C. to address, real and palpable grievances in which they had no redress or protections from. But they were not a cohesive force, not like the Feminist movement, and they

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

had no main voice. But they were scaring many in Congress and in the Presidency...and many more around the nation...because, they might *ask* for something and actually get it...

Le Roy is both inspired by the Million Man March and unnerved. "We could have had *anything*," he said with a conviction that startled me. "Anything!" he continues. "If we had it together, " he lays back remembering, "the boys in Washington were ready! I mean, they were shaking in their boots. They would have given us anything, if only we had asked."

But we didn't ask. And that is the key here. Men are men, we are individualists, not collectivists, and even when you get a million of them together, they still all feel they can handle it themselves. Men feel and want this. And thereby, it is reasonable to understand why we didn't want anything, because; we in fact *can* handle everything by ourselves, and that is the key. Leave us alone!

Presently, upon the continued rise of the Fathers Rights movement, there are underhand deals being made to control this massive grassroots movement, which I always predicted would be the greatest social backlash in mankind (for good reason). Seven years ago when I adumbrated this, all the Feminist, like Trish Wilson, Ashera, Liz and others—laughed at me. Now, they aren't laughing anymore; they are with very dry mouths, *monitoring me*. I was once engaged in a conversation on the internet, after I got out of prison with one of these feminists, and I said something (I can't even remember what the discussion was about)—on the internet to which the feminist and I was arguing with—and she immediately brought out a Newsgroup post that I had presented 3 to 4 years earlier! This absolutely floored me, and; made me smile afterwards for I knew, in she just demonstrating me this, that they had to be monitoring every word I had said for quite sometime. The hive had a secret police that were monitoring me! I mean I defy anyone to talk to a someone randomly and then have them immediately regurgitate something you had written years earlier on some inane newsgroup! I mean, to give the reader some sense of magnitude of this capability of this, there are tens of thousands of Newsgroups, and in these newsgroups, just one subject, like families or fatherhood, or feminism, there are dozens of subgroups. So, *by chance*, mind you; this woman would have to be at the same place on approximately the same time period, years earlier (within days, as the posts only stay sometimes hours, sometimes days...it depends upon the traffic), and then; she would have to have the technology to keep such an off-hand and obtuse cite by me for up to I think it was about 2 to 3 years prior I had made the remark...and she would have to then keep it, and then—she would have to randomly meet me again; and then instantly retrieve this material. (She retrieved it in less than a minute!)

Could happen.

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

But in all probability, the Feminist Hive have probably got a secret police, and is monitoring certain persons like me, who are against their predatory agenda. This of course, was called the "Fifth Column" in Nazi Germany, and is used in all totalitarian states. The feminist are well aware of my status in this movement, and they have done articles and hit-pieces on me, in fact, I was told after my last hunger-strike, that indeed, NBC was thinking of doing a story on me, and these hunger-strikes but that it was the feminists who called in a lot of past favors which kept the story from gaining a national prominence. This "Fifth Column" does not exist in the Fathers Rights movement though—because we are too poor--we have zero funding for this type of manpower or technology. As I type this book in 1999 I am doing it on my eight-year-old 486/75, with a 540 Meg. Hard-drive, I have but 13 Megs left on my Hard-drive. I can't afford either the luxury or time to accomplish such tasks in which so not only labor intensive, but also technology intensive as well. We are speaking of a highly coordinated, well funded "Fifth Column" to pull something like this off, and as such, that can only mean one thing: that they are getting money from government to do these things.

"Even before the movement seizes power, it possesses a secret police, and spy service with branches in various countries. Later its agents receive more money and authority than the regular military intelligence service and are frequently the secret chiefs of embassies and consulates abroad. Its main tasks consist in forming fifth columns, directing the branches of the movement, influencing the domestic policies of the respective countries, and generally preparing for the time when the totalitarian ruler--after overthrow of the government or military victory--can openly feel at home. In other words, the international branches of the secret police are the transmission belts, which constantly transform the ostensibly foreign policy of the totalitarian state into the potentially domestic business of the totalitarian movement. [*The Origins of Totalitarianism*, by Hannah Arendt, @1951, 1958; Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc. New York; Library of Cong. Cat. Card No.: 66-22273; pp. 420-421.]

The real reason for this 'fifth column' lies within the Million Man March itself. The Fathers Rights movement is like the Elephant with its small Indian trainer. People marvel at how the small trainer, with a tiny stick, can get this great beast to move so many things and to do so much work. Because of its massive size and intelligence, the Elephant should be in control of the trainer, if one thinks first viscerally and not abstractly—yet, paradoxically, there the elephant is, obsequiously obeying his tiny master.

The contemporary Fathers Rights movement is such an elephant, and even then; there is no trainer. We are just wandering right now with irritating ants around us. In comparative terms, the Feminist however;

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

(which presently number approximately 6,000 nation-wide) along with government—are but an ant—irritating this great animal. They both recognize that in a similar facade of the elephant and the small trainer, they have kept the Fathers Rights elephant beguiled and at bay. They know that this elephant is uncomfortable, and that it itches, and it wants to scratch where ever or whatever is bothering it—but it just can't find the tiny ants.

"We could have had *anything*," Le Roy reminds us.

Actually, what the Fathers Rights community hasn't really figured out yet, is that we *can do anything*. We don't need the Feminists, or Congress or Washington D.C.—and *that is the key*. We don't need them, but they most certainly need us. They presently need us not for our positive influence of what we contribute in our jobs or our families, but we are needed for prisons, and subornation, to become their slaves. Oh sure, they need us to fight their wars. To give them our money. Even with the massive Fathers Rights movement figures which still indicate that they are still the main and primary economic engine of this nation (which is the reason why Government is stealing from them in the first place!) and that they are in fact a Rhino and not the obedient Elephant, ready to move through and destroy anything that irritates it. When this movement recognizes that fact that men are needed to feed this Feminist Krell Welfare Machine, and that the Government cannot feed off of and harvest women to sustain this present alien machine. The whole system and nation would collapse without Fathers complicity in their own destruction. This is why Le Roy and others who were at the Million Man March recognized: that Washington D.C. was shaking in its boots, and why the women can't foster anything near the Million man marches or the Promise Keepers. The modern Fathers Rights movement is and will be the most powerful sweeping force in this nations history. And I am worried for it.

Presently, there are shill's (false prophet's) being groomed within the Fifth Column, men who will be presented as the "Fathers Rights" leaders. They will not be. They will be instruments of Feminism and the against a true Fathers Rights movement. If and when the Fathers Rights movement stops fractionalizing, and coalesces, at that point will spark the largest movement in this nations history—and empires will fall when this reality takes place. The Rhino will be loose.

Compare these two observations from people whom are part of the Feminist Hive rather than part of the solution:

"I recently read a newspaper story in which teenagers, many from affluent neighborhoods in Washington D.C., explained why they sneak out of the house at night to go to parties or to meet with friends. It was clear that in many [of these] cases the children did not take seriously the rules their parents set, or did not think their parents were going to check up on

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

them anyway. As one psychologist explained in the article: "These kids are telling their parents basically, 'To hell with the rules. I'll do what I want.' The parents are feeling too inept or too busy to say no, and want somebody else to fix the problem." [*It Takes a Village*, by Hillary Rodham Clinton, p. 160-161.]

Of course Ms. Clinton doesn't or cannot see that her "Village" feminist party-line that because all women control their own sexuality, and that parents do not spank or discipline their children nor are families required to solve their own problems, that like Hillary and this article, we must go running to the nearest 'psychologist' or 'other expert' in which to answer our 'problems.' She has no idea that *she* is suffering from the Morbius Complex and cannot see that she herself, along with the Feminist programs and ideologies she supports, as part of the feminist Hive is the problem. Her own anti-father, anti-family feminist practices, policies and procedures are creating these children who scoff at authority, even at their own parents, because the programs the Feminist have put forwards to 'redesign humanity' have alienated parents from their children.

Take another similar observation:

"Too many high school kids today don't see any ramifications to the choices they make. To some, the difference between right and wrong is too narrow, too kind; most don't bother to look; some don't recognize it when they step in it. Our children are sleepwalking through adolescence, without a clue. Our children are sleep-walking through adolescence, without a clue. They have no concept of higher being or a common good, and I have to think this some-how flows from the mixed signals we've been sending. To a lot of these kids, there is reason not to go out and take a life, or but us a store, or pump one killing substance or another through their veins, because for them, it's already over. There's nothing left for them to do but check out and phone it in.

I'll never forget it when I first made this connection. It trouble me then and it troubles me still. I was making a presentation at a high school in Jackson, Mississippi, back when they were just starting to have some serious gang problems there. For a time....I dressed in uniform for these appearances, and on this occasion my fully Navy garb was nearly enough to impress this one kid in the audience.

Nothing I did made an impression. He rode me all through my talk, and he lingered long after I was through. After my presentation, I stayed behind to visit with a couple of hundred students who wanted to hear more, and this kid still wouldn't go away.

Finally, we had it out. "You have something to say, you say it," I yelled at him.

"Ooohh," he mocked, pretending to be afraid. "Listen to Mr. Baldy."

"That's right," I said. "Listen to Mr. Baldy, because what I've got to say can keep your ass out of jail."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

"Why should I listen to you?" he shot back. Then he hit me again before I could answer: "How much money you got in your pocket?"

"What?" I snapped. It was unusual for a high school kid to challenge me, an Naval officer, in just this way, and I wasn't sure I heard right.

"You heard me," he repeated. "How much money you got in your pocket?"

Yes, I had heard him but I wasn't sure how to answer, I wanted to buy myself some time, to think how to play this exchange. The principal and one or two of the teachers went to silence this kid, but I waved them away. If I couldn't make my point to him, I had not business being up on that stage. I thought the best tack was to answer him, see where he was going, and find some way to turn him around.

....I had about forty dollars on me. I reached in my pocket to show the few bills I had left. Then the kid reached into his pocket and pulled out the fattest wad of money I'd ever seen. He had the money rolled up neat and tight, and then he fanned it out for all to see. There was a thousand dollar bill on the outside, hugging hundreds and twenties on the inside. There must have been eight thousand easy.

He walked up to the auditorium stage and put the roll on a table, for emphasis. "I got this," he said. Then, he pointed at me. "You got that." He laughed.

You tell me to go to school because it'll make me money down the road, but I got more money right here than you'll probably make it in the next five months"

He was right about that, but he was all wrong about everything else. Trouble was, he now had the couple hundred students remaining with him...

He kept at it. "How many bitches you got?" he asked.

Again, I wasn't sure I'd heard right: "What do you mean how many bitches I got?" Now it was clear where he was going, but I couldn't seem to redirect him. I worried. The kid was better at his game than I at mine...

"I have a girlfriend," I said.

"Me," he said. "I got more ass than I can pop. I can get it every day." By this point, the other kids were cheering wildly each time this kid put me down.

"How many cars you got?"

At the time I was driving a Toyota MR2, which I thought was kind of a nice car, and I told him.

"Me," the kid said, "I got a BMW sittin' out there, and tomorrow, me and my homies' are going down to buy a Mercedes." The kid was sixteen years old, a real gang-banger. Like a fool, I let him run his mouth. "So you tell me, Mr. Baldy," he continued, "you tell me why I should listen to you? I got bitches, I got money. I got cars.. If I die tomorrow, I've had it all. What difference does it make?"

There, I had my opening. The kid just unlocked the door and held it wide: "*If I die tomorrow.*" "Hold on," I said. "What if you don't die tomorrow? What happens then? What if The Man locks you up and throws you in jail?" I started ripping into this kid like a [Marine] drill instructor he

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

needed, trying to make up the ground I'd lost. "He's going to put a two-dollar T-Shirt on your back, and some big dude is gonna' pull your shorts down as soon as the lights go out. What difference does that make? You tell me what difference it makes."

I had the crowd back after this. But there was no getting through to this kid. "Still don't make no difference," he said. [*Mountain, Get out of My way—Life Lessons and Learned Truths*, by Montel Williams, with Daniel Paisner, ©1996 Warner Books, Inc., 1271 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020; ISBN 0-446-51907-3; pp. 5-9.]

It is the feminized 'sages' such as Ms. Clinton and Montel Williams who present themselves as 'experts' who are knee deep and best exemplify their own problems deep within their own Morbius complexes. They are part of the machine of their own making, and they can neither see the problem, nor its solution; but they'll tell you as much as they can, what to do about it.. Montel has *no idea* that just the act of him getting up in front of a High School amphitheater to talk to kids about staying in school and discussing with them that they 'have to' keep their nose clean in which to succeed in society—is the main problem of this whole thing. It isn't he, nor the teaches which should be inculcating the mores, values and principles of a society—it is *the family*. Both Hillary and Montel are part of the problem and not the solution, hell, they are no where even near the solution! But they'll continue to go in front of auditoriums, they will still incessantly inhabit our public airwave's, run for office and spew the mainstream feminist party-line all through the wonder or various other 'experts' in which clearly, children are abandoning such psychobabble in droves.

As far as this child, whom I don't know about, nor ever have known about, I'll bet if Montel does some research; that he'll find out that this kid is from a broken home, either with no father, or with his father pushed out of the home, just like millions others like him. And Montel's supplication about 'stay in school' is falling upon deaf ears. Many children, can see their fathers trying to do the right thing, yet getting destroyed in the process. Not just destroyed...annihilated...there is a difference. I mean, like myself...I haven't done the crimes *Ms. Clinton's husband has, yet—he's the president I'm the supposed criminal!!!!* You don't think that this young gang-banger doesn't recognize this same thing? Do you think the young females beside him don't? Listen to another track from Montel's book:

"I once spoke at a Junior High School outside of Philadelphia where the teenage pregnancy rate was off the charts. There were about seventeen or eighteen pregnancies in that one school, and I sat down with some of the administrators to see what was going on. Quite a few of these girls were victims of sexual abuses at home, and this was tragedy enough, but

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

the real shocker was that in many of these cases, the girls set out to become pregnant. It had become kind of vogue thing in that community for a young girl to be pregnant. They'd look at their friend who was knocked up by her asshole uncle, and see all the attention she was getting and see all wan some of it for themselves. They sure as hell weren't getting any attention at home or from the school, so why not try it this way?

Before long, some of the girls started targeting the most popular boys ("Oh, Frankie makes such pretty babies," "DeShawn is cool") and comparing notes on their progress. They didn't have a relationship with Frankie or DeShawn or whoever, but they wanted their babies, and they were pretty calculating about it—poking holes in their boyfriend's condoms and lying about their periods. [*Mountain, Get out of My way—Life Lessons and Learned Truths*, by Montel Williams, with Daniel Paisner, ©1996 Warner Books, Inc., 1271 Avenue of the America's, New York, NY 10020; ISBN 0-446-51907-3; pp. 147.]

Indeed, I'll conjecture to say that there was no 'asshole uncles' impregnating these girls at this 'Junior High School' mind you, and I'll conjectures that if Montel researches these 18 pregnancies, he'll find through DNA analysis, exactly who the real fathers are...most probably the girls own male schoolmates. Those fathers will be exactly who the Feminist trained them to be, they most likely all are within the corridors of that same 'Junior High School' who through incessant feminist indoctrination, classes and literature; these young girls intentionally got pregnant! Please take note of such openly taught training and indoctrination:

### DO I HAVE A DADDY?

"Where is my daddy? "Do I have a daddy?" "Jennifer says I don't have a daddy."

"I'll tell you about your daddy," mother said. "You had a daddy in the beginning. It takes both a mommy and a daddy to make a baby."

"But Jennifer's daddy lives with her," said Erik. "I've never seen my daddy."

"We were very young when you were born. We weren't ready to get married. But I wanted you very much. I was so happy to have you."

"What about daddy? Didn't he want me?" Asked Erik.

"your daddy was excited. He came to see you when you were very little. But then, he went away."

"Did he like me?"

"Oh yes!" he was very proud of you," Mother replied.

"Then why did he go away?" Asked Erik?

"Caring for a baby is a big job," said mother. "Your daddy want' ready fore that."

"Oh," said Erik...

"You might have a different daddy someday. If I get married, the man I marry will be your daddy too."



## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

..."For now, maybe you'd like to spend more time with uncle Bob—and you know grandpa plays with you and loves you." [*Do I Have A Daddy?* By Jeanne Warren Lindsay, ©1982, Morning Glory Press, 6595 San Harolo Way, Buean Park, CA 90620 (714) 818-1998, ISBN 0-930934-44-X; p. 9]

Clearly, this training comes directly from and is approved by the Feminist Hive of which Hillary and Montel incessantly, and mindlessly propagate within today's schools and throughout the media. Here we see the classic underpinning's of illegitimacy, irresponsible pregnancy being thrown upon only the male, and the female held up into sainthood as the one, 'nobly' left behind to raise this poor child, all the while the father (wink-wink) can be easily replaced through mentoring, or an uncle or even a loving Grandpa. This whole feminist indoctrination within our schools is seeding and funding an intentional army within our nations schools, but; it does give Montel a job, it does allow Hillary to make the Krell Welfare Machine run faster and forces it to grow bigger as Hillary's "Village" expands exponentially through these publicly backed indoctrination's. Then Montel wonders why he's presented with the gang-banging animal, who—'just might' have realized that he really doesn't have a guaranteed future *even if* he keeps his nose clean, just like *I* don't have a future, as well as *Christopher Robin* who doesn't have a future, as well as *Le Roy Marshall*, and millions of others 'who kept their nose clean' and were annihilated by the Krell Welfare machine regardless. A nation of Fathers have been magically invented into criminals in which to feed Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine—and none of them, in which I have met, to a man, has ever been a criminal. Like the blue collar Father who was a construction worker told me "We have steak in the summer, beans in the winter." as he sat next to me not comprehending, why he was imprisoned 'for beans in the winter'. I knew, as well as this gang-banger who also probably knows—he was there because an organized crime syndicate needed his money. Like the young dishwasher who I also met in prison, who was equally stymied that he owned \$43,000—when he couldn't even spell the amount. I doubt that throughout his life he'd even accumulated such a sum of money. Yet, *he owed it*, and he was sitting in jail whilst these extortion amounts *grew even higher while imprisoned, unable ever to pay them*. Like Bob Labdno, from Clearlake, California, where the DA there forced him to pay twice what he was earning!! He soon graced the halls of that county jail to "make money" for the Krell Welfare Machine while he was being intentionally warehoused. All these men, none of them ever were criminals, but society buys into the fact that they are...they go along with the perverse invention...

Yet, when you look at the seeding training manuals approved by the Feminist indoctrination centers within our own Public schools which to

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

breed this problem you come upon why these girls are openly getting pregnant:

"I've worked with more than 1200 pregnancies in the past 18 years. About half of these young women married their baby's father. Many of them were divorced within a short time.

The choice to remain single, although pregnant, is often a good decision for young parents, according to many of my students.. [IBID. P. 34.]

Again, this idiotic advise comes directly from the mouth of the feminist Hive. Essentially, it is a good thing anytime a father can be thrown away. The Society will protect you, through Hillary's "Village". The past Patriarchal principals that you wait, court, select a proper, highly motivated, and highly groomed male candidate, in which you will carefully chose, then; mate with for the rest of your life, is "cliche"...not only that such arrangements are viewed by the Hive as "dominance"...it does not allow a woman to "freely control and protect the reproductive rights of her own body, and her own sexuality." Again, this Feminist Mantra has devolved a plague upon this nation, which runs unabated directly due to people like Montel Williams and most certainly, Ms. Hillary Rodham Clinton, who not only entreat such swill, but continually bludgeon it throughout the mainstream media. This has factually destroyed the nuclear two parent family which Patriarchy propagates, and more importantly, it has destroyed generations of children, that no longer know or understand the basic tenet's of Patriarchy, because of the dissonance of Montel's and Hillary's cogent actions.

"Maria's parents didn't let her date. She resented this. When she was sixteen, she ran away for a few days, then returned home. By the time she learned—to her horror—that she was pregnant, she had completely lost contact with the baby's father.

"I'm going to tell him about his father...No, he wasn't good at all, and I'm not going to tell Pedro a lie. He was so bad that I was even thinking of telling Pedro later that his father died." [IBID. P. 36]

I mean, how do Montel and Hillary explain this?!? Most certainly the gang-banger Maria met and became pregnant by, was the same exact gang-banger whom Montel met when he "first made the connection." Yet he is not making the connection. He still pretends, like most of these 'experts' connected with this machine, that they can stand up on a stage and in one day, in one or two hours, try and inculcate morality upon a high school audience who are in fact, laughing at him, their parents and all other authority, because Hillary's "Village" will not allow them to fail, once they act out on their insolence against parent's or society, and will-

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

fully become pregnant. Again, their sexual freedom guaranteed by the feminist construct is granted without the concomitant responsibility to pay the price for their actions. The Krell Welfare Machine just instantly grants their wish—then turns on and destroys the male fathers—who wind up paying the ultimate price.

No, these various talking-head's cannot solve this problem, more importantly, they never will. Only Families can solve this, *especially fathers*; which as a central part of Patriarchy, in which to have Fathers rule within their own home, only *they* can accomplish this. This gang-banger, as well as a nation of other 'wild' school children being bred out of the midst of the new 'Village' tribal state, don't fear Montel, in fact; like this one kid, they think him a joke. They don't fear police; or teachers; or High School principals; they don't even fear the police state; but in reality, in a primal manner, they do fear their Fathers, and in the final analysis, they do fear their families—as that inbreeding is a powerful factor which cannot be broken by mere contemporary means. In fact, you take this gang-banger, and put him in front of a real father, and he'll be sweating bullets trying to explain the money, the cars—and the incident that happened with Montel...in fact, if you simply allow Father to assume their proper role as fathers, you won't have these children in the first place. You won't see the pathologies in which our schools, because of them, now have become armed, encampments—and mini-prison's in their own rights—because of this amazing conflagration which has been waged upon their own homes. For as we have stated before, as the ancients knew, no child who is adjudicated before his own Father, has no fears and could have no better judge, nor can the children be more formally controlled or better controlled, than through Fatherhood, their homes, and their families.

Many of these children have lost their name, their heritage, and what that family name means, and what pride and honor it carries. The Feminist Hive hates the Fathers last name, and thereby, children are no longer taught to defend it, nor are they taught to improve the honor of their name. They have no idea what their legacies are. However, where you can see still, Patriarchy eminently at work, within the last vestiges to where Patriarchy formally remains, and that is within the super-rich of this nation. Most certainly, *these* children know what their name is, they are fully aware of their past and future legacies and their responsibilities:

"Every time one of us [Kennedy girls] goes out with somebody new, we have to call our father," she said. Joe would then have a background check conducted." [*The Sins of the Father, Joseph P. Kennedy and the Dynasty he Founded*, by Ronald Kessler ©1996, Warner Books Inc., 1271 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-446-51884-0; p. 241.]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

One might make the suggestion that we look at the contemporary figures of children within such Patriarchal archetype families compared to the Feminist archetype. I think that even upon this suggestion I think we all know the answer. It isn't *just money* that are keeping the rich, richer—it is the programmatic structure of the system of Patriarchy which keeps such families from running into such blunders as allowing their children to perhaps risk them, or their wealth, in going out with, in Maria's own words above, a person who was "not good at all." Do you think Joseph P. Kennedy would allow this to happen to Maria if she were his daughter? Of course not—but this is what is happening exponentially to the lower classes, who are forcibly caught into Feminist indoctrination, and who not only produce the children who are "not good at all" but also produce an environment that allows our young girls to arrogantly, run away, party, and make cogently bad decisions, which not only effect their lives, but the lives of their homes, their families, their communities and their schools where Montel notes, other young girls think it 'cool' to go out and become pregnant. They are 'controlling their own bodies and sexuality'... Of course, most American's no longer recognize that this reality of the more Elite and well-to-do families follow a Patriarchal archetype and that they force the lower classes into a Feminist Patriarchal archetype was not lost to the Communist revolution which mandated the destruction of the family:

"Abolition of the family! Even the most radical flare up at this infamous proposal of the Communists.

On what foundation is the present family, the bourgeois family, based? On capital, on private gain. In its completely developed form this family exists only among the bourgeoisie. But this state of things finds its complement in the practical absence of the family among the proletarians, and in public prostitution." [*The Communist Manifesto, A Modern Edition*, by Karl Marx and Frederick Engels, ©1998 Verso 180 Varick Street, New York NY 10014-4606, ISBN 1-85984-898-2; p.56.]

This is course why the Blacks and other poor populations have been stuck in Welfare, and this of course is the main reason why Hillary wants "The Village" as this will most certainly allow those at the top to skim the fruits of our labor from within our own families (as Marx and Adam Smith recognized) into their own pockets, for their own purposes. This is why the institution of Welfare is this nations greatest threat, as it is the easiest thing to fall into. They have made Welfare an addiction of the poor people's lives, from which they feed off of the fruits and labors of other to feed this Krell Welfare Machine.

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Yet, when a growing number of Social Scientists and Researchers begin to abstractly analyze the impacts of this perversion and what it has done to our society—the feminist party-line shrilly disregards the obvious—they disregard not only the continuing, obscene, and never-ending facts and figures which are beginning to implode upon their own weight and their own immorality, they also arrogantly disregard the true underpinnings and reasoning's for Patriarchy being the dominant model of choice for Western Civilization:

In a cover story called "Dan Quayle was Right," sociologist Barbara Dafoe Whitehead reviewed the theory that the Los Angeles Riots could be traced to Murphy Brown--the weekly situation comedy that exposed television viewers to the dangerous image of a happy single mother. According to our former Vice-President, this positive portrayal of an independent, unmarried mother was the reason why the American Family had broken down. Whitehead amassed scientific proof that poverty, urban violence, lousy SAT scores, and the bleak economy can be directly linked to the selfishness of divorced and single mothers: "The Family has weakened because, quite simply, many Americans have changed their minds. They changed their minds about staying together for the sake of the children; about the necessity of putting children's needs before their own; about marriage as a lifelong commitment," she concluded. Since three-quarters of all divorces are filed by women, we can assume that these negligent Americans are mostly mothers. Having personally contributed to the high divorce rate, I'm constantly astonished by the notion of the flip, loose-living self-centered, single mother who's having more fun than anyone else.

Whitehead cites numerous studies to prove that children living with two biological parents are better off in every way than children in households headed by a single parent: They inherit more money, they live in nicer homes, they have superior medical care, they get better education's, they tend to marry earlier. Undisturbed by the possibility that divorce might be the result rather than the cause of economic stability, she concludes that all children could live like Wally and Beaver if their parents just would stay married. The solution to the steady downward mobility of the United States' working classes, to drug abuse/decaying schools/overcrowded jails, Whitehead suggested was to restigmatize divorce." We can only be grateful she wasn't among the social scientists in Chicago studying urban violence in the early '60s; when rocks and flames accompanied Black Families into white neighborhoods. She might have suggested the solution to racism was to bring back segregation. [American Mom, Motherhood Politics and Humble Pie, c 1994, by Mary Kay Blakely; Algonquin Books of Chapel Hill, Post Office 2225, Chapel Hill, NC, 27515-2225, ISBN 1-56512-052-3, pp. 136-137.]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Yet, for those whom have experienced it, even the most ardent feminists recognize where the wealth in the home comes from. Indeed, note the following:

"My mother worked at the YWCA, so I was able to take gymnastics—a privilege usually reserved for the richer children. Ever day after school, I escaped my reality and entered a middle-class world from the fifties. Everyone's parents were married, with two or three children, the family dog, the family station wagon and a membership in the country club. Everyone's father was a professional and everyone's mother a homemaker—probably more of out duty than desire. It was the early seventies and many of these women had not yet been introduced to the women's movement (some still haven't), so they fell into a rut of assuming rather than defining their roles. They were always decked out in the latest styles. Their houses were complete with pools and refrigerators that were stuffed with food. I wanted my family to live like this.

....Because it was the fathers who financed these outings, paid for these dinners and gave their wives and children allowances, the only way I saw to have this "love" was through a father. Since I did not have one, I belittled myself and my experiences and continued living in denial. [Listen Up, Voices from the next Feminist Generation, edited by Barbara Findlen, ©1995, Seal Press, 3131 Western Avenue, Suite 410, Seattle, Washington, 98121; pp.153-154.]

Unfortunately, this young woman's vision of the not so distant past is the unadulterated truth, even though the feminist party-line is to chant an alternative and false mantra. Many of our children today will be denied such specific love, attention and wealth which comes from the two-parent nuclear family due to the fact of the socio-political Feminist revolution which is forcing an foreign communistic ideology on them through the destruction of their Fathers. From this, they will not gain the specific attentions and support of a nuclear two-parent family, they will only 'get something close'—"general" public funded attention--if even that. They will in all probability live in a Single Female Headed Household which will try to obtain a surrogate 'replacement' father for their child. They will not get a loving Father with a dedicated wife who will strive to become a professional or an ardent blue-collar worker (or anything else) who will dedicate himself to accrue the means to the American lifestyle noted above. Those whom are rich, cogently protect their assets through their adherence to the Patriarchal model. They are more than willing to allow the poor, the Black and the disenfranchised to obtain the fallow model of the Feminist Matriarchal archetype, for many Elite's who know the difference between the two will understand, that in the long run, they will profit by the poor's mistake or ignorance in choosing the feminist model which will drain any savings which the family

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

might accrue out from the home and into the public sector. Joseph Kennedy knew this and this was why his daughters had to call him before any association with a young male.

If this is not a direct indictment against Feminism and Matriarchy, and Hillary's "Village" system where she wants to 'redesign humanity' then, I don't know how I can put it any plainer. Feminism indeed, has been the greatest, national disaster this nation has ever faced. Period. Bar none. And categorically, it must be destroyed, and those whom have propped it up, and presented it to us must also be destroyed, and no longer hold any position within the public trust of America. Those who want to "take back the night" must be driven into it—and then ceremoniously have a stake driven through their hearts—which is what you do with monster's who crave the night.

I mean, continuing in the same book we can see what the ancients knew about fatherhood. Look what Joseph P. Kennedy did for his son, which mind you—any father try in today's environment would be vilified unmercifully by Hillary and her contemporaries.

"He was a latter day high-chieftain, the Patriarch of America's own version of the British Royal Family that has become our national obsession. He founded a dynasty that—thanks to his enormous wealth and single-minded tutelage—produced the nation's first Catholic President. [Book Cover.]

"In Palm Beach during Christmas 1944, Joe gave Jack his orders: He was to take Joe Jr.'s place and enter politics. More than a decade later, for an International News Service series in May 1957, Jack told reporter Bob Considine: "It was like being drafted. My Father wanted his eldest son in politics. 'Wanted' isn't the right word. He demanded it." [*The Sins of the Father, Joseph P. Kennedy and the Dynasty he Founded*, by Ronald Kessler ©1996, Warner Books Inc., 1271 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-446-51884-0; [Book Cover] and p. 287.]

Any contemporary father imposing this type of care and authority might be arrested for 'abuse' as too domineering. At minimum, he would be severely criticized and most certainly second guessed as to his demands upon his own children. Indeed, Clark Gable himself is most likely spinning in his grave at the shallowness of this whole system which has emasculated men so much. If a father mandates something to his son, now the public schools through the teachings of the feminist indoctrination system, give the children telephone numbers to various agencies that they might call and have people 'discuss' the matter with the errant father or family. Indeed, this intrusion has gotten so ridiculous that student's are 'urged' to turn in their parents.

What is totally an oxymoronic countervalance to John Winthrop's mandate that this nation be a 'nation of families' to "be knit together in

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

this work as one man," and in which became a "community as members of the same body," which would make us the envy of the world, which would "ensure our prosperity..[and] be as a city upon a hill, the eyes all of the people [of the world] are upon us." Strangely, now contemporary tribal African people are laughing at the backwardness of America. In an affront of huge proportions, I watched a film from West Africa, named *HYENAS* (1992) with Mansour Diouf, in which one of the characters in this movie, when their village is presented with a moral dilemma by an old-rich prostitute who was unjustly convicted in that village 30 years earlier, by a man who chose to marry another woman than her. He impregnated her, then disgraces her, and she is driven out to assume a life of prostitution, which she did for the next 30 years and became rich doing it. The village undergoes a drought and financial destruction 30 years later which brings us to the present, then this old woman returns and wants to save the town because now she has the financial means to do so, only on the condition that the town kill the man that dishonored her for 100,000 Million [dollars]. One character in the village prophetically says: *"We are not savages like those Americans, who kill themselves for nothing."* In this circumspect and all too pragmatic observation of our times; even the true African tribal villages throughout Africa now recognize that they are in a higher moral plane than supposedly Hillary's new Feminist-American "Village" model...and strangely, and absolutely...they are right! We who live under this Hive's feminist model are in fact doomed to technologically progressing while still going backwards. We have become more devolved than they—because the facts are that our children are killing themselves and others for Mercedes, for BMW's, for sex, and drugs and all the 'freedom' and 'control of their own sexuality and bodies' in which Feminism has devolved upon our unsuspecting technologically advanced society.

I mean, right this instant as I write this book, I am shaking my head in disgust as I write these factual observations of the result of the War in which Hillary's and her Hive and Krell Welfare Machine has raged upon our whole society. Now even Adam Smith's 'base and immoral' tribes are laughing at us as being on a higher more civilized state than ourselves! This realization is amazing. Simply amazing given the present circumstances.

### THE HIVE'S POWER BASE

---

One has to wonder, as I did in the past, how these women, have gotten so powerful. With Radical Feminism on the religious decline, with such atrocious facts and figures at attend this Superstructure, and the total destruction in which this system has waged across America itself, we have to answer the question as to how does this Feminist system *stay* in



## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

power? I mean, I see people suck their teeth in horror when they see the results of what young people aimlessly do throughout the national headlines today: "Two Children 7 and 11, push 5 year old child off of roof because he refused to steal candy." "Child Murdered for Bicycle."

Simply put, the destruction waged upon this society can be quantified, and through that quantification, can be economically marketed. This is why we have Feminist Women Health Centers, this is why we have "Abuse" shelters, and doctors and dentists intensely looking for cuts and bruises. Why teachers now chant the feminist mantra within our public schools. Why our jails when they do intake of their prisoners ask them a battery of questions about what social service programs they think might help them. Take one word away from Feminism: Abuse—and this whole system collapses. They become totally mute. They *need* abuse to run the Krell Welfare Machine. If it isn't abuse (which is very broadly defined) pushing men out of homes, and making poor and innocent wives and children show up at the steps of these Feminist Enclaves—then what else could it be?

There is really only one other answer: that Feminism allows females to erase any responsibility that they either had to their husbands or their families, and though and by Feminist support infrastructures, she 'buy's' her freedom to do whatever she wants. All she has to do is to show up with a slave. She does this by accusing—*merely accusing* the male of "abuse." Once that door is opened, the Krell Welfare Machine instantly grants her, virtually anything she wishes. Because without abuse, then; the woman is stuck in the mundane setting within her own making. She has to stay with her husband and children and assume her duties. With Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine, all she has to do now, is to walk up to it, and imagine her dreams, deposit once slave to be sacrificed (the Father as abuser) and poof! Her life and new dreams are instantly subsidized, while he is instantly innihilated.

Hillary along with the feminist care nothing about the laws. As we have shown earlier with the Cato Institute reports, they are working in the exact opposite of what our laws are supposed to be. But they have the armies behind them, they have the police, and from this totalitarian mindset—they are blindly enforcing the laws in direct opposition of them. These police, Social worker and other standing armies then blandly state to their victims being persecuted by the Krell Welfare Machine: "Well, I'm only doing my job. You'll have to see the Judge about all this".... Clearly, this is collusion, and in fact, no average citizen can protect himself from these criminal assaults. Like Butte County DA Investigator Brad Rundt says: "Where do you go when the Judge won't obey your laws?" This is the insolence in which is being presented to each father who is consumed by this draconian system. We factually have no protec-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

tions anymore, because our system of governance which provides redress and protections to American's has been overthrown, and replaced with something else—nobody understands or can work with.

Those feminists and other special interest groups who get the nod from this aberrant government, are the ones who get into, and stay in power. I met one such woman, in South Los Angeles. She was a Social worker, whose child had died tragically within her own system. Well, she got very high profile from the media, and when I met her, was being groomed to run for political office. She actually had aids with the DA's office assigned to her following her around. Yet, this woman upon hearing that I wanted full Patriarchy for children, immediately volunteered that she as a social worker who thought men shouldn't receive *anything*. Indeed, with a closed mindset like that, she will most certainly be on the fast track within the government quarters. Again, this is the Feminist hate mongrel's who inhabit these Feminist enclaves of power, you will find no other mindset there other than this radical fascist majority.

If you go within the Krell Welfare Machine, you will see similar radical man-hating women within the ranks of those behind each desk. When you go to college campuses, they will fill the classes to overflowing, each and every one of them dutifully learning the mantra of the feminist comic-book that supercedes the constitution is handed to them and enforced with a vengeance.

"Such is the nature of feminism in the 1990s: an uneasy balancing act between the imperatives of outreach and inclusion on the one hand, and the risk of tokenism and further marginalization on the other. This dynamic has indelibly shaped my personal experiences with feminism, starting from my very first encounter with organized feminism. This encounter happened to be, literally, Feminist Studies 101 at the university I attended." --JeeYeun Lee [Listen Up, Voices from the next Feminist Generation, edited by Barbara Findlen, ©1995, Seal Press, 3131 Western Avenue, Suite 410, Seattle, Washington, 98121; pp.205.]

"Seven years ago I went to Simon's Rock College, a good liberal arts, liberal politics school in western Massachusetts. Like many young women of all colors and ethnic backgrounds, I had my first feminist awakening at college." --Veronica Chambers [Listen Up, Voices from the next Feminist Generation, edited by Barbara Findlen, ©1995, Seal Press, 3131 Western Avenue, Suite 410, Seattle, Washington, 98121; pp.22.]

"Friends remembered her as in search of a "calling" those last months. The overwhelming majority of her class were still anticipating no more than marriage and family, but "Feminist visiting Wellesly...turned Hillary [Rodham Clinton] toward a legal career," according to Martin Kasindorf." [*The Clinton's and their America*, by David Blankenhorn, ©1993, Henry

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Holt and Company, 115 West 18<sup>th</sup> Street, New York, NY 10011, ISBN 0-8050-2040-8; p. 134.]

The modern feminist empire has become a publicly funded institution within our own colleges and universities, who use these public monies for an Anti-American, Anti-Male, political agenda. Here is where the Feminist get their 'converts' and groom them to undermine both our public and our private industry institutions, who, if they dare resist, suddenly find themselves embattled in major lawsuits.

Of course when you bring up organic law, or foundational constitutional precepts with these people, they will revert to their feminist 'training' and when that collapses, they will revert to their 'visceral' gut feelings—their feminist comic book—when that fails, they will become blind, and only enforce 'the new law' even though it was proven to them wrong. "It's the law." They will insolently reply, when of course they know, it is not. "I'm only doing my job." Or even worse: "We know it's not law, but—where do you go when the Judge does not obey your law?"

Strangely though, these people, blind in their arrogance to uphold the machine, will willingly sacrifice their family, or even themselves in which to uphold their false belief systems.

It would be a still more serious mistake to forget, because of this impermanence [of the fickleness of the masses], that the totalitarian regimes, so long as they are in power, and the totalitarian leaders, so long as they are alive, "command and rest upon mass support up to the end. Hitler's rise to power was legal in terms of majority rule and neither he nor Stalin could have maintained the leadership of large populations, survived many interior and exterior crises, and not braved the numerous dangers of relentless intra-party struggles if they had not had the confidence of the masses...

The attraction of evil and crime for the mob mentality is nothing new. It has always been true that the mob will greet "deeds of violence with the admiring remark: it may be mean, but it is very clever." The disturbing factor in the success of totalitarianism is rather the true selflessness of its adherents: it may be understandable that a Nazi or Bolshevik will not be shaken in his conviction by crimes against people who do not belong to the movement or are even cross or hostile to it; but the amazing fact is that neither is he likely to waver when the monster begins to devour its own children.... [footnote: "This is to be sure, is a specialty of the Russian brand of totalitarianism. It is interesting to note that in the early trial of foreign engineers in the Soviet Union, Communist sympathies were already used as an argument for self-accusation: "All the time the authorities insisted on my admitting having committed acts of sabotage I had never done. I refused. I was told: 'If you are in favor of the Soviet Government, as you pretend you are, prove it by your actions; the Government needs your confession.' " Reported by Anton Ciliga, *The Russian Enigma*,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

London, 1940, p. 153.] [*The Origins of Totalitarianism*, by Hannah Arendt, @1951, 1958; Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc. New York; Library of Cong. Cat. Card No.: 66-22273; pp. 306-307.]

These people are absolutely blind to any formal affirmations to true American Liberty, Freedom or Justice. Like the Nazi's of WWII, they fully know and understand where their daily bread comes from, and they will defend it at all costs. Ask these people to obey the constitution, and they will cite the Legislative party line, that "Legislative Codes" are the "new laws" and superior to the 'old' constitution. The elite family dynasties that presently inhabit the corridors of all our state legislatures keep silent on this perversion of law—and allow those clerical underling's and errant police to support this myth's by allowing them full immunity and malfeasance upon any sense of retribution or justice one might try to redress through courts. Again, these people in no way, are our "public servants" anymore. They are way, way out of control, and 'use' the corridors of power to steal children, ruin lives, and steal wealth from millions of helpless American citizens, *mostly Fathers*..

People like this are in the news. They are called in front of and are sitting in the front of town hall meetings, and the papers print their slant on public events and impress themselves within public policy by such calculated grooming by the local and even national mainstream media.

Who are these people who inhabit the hive?!? Oh, they are *good people* we are assured. They are just like you; they are your neighbors.

Well, no. This is wrong. They are most certainly *not* like me nor many within the society who could not justify the immoral aspects in which this system clearly presents those who inhabit it and monetarily benefit by and from their employment within the Welfare state. Many of these people who are presented with the clear and outstanding paradoxes and inequities of which their jobs continually, and increasingly; require them to financially destroy their fellow citizens *in direct violation of the Constitution*, have deluded themselves—for their own personal gain and profit. When you have a court clerk who willfully refuses to file legal court documents, *in direct violation of her own job description, in clear violation of her oath of office, and in absolute defiance of the secured rights of the constitution*: well, she most certainly is not a nice person. These people are calculating, and they have sold themselves into the criminality of a new organized crime syndicate which allows them to complete their crimes. We have tried to pay for court fees in silver dollars—the court clerks will not accept the lawful money. Why? Well, when you ask them, they are silent. When we bring the law forwards to them that they must accept payment—they won't act on it, and will remain mute.

More and more people inhabiting our government and court system, and especially the Welfare system, are of this Hive mindset. They are

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

easily pliable, and when they complete criminal acts which shock even the most common citizens conscience, they remain belligerently mute, and allow the courts through their malfeasance and arrogance throughout the law, to verify their actions by never allowing those damaged American citizens to hold such 'elite' criminals accountable. This is why, those within the Hive only mutely state "I'm only doing my job." Which, at one point in our history, after the Nazi war crimes trial in Nuremberg, was not only an unacceptable thing to utter in this nation, it was criminal. If you even *said* anything remotely like this, as a public servant—you were immediately fired. We must once again return to those days.

This is why Court reporters will not give a defendant transcripts, but rather, will try and extort massive amounts of money from them in which to either debilitate them outright, rather than obey the law which states that defendants obtain trial transcripts upon appeal or a new court trial upon their case. This is why "Judges" arrogantly refuse to let Fathers speak or represent themselves in court. This is why they do not allow Fathers to file evidence in their case. This is why DA's do not allow Fathers to file counter-complaints—or to even file criminal charges against the mothers whom steal their own children from them.

This is also why the complete range of government itself, will not give out public documents, or its practices, policies and procedures which it uses *against* its own citizens, but; when people 'dare' ask to see their authority, these officials insolently refuse such documentation and willfully keep it away from the citizenry. This of course is patently illegal, but it has won an amazing amount of cases for the government which destroy such citizens who cannot effectively legally retaliate.

All these 'good' people who are in these government systems and who cogently act in direct violation of their own statutory law, and most certainly Constitutional law and absolutely against their own oath's of office, are in fact the 'real' criminals in this nation. Exactly like the Nazi's of WWII, these people quietly understand where their 'daily bread' comes from, and they will arrogantly refuse either law, or procedural due process, or even the most basic rights of a citizenry who might come up and supplicant any form of redress from them. Fathers still try and 'trust the system' and throw themselves on a courts mercy thinking that the "Judge" is going to use common sense and do right by them. Then, sadly; these same fathers are shocked when these "Judges" instead, malevolently destroy them, using no logic whatsoever, but most certainly using fascist powers of the State, never imagined in this society.

This is a true story. A friend of mine, once went into a California Highway patrol office to obtain the policies of that Agency in writing of that particular office which were used to give him a simple traffic ticket. He entered that office, and—a few short minutes later, was arrested and

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

sent to the hospital with a severely twisted arm. Now, in taking the worst case scenario against my friend, and in ‘supposing’ that he was completely belligerent and argumentative in *only* asking for these supposed policies—how could he have gotten arrested, and injured: *just for asking to see the policies which were used to ticket him for an offense??* The American society might look at this and wonder at the efficiency. In one analysis of this case, we could see angry CHP officers silently and begrudgingly walking to their files, “doing their jobs” albiet angry; copying the related documents, receiving the copying costs from my friend, and reluctantly meeting their job requirements of both the law and their oaths of office. Looking at the other scenario of what happened, sees that we only have out-of-control CHP officers, that my buddy was arrested and sent to the hospital for no other reason—that he *dared* defend himself and ‘question’ authority. Now this second scenario costs the taxpayers (society) a considerable amount of money. Now, several officers are wasting their time and sitting at their desk writing out needless police reports trying to explain, what transpired during this useless incident. A citizen is now ‘criminalized’ where he shouldn’t be a criminal in the first place. That citizen productivity is taken out of the nations commerce. Officers, who once may have been only good guys only doing their job, may have to outright lie at this incident—just to save either somebody else’s job, or even there own. And what does that reality start to do to our once trusted institutions?!? And finally, now there is a court case, which evolves, and which further wastes the taxpayers money. All for the crime of one citizen ‘asking’ to see the California Highway Patrol office policies which were used to ticket this individual in the first place—which by law—*he has a right to do!!!*.

This is an amazing waste of both time and resources. But...it does create bigger empires and it more importantly; sends an immutable message to the public that our Police State is a fascist order, and none dare question its authority.

Yet, there are many who would argue in this incident that these officers are ‘good’ people. They are ‘only doing their job.’ The facts are that they are neither nice people nor are they doing their job. They are extrajudicially imposing their own concept of laws upon a citizenry who are mockingly ‘supposed’ to be their masters. Clearly, as this incident shows, we are not the masters of our government any longer, and they are no longer our public servants.

These are not ‘isolated’ cases. This is the new rigorous norm for our ‘public servants.’ What is most disturbing in regards to Welfare is that the people inhabiting that “Hive” are not just there for a job, like the CHP above, they are there to serve their own personal agenda. They are there impose a religious and political persecution against a gender: Men. These

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

are the people who inhabit the Universities and government, they are there being indoctrinated with a 'science' which completely controverts the law, the common law and all sense of reasonability, or truth or justice. They are there for ulterior motives which do not coincide with those foundational principles of which this nation was founded upon. Like the gentleman in the beginning of Chapter 11 who admitted that the civil rights leaders "abandoned those [American] principles because we never really believed in them," all such similar mindsets now inhabit the domain of the Feminist Welfare Superstructure, throughout government; all the way up to the Clinton's themselves. But now, they are openly advocating un-American principles and ideals within their structure, and from the lowliest government clerk on up, are implementing a completely different mindset, laws, and political system upon the American people, all under the guise that what they are doing, 'is law.' When you pose them with the simple constitutional disparities of what they are doing they become reticent or arrogantly declare that the Legislature has imbued them with this authority. Maybe they even arrest you and twist your arm and send you into the hospital.

When you push these people further they will abruptly tell you that they will not do anything else—that all dialogue with you is finished.

These are our 'pretended' public servants. These are not nice people, for their unlawful actions have made them the enemy of every American citizen. As such, we as the masters of our public servants have the right to see any practice, policy, procedure or law in which they may invoke against us. When a 'public servant' makes *any* determination against us, we have the immutable right to see their 'authority' upon the first instant request. When such people, behind their 2" thick glass windows and highly secured palaces of employment arrogantly refuse such simple requests that they adhere to the letter with the law; and 'invent' new law to support their insolence, we must immediately start to counter with "Prove it." "Prove your statement that you have the enumerated authority (the only authority they have) to do what you are saying you can do." Ten times out of ten, they will not answer, and they most certainly will not bring forwards their enumerated authority. Nine times out of ten, they will not bring forwards their practices, policies and procedures. But in the one 'rare' instance they do; we always see that it is usually a broad determination of the statute as applied by the agency in question, *or, that it is a complete fraud and just another criminal way to deny us our rights.*

An example of this can be seen around this nation, most particularly the Butte County Sheriff's department. I have seen many times, and have tried to myself, "serve" legal documents upon that institution. Yet, when attempting this, *every single time* they have categorically refused to accept service. In one case, where a District Attorney had been properly

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

served and missed an important court deadline and defaulted on it, he called up the plaintiff and asked him to stipulate that the service didn't happen!! That it was incomplete! Clearly, this is egregious performance by 'our' "public servants" and it is patently offensive and eminently illegal...yet, the courts protect these criminals! In the case of the Butte County Sheriff's department, the Sheriff's wearing badges behind the 2" bulletproof, plate glass reception desk say with a straight face that they cannot accept 'service.' When we ask for someone to accept service, they will state that "Oh, that person is not here." (Without even checking). They will then at all costs not accept the document even though you push it through their tiny slot. What we have here is documented evidence of criminal malfeasance. These people are in fact, *your enemy*. They have nothing to do with American government, and more importantly the constitution. They are there just as part of the Organized Crime Syndicate of NCPGI government, and fully understand that the courts will protect their criminal actions from anyone who dares complain about them.

What *should* happen in a case where someone serves a document upon any public entity is that the public servant *should* immediately and cheerfully accept the document, stamp it, and then hand the stamped copy back to you. In fact, if any procedural mistakes have been made, that person 'should' inform you as such to help you accomplish your goal, as that person under 'Republican form of government' is supposed to have the same intent as yours: i.e., "The American Form of Government." In fact, it the true analysis of this, you should be able to go up to *anyone* within that agency (or really any government agency for that matter) and hand them your document, and have it properly served on the agency in question. "Notice to the principal is notice to the agent, notice to the agent is notice to the principal." They are all the one and same, under the "Union of the Several States" as we were formed under.

Yet, these tyrants, who will not accept proper service, are in direct violation not only of our Republican form, but in absolute violation of law. Not only that; American citizens are 'supposed' to get "The Spirit of the Law." Clearly. This is not what is happening here. The result is that we cannot file papers, court documents, or even do simple process service. We cannot easily access these "public" institutions for information—they refuse and force us to file "Freedom of Information Act" requests. When we do this, they *still* refuse; thereby forcing a simple request up into the courts and up that chain of command—which usually drags its feet willfully. When and if they finally comply; then the documentation is incomplete, grossly edited, censored, or wrong—or even sometimes criminally altered! I mean the gall of these people is legion! Yet, every payday, and every time in front of the media camera's they



## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

will solemnly inform us that they are upholding the highest ideals of our government...they are not...and they are lying, and we know it.

Another high-stakes case broke during 1992. In "Operation Court Broom," lawyer Raymond Takiff helped gather evidence against four Dade [county] judges suspected of taking bribes to fix cases. One judge was accused of turning over to Takiff the name of a confidential witness, knowing that Takiff planned to pass the name along to drug dealers who wanted to murder the man.

Reno handed the case over to federal prosecutors, but she sent lawyers from her office along to help. They were "cross-designated" as temporary assistant U.S. attorneys. It was the latest in several public-corruption cases in which she worked with the U.S. Attorney's Office.

Some detractors said Reno was either admitting that her office wasn't up to winning such complex cases or was trying to dodge the political fallout from taking on popular public officials. [*Janet Reno, Doing the Right Thing*, by Paul Anderson, @ 1994; John Wiley & Sons, ISBN 0-471-01858-9; p.101.]

Of course, these people will think themselves "nice" that they are "good people" all the while creating havoc, tyranny and anarchy amongst the rest of us all. In fact, in most counties, these people are usually the highest paid sector in the populace, especially in the rural areas where they wind up doing most of the damage against their own citizenry. I went out and walked the parking lot of the same Butte County Sheriff's office and inventoried the cars parked out back, which were owned by these same people denying me and others proper redress at law. Most of the cars were brand new. Many of them *very* impressive. I really did not see one; not a single old car.

Yet, everyone driving up to this office (including myself) who were just the 'normal' citizenry under attack by these same people, had a fifteen-year-old car, or older. Again, what we have here is a transfer of wealth through the misapplication of our laws. We have one segment of the populace using law to feed off of and enslave another. These 'good' people are doing this cogently, and they fully understand where and how their "daily bread" comes from—and they don't care. Yet, they go to church and they participate in community activities, they assume leadership roles in the community, and then without another thought, they go to work and destroy lives

If you walk into any Welfare office, what you will quickly observe out of all the sea of desks is that the office, to the greatest extent, is inhabited by women. The greatest sampling of these women will show that they are not only of the mindset above, but they go beyond that. They are zealots. Many of them think men should get nothing. Many of them happily inflict cruelty upon Fatherhood because they see it as a way of 'get-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ting back.' Many of them are just Socialist—they don't believe in America nor it's free, independent and capitalist roots. They follow Marx more than they follow Jefferson.

Within the core of this Hive are those women who claim to be rape victims, abuse victims, and beating victims. From this, they sit at these desks, wielding all the incredible power of which government imparts them with in the name of the American people. They 'supposedly', as rape victims, beating victims, and abuse victims; are doing their jobs, applying the laws 'fairly' and 'equally'. Nothing could be further from the truth. What we factually have here is legalized discrimination centers. It is a new order of SS, fully operated and controlled by and from a virulent Feminist faction.

And from this, our illustrious court systems destroy lives generationally from the putrid mindset of 'government legalized' determinations which spew forth from this institution and thereby give their actions 'validity' and color of law, again; in the name of the people and all for "the best interests of the child." Then when we consider the damage of these courts and look at the scope of what giving approximately 93% of all custody decisions to females has wrought upon this society, these courts will go blind as to their unlawful acts and actually pretend that they have been fair. They will again use fraudulent facts and figures which spew forth from the same diseased Feminist mindset which started this whole conflagration in the first place then, actually say with a straight face: "We have been fair." "We have been equal." "We have done justice." Nothing could be further from the truth.

As the Fathers Rights community collectively reads these pages, we must recognize that this is the *singularly exact reason why joint custody will never work*. What we can see from the observations I bring forth here is that this Pandora's Box brought on by the Feminists and unlawfully applied by 'our' courts, must not only be closed but nailed shut. The Joint Custody faction within the Fathers Rights movement is entrusting the care and determination of their homes and our future children's homes, to a diseased entity. It is a Hive. A corrupt cabal part of an elite Imperial regime which only wants money and power from this system, which will only feed off of the American citizenry—the mostly poor. "Joint Custody" will infect the same problems in various degree as this past system has inflicted upon us all. Once such infection occurs it will then quickly rise to its present levels again.

In an engineering sense, understanding these system dynamics, there is only one solution the Fathers Rights community must undertake, and that is to collectively mandate the total destruction of this perverse system, and never let it rise again.

---

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

---

*Every gun that is made, every warship launched, every rocket fired signifies...a theft from those who hunger and are not fed, those who are cold and are not clothed. This world in arms is not spending money alone. It is spending the sweat of its laborers, the genius of its scientists, the hope of its children.* --Dwight D. Eisenhower, April 16, 1953.

[Quoted From: *Families in Peril, An Agenda for Social Change*, by Marian Wright Edelman, © 1987, Harvard University Press, ISBN 0-674-29228-6, p.95.]

---

### WHAY COULD HAVE BEEN

---

In order to answer Ms. Fredian's *The Feminist Mystique*, of her supposed documentation of the American woman's outrage of a "comfortable slavery" within the hallowed halls of marriage--we have set American national standards completely on their ear. We have destroyed millions of lives, we have eradicated what would be several national economies, we have reinvented slavery, despotism, and unspeakable perversions—all to 'answer' this supposed question of what may have been just bored, but otherwise contented housewives.

It is clear that the male populace will try and drive themselves into abject slavery to keep the national mindset of women satisfied, so that they can answer "the problem with no name." It did have a name. It was called contentment...and some women were not satisfied to be content, so they set out for selfish purposes, aligned themselves with government who enjoined in this malevolent purpose, and together they have built a vehicle which overturns the foundational law and formational precepts of why this country was established in the first place. These people who now support the Feminist cause, would just like the University administrators who insolently demanded the Georgetown girls to lie "if it serves our social agenda"—would happily destroy the Constitution outright and every precept of human freedom and dignity, not to mention the complete national wealth of this nation, if it would further their cause to 'redesign humanity.'

Well, 'redesigning humanity' may or may not be a noble cause, but it is not the cause of this nation, nor has it ever been. The only interests of this redesign comes from a highly stratified elite, most of whom were never elected and of who many people really don't know about, but these people, along with a willing cabal within the corridors of power are willing to implement this Fabian epiphany. They are eager for its implementation, and my visceral, gut feeling is that—they'd happily do it, especially if it destroyed this nation..

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Remember: "He who controls the children of America, rules the world." If America; a once proud, sovereign, capable, and self-sufficient nation can be brought down from the inside like this, especially through the corruption of power, where we are the most weakest (as President Clinton's morality and concomitant political actions most certainly demonstrates), then there is no nation upon the face of the earth that will be able to withstand this feminist fusillade *once it infects their elite's*. All nations will be doomed to succumb to the Feminist threat in direct opposition to their political construction, no matter what type of nation they are. In fact, Radical Feminists are infesting many Moslem nations with a vengeance, in order to 'pay back' past and present practices of female subordination. In examining the present extent and destruction of which feminism has wrecked havoc upon this nation—it may be more apt to say that this war which we Fathers have presently been engaged in here, is in fact a World War...maybe this is World War III, and we don't even know it. This may be a humorous observation to make under the circumstances...but is it true? I don't know. It is not the extent of this book to discuss this issue...for such a discussion warrants a completely different book, time, and separate investigation.

All we can do here, is to look and catalogue the massive damage that this perverse system has wrought here. Needless war during a time of peace. This is the real tragedy, these are the real crimes.

The power of economic growth was driven home to me by a study that suggested that a 1% increase in our economic growth rate would shrink the federal deficit by \$640 Billion dollars, *without a tax increase*, and that each and every adult citizen would earn \$9,600 dollars more than they would in the current growth projections.

In this world of merely one percent higher growth, Social Security Trust Fund never runs out of money for as far as the current model can look into the future. By contrast, the current projection has the Social Security Trust Fund going into deficit, by about 2029. If we have one percent less growth than projected the Social Security Trust Fund goes into deficit thirteen years sooner, in 2016...

...the so-called business cycle...predict[s] that economic recession will always follow growth, they will advise the Federal Reserve Board to follow policies that slow growth and increase interest rates, that in turn will choke off the growth and lead to a recession. This pattern may say more about American economists than it does about the American economy.

In Japan, where the government had committed to steady economic growth, there was a nineteen-year period without a recession. From 1975 to 1994 the Japanese averaged a 4.2 percent annual growth and a 3.6 percent annual personal income increase. By contrast, in the same nineteen years the United States suffered through three recessions. The average annual growth rate was 1.6 percent lower (only 2.6 percent a year), and the

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

annual personal income increase was 2.6 percent lower (only 1 percent a year for the nineteen year period).

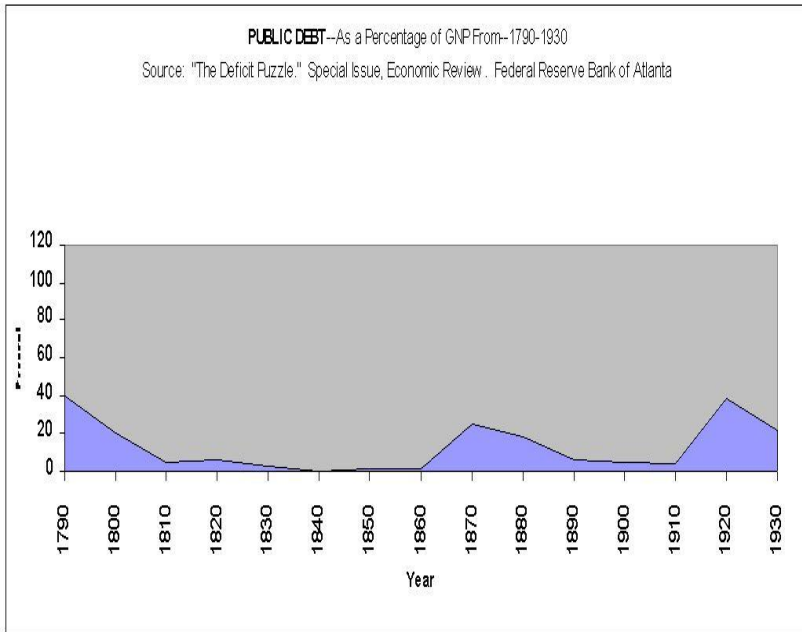
These numbers are not just of academic interest to financiers and economists. If the United States had grown the same rate as Japan from 1975 to 1994, our real economy would have been 118 Trillion dollars bigger, our per capita income would have been \$18,985 greater, and Federal Revenues would have been \$393 Billion higher. Our deficit would have turned into a surplus. We would be paying off our national debt by about \$100 billion a year. That impact of a faster economic growth pattern is that dramatic.

Economic growth is the most important social policy objective a country can have other than keep its people physically safe. [*Newt Gingrich, To Renew America*, by Newt Gingrich, ©1998, Harper Collins Publishers, 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, N.Y. 10022; ISBN 0-06-017336-X; pp. 67-68.]

We have tragically allowed the Radical Feminists compromise our future heritage. What is most disappointing is that what Newt brings to light here, is but a drop in the bucket compared to what economic losses Feminism has waged upon this nation. We are looking at 'low' and 'conservative' estimates costing anywhere from five trillion or higher...the figure could approach 30 to 50 trillion dollars in real-lost-economic income to the American people.



## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



First, let us just take the five trillion dollar estimate. This is a flat cost to the American public for instituting the ‘temporary safety-net’ of Welfare over the past 30 years. This "safety-net" has done very effectively, three things.

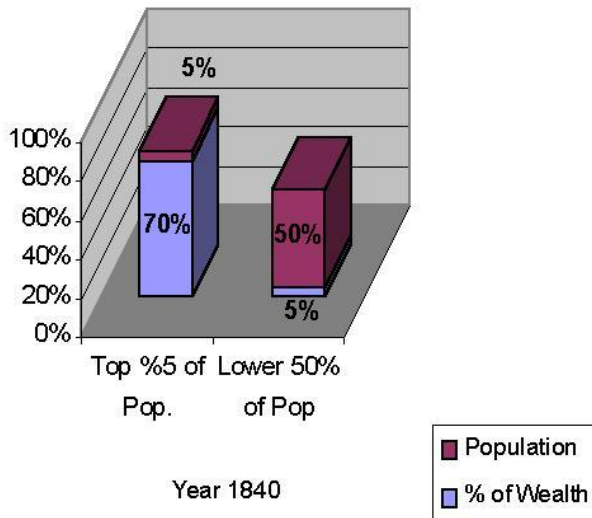
1. It has taken people out of the productivity cycle around the nation.
2. It has redistributed wealth from producers to non-producers.
3. It has stolen our children’s heritage.

These people who previously would have contributed to the nations economic viability by ‘contributing,’ or what could be said—that they would produce something, either hamburgers, art, more computer programs, or any other viable service or product—have instead, been a dead wood to society. Ms. Freidian’s ‘problem with no name’ has "freed" several generations of women who did not want to be ‘comfortable slave’s’ instead; they became ‘unsatisfied welfare slaves’ tied generationally to Welfare producing nothing except, crime, social pathology, and more welfare. More importantly than this, this system also burdened a society, and a male population that were producing, and from this enslaved those people to forego many of their dreams and aspirations by confiscating their money even before they could use it, and conscripted it to Welfare also as itinerant slaves.

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

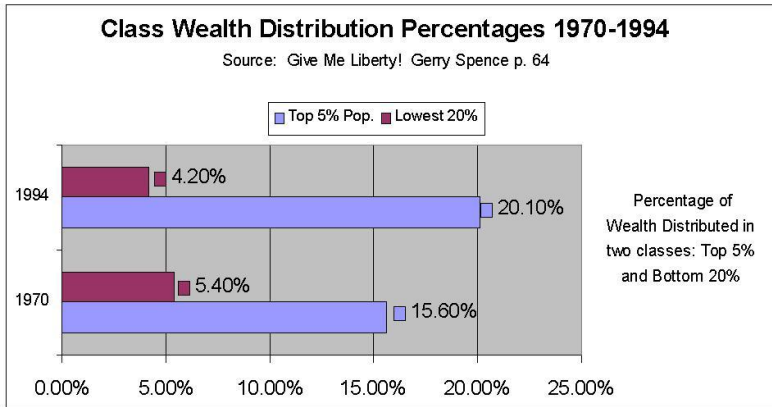
### Wealth Owned by Americans in 1840

Source: *Give Me Liberty*, by Gerry Spence, p.58



This transfer of wealth, effectively help stagnate our economies. The viable wealth in which the producers of society made, could not then be reinvested in either themselves or in commerce in which to again raise the society up from those investments. Throughout the history of America, and especially in the 40's, 50's, and 60's, the United States was a nation of savings. These savings came from families and from the producers of the society who recycled their money and reinvested it or spent it upon their own ideas and dreams which then again—powered a national economy. Banks, were able to make loans due to the fact of this monetary engine in which was created by the producers of the society, (Individuals and Families), and the banks took those savings and funded private industry. Private industry was funded directly by those savings, who in turn; provided 93 percent of the jobs in this nation! A little more over a quarter century later, those savings are completely *gone* as through government Welfare policy, we have become a debtor society—with no more savings being produced by this nations families. More importantly, now—government provides anywhere from 40 to 60 percent of all the jobs in this nation! Indeed, in looking at Japan, we can see that it is a nation of viable savings. In fact, above and beyond contemporary 'savings' which outstrip American savings, they also have postal savings accounts which are said to be larger than the figures for their normal savings accounts which aren't considered in nationally advertised saving statistics! Today,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

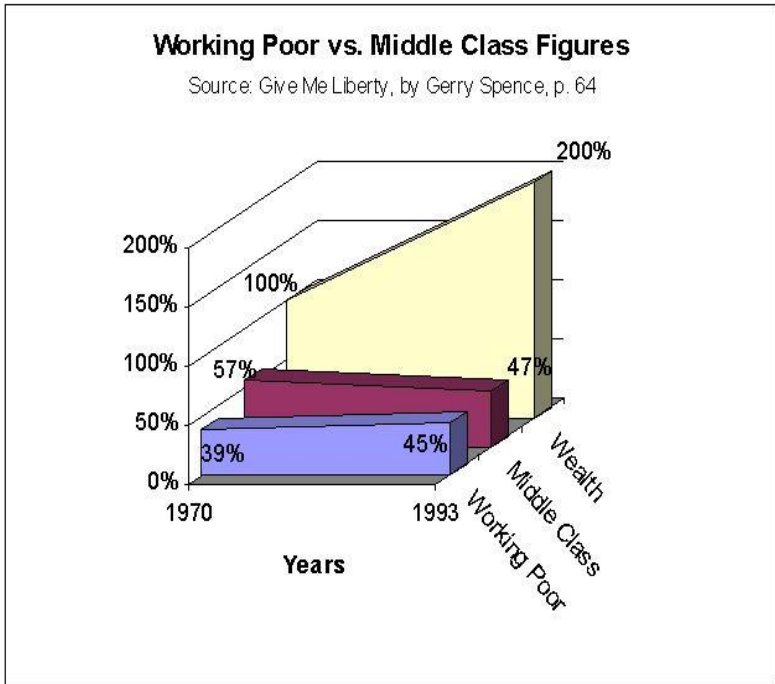


because America has had its savings vacuumed to a great extent by the Krell Welfare Machine, presently private industry only provides about 60% of this nations jobs...with the United States and government now supplying approximately the remaining 40%. Again, this was done through the Marxist Socialist veneer to slowly seize the mode of production: within the American home, and peel it open through Feminism, dismantle the main producer: the Father, then; harvest his wealth. From this, we have had the greatest transfer in wealth in the history of mankind. The money has gone from the American Family, where it is supposed to belong, directly to the State, the most corrupt, and inefficient place for it to be.

Above this tragedy, you have a missing charge-pump of the producers funding more small private business and industry by and through their own accrued savings. The national government has seized this money, and uses it to fund massive project from the top down, where large corporate Welfare clearly outstrips the Social Welfare this nation provides. But, this is done at a cost—and the cost is from the economic charge-pump of small investors and family savings investing small business and industry from the bottom-up. This perversion of a stable family charge-pump type of economic system, has exacerbated America's decline. Unfortunately, the real tragedy is; that America's economy is so big, it can mask the Feminist Welfare's failure by still taking the wealth from the top, where government seizes it from the Family, and thereby—many massive failures are thereby never seen or immediately felt by the American peoples. They live life, buffered on the productivity of those who worked anywhere from 5 to 10 years their prior. They have no idea of the real costs and the real drain on the American economic system by this surreptitious government and welfare extortion.



## CHAPTER FIFTEEN



From this, the producers, who once would have worked and saved, then after gaining some substance and/or substantial consideration (because they are the producers and are on the front lines of producing—and thereby, know and understand their markets) could extrapolate ideas from their experience and thereby create ideas or systems in which to better the marketplace, productivity or services that would help them as well as the nation. These people use to be able to obtain easy funding (and used to through family savings) which used to be stored in banks by working families who had worked and created such savings (surplusage as Eugene Weber noted in Chapter 3). From this, they would fund these producers who would then create new products, services and systems within the nation and the nation would grow once again. This economic cycle has been virtually vaporized because of the drain of the present Welfare system, especially upon men who have now been taken out of the job markets by women, and/or who have had their families destroyed by Welfare and from that financially attacked so that no savings nor future productivity can take place. There are generations of otherwise viable men who should have been future producers and creators of small and growing American businesses and Industries—which rather, have found them-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

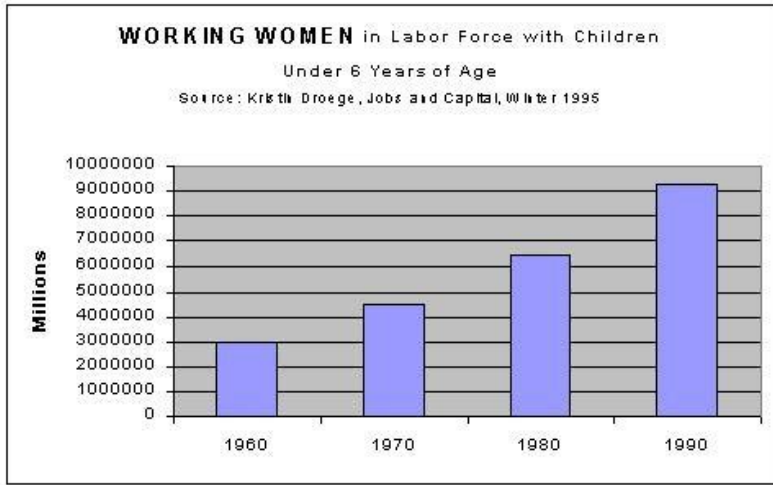
selves caught in the inescapable black-hole of devolution, cause by the direct intervention of Welfare into their lives.

The costs of these tragedies, are not 'just' a mere 1% in which Newt discusses above. What we are speaking of here, are productivity estimates that *could* conservatively range from anywhere from 5% to 10%, *or higher*, of this nations economic growth rate. What Newt considers a mere 1% as staggering, start adding up the simply rote figures of a 5% to 10% in which Welfare has effectively, and remember: "conservatively" stolen from this nation.

Add the attendant social costs as ingrained in the increased crime, teenage pregnancies, disease, death, injury, added costs and burdens to our schools and police, and prisons, and our court systems—mind you—all of which are negative burdens to our society and produce *nothing*. Zero. Not one muffin has been produced by such tragedies. We again, can conservatively double the 5% to 10% to again, a low figure of 15%. Add to that the lost productivity of those children involved, who couldn't answer 'the problem with no name' and we are again getting even higher estimates of national economic growth, that have been eternally lost to this nation. Add to this the lost production of 'producers' such as myself who can design and engineer products (and who should be doing so now) and services; and again—you begin to produce percentages that show incomprehensible wealth and productivity lost throughout this nation!

If you take the 5 Trillion debt which Welfare has cost to each individual American, we are speaking on the order of \$65,000 for each and every individual in the United States over the past 30 years. Add to this the 'low figure' of 15% loss of national economic growth, and you approach a conservative figure of every single American having approximately \$80,000 dollars *plus* the mere \$65,000 dollars owed from the 30 year cost of welfare which equals \$145,000 total, that has been missing from every-single American person in the United States over this period of time. These are the kind estimates. I estimate that each single American really has lost approximately \$500,000 stolen from it during this time period and again, that is a conservative estimate. What is *so* sad here is that we can only guesstimate generally in regards to this issue due to the fact that much of what we speculate here is redundant, and circular. For example, let's say for discussion that out of this 'conservative' \$145,000 estimate, that such an individual saved a mere \$2,000 of it which went to a small business investment.. That small business now hires three employees. Those employees both produce products which adds to the countries wealth, and *they too save*, thereby propagating future small business. Again, these future small businesses hire more people which further reduce the burden's of Welfare upon the society all the while inducing

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

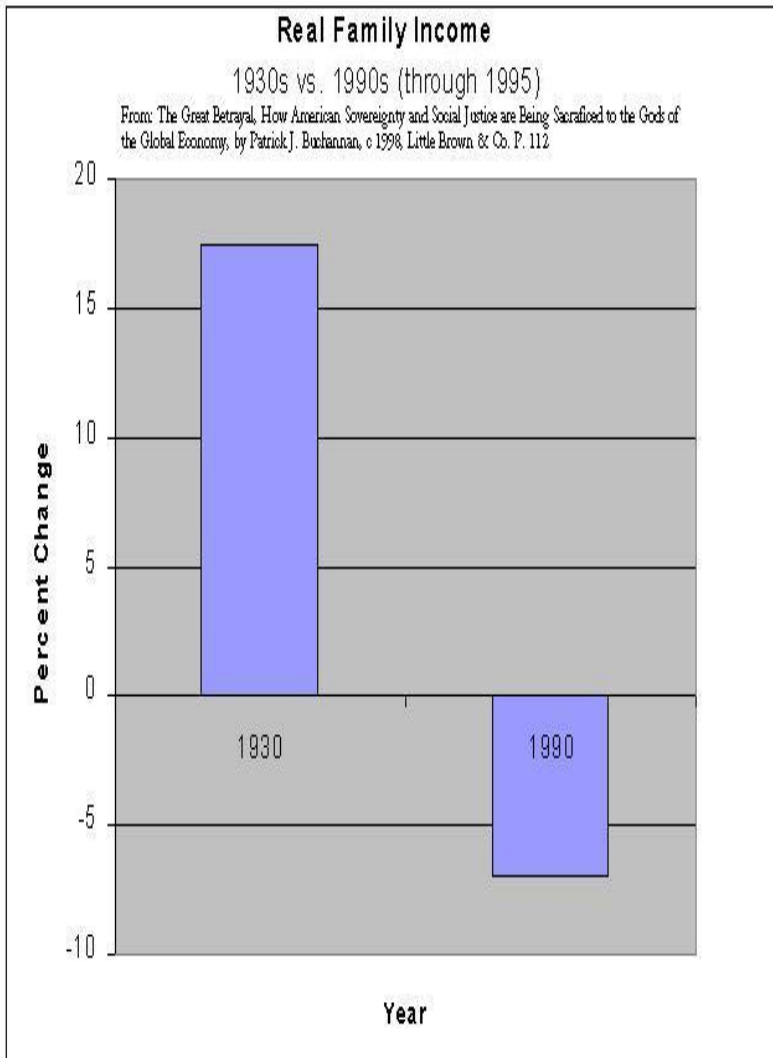


further productivity. Start to add this type of positive economic charge-pumping; and any financial model grows *exponentially*.

What could have each American done with an estimated *extra* \$145,000 over this same 30 year period?!? What industries could they have funded? How would they have provided better for themselves and thereby reduced the Welfare burden upon this nation? What new products and or new miracle technologies would have been produced?!? Well, we can only imagine. But, the effects on small business, the schools, and on American and foreign industry, would have been staggering. Where American ingenuity might have invested that \$145,000 dollars per individual American can be only speculated. But as an estimate, we are taking about a world-wide economic revolution which would have easily created not only an American Renaissance, but a World-Wide one also.

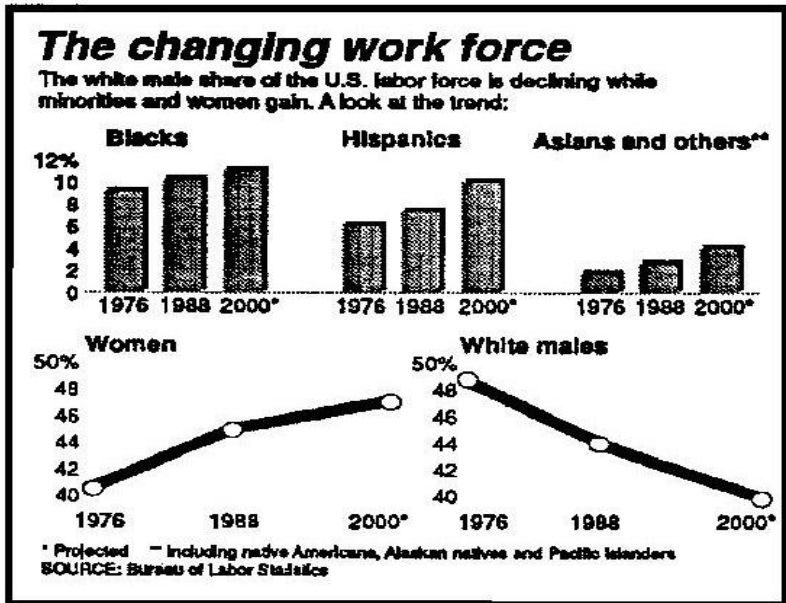
To solve Ms. Freidian's conundrum, generations of American women have been staying at home, becoming pregnant by exciting 'bad boys' and then producing *nothing*. Worse than that: they have produced dead wood to this society, something dragging us down generation after generation. The greatest benefit of this feminist movement is invisible to the American public. Such benefits the Feminist might pretend to have been accrued from this miserably failed experiment are in the kindest light: temporal. For the most part, the Feminist movement has created havoc, pain, anarchy and many deaths, all the while being a dead-wood not only to our economy, but are social stability as a whole. It has waged devolution upon us, all the while we technologically advance. The one, is most certainly, feeding off of the other. What we are speaking of here is clearly the effects of an intentional, catastrophic war.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



One of the larger tragedies to this construct is even more intimately related to this conversation. For it is in the reality of the generation of wealth itself. It is a factual dictum, that if you raise wealth within a society—the inceptional causal factors for welfare existing in the first place go down. There has been an incontrovertable corollary that the more wealthy a society, the more social pathology indexes go down. Wife beating goes down. Alcoholism, suicide, child abuse—the whole panoply of

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN



FROM: "America the Conquered" by Pastor Pete Peters, 1991, 1993, Scriptures for America Ministries, P.O. Box 766, LaPorte, CO. 80535; Lib.Cong.Cat.CardNo. 91-062772; p. 72

the essence of the Feminist mindset for existing—simply disappears to a great extent. This means, "real" Welfare is in fact—making society rich, so that these 'abuse' or casual factors for the Welfare state to begin in the first place *don't exist!*

For example, Patrick T. Murphy in his watershed book *Wasted, The Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, which intimately documents the failure of this system, documents the following analysis. He states that the cost of Welfare is over the \$16 Billion advertised figure, "when medical subsidies, food stamps, and other benefits are considered," the real total is well over \$150 Billion dollars a year. This astronomical amount is to essentially to 'save' 500,000 children a year. A quick calculation shows that we are spending on the order of \$30,000 a year on each child—or higher—to 'save' these children. Not many fathers can even make that amount, and because of that; they are imprisoned for it. These children, could well live by themselves very comfortably, if we just fired welfare and simply gave them the money. Unfortunately, Mr. Murphy quizzically documents the odd disappearance of these funds within these single-female headed households.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Six sisters, the oldest thirty-one and the youngest twenty, lived in the apartment with nineteen of their twenty-six children. The other seven lived with various relatives. None of the nineteen fathers played a significant role in their children's lives. The police filed criminal and abuse charges against the mothers. Then came headlines and TV footage, followed quickly by the apologists who defended the women as victims of poverty. But there arguments did not explain the cuts, bruises, belt marks, and cigarette burns on a four-year-old boy's body. Nor could the women's defenders explain what happened to more than \$6,000 a month in various welfare benefits that poured into the apartment. Based upon the sisters' criminal records, it is not irrational to believe that most of the money was going up someone's nose or into someone's arm. [*Wasted, The Plight of American's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick T. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago, IL 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; p. 99-100.]

As these aggregate figure's clearly document, we are burning our nations wealth for nothing more than a Feminist epiphany. Again, these disgraceful figures and analysis persist! Martin L. Gross, in his 1993 book, *A Call for Revolution*, makes a hauntingly similar analysis:

THE WELFARE PROGRAM, A NATIONAL DISGRACE: The Welfare system costs the taxpayer more than \$300 Billion a year—but if Uncle Sam wrote annual checks for \$14,700 to all 7.7 million poor families, it would cost only \$113 billion a year. [*A Call for Revolution, How Washington is Strangling America—and How to Stop It*, by Martin L. Gross, © 1993, Ballantine Books, A Division of Random House, Inc., New York, ISBN 0-345-38773-2, Back Cover]

This insanity has destroyed millions of men, stolen the wealth from this nation, and burdened the lives of American citizens, while directly destroying the lives of the children held hostage to and by this system. Clearly, this isn't solving anything, and more importantly—it isn't ever going to. It is time we proactively hunted and destroyed Welfare as an institution and re-established Fatherhood through the institution of Patriarchy.

## DREAMS DEFERRED

---

Add to this the dissipation of what our children have undergone. Without a solid foundation of either their fathers influence in their lives, and denied the specific advances the \$145,000 dollars per citizen, might have made, and how it would have impacted and improved their lives, we are in this case, most certainly looking at a quantum level transformation of society *which should have occurred, but did not*. This of course has also had massive impacts upon our children, unfortunately, to their detriment. This has been an unequivocal loss to this society, perhaps the

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

greatest damage to it quantitatively; the unconsummated dreams, of artists lost to this conflagration, the engineers who were not developed, the writers, poets, who had their dreams deferred, that were all sacrificed to Feminism, all to allow women to find their own answer to 'the problem with no name.'

What we can learn from this history is that females cannot care for their children or their homes without massive subsidy. We have also learned that Ms. Friedan and the rest of the feminist Hive have irresponsibly continually pushed this disaster upon the rest of America, while they along with government clearly recognized their failures and *should* have stopped this social experiment twenty years ago. Yet, they watched the problems which Feminist caused in this society, to grow exponentially—they willingly sacrificed millions of children's futures and did this *generationally*, all in which to sustain their self-serving agenda. Generations of American children were willingly destroyed all to build, maintain, and further expand their empires.. Even upon this sad recognition, those within the Radical Feminist mindset would willingly continue such failures for the next half century, as long as it served and forwarded their social agenda. Unlike the Fathers who forged the Re-Affirmation and Declaration at the Purple Heart House, who to a man; were worried not about themselves, but their families, their children, their wives and society in general; this new breed of feminist would happily destroy this nation, the children, the society, even themselves if it pushed their own agenda forwards. They will either accomplish their vision "to redesign humanity", or destroy us all in the trying. To these people there is no middle ground, there is no compromise, and such mere things such as our American rule of law, Religious doctrine or belief, or the Constitution itself, have no meaning to these people and such things are happily and easily decimated, pushed aside, and made impotent.

This impressed devolution has produced the next generation whom by their own observations of this cancer, and their resultant lowered expectations and future; have named themselves the "X" Generation. They will not do as well as their Parents or Grandparents; they do not expect to receive Social Security; or well-paying secure jobs; secured freedoms, or the rest of the seeds of the future American dream or experience. They recognize that their future has been cannibalized, and replaced with something that is unrecognizable, which scares them and all Americans; that unlike Patriarchy which is intent on planting seeds for future generations, this shallow feminist social experiment has greedily consumed this nation's future harvests; for profligate and perverted reasons. They fully understand they have been compromised, yet; like their Fathers before them who now suffer through these injustices and perverted realities, they can do nothing to change it. Most people across the social strata of Amer-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ica, are just pacing time, waiting for an un-definable 'something' to snap and drag this nation into another depression...or worse.

Fathers, who have been harvested by this despotic system, have had their wealth drained from them, have had to turn back to *their* fathers of a previous generation in which to live, further draining what savings or property were earned and saved for, for day-to-day living costs. What this has done is to destroy the last vestiges of generational families, it has cannibalized them, feeding both backwards to what past generations once earned, and also forwards into the future, draining our nations future economic success by presently massively burdening them with incredible debt. The "X" Generation is fully cognizant of this, and is militant about not paying into what were once stable national programs, such as Social Security. The nation of America is no longer finding amity or trust within the American experience, and generations themselves are beginning to factionalize. This is exacerbating further divisions within the society, which drains upon our future safety, as such a nation so divided, cannot stand.

However, Hillary and the Feminist Hive behind her do not consider these things. They have a death-grip on power, and will not let go. They have built a skyscraper, built from a fallow foundation constructed on lies, disinformation and Anti-American concepts—and they either will seize full power, and realize a complete socialist society, or they will destroy everything trying. Like Nero in Rome 2,000 years ago, they play their fiddle louder and louder to drown out the reality of the oncoming conflagration of the flames and utter destruction they set themselves, as though the sound of the music is protection itself, from the heat their fire is generating. They don't want to hear or recognize the screams of those who have died and are dying due to their ignorance and misguided Social destruction. Such music Hillary and others like her play in front of all Americans is only a substitute for conscience. Because they don't have any...that's how they got where they are today, by being amoral.

It is clear from the Feminist posturing, the State Legislature's, the President and many of the Governor's and other plenary branches and agencies of government—that they are intent *not* to change. In fact, they cannot change. It's impossible. They are too mad with power, they are too evil and lastly, they are stealing way too much money to have anything like morality or justice get in their way of accomplishing their Socialist agenda. The facts are clear: they are the foxes guarding the chicken coop...and 'We the People' who are the farmers, are having a tough time driving them out. We will have as much success with these special interest groups as the Farmer would in talking logically with a Fox.



## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

As you can see, a Fox has no idea what human language is, and our contemporary government has no idea what the Constitution, Liberty, or Freedom are anymore.

We can see this by a new law that just was passed in New York calling for the zero tolerance of alcohol while driving. If you drink and drive, the state will immediately seize your vehicle. It is so draconian, that it actually has made the news. It again, is an insolent seizure of power by ultimate force. They are essentially saying, that they have the 'vote'—they will vote in anything they can imagine, and then; it is up to us to fight the trillions of dollars of legal backing they have, not too mention the absolute fealty of a willing and corrupt Judiciary, which will happily go along with any such treason's. In fact, even before this, feminists such as Mothers Against Drunk Driving (MADD) have factually reintroduced Anti-Constitutional prohibition by a set of draconian laws that makes it illegal to drink and drive—no matter how much you've drunk. This new 'Zero Tolerance' law goes further, seizing and stealing the cars from people who come out of bars and drive *before* they have ever gotten to trial! This new law says, that even if you win the case, you 'may not' get your property back. This of course is reprehensible towards our system of law and governance—but these people care nothing about American law. They care nothing about concepts such as legality or constitutionalism.

Now we can understand what the 'leakage' of what Feminism wrought against us all. When MADD first organized (again on the fast track with massive under-the-table funding), it was only to get those excessive drinkers off the street. Then it went to those with large amounts of alcohol in their blood. Then, the State Legislatures predictably lowered the amount of alcohol in the blood and was able to make more even more arrests. The amount was reduced even further. And now, we have pure draconian theft by those wearing the badges, pretending to obey the law.

Such laws shock the conscious of most Americans. But these people imposing such illegal laws have no conscious. They don't believe in America, nor do they believe in the laws of Liberty. We are 'supposed to willingly give such things up' to better society....to 'make it more safe.' Meanwhile, society devolves because it is becoming a Socialist/Fascist regime, embedded with thousands of government workers who will willingly steal from their fellow Americans, and then feign the "Morbis Complex" when presented with the opposite rights secured by the Constitution. There will not be *one* person within government who will either resign from this obvious unconstitutional law, nor will their be *one person* who will dare defy implementing these illegal acts. In obeying this new "law" they are in fact, effectively violating their oath of office, and their own form of government by blindly following such profligatery.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Like those violating their oath in destroying and stealing from Fathers, all these people are well aware where their 'daily bread' comes from. They don't care about the Constitution, and the last thing in the world these immoral people will do, is either uphold it, or especially, raise a hand to defend it.

And that is the ultimate paradigm. It is as Brad Rhunt insolently notes "Where do you go when [we] won't obey your laws anymore?"

So, we can no longer expect any of the three branches of government to work any longer. They are mad with power and greed, and because of that—they can't change. So the fourth branch of government accordingly, (We the People) must rise up as dictated in the Declaration of Independence, and forcibly set things right again. Indeed, they will never allow citizens to 'use systems of redress' in which to fight such laws—but what most citizens don't know is that telephone calls have already been made, deals done, money passed—and the fix is in way before you ever get to court. Your case is decided *previously* by economic and social necessity, the only thing that 'might' change the eventuality is the harsh light of full media coverage and the present outrage of the citizenry. As for Fathers Rights, the 'bright light' of open public recognition has not been afforded us, and we have been annihilated due to the planned obfuscation of the courts and the media in regards to our issues. Nonetheless, I think by experience, even the most uneducated among us is revolted by the present unacceptable state of affairs.

The letters arrive weekly, like a trail of unpaid bills. They have come regularly since my involvement with the murder trial of O.J. Simpson, correspondence from all over the country, from men and women, black and white, waitresses and doctors, all of them frustrated by something they lump together as "the system."

Such people also seek me out to ask my advice on repairing this "system," which in their eyes is s thick soup of cynical and manipulative lawyers, unwise and unethical judges, and a glacial and impersonal bureaucracy. [*Divorced From Justice, The Abuse of Women and Children by Divorce Lawyers and Judges*, by Karen Winner, HarperCollins Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022, ISBN 0-06-039184-7; p. Xi.]

One other sad conclusion about this, is that the Feminist in order to accomplish their Anti-American social revolution, they compromised the Patriarchal and American ideals and attributes of our sense of fair play and charity, buy using the government institution of Welfare to accomplish their socialist goals. Because of this misappropriation of this nations welfare system for social revolutionary purposes, the truly needy have been driven into deeper poverty, and have been stuck into cycles of depression and despair because their monies (or social opportunities) have

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

been squandered for Radical Feminist purposes. The truly needy, such as the mentally retarded, our war Veterans (especially Vietnam and Desert Storm War Veterans), the crippled and the disabled all are living in subsistence conditions due to the fact that the feminist creation of the Single Female Headed Household is such a financial burden to our economic system. Thereby, any ability to take such people *who truly need Welfare*, many of which really want to ascend out from the chains of government subsidy—are locked into a subsistence lifestyle while their dreams go deferred in which to support a Feminist institution, which many of them do not agree with in the first place.

Again, this has added another component of ‘dead wood’ to our society, that for the greater part, might not be there, if given a modicum of a financial support for many of these people to reach their dreams of which they are capable. But for many of these people who are so debilitated that they cannot and will not ever be able to rise out of government assistance, they have been severely compromised by this Feminist Revolution which has captured their share of Welfare and which keeps these people in miserable subsistence-level conditions, when this nation could in fact, without such Feminist compromises, would be able to sustain a higher level life-style for many of these persons who truly require and need a viable American Welfare system in which to support them.

This is where this present system is trying to push men into: a ‘dead wood’ society, in which to ruin them. Like myself, this system has taken once normally viable and resilient men—and pushed them into abject poverty. Unlike Single Female headed household’s who bemoan that they are going into poverty, or unlike this nations truly needy, such as the crippled, or paraplegic; men are bound into an even worse poverty, held there; and then intentionally imprisoned for being poor—*all the while these ‘supposed’ insane amounts of Child support continually rise while they are in prison!! Soon, these men have their names on national FBI ‘wanted’ posters for child support, with amounts ranging from 20,000 to 100,000 or higher!!!!* And these amounts only grow. They can only get bigger—because this is how the system is designed. What is most odd, is that these men *never* either could afford or developed these insane amounts of money, had they been left alone to their own economies to either develop or buy something for their own selves.

Meanwhile the ‘system’ and anti-male feminists along with the most base assemblage of society whom only think by their arrogant self-righteousness, invectively scream at these men in their inventiveness: "You shouldn’t have had a child then!" Not one of these idiots never shouts this disclaim to any woman—it’s only the men—who are only in this predicament, *NOT* because they had children; but because they had children *AND THEN GOVERNMENT INTENTIONALLY MADE IT*

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

*THEIR PLAN TO ENSLAVE THEM, AND DRIVE THEM INTO ENTER-NAL POVERTY FOR THAT NORMAL HUMAN ACT.* This is their 'real' "crime." And this is the exact same identical "crime" our children, about 50 percent of them, mostly boys, will inherit. Soon, however, girls will inherit this same problem as these outlaw courts give more and more men their children in order to try and cover-up their past crimes of being bi-ased against men, in favor of women in custody disputes.

"Females," who commit the 'supposedly' same "criminal" act—of be-ing poor—are presently left to go free and suffer no penalties from gov-ernment. Not only that—they get essentially—a life-long subsidy and eternal protections of the state. They can do no wrong, they suffer no damage, they lose no license, they have no wealth stolen from them...they are not hunted nationally.

Only men are.

### REDRESS IN LAW

---

"I don't believe in the legal system anymore." [*I Want To Tell You, My responses to your Letters, your Messages, Your Questions*, by O.J. Simpson ©1995, by Orenthal Productions Inc., Little, Brown and Com-pany, New York, ISBN 0-316-34100-2; p. 86] said O.J. Simpson in his book, *I Want to Tell You*. He is no longer alone.

Not many believe in this system—including the Feminists and needy mothers whom now seek its support, yet; whose support through the "Sir Galahad" complex is quickly eroding due to the impact of the great Le-viathan of men's rights groups whom are just beginning to stir in protest against this insanity.

To many, many, many millions of Americans, (and surprisingly law-yers); this system is totally alien to them. Presently, more American's understand the precepts of fundamental Moslem law more than they un-derstand our own contemporary "American" corporate court systems. The First Continental Congress adoption of the common law, as "the law of the highest reason" has long ago been obliterated in favor "something else" in which many American's do not recognize nor comprehend. American's fear our courts and police for a reason, they fear our Judges, our Legislatures who pass indomitable laws, and an Executive power that is more Foreign Imperialist than it is constitutional. Yet these people in-habiting the corridors of power, will tell you with a straight face that they are your 'public servants' and that they are 'upholding the law.' Frankly, they are liars.

In one sense, this is predictable. In another, almost humorous. These stupid people, who designed this anti-male, Anti-American, Anti-Law court system; by their use of nepotistic, and illogical set of base laws which they have widely implemented within these court systems, come

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

from fallow doctrines, and outright greed. They have designed a system which was doomed to failure from the start. They threw away the solid logic and free concepts of freedom and responsibility which Western Civilization developed over 5000 years, and which used to be the foundation of their jurisprudence, they replaced that with a false God of Feminist Jurisprudence—and now they are in angst that the system is collapsing in upon its own stupidity, after such a short life span. Of course this ‘new law’ which Hillary and all her elite want us to continue to depend upon, needs a massive overhaul, and if they implement new laws to overhaul it (most certainly implemented in the name of "efficiency" for the courts) they may get this insanity to limp along again for yet another 10 years...but it is engineered to complete failure, unlike the "Law of the Highest Reason" which in its main form, has lasted Western Civilization on the order of 5000 years and could go another 5000 if we would just let it. But that is impossible, because such reinstitution, means to again reestablish, logic, freedom, truth, liberty, and justice. Something our courts haven't seen in a long, long, time. It also means the realignment of power back to the male, which provided TRUE family law, and the resultant stability from within the home in the first place.

Yet, this ‘corporate court’ is the power of which the feminist most rely upon and wield against others with a vengeance. For even though they are not a major portion of our civilization, having a mere several thousand person membership—they are a major part of our government and our media, and especially court systems. As Daniel Moynihan and others found out in the 60s, you do not dare go against the feminists: even if you are telling the truth. Many others have found this fact out: that the feminists are fascists—and if you dare cross them—well, then telephone calls are made...

What has transpired in this nation with feminism is a very serious thing, it should be a very serious consideration for all Americans. The reason for this is related in a story I heard while down in Los Angeles. I cannot even remember who told this to me, but; it is indicative of what we are speaking of here. This person said that they were at a convention of some type and ‘accidentally’ walked into a speech that was given by Radical Feminist Senator Diane Feinstein. This person mistakenly entered the room, saw Ms. Feinstein, saw about thirty women sitting before her listening, became embarrassed of his mistake upon entering the room, and then quickly left. We all have witnessed this sort of mistake in our lives, yet; before he left the room he felt an eerie sense as if he was in the Twilight Zone. He stopped to take a look at the room, and he said he noticed that all the women were wearing a plain white top with a dark blue skirt underneath, and they appeared almost to be sitting at attention while they intently listened to Ms. Feinstein. He said, "I got an eerie sen-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

sation that I was watching the Brownshirt's of the early Nazi regime of WWII," He told me that the picture remained vivid in his mind, and left him shaken.

But we don't have to look at this unattributed story to understand this. All we have to do is look at the present hate mindset in which inhabits Feminism from its inception, from considering sperm a "virulent poison" to the present where women are serious advocating eradicating all men. But the more important point is here—that exactly like the Nazi's in WWII, we have had a group effectively overthrow our nations laws in order to support a mindset as opposite, radical and virulent as the Nazi Brownshirt's of WWII. And, if in the best-case scenario such women are in fact not these "Brownshirt's" then; by the systems and surreptitious manner in which they have effectively thrown away these nations laws, we should be *very disturbed* as to this occurring as—if the Feminists are not a new Fascist Regime, then; someone else—using these same perverse systems to effectively overthrow our form of governance, will compromise this nation. However, noting this, I am of the opinion, that these Feminists are indeed a direct threat to the safety and welfare of this nation, and I do believe they are a greater threat to this nation than any outside foreign influence, for they are a silent domestic enemy from within. And now, we have internal systems of governance collapsing under their pressure and influence. The American court system is our most egregious example of this.

When the Committee to Examine Lawyer Conduct in Matrimonial actions was formed, however, it was not without controversy. The committee was made up of entirely lawyers and judges, with no one representing the interests of the consumers. To make matters even more one-sided, when the committee began examining the findings of the *Women in Divorce* report, I [a feminist--RLCII] was the only nonlawyer called in to testify privately. I publicly complained in an op-ed piece carried by *New York Newsday*. Mark Green complained too, as did advocacy groups like the National Coalition for Family Justice. The complaints obviously served their purpose, because a few weeks after the private hearing, the committee decided to hold three public hearings, which were hastily scheduled in the following weeks. Scores of women called in to testify. [*Divorced From Justice, The Abuse of Women and Children by Divorce Lawyers and Judges*, by Karen Winner, HarperCollins Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022, ISBN 0-06-039184-7; p. xxxi]

As the Cato institute and others have noted, there is a serious defect in our contemporary court systems. Believe me, having been in the front lines of these skirmishes, I can personally attest to you, this corruption is worse than you can imagine. Let us take the most benign example first, then work towards the most massive corruption. Mind you, the inane

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

simple corruption's are he worst, because they are the most benign, and affront to the viewer a reality that is perverted yet, acts as if norm. This of course, has begun to subvert the American mind-set such that contemporary generations, who have been intentionally dumbed down by our nations school system, actually think such actions are normal and are of no consequence. By these surreptitious aberrations, this nations courts have effectively subverted our nations laws and constitutions and replaced them with 'something else' in which no-one truly understands or is willing to confront.

For instance, in United States District Court in Los Angeles case number IFP 98-4686, I wrote up an Injunction against what was commonly referred to as the "Fatherhood Summit," which was being held by the California Department of Social Services in June of 1998 (this summit is discussed previously in chapter XX). One of the things that unnerved me about the "Judges" and the "magistrates" (Only signed as "Civil Duty M.J." whose name I could not read), was that the denial of this injunction was based on: 1.) "Inadequate showing of indigence, 2.) The "Declaration in Support of Request to Proceed In Forma Pauperis" submitted by plaintiff Marshall is incomplete. 3.) Also, no other plaintiff has submitted a declaration, and finally 4.) A pro per plaintiff may not represent other plaintiffs on a class.

First off, on item 1., Mr. Marshall put down less than \$15,000 a year, which in Los Angeles is an extreme hardship condition. (Not only that, given in the light of the reality, that no American citizen can afford even to go to court anymore—it should have been passed right through—but it wasn't, *for corrupt political reasons*). Also, that he was a father asking this is even more glaring, as the courts know most of us are under attack and in war-time conditions. But it was the ruling that we couldn't place forwards this "as a class" that got me angry...not to mention that in another document where we patently asked for "**trial by jury**" they responded that we would get a "jury trial" (something completely different). Clearly, from these actions we can see the inner mechanisms of Hillary Clinton's feminized courtroom machine, and we can readily see that it is corrupt, and totally broke. Courts no longer provide redress. They are only there to impede redress.

These courts aren't here to solve problems—they're here to exacerbate them, to control people, to instill total hopelessness within them. When people "use the system" as Hillary and all those Socialists embedded within the corridors of power get on Television and continuously make the point that: "Oh...we *have to* use the 'system'." "Use the present 'systems of redress'" they incessantly beseech us all...

We do. And factually, as this case clearly demonstrates—these systems of redress do not work. There is no redress in America any longer.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Now, these idiot "Judges" from the Supreme court down, who supposedly "own" this draconian monopoly, will fetidly inform us that: "Oh! But if we allow justice, then our courts will be *flooded* with requests by citizens for justice."

Of course they are wrong. Again, applying simple powers of observation and abstract reasoning would show the exact opposite, and indeed; it is upon this analysis that these courts along with the government and the feminists keep injustice as a close kept weapon in their arsenal against the American father.

Factually, our courts are *already flooded* with people seeking justice, **and factually not getting it**. This is the 'real' industry of today's courts. Without these modern draconian courts of Inquisition, government and local counties, states and the Federal government would not be able to harvest the trillions they are directly stealing from Americans by the application of such injustice. The simple officer or government state actor wouldn't be trying many of the crimes they perpetrate against private citizens because they would know and understand in the first instance that our courts actually *worked, and provided redress*. It is for the want of justice, which instigates the criminals within government to initiate the many injustices they impose against society: *because they know that they can get away with it, and beyond that; will be actually **protected** by the present criminal 'corporate' court systems within the United States*. Indeed, this goes not only against the true foundational tenants of American governance, it is factually crimes of high-treason committed against every-single-American alive...for it is the American populace who must publicly fund such madness.

For instance, in every-single courtroom I have walked into, these entities are doing *insane amounts of business*. From Chico, to New York City, these courts are flooded with people trying to place the round peg in the round hole in which to seek justice. They have no idea that they are coming up to a blank wall with no holes in it what-so-ever...and that this is done by design!!! The courts are nothing but a blind-fold in which unsuspecting citizens blindly keep on pushing their peg into a massive blank wall. They never will get their round peg to fit, because there is no adjoining round hole for which they can correspondingly find. This is the factual state of our present court systems.

Most people cannot even afford this insanity. Most citizens, plead "not guilty" (when they shouldn't be pleading at all, thereby not entering the criminal jurisdictions of these courts) and the 'benevolent' "Judge" then assigns them a court appointed "Public Defender." A large portion of these citizens, never get to meet their "Public Defender" until the day and *minute* of the trial. When they do, their name is called and they are making the first introductions. The Judge allows the "Public Defender" to



## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

speak with his client for anywhere from 15 seconds to maybe even a full minute. Then the 'deal' is struck, (which only means that the defendant is poor and cannot defend himself and the DA and Judge can now try and financially ruin him to his limits), and Judgement is passed. I've personally watched this over and over, and I have actually timed such proceedings which take anywhere from 45 seconds to "maybe" five minutes.

In fact, in this United States District Court, every single time I was there I saw *huge* lines extending out into the hall, sometimes 100 to 150 people every hour on the hour entering this court to file paperwork. I conservatively estimate we are speaking of approximately 500 people a day enter this one facility, and at \$150 each we are speaking of profits that range about \$75,000 per day! At the 'family court' facility of Los Angeles I saw lines extending way outside the court. This facility is either five or six stories high, about 100 by 100 yards long, and has a huge four story parking structure! Indeed, these facilities are huge. Even in the smallest county these facilities are overflowing—they can't handle the work-loads in which other Feminist systems of government keep shoveling into them.

I make the assertion, that if Mr. Marshall's (along with all others) received true justice, which our courts are 'supposed' to be dealing in, then; the present insanity would collapse and in fact so would the lines (and so would the attendant reality that the national public fund this insanity). Because if Le Roy had been heard and had received Justice, then; many of these feminized people within government wouldn't be pulling half the criminal things they are pulling now in the first place! If American's received simple justice from their courts, then the present system of government would not find injustice marketable. The crimes of government could no longer pass the simple scrutiny of American Justice and Law. People would be able to live more free and, if they had true access to the law and to Justice, then, most things would be resolved immediately, before they even got to court.

Unfortunately, because of the courts willing conspirators to this present malfeasance, many important social questions are *not* being addressed. Worse yet, many people are suffering through inhumane injustice. And the largest problems we face are of an uncontrolled government which is not being properly restrained from either corruption or from overstepping its authority. Many Police, Social Workers and many other government officials are laughing at private citizens when they are fulfilling their "quota's" in which to receive their public funding. What is most tragic is that in a large majority of cases, these citizens being attacked by these government actors are poor, and such systems now depend upon them and harvest them continually...because factually the various agencies see the poor as a crop, and when these people do not *exactly* jump through all the hoops of their new administrative masters, well; they go

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

back to court, have their fines or jail times increased—and then are further indebted to this insanity. This is another reason why children entering into this system remain in it. Factually, it is a well designed trap...as described earlier...it is a Chinese Finger Torture by design. Few "criminals" entering this system ever truly leave it. (The 'industry' must keep its product in cycle—and it does—for 10 to 20 years). For at a whim, anyone can knock on their door, and 'pretend' some violation has occurred and because of these malfeasant courts, these people unjustly attacked for their 'malum prohibitum' crimes (government claims some act is 'illegal') they will never get out of prison. We see many citizens cycled in this system *endlessly*.

This nation was never supposed to be a nation of prisons. In fact, it was Blackstone who said that "it is better that ten guilty persons escape than one innocent suffer." [*Commentaries*, Sir William Blackstone, (1765-1769)] Now, many government systems intent on keeping their quota's alive will happily place 10 innocent people into jail to 'capture' one small-time hood. "Law and Order" these people will scream—all the while 'winking' at their fellow elite compatriots who are pushing the same elite agenda. Again, this is the mythological manufacturing of Fatherhood into bogeymen to satisfy eternal feminist abuse statistics has placed many poor fathers into prison, with no direct evidence other than a wife or a coerced child pointing and saying "he did it."

This of course has turned our system of government and courts upside down. Supreme Court Justice Tom C. Clark noted this lesson when he stated, "Nothing can destroy a government more quickly than its failure to observe its own laws, or worse, disregard the character of its own existence." [*Foundations of Freedom: A Living History of Our Bill of Rights*, by John H. Rodehamel, Stephen F. Ruhde and Paul Von Blum, Los Angeles Constitutional Rights Foundation, ©1991; p. 97.] This is what feminism embellishes, the anti-character of our nation, and it has fully impressed its flawed precepts upon our Judiciary, and our Judiciary in attending to this pressure, has overturned our own laws, and its own foundational doctrines in which to pursue this socialist epiphany. For in fact, to maintain the Feminist myth—the courts are forced to change. They cannot have a fair and just system when another system is using it to enforce a political regime. As Hillary puts it: "To redesign humanity." This is why, such acquiescence is such a danger to us all, and this is why those woman who 'looked' like the Nazi Brownshirt's of WWII are such a danger—because when any political philosophy overturns a system of law based upon the intrinsic foundational precepts of freedom, liberty, equality and justice; then you in fact do not have freedom, liberty and equality and justice within that system anymore. This is a simple mathematical identity reasoning. What you have is a 'replacement' for those

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

things in which to meet the requirements of the new social order. (The elite's 'redesign' of which they only know the blueprint). This is why many modern observers of our Judiciary are disturbed over the new countenance in which inhabits our court system. It is because this new rogue entity is not based and most certainly not in alignment with the foundational doctrine of our true American nation, either under the common law, or within the maxims of law, nor even the American construct of law. What most certainly has replaced these court systems is something more malevolent. Something more certainly prone to abuse and errant discretion. In fact, modern feminism could never had made the gains it has without the concomitant help of these errant tribunals which now overturn justice.

Indeed, re-establish the simple order of the courts, and much of what is happening within them will vanish. Many cases will never even reach the court in the first place. For instance, in chapter XX I told of a Mexican named Carlos who was imprisoned for "Child Abuse," for sexually molesting a young boy. In looking at that case, I noted; that there was absolutely no evidence, nothing. Zero. (Just people pointing at him and saying: "He did it.") Which under our system of government and the courts, there was nothing that could place him into jail. I forcefully posed to this to Carlos' lawyer, whom the family, in their desperation retained at great cost to them. The court, threatened Carlos with life imprisonment. In solitary confinement, this man was beaten by the inmates and threatened constantly. The lawyer sent word to him that 'if' he agreed to plea bargain, he 'might' get six years instead of life.

I told the family to tell Carlos to not accept this 'deal', that he would get screwed in the end, and if he was really innocent, which; I can only tell you as a gut feeling that he truly was, that he had to rough it out. Well, unfortunately, excepting telephone calls, the family could not get my recommendations to him, and as trial took place, Carlos plead guilty and received his sentence of ten years. Again, he got screwed. No longer are we looking to listen to Blackstone's inculcation's, no longer are we large or noble enough "that ten guilty persons escape than one innocent suffer." We are factually cannibalizing our own poor citizen's to feed Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine.

Now Carlos' lawyer fully knew what he was doing, because I stuck it right in his face. The Judge, who unfortunately for Mr. Carlos, was the illustrious "Cocaine Annie." She also knew what she was doing. They all do. But it's just *business*. That's all. Just business, and we the American citizenry shouldn't really care, because *we* aren't the ones going into prison, only Carlos is. We are safely within the Fourth Box, quietly allowing the "law and order" elite's license to unlawfully destroy and cannibalize people as a direct affront to our system of law and justice.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Well, the American citizenry are wrong. For we all are going into prison with Carlos because we are funding this insanity which is eating up more and more of our nations wealth. Not only that; as a low Mexican laborer—Carlos really isn't worth much to our economy, excepting the fact that we find such people as Carlos in agriculture and many labor intensive areas of our economy which contribute to a low cost of food and other products and services within this nation that we all enjoy. So, I say Carlos is important, and that his unjust incarceration at the hands of a newly established 'efficient' court system is much more of a crime. He was a laborer, his whole family was, and although poor he contributed 'something' to us all. I say all these people are important, and I say we start obeying our own laws, and start letting the 10 people guilty go, to protect that one innocent person, such as Carlos and more importantly—enforcing and protecting American laws of justice and procedure. Presently, Carlos is not producing that meager function in society, and instead he is incurring a greater debt to the society as a whole. But he is making money for the prison system and the elite's whom profit greatly from this evil perversion. Now again, this is needless, especially in the light that our courts are *not* supposed to run this way. The fact that they do, in which to fund a feminist mindset, means that something is very, very broke.

What is *most* unfortunate about Carlos, and really what is a direct indictment against this whole system is that, Carlos is making more money (for someone else) as a prisoner, than he ever could as a private citizen. Carlos makes 'maybe' \$15,000 a year (I'm being generous here). In jail, he is accruing on the order of \$30,000 to \$50,000 a year to keep him in prison. Think about this. "Society" in keeping such men in jail, and really, many men who—'perhaps' are there for small time drug and alcohol offenses [only approximately 15 percent of our jail population are 'real' criminals, the violent, the murderers, the thieves, the embezzlers, rapists, etc.; the 'majority' of our prison population, about 80 percent, are in prison for malum prohibitum crimes such as alcohol drunk driving, "deadbeat dads," drug use, etc.] and other pesky community related crimes. These 'prisoners' (mostly men) are worth more to 'someone' accruing a larger income in prison than they do in the outside world! Would society consider just 'halving' these amounts—lets say instead of paying \$30,000 a year to keep in prison, say rather just 'giving' a person convicted of Pot possession \$15,000 a year to stay at home? Society might. But the Krell Welfare Machine wouldn't...those Police, Judges and prison guards would moan about 'law and order' and quietly stand in fear of their jobs and profits upon such any conceivable suggestion such as this...might vaporize.

Now, let's take the argument that in the light of truth and of God, that Carlos is really guilty. That he's snowed us all over. That the child he

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

supposedly sodomized was in fact the true victim here Under these true realizations, do we, as this nation *have to still let Carlos go free?* Just because of the American legal concept that we not imprison innocent people as to assure a greater system of justice? Do we attend to the discipline that we uphold our rule of law, that under proper evidence and rules of procedure we convict and sentence our criminals and more importantly *do we assure a system of redress that factually will allow our innocent every opportunity to go free?* The answer of course is an unequivocal yes. For if we do not obey this primacy mandate which this nation was founded upon, what nation will!??? How do we explain our national existence? That we're America—but we have ignoble laws which supercede the true constitutional law just like every other terrorist regime? If the corporate entity which pretends to be the Elite ruling regime doesn't obey American laws and concepts in America—then were do we American's go to experience our country called America?? Where do we go to find American law?

Perhaps Mr. Brad Rhunt can answer this pesky question...

Presently, under our present court system, we have the exact opposite of this American concept of adhering to procedures which free the greatest amount of possible innocent people. What we are addressing here is a complete fracture within our Judiciary, so profound, and so deep, as to mandate its immediate suspension, total dismantling and the immediate institution of a new "Non-ABA" judiciary. From this empirical analysis, we must re-establish a properly working Judiciary, with totally reconstituted Judges who once again align themselves with the American foundational precepts of governance, the strict adherence to the Constitution and most importantly, their oaths of office. We must have redress and justice within our American courts once again.

Again, the sheer amounts of people entering these institutions shows that something is severely broke. Another symptom which clearly demonstrates this is the proliferation of the term "I'm only doing my job," which many within various government agencies now say to us as an excuse for their treason's in adhering and administering unconstitutional acts. This of course was the exact equivocation of the WWII Nazi's. We as a citizenry didn't accept that then—nor should we now—especially, when it is being said by our own 'supposed' "public servants."

These documented perversions within our courts is but one reason why the majority of fathers never enter these courts in the first place, yet another indicator of the failure of this system. These courts are a fast-track for Feminist organizations who most assuredly have their paperwork filed and entered into court. I dare say we have no Feminist organizations nationwide which are complaining of being denied filing of proper legal paperwork of which I have most readily observed on our

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

side, over and over and over again. (This of course as we have addressed previously) is proof that we have a one way street within our court systems. From these facts there can be no wonder why these courts have given approximately 90 percent (a low figure) of the children to their mothers and not their fathers. Again, the feminist wild claims that this figure is really anywhere from 50 percent (low feminist figure) to 80 percent of Fathers obtain their children in court—which is not just laughable, but side-splitting lie! "IF" these courts even gave 'close' to 25 percent of custody cases to fathers, you'd hear a cacophony of screams from the Radical Feminists which would be storming Congress in protest of such courts—we have yet to see that. "IF" these courts were in fact giving 50 percent of all court custody fights to fathers, then—you'd have a meltdown of this whole system. Within two years there would be a nation of fathers entering the courts, within four to five years you'd see a complete reversal of the Single Female Headed Household within this nation, Welfare rates would collapse and Family courts would be barren. Counties, States and Federal government's would be losing Billions of dollars. Again, any such affirmation by Feminists (which all the studies I have seen on such affirmations of 80 percent or higher court custody figures, have come from feminist groups and studies) is *laughable*—if this whole situation weren't so serious.

Now, this is not to say that there has not been a reversal of mindset within these courts. There has, and it has been directly due to the modern Fathers Rights movement. These courts have much explaining to do in which, they cannot explain their actions even under the most lenient circumstances given the most favorable light. The facts are glaring, that they have been abjectly discriminatory, in direct violation of their oath of office and against all laws even in the Feminist Jurisprudence light of law. There has been a real fracture and an enslavement of society that they cannot hide, so; they are just pacing time presently and trying to 'catch-up' by giving more men custody than in previous generations. [Categorically, miniscule amounts—for the Krell Welfare Machine shows no sign of abating its present industry.] They are trying to do this without enraging the feminists, something they regret making their bed to, and now are very reluctant to sleep in it.

This of course totally obliterates the Feminist position which has stated for the past half-century that men are irresponsible Fathers and that they run away. Well, strangely, they are not running away, and as the courts actually give more Fathers custody of their children, we are seeing a huge reserve of Fathers waiting in the wings, ready, willing and able to assume these children—***with absolutely no cost to the County, State or Federal governments.*** This of course, has this whole institution patently frightened...for if they lose the bogeyman they've established within the

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

American mindset against the Father over the past half-century the Feminist lose Billions. If Fathers accept their children and assume custody, again; they lose Billions. If the Fathers obtain their children and the State makes no money off of them by they creating Single Father Headed Household's, again; they lose Billions. They have helped the Feminists open up this Pandora's Box of filth within the law, and now; nobody wants to assume the responsibility for these fallow acts. There is no money in Fatherhood, and for the Krell Welfare Machine—that is really Fatherhood's greatest problem...

Uncovering the real truth about Fatherhood is going to be a hard reality for many within the present system, for first, exactly like the Nazi's of WWII, it will be a direct testimony against the Anti-Father, Anti-Family practices, policies and procedures that this nation and a criminal court system, has propagated over the last half-century.. Secondly, the re-establishment of Fatherhood is going to collapse the present system, and it is going to force women to reinforce their family bonds, (which many women will find comfort in, contrary to feminist mythology), and more specifically, their marriage bonds. This of course will give a new validation to the institution of marriage and make it more stable. As women again find sanctuary within marriage rather than divorce, thereby divorce will drop, this again will cost the Feminist model who hates marriage, a loss of Billions of dollars. Once women realize that there is no money or power in having children: the Krell Welfare Machine turns off.

So, presently the courts are caught in a conundrum they can't win. They are slowly bringing up the Father custody rates, and from this miniscule amount of men (with hundreds of thousands waiting in the wings) they are starting to see huge impacts within their Krell Welfare Machine. They go too much further, and the machine will simply stop. They know this, and they do not dare stop their 'daily bread' lest they all starve outright. Again, so much rests on all this, that; much effort is right now being placed on what will happen in these courts. Nobody knows—for anyway you add it up—the system itself loses. All we are discussing here now, are by what massive amounts will allow the least impacts against government.

It is because of this primary flaw in today's courts, which have subverted themselves to a corrupt feminist agenda, that in fact; no Father can really enter these courts. Now, because of the perversion within the law, and its total dissimulation of logic—the courts are becoming more and more reluctant to allow even women into these courts! These courts have zero to do with law. They have nothing to do with Justice. They are remotely askew from doing something right, sensible or reasonable. In fact, I have come to *depend* upon them doing the wrong thing...in fact...this is how present people who work with this system how they combat against

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

it. When you file your paperwork, immediately think of what the wrong thing to do is, what is most unjust, unreasonable and stupid: and that is *exactly* what the court will do. That last observation usually costs other people four to five years in law school and about two years in practice to figure out. Many feminists and women who are now entering these courts to attempt to truly seek justice—are *just beginning to realize what monster they themselves created*. They killed our courts of justice, they opened a Pandora's Box and enjoyed the greatest part of those perversions, and now—that they find themselves the targets of injustice, they are taken back by all this, by the monster in which they themselves have created in these courts. They have no idea how to handle the injustice they have developed throughout these perverse monster courts, they don't know what to do or how seek what we could readily depend upon in our past courts. And that was plain justice.

Yet...all that would have to happen is the simple reinstitution of Justice, and you'd see these massive court lines disappear—because the facts are that government would not be able to get away with many of the crimes it is committing against its own people.. For Fathers, this means that the District Attorney whose only present intent is to criminalize you would get drop-kicked out of court. All a Judge would have to do is ask the simple question in regards to these "sealed" instruments called "special obligations" which no father fully knows about—"did the father have proper counsel?" (which no counsel could be proper because the whole terms and conditions and the basis of the contract itself is based on fraud and as we discussed before, are totally unconscionable!) would destroy every single District Attorney's case in the United States...yet...not one Judge is doing this. Every Judge is acting exactly like the Judges of the Weimar Republic in WWII, they are conspiring in a fraud to send many Fathers into slavery, and many more actually to their deaths. How many Fathers, Mothers and children have been killed over this needless war over money and the transfer of wealth? Well, we know that we are talking at least in the hundreds of thousands, perhaps even millions. This is innocent blood on the Judges hands who have knowingly propagated this fraud against fathers who like the Jews of WWII, never had a chance because the system is intentionally designed for their destruction.

A huge and distinct backlash is quickly coming against this system, and it is coming sooner than everyone thinks. Due to the massive addiction by government and Feminist who directly feed-off of this perverse system, and due to the massive social pressures built up and which are yet to be released, there is a massive retribution and realignment coming against all who have enjoined in this massive fraud against the American Father. In a very short time there is going to be a snap in this economy, and when that happens, the system is going to intently destroy Fathers



## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

who are presently complying with this system, (paying Child Support) and who then will not be able to pay and thereby to suffer the injustices that this system has ready for them. Those millions of Fathers upon the slightest aberration in this nation's economy will rise up as the raging Rhino never seen before in history, and it will level anything before it. The groundwork laid out by the present Fathers Rights community will be a lightening rod for this army, which will fully recognize that there is no effective redress within these courts just like the Feminists are just starting to comprehend. The courts, the DA's and the government will all be responsible for the resultant carnage which will most certainly ensue from a national economic calamity. I don't fear for these people, because this Backlash is needed, and it has been long overdue. One of my main questions that I am dying to ask these people who inhabit Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine is: "Did you really think you were going to get away with these crimes?" I want and need to hear their answer. So do many Fathers whom have inhumanely suffered because of this aberrant social movement. Again, quoting Kennedy: "Those who make peaceful Revolution impossible, will make violent Revolution inevitable."

### THE STEVE FAGAN SOLUTION

---

This profligate paradigm presented to American Fatherhood has already established what many Fathers Rights organizations have named: "The Steve Fagan Solution." Clearly, many men are abjectly aware of the total injustices and annihilation waiting for them in these perverse court systems...and thereby...millions of men are not even entering them. This is not just a diabolical plan to overthrow our present court systems—no. Unfortunately, this reality has been present for the past 25 to 35 years in this nations courts, thereby; Fathers willfully not entering these draconian institutions do so out of pragmatic necessity...for the alternative leads only to their destruction.

Steve Fagan was a Father in Massachusetts (a massive, feminized Welfare State) who had made this same recognition and fled with his own children in 1979 (something he is allowed to do by law) and re-established himself in Florida. Apparently the girls natural mother had considerable problems, and Steve, faced with those problems, and the errant and criminal court system, really did what was the best for he and his girls. He seized his own children and fled to Florida, where, like most other men; he soon prospered (something the State would have taken from him had he remained in New England.) In most probability, if he had remained in New England he would have been held slave to the system, and never risen to the status of Millionaire, which; he was able to accomplish in Florida by himself, left unfettered by government criminal actions and 'pretended crimes.' There he raised his two daughters suc-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

cessfully, started a second family, and became rich and prosperous where he and his daughters, flourished.

His daughters, instead of being poisoned against their father, in turn loved him, and they had a very comfortable and loving life down in Florida. Explaining his actions, Steve in a newspaper interview said: "I was raised in a home where the best interests of the children always came first. They still do," he insists. Clearly—he knew that just ‘going along’ with the present perverted system was clearly not in their best interests. Clearly—his actions and the resultant prosperity, love and commitment—clearly show he was right. In 1998, "the system" caught up with Steve in Palm Beach, Florida, where he lived and worked successfully, and arrested him for ‘kidnapping’ his own children (a legal impossibility for a father). In the final court proceeding, Steve was found guilty, and ordered to pay \$100,000 to a Massachusetts Orphanage, yet; the most stunning indictment of the whole system was in the testimony of the daughters of Steve Fagan, Rachel and Lisa Martin.

In court, and all throughout this debacle they had clearly and steadfastly, (in total contravention of feminist mythology) stood by and supported and honored their father. "We do not feel victimized by our father," Rachel Martin said in recognition of her fathers sacrifices. "We are convinced that his actions were from his heart." [New York Daily News, "Abducted by Dad, two give mom the brushoff.," by Leo Standora, Saturday, May 29, 1999, p. 6.] They were. In a clear and direct extrapolation of the prime maxim of this book: "*Partus sequitur ventrem.*" "*The offspring follow the condition of the mother. This is the law in the case of slaves and animals; but with regard to freemen, children follow the condition of the father,*" these two daughters clearly followed the condition of their father—and that was one of success, honor, and triumph. If their father had succumbed to the fallow feminist mantra of ‘doing the right thing’ and "you must pay child support," clearly, their lives would have been *drastically* different!

The Fathers Rights movement has recognized this Fagan solution and advocates its implementation. No longer can Fathers try and "obey the law" because the law is cancerous. It is not only wrong—it has become Anti-American, and must be resisted at all costs. If Fathers would start thinking for themselves, exactly like Steve Fagan did, obey the Maxim’s of law which protect them, their families, their children and society; and resist the massive Tribe incantations that Fathers must fall on their own swords and destroy themselves for the feminist ideal of ‘supporting’ their own children—which means giving them up, handing them to the Feminist court system who thereby drains the wealth from the Father and thereby children—then clearly, this nation would be richer, stronger and

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

our children would be a lot happier and safer. Just like Steve Fagan's girls did.

We must turn this issue again back to "Dreams Differed." How many men *who could have been millionaires*, just like Steve Fagan, have instead been ruined and imprisoned by this errant system? We don't know. Nobody does. In fact, anyone researching something like this might soon become afraid of the staggering numbers that might become uncovered. Indeed, I make the case I am one such Father, whom at minimum would have lived a much different and more prosperous life had I done the Steve Fagan solution from the outset of my troubles with this perverse system. In retrospect: *I never should have trusted this perverse court system from the start. I never will again.*

Again, researching the resultant effects on the economy and overall prosperity of this nation: we might find again, accordant figures that would stagger the mind of any researcher daring to even begin to look at "what might have been" if Fathers had implemented the Steve Fagan solution, rather than trusting the supposed justice of our court systems. Clearly, many in the Fathers Rights community clearly see the Steve Fagan solution: Leaving the cancerous participation in 'government' services and injustice; as really the *best* solution for any Father, and clearly; in the light of the massive failure and social pathologies linked to the present system—almost a mandate for this nations children's safety. We are now asking men, whom are currently facing the perversion of easy divorce and feminism, to 'just run away.' NOT to engage with this failure—and save yourself and your children for as long as you can.

Know an enemy when you see it. This present system is our enemy...it is every American's enemy. We can no longer engage nor tolerate this outright failure. This war and needless attack upon all our lives... *especially the children...*

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

---

[The Howard Stern television show: Young 19 year old girl on the show to show how she likes one of the associate producers of that show. Girl now moves to Howard to demonstrate how she can suck his finger with her shirt top off and wearing only a bra:]

**Howard Stern:** [After experiencing a few seconds of this Girl deeply sucking his forefinger.] "...You're a slut."

**19 Year Old Girl:** [Momentarily Stopping] "No I'm not. I—I'm just very attracted to you."

**Howard Stern:** "Ah! So, you're a blind slut."

*"A Roman divorced from his wife, being highly blamed by his friends who demanded, 'Was she not chaste? Was she not fair? Was she not fruitful? Holding out his shoe, [he] asked them whether it was not new and well made. [They profusely agreed it was.] 'Yet,' added he, 'none of you can tell where it pinches me.' [Lives Aemilius Paulus, sec. 5, Plutarch, A.D. 46-120.]*

---

### FEMINIST LIES AND DISINFORMATION

---

This is at the heart of the present problem within this nation. The Feminist have been told by government that they *must* give it a crisis in which it can thereby invoke special military powers upon all American Homes and Families, and most importantly: these newly invented criminal class of Fathers, who the government needs to harvest in which to support their empires. The Feminists have gotten this message loud and clear, and in virtually every report, 'commission,' or study which is used by government there is embedded within them Feminist Lies and Disinformation. These lies and distortions are there for a reason, and it took even me a while to understand what they were, but; I've gotten to the point to where now I read a feminist supplied or even government statistic and I can immediately pick out how they are weighting it, or skewing either the question or information. There are few facts and figures I have found which are unscathed from intentional bias imbedded into them.

Today, the gender police seek to invade male-female relationships at every stage. Marital conflict is redefined as "abuse," which pamphlets warn, may consist merely of "making you feel bad about yourself." A clumsy advance or an off-color joke becomes "sexual harassment," which in some states children are being taught to recognize as early as elementary school.

....A charge often made against "dissident feminists" like myself is that we acknowledge past problems only to say that equality has now been achieved and the women's movement has outlived itself. Unfortunately, those who make this accusation usually build their case for continued fem-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

inist activism on claims that, as I intend to show in this book, do not stand up to scrutiny. Girl are *not* silenced or ignored in the classroom. Medicine has *not* neglected women's health. Abuse by men is *not* the leading cause of injury to American women; the courts do *not* treat violence toward women more leniently than violence toward men. Gender disparities in pay and job status are *not* merely a consequence of sex discrimination. The eighties were *not* a "backlash decade" but a time of steady progress for women and, generally, of strong support for women's advancement. The climate in our society is not one of "cultural misogyny," as feminist writer Katha Pollitt asserts, but is for more saturated with negative attitudes towards men. [*CEASEFIRE! Why Women and Men Must Join Forces to Achieve True Equality*, by Cathy Young, © 1999, The Free Press, A Division of Simon & Schuster Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020; ISBN 0-684-83442-1, pp. 9-10.]

These imbedded biases are there in order to misdirect, or worse yet; to commit outright fraud against the American public by either misinforming them as to a particular subject, or; worse yet—lying to them outright. Unfortunately, the public doesn't even know what is hitting them, except that they know something is terribly wrong, they just can't understand that it is the source which is the criminal and not, in the final analysis the Father, who in virtually every case, winds up to be the bogeyman in all these studies...

**Bad 'research'...** Another famous researcher came up with the famous "73/42 Theory." This said that there was a 115% disparity between men's and women's *standard of living* after divorce (women decreased 73% and men **increased** 42%). As usual, in order to lie so brazenly, the first thing to do is to play 'the definition game' on the phrase: '*standard of living*.' In this case it was defined with reference to a brand new '*income/needs ratio theory*' which shifted the total cost fo divorce to fathers. The purpose of the theory was to produce numbers insuring a post-divorce SQL equal to pre-divorce.

The data supporting the above was not made available for scrutiny for *over ten years* (until funding was cut off) at which time it was seen that the:

Data was incorrectly keyed in the computer

Data in over half of the 228 person sample was missing

The 'Standard of Living' term was incorrectly used....

**...never make it though the media bias** The media of course loved to tell the 73/42 tale, ignoring the common-sense absurdity that fathers could have a *higher* standard of living after *losing half* of their marital property. (Anyone who suggesting that this shows a lack of journalistic professionalism towards males, fatherhood, and the truth, are dismissed as "biased.") The real power of these [Social Services] 'theories' ('studies,' 'research', or 'statistics') of course, is in their ability to shape the way society thinks and acts...

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

[*Where Have All the Good Fathers Gone? Child Support and Custody*, by Douglas O'Brien, ©1997, Skid 18 Press, P.O. Box 60630, Fairbanks, AK 99706, ISBN 0-9637496-2-5; p. 117.]

The cliché that divorced men make out like bandits, leaving women and children in the dust, owes much to Lenore Weitzman's 1985 book, *The Divorce Revolution* (based on a study of 228 men and women divorced in Los Angeles in 1977). Reading the book ten years later, I was struck by its crude juxtaposition of saintly wives and selfish, greedy husbands whom Weitzman wouldn't even credit with paternal feelings: she claimed that no father in her study wanted to see his children more often and 70 percent would prefer to see *less* of them, a finding so at odds with other research as to defy creditability. Nevertheless, with her sound-bite conclusion that the standard of living drops 73 percent for women after divorce and rises 42 percent for men, Weitzman became one of America's most quoted.

Some scholars questioned these numbers from the start. In 1996, when Richard Peterson of the Social Science Research Council in New York re-analyzed Weitzman's data and found a huge error in her computations, and Weitzman admitted the mistake (blaming a computer foul-up), the media finally noticed. The revised data yielded a 10 percent increase for men and a 27 percent decline for women in Weitzman's sample. But two years before the "73-42" percentage was laid to rest, a largely unnoticed study pointed to an income reduction for *both* spouses in the 1980s: 30 percent for women, 10 percent for men.

....As with many other issues, the discussion of child support is awash with dubious statistics: for instance, that fathers underpay \$34 billion a year. This is based on estimates of what would be owed if all single mothers had a support award *and* every nonresident father earned the median salary. Yet in 1990, 42 percent of single mothers had no award, often because they didn't seek one. Usually these are never-married mothers, whose boyfriends are mostly poor, often incarcerated, and sometimes dead. [*CEASEFIRE! Why Women and Men Must Join Forces to Achieve True Equality*, by Cathy Young, © 1999, The Free Press, A Division of Simon & Schuster Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020; ISBN 0-684-83442-1, pp. 205-206.]

These 'skewed truths' are being used by present Government administrations to justify the military arm of the Krell Welfare Machine. These facts and figures the Feminist place forwards 'prove' their eternal assertions of 'abuse' and 'crisis' exists so a larger state-of-emergency exists in which to inflame the Sir Gallahad Complex of people within government, to get them to 'act' upon this supposed crisis within our children, the women, and the home. Of course, there is only one perpetrator and that is the male. What is odd is, that if you strip the 'qualifiers' or modifier's off the Feminist vernacular, you wind up with such small figures or aggregately minor incidences as to turn the whole Feminist issue on its ear.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Most certainly this is a quantitative issue, and this is exactly what the Feminist desire. They say that facts figures and figures lie, well, they are exactly right—because of this, many people are confused and thereby, they default on the side of safety, as there are few people either willing to challenge the Feminists or are there ones to consider the full impacts of the policies they fund and pursue when they go down this slippery slope of funding and maintaining Feminist causes.

Hitherto, feminist have excoriated our society for the horrors of rape to which women are subjected, often greatly exaggerating the probability of rape's occurrence within the average women's lifetime and even redefining rape to include seduction. [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Carolyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Suite 450, Dallas, TX 75202, ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; p. 190.]

Ask such Feminists presenting these crisis's 'when' or 'how' this imagined "crisis" will be solved from this public funding, and you will get blank stares, for the Feminists and psychologists, Police, Counselors, and Child Welfare Social Service and a plethora of other opportunistic services embedded throughout the Krell Welfare Machine are never there to solve these crisis's, they are there to solve these "crisis's" by eternally managing them, at exponentially rising rates of public subsidy. Ask me when the Fathers Rights community could solve this "crisis" with *no* public funding and I give you a timeframe of about five to ten years maximum. It may take up to 20 years to re-inculcate our people to relearn self-reliance and the principles and disciplines of Patriarchy, but effectively the present Krell Welfare Machine would be effectively turned off, and all the attendant social pathology *within approximately five years*. Start bringing up such realities, and the whole Feminist and "Save the Children" superstructure goes white with fear. What we are speaking of here is re-instituting a freedom so profound and widespread as to make the World War II postwar economic boom, pale in comparison. Most certainly, these immediate impacts of re-implementing Patriarchy would very quickly drop both Welfare rates and social pathology rates being committed by a majority of teens. This figure alone is staggering, and most likely accounts for approximately 50 percent of Welfare's funding. So many people within government do not want to hear the truth, because it is government empires we are speaking of here, and re-establishing Fatherhood is not good for the business of government, for Fathers factually do no bring in money, nor ask for money from the State. Fatherhood does not need a subsidy, in fact; Fatherhood best flourishes when left completely alone—and this is the key not only to its success throughout civilization and is why Western Civilization chose it, it is also



## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

the reason why Fathers are so important to families in the first place. Drop a mother with small child in a forest, and you have a crisis. Do the same thing and add a father and soon you have a small farm, and a sovereign family living off of the environment.

Is this a Patriarchal conspiracy? Is this gender based discrimination? No...it is just the way things are. Again, we are re-discovering the obvious, for what we are speaking to here is about the Nuclear Two Parent Family. This type of Family, if left to itself is the greatest producer of wealth and social stability. This is the system of Families in which Western Civilization intentionally supported and selected as the most viable system for its societies. Conversely, this is the exact system the modern Feminist hate, and are pro-actively destroying and replacing with 'something else'—which could range from anything from blended families to Radical Gay and Lesbian lifestyle household's....

Are these forms of 'Families' producing the same weighted intellect and performance as the Nuclear Two Parent household? Of course not. These forms of families need so much public funding and public support that this nation is involved within a sustained financial crisis in which to keep such families afloat. The final product emanating from such families, is hardly desirable. Yet, government willingly keeps producing them. We must pose the question: "Why?"

Feminists contend that men are abusers. Well, this may be true—but to what extent? We fully know and understand that because of testosterone production that men are more aggressive and more physical; yet, conversely we fully recognize their benevolence which has been clearly demonstrated throughout history, *especially* towards their own families, and *more particularly* towards their own children. Yet, the Feminist have created Superstructures by creating a villain out of the mist. They have not only invented a bogeyman—they have kept this bogeyman alive, imprisoned and force-fed on the order of a half-century! They continually drag his emaciated and withering body out from the locked closet, display him in front of some august government committee and say: "See? Here he is, the mighty abuser!" and then through the miracle of that one word 'abuse,' the whole system is refunded yet again, from this pale and withered body stored generationally in the Feminist closet. This one word, 'abuse' has built and now sustains empires that have wasted more money and lives than every single war ever, combined.

One glaring example of the Feminist capability to lie and distort comes from a book named "*Domestic Violence*" by Karin L. Swisher. In this book it has a section entitled "**Women as 'ho's'**":

"Specifically, I mean an atmosphere in which young men are "taught" by their fathers, if they have one, and older brothers to refer to women as "ho's" ("whores") who need abuse; where physical violence is a common

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

means of ending verbal disputes; and where women are mistrusted and de-tested." [*Domestic Violence*, by Karen L. Swisher book editor, Greenhaven Press, Inc. PO Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, ISBN 1-56510-380-7, p. 38.]

Of course, nothing could be further from the truth here, because in fact, as most 'Single Mother Household's' and District Attorney's keep screaming at society that the reality is that the *father is not there in the first place*, to inculcate this base behavior. In fact, this behavior Ms. Swisher and others pretend upon the father is in fact a fraud! It is in reality, the beast of their own making, which they cannot control. Such as Maria, and Peco and others documented throughout this book whom come directly from Ms. Clinton's "Village" and who have devolved into the Tribal state, with tattoo's, secret signs, colors, and even their own language. This sub-class of persons who are the generationally poor, the new permanent amoral underclass locked within crime are treating and labeling women as 'ho's' because that is the main product produced within Ms. Clinton's new tribal state. To blame this on fathers whom are not even *in* this "Village" is ludicrous—yet, this is an example of the feminist mindset. Indeed, it goes beyond this, and the proof shows itself in the language itself; "You go girl..." "It's the bomb," "He's got it goin' on." And other such euphemisms have become a new dialect which is leaking up from the underclass's and which now becomes part of the national mainstream lingo of which 'ho' is but one. Indeed, 'ho' came *along* with the establishment of Radical feminism and Welfare, which in fact, hit the Black communities first, and the most hardest.

Feminists have recreated a double-speak within language which controls not only society, but also men. I was dating a rather astoundingly beautiful young women who I had fallen head-over-heel's for. We were just dating, but; very soon—I quickly recognized something was extremely amiss. I remember one particular discussion, about nothing really; just a benign normal conversation to where I commented to the effect: "Yeah, she's a good girl." In reference to one of our mutual friends being a very nice person. This was met; mind you; I was dumbstruck—with literal *screaming*—that this person was not a girl but a woman. A woman!!! This has created a system of empowerment for feminists (which this young girl just happened to turn out to be), in which they can control, even demean men for their own ulterior motives. They use 'speech' and Politically Correct terms to keep men, and society in check. Those whom do not use the correct phrenology, are soon out of the loop, even attacked. Many loose jobs now just for innocuous terms which can be misconstrued by using this technique for political purposes. It is odd, that feminists who bemoan that we are not a tolerant society to either them, gays, homosexuals and other alternate lifestyles, are conversely; extremely intolerant of

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

anyone whom does not share their views or political mindset. Even the most ardent facts become skewed through the lying feminist lens—until someone does very rudimentary scrutiny of these lies.

Overall, fathers' groups point out, mothers are granted custody 90 percent of the time. Feminist retort that when men ask for custody, they have the edge. "Contrary to public belief, 70 percent of all litigated custody trials rule in favor of the fathers," shouts the jacket of the 1996 book *Divorced From Justice: The Abuse of Women and Children by Lawyers and Judges* by Karen Winner. The "NOW Action Alert of 'Fathers' Rights'" adopted at NOW's 1996 national conference also asserts that "many judges and attorneys are still biased against women and fathers are granted custody 70% of the time when they seek it."

This widely cited figure first appeared in *Mothers on Trial*: Phyllis Chesler reported that 70 percent of "custodially challenged" mothers in her sample lost.

While even sympathetic reviewers noted the sloppiness of Chesler's use of statistics and her penchant for hyperbole (such as likening custody hearings to medieval witch trials), her "findings" was often presented as fact. There were other sources. According to sociologist Lenore Weitzman, author of the acclaimed book *The Divorce Revolution*, two-thirds of fathers asking for custody in the late 1970s in California succeeded. The Massachusetts Gender Bias Study reported that fathers who sought custody won sole or joint legal/primary physical custody 70 percent of the time.

Even if true, this could mean that fathers seek custody only when they know they have a chance because there's something wrong with the mother. Indeed, explaining why few noncustodial mothers pay child support, the Gender Bias Study says that "women who lose custody often do so because of mental, physical, or emotional handicaps," which impair their earning capacity. That aside, the high success rate of men in custody battles is another contender for the Phony Statistics Hall of Fame. [*CEASE-FIRE! Why Women and Men Must Join Forces of Achieve True Equality*, by Cathy Young, © 1999, The Free Press, A Division of Simon and Schuster, Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020; ISBN 0-0684-83442-1, pp. 199-200.]

These feminists create these problems by using such techniques such as outright lying, then; when they have accomplished their goals of 'sexual liberation,' 'sexual freedom,' and 'the right to control our own bodies,' by overt, perverted sexual acts, they then turn around and take great umbrage that those in their own tribe would dare label them with the truth!. Indeed, reading the above passage about "ho's," this author dares make the comment "Moral leadership—from within—is what is most needed to combat this environment." [Ibid. P. 38] Yet in reality, the facts are that men who try to impose such moral leadership are quickly labeled as 'abusers'—even in court, where if a man dares bring out morality, he is quickly admonished that morality means nothing. He can't *use* morality

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

as a legal issue for he cannot even use morality in his own home! That he is to only shut-up about morality and abide by the courts amoral decisions, of which of course is that the Father must act moral and pay child support!! Any such father forcefully laying down such morality as proper and civil speech within the home or court is most certainly, quickly driven out as an abuser, as a man who cannot be reasonably worked with. Thereby, the modern feminist revel in their new found freedom of sexual immorality, of lesbianism, and other gay and alternative lifestyles which immolate this nation into sexual anarchy. Then; when the children from this underclass observe the reality of this, and start to call a spade a spade and define such women as whores—or "ho's"--those women in such communities, finding such sexual freedom and anarchy in having several sexual partners, and propagating several different children each with different last names--well, then its the man's fault once again! Again, this is a paradox presented to the male community: "don't call us whore's when we act on our sexual political agenda which turns us into whores."

This logic of course, is insane. Yet, this outrageous stupidity has funded countless programs, it has fully established a prevalent Matrilineal dominant class within the Black and other Welfare driven communities, and it has lent itself to also subverting the male and disenfranchised him from his own home, labeled of course, as the "abuser." This non-logic has accrued literally trillions of dollars for the feminists, and most importantly, it has left these societies devoid of any morality whatsoever.

"The great difficulty was not to devise the Constitution to the Federal Government, but to find out a method of enforcing its laws. Governments have in general but two means of overcoming the opposition of the people they govern, viz., the physical force which is at their own disposal, and the moral force which they derive from the decisions of the courts of justice." [Democracy in America, by Alexis De Tocqueville, ©1946, Oxford University Press, New York, Inc., pp. 79-80.]

Of course we can see here, that all Judges who have pursued this illegal modern feminist doctrine have clearly been following an oxymoronic endeavor. Yet not one of them will change in the light of these self-evident truths, which proves nothing more than an indictment against this whole corrupt system. This of course means that the courts are no longer using morality within American courts—they are only using their sole remaining power which stems out from the barrel of a gun. The final analysis of this means—that we now live in a country were only guns and force of arms equals law.

The biggest lie in the feminist arsenal is the abuse charge, which has been played over and over for nearly 50 years now, yet; government and the media fall for the ploy every single time, although; in the mainstream

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

community the first signs of wear or just indelibly sinking in. "There are over 700,000 false reports of child abuse in America each year, mostly divorce related," (This figure comes from Dr. Douglas Besharov, former director of the National Center for Child Abuse and Neglect.) Of course estimates range that anywhere from 90% to 77% of these charges are untrue. Indeed, these facts are repeated in FBI DNA statistics which discount about 33% of all sexual assault charges. Of course, this totally discounts men such as Carlos, who are dirt poor and who are placed into prison *without* evidence, like a great many more of men presently sitting in prison who are completely innocent—are there because these criminal courts along with Feminists, DA's and lawyers, coerced them there. With a total jail population of XXXX we are at minimum speaking on the order of *thousands* of men imprisoned thusly. So much for letting ten guilty people go to save one innocent person.

We can see this from the mass of explosive figures emanating from this one subject:

"The "Child Maltreatment 1994: Reports from the States to the National Center of Child Abuse and Neglect" shows that 1,012,000 children in 48 states were victims of substantiated child abuse and neglect in 1994, and increase of 27 percent since 1990." [http://fathers.ourfamily.com/dhhsabus.htm]

What is more important than this figure, continues on this same web page:

"Missing from this statement is the number of "unsubstantiated reports of child abuse" which is more significant than the number of "substantiated reports. There were 2,124,540 unsubstantiated reports last year, and increase of 720% from 1976...the damage done to one family unity from just ONE false accusation is reparable and unmeasurable. The damage done by 2,1124,540 is monumental. [Ibid.]

Further down this same web page we come to the real reason for this exponential explosion of abuse reports.

"It is estimated that 170 different funding sources come into play when a report of child abuse is filed, and that the average cost to taxpayers (not including legal fees by parents, loss of work, emotional stability, and other expenses to the parents) is \$157,000 per case. If this applies to each of the 3,219,000 reports filed last year, this is a staggering \$505.4 Billion per year." [Ibid.]

To accrue these huge monies, the Krell Welfare Machine must be turned on, and the thousands of various sub-machines within the main Krell Machine all work together towards funding this, and of course to do

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

this, there must be a victim: the Father (or the male in this instance). This machine feeds itself through civil cannibalism.

The media, for the most part, uncritically repeat the "advocacy statistic" that false complaints account for no more than 1 or 2 percent of rape reports, the same as for other crimes. Actually, FBI statistics show that about 8 percent of rape reports are "unfounded"—dismissed at the earliest stage of investigation, without charges being filed. The feminist party line is that many, if not most, of these are valid complaints, nixed because they lack sufficient proof or because the authorities distrust acquaintance rape claims. But dismissals due to insufficient evidence usually occur further down the pipeline, and the "unfounded" category. Generally a complaint is unfounded only when the alleged victim recants, or when her story is not just unsupported but *contradicted* by evidence.

Measuring false allegations is all the more difficult since policies on unfounded criminal complaints differ from one jurisdiction to another, resulting in very different numbers. A *Washington Post* investigation showed that in seven counties in Virginia and Maryland, almost one in four rape reports in 1990-1991 were unfounded; when contacted by the newspaper, many "victims" admitted that they lied. More shocking figures come from a study by now-retired Purdue University sociologist Eugene Kanin, who reviewed the police records of an Indiana town and found that 45 of 109 reports of rape filed from 178 to 1987—41 percent—were false by the complainant's own admission. [CEASEFIRE! *Why Women and Men Must Join Forces of Achieve True Equality*, by Cathy Young, © 1999, The Free Press, A Division of Simon and Schuster, Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020; ISBN 0-0684-83442-1, p. 150.]

So, unfortunately, the Feminist have developed a machine that needs lies to bolster their statistic's as energy in which to operate, so they more than willingly supply the machine with as much statistic's as it needs. The media of course, *with full knowledge that the feminist have lied time and time again—keep on publishing these politically motivated lies*. Note the way in which they accomplish their continued high profiling of their own lies:

"As [Mary] Koss reported in Judiciary Committee hearings in 1990, "Among college women who had an experience that met legal requirements for rape, only a quarter labeled their experience as rape. Another quarter thought their experience was some kind of crime, but not rape. The remaining half did not think their experience qualified as any type of crime."

A somewhat different account of how these same students labeled their experience was reported in 1988 by Koss and others.

- a) 11 percent of the students said they "don't feel victimized,"

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

- b) 49 percent labeled the experience "miscommunication."
- c) 14 percent labeled it, 'crime' but not rape,' and
- d) 27 percent said it was "rape."

The fact that 42 percent of students classified as victims by Koss had sex again with the men who supposedly raped them was not mentioned in her testimony before the Judiciary Committee. In 1988 she originally reported: "Surprisingly, 42 percent of the women indicated that they had sex again with the offender on a later occasion, but it is not known if this was forced or voluntary; most relationships (87 percent) did eventually break up subsequent to the victimization." [*Sexual Violence, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Tamara L. Roleff, Book Editor, ©1997, Greenhaven Press, P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, ISBN 1-565510-560-5; pp. 59-60.]

What is most sad that as what is displayed above, gets even worse when feminist 'studies' and 'research' such as Ms. Koss analysis is truly analyzed. Neil Gilbert who documented these abuses by Ms. Koss brings out most glaring discrepancies when feminist 'qualifiers' become injected into the data response survey samples. He noted that when a question asked "*Have you ever had a man attempt sexual intercourse (get on top of you, attempt to insert his penis) when you didn't want to by giving you alcohol or drugs?*" The immorality issues of the woman aside notwithstanding, for a woman stupid enough to imbibe in such immoral acts pales in comparison to what Ms. Koss "empirical" analysis came up with a revisal of her own figures such that when such 'ambiguous' questions were challenge, and thereby removed from her own survey, "Koss acknowledged that the drug and alcohol questions were ambiguous. When these questions are removed, according to Koss' revised estimates, the prevalence rate of rape and attempted rape declines by one-third." [Ibid., p. 62.] But unfortunately, this skewed Feminist intent inherent gets worse, as when one begins to look at the overall picture of why these lies and disinformation propagate.

"The most startling disparity is between the Ms. study's finding on the annual incidence of rape and attempted rape and the number of these offenses actually reported to the authorities on college campuses. Using her survey questions, Koss found that 166 women in 1,000 were victims of rape and attempted rape in just one year on campuses across the country (each victimized an average of 1.5 times). In sharp contrast, the 1993 FBI figures show that in 1992 at about 500 major colleges and universities with an overall population of 5 million students, only 408 cases of rape and attempted rape were reported to the police, less than one incident of rape and attempted rape pre campus. This number yields about an annual rate of .16 in 1,000 for female students, which is 1,000 times smaller than

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Koss's finding. Although it is generally agreed that many rape victims do not report their ordeal, no one to my knowledge publicly claims that the problem is 1,000 times greater than the cases reported to the police—a rate at which almost every woman in the country would be raped at least once a year." [*Sexual Violence, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Tamara L. Roleff, Book Editor, ©1997, Greenhaven Press, P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, ISBN 1-565510-560-5; pp. 62-63.]

I of course ran into this exact same problem on the California State University at Chico campus where I worked during most of the eighties until the mid-nineties. I read in a local paper some fantastic figures being widely advertised about women being raped across the Chico State campus itself! (which was a very small campus). I felt bad, and was outraged. More than this, *I'd never even heard of a single rape occurring on campus up to this time! And I worked there!!!* Of course, my job duties as a computer consultant drew me into the Campus Police department, and there, I voiced my concerns and shock and outrage. As I was speaking to one of my officer friends there, I told him of my concerns, and I said to him, "Listen, I'd be willing to establish a volunteer patrol to walk the university at night to combat this problem." When I said that he grinned wide at me, and told me that the figures in the paper were a lie. "They are there just to get money for the Feminist Studies programs here on campus." he matter of factly told me. I couldn't believe it! I again, was first shocked, then chagrined—kind of angry at myself on being duped so. Even then, *I didn't totally believe him*. I was confused like most people are when they read these things. Yet, these same mythologies over the years finally hunted even me down, so I understand the genius and the malevolent design behind these feminist claims. I learned this long before any of my observations about Feminism and its death-hold on our nations campuses, but now, unfortunately I know better because the lies as Mr. Gilbert notes above, are at epidemic proportions. So are most of the "facts and figures" spewing forth under this current Feminist regime that has infested our society. How many of these figures being propagated throughout the feminist mantra of 'abuse' are absolutely false and being spewed only to garnish public money and mainstream media support? We can only guess, however, the figure is significant.

To be a part of this blanket warmth..., students are willing to lie. My first year at Princeton, one student was caught fabricating a rape story. Mindy had spoken at Take Back the Night for each of her four years at Princeton, and she had printed her story in the *Daily Princetonian*. What's interesting is that her account didn't really stand out; she sounded like everyone else at the speak-out. Her story could have been the blueprint. Whatever else anyone can say about her, Mindy could really talk the talk.



## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Her story went like this: she left the eating clubs after one boy "started hitting on me in a way that made me feel particularly comfortable." He followed her home and "dragged" her back to his room. The entire campus, as she described it, was indifferent: "Although I screamed the entire time, no one called for help, no one even looked out the window to see if the person screaming was in danger." He "carried" her to his room "and, while he shouted the most degrading obscenities imaginable, raped me." He told her that "his father buys him cheap girls like me to use up and throw away." And then he banged her head against the metal bedpost until she was unconscious. She then explained that he was forced to leave campus for a year and now he was back. "Because I see this person every day," she claimed, "my rape remains a constant daily reality for me." Now, she said, she was on the road to recovery, and "there are some nights when I sleep soundly and there are even some mornings when I look in the mirror and I like what I see. I may be a victim, but now I'm also a survivor."

Unlike most participants in the speak-outs, Mindy put her story in print. Once it spilled over from the feverish midnight outpouring of the march into black-and-white newsprint, the facts could be checked. The problem was that she claimed she had reported a rape, and she hadn't. She claimed an administrator had told her "to let bygones be bygones," and he hadn't. She told people that a certain male undergraduate was the rapist, and he complained to the administration.

....In May of her senior year, 1991, Mindy came clean. Responding to administrative pressure, she printed an apology for her false accusation in the *Daily Princeton*. She wrote of the person she accused, "I have never met this individual or spoken to him...I urge students who are knowledgeable of this situation to cease blaming this person for my attack." Mindy seemed to explain her motivation for inventing the story as political: "I made my statements in the *Daily Princeton* and at the Take Back the Night March in order to raise awareness for the plight of the campus rape victims." So these were fiction in the service of political truth.

....The accusation is a serious one, and the boy Mindy accused was in a terrible position in the community until she set the record straight. Accusations of rape stick, and in the twisted justice of the grapevine no one is considered innocent until proven guilty." [*Sexual Violence, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Tamara L. Roleff, Book Editor, ©1997, Greenhaven Press, P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, ISBN 1-565510-560-5; pp. 62-63.]

But again, remember what was said about totalitarian and fascist regimes earlier in this book, that they propagate such lies in order to sustain their control over a society, where 'the impossible becomes plausible' which is exactly what the feminist are presently engaged in, so they can keep their Krell Welfare Machine alive. Such women as Hillary, Mindy and others could care less about law, about justice, about simple truth.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Yet, even noting the intellectual disparities of Ms. Koss, Mindy and other Feminists diatribe, who are the ones sitting before the government 'fact finding' tribunals? The feminists of course! All those who do not entreat the present Politically Correct mindset, are not asked to join in such issues, more importantly, those within government who do not adhere to such sophistry, are quickly thrown out. This is a staggering reality in our culture, it is malevolent, and unfortunately, more and more prevalent.

"Having survived the bean count, chairman Casellas presided over an agency that is weighing such lofty question as whether infertility, obesity, and nicotine addiction qualify for protection under the Americans with Disabilities Act. But even more pressing is a command from liberals on Capitol Hill that Casellas purge from the agency anyone who deviates from the new political correctness. In an October 6, 1994 letter, Senator Paul Simon reminded Casellas about [the agreement you made to me during your confirmation hearing. I had asked that as the new Chairman, you send to me a letter within six months regarding those in the agency who do not believe in the mission of the EEOC...[who] should be transferred to the Pentagon or someplace else." ]

The purge victims turn out to be white males, they may find their problems only beginning... Dorn's message was none too subtle, "as a white male, I can kiss my future goodbye." complained one GS-14 Defense Department employee to the Washington Post. "I am keeping Dorn's memo handy [in case] for some unexpected reason I do apply for advancement. It should serve as excellent prima facie evidence of discrimination due to race." [The Affirmative Action FRAUD, Can We Restore the American Civil Rights Vision?, by Clint Bolick, @1996 by the Cato Institute, 1000 Massachusetts Ave., N.W., Washington, D.C. 20001; ISBN 1-882577-28-0; p. 101]

Many people within our own government are *forced* to cow-tow to this new Anti-American socialist order in which the Clinton's and many more like them are presently engaged in. Again, this is but another component of a totalitarian regime. If you will not lie for it, or use law as a political weapon, then; you are out. But again, there is a mind behind the intellect of the machine, the logic which drives it is illogic...and from this illogic...anything is possible. Consider how large such disparities grow and look at the amassed resultant false facts and figures how they double in orders of magnitude by a stroke of a pen:

"Susan Faludi complains that ex-husbands are so selfish they don't even want to support their ex-wives. Her argument is the same as [Janet] Reno's.

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

The real source of divorced women's woes can be found not in the fine print of divorce legislation but in the behavior of ex-husbands and judges. Between 1978 and 1985, the average amount of child supports that divorced men paid fell nearly 25 percent. Divorced men are more likely to meet their car payments than their child support obligations—even though, for two-thirds of them, the amount owed their children is less than their auto loan bill.

As of 1985, only half of the 8.8 million single mothers who were supposed to be receiving child support payments from their ex-husbands actually received any money at all, and only half of that half were actually the full amount. In 1988, the federal Officer of Child Support Enforcement, was collecting only \$5 Billion of the \$25 billion a year fathers owed in child support.

Ms. Faludi's figures are faked, but apart from the fakery, why should an ex-husband pay anything to an ex-wife? What services does she perform for him that entitle her to share his income? The support money he is alleged to owe her serves only the bad purpose of financing the destruction of his family.

Donna Shalala makes her contribution to the promotion of matriarchy by doubling Ms. Faludi's spurious figure of \$25 billion to \$50 billion, ten times the true amount. (Lying is OK for a good cause.) According to Stuart Miller, cited on page 91, Senior Legislative analyst for the American Fathers Coalition in Washington, "there was about 10.9 billion in court-ordered child support owed by all Americans, and of that, a little more than \$5 billion was paid. That leaves \$4.9 billion in unpaid child support for 1992—far short of the \$50 billion Ms. Shalala hopes to raise. The wildly different estimates are significant: they show how muddled the existing system is, how little anybody knows about what's going on or how little concern there is for the truth and how much concern for saying whatever will promote the feminist program. [*The Case For Father Custody*, by Dr. Daniel Amneus, ©1998, Primrose Press, 2131 S. Primrose Ave., Alhambra, CA 91803, p. 214.]

One might ask given the massive inconsistencies whether these people in the present Feminist movement's or Politically Correct government sectors, whether they have publicly or professionally readjusted their own mistakes. Indeed, in looking at the disparity of \$25 to \$50 Billion dollar estimates...with a plus or minus factor of \$25 Billion, clearly—*someone's* got to be wrong. But who cares? These feminist spewing these lies are not going to prison, *only innocent men are*. Yet, President Clinton, Ms. Hillary Rodham will still propagate these false figures, they will be widely be disbursed by an eager mainstream media whom are there to groom these people and such things as correcting the accuracy of these lies is way, way, way down on their professional food chain of 'things to do.'

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

What we do indeed know, and what I have personally witnessed is that out of the greatest majority owed by "Deadbeat Dads" the greatest majority comes from those harbored within prisons. The other miniscule amount, is owed by fathers who are just either physically or otherwise unable to pay. This perverse leakage or erroneous facts and figures wind up being propagated by the commissions themselves who rely heavily on such feminist propaganda. The infamous "Little Hoover Commission" which was established by then Governor Pete Wilson to study the statewide 'crisis.'

"Fewer than one in eight children who are entitled to financial help from an absent parent actually get that aid." So began a news release by the Associated Press (Sacramento) on May 14<sup>th</sup>. This sensational falsehood was attributed to the Little Hoover Commission's new report "Enforcing Child Support." Since I knew that the quoted figure was an untruth, I called the Little Hoover Commission (916) 445-2121 for a copy of their report.

Sure enough, the false claim, exactly as quoted in the newspapers, appears on the second page of Little Hoover's covering letter to Governor Wilson and the California Legislators. The falsehood is repeated again on page iv of the report: "When all cases are taken into account, one in eight families who are entitled to support receive it." By the time we get to page xi, the fiction is booted another notch: "The proportion of families who are entitled to child support compared to those who are receiving child support is less than one in nine." NINE? None of these false assertions are backed by any references.

The Little Hoover report itself quotes figures that give the lie to its 1-in-8 claim. On page 10, we are told that "three quarters of custodial mothers entitled to child support either lack child support orders or do not receive full payments under such orders." But, that still leaves **1 out of 4 custodial mothers getting full child support**, not just one in 8 or nine." [W.J. Holly, Ph.D. (209) 668-1498 Web <http://www.users.cts.com/crash/j/jcb/lh.html>.]

Again, we see displayed a pathological tendency for government combined with feminists to outright distort the facts. What we are speaking of here is outright lying. Again, this would be bad enough, for a report having Governmental impact over such a large portion of people, but the lies embedded throughout this "report" continue!

On page 11, Little Hoover misquotes the U.S. Census Bureau, "Child Support for Custodial Mothers and Fathers: 1991" (Current Population Reports Series P60-187, August 1995)(see their endnote 9). And, they fail to mention other data from the Census report that gives the lie to their one-in-eight figure: **56% of all custodial mothers had child support awards in Spring 1992. Moreover, 76% of the moms due child support**

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

**payments in 1991 did receive payment (52% getting the full amount due, and another 24% at least partial payment.)**

[W.J.

Holly,

Ph.D.

(209)

668-1498

Web <http://www.users.cts.com/crash/j/jcb/lh.html>.]

Now again, this is a government who is making such glaring mistakes in their foundational documents they are using and quoting in which to destroy and disenfranchise men, yet; they tell us as they fail miserably at such simple tasks as telling we the American the simple truth, which they appear incapable of, that they are going to micromanage our lives, run the family—and most importantly—they are to ‘redesign humanity’ in Hillary’s image! Indeed! Using these same mistakes? I think not. Yet men, and Fathers who are paying Child Support and other financial supplements are paying for these decrepit studies and commissions who are mostly headed by Feminists such as Ms. Clinton. Those “angry white males” who may have attempted to either carefully check or review such figures or worse yet; who may have tried to bring out the actual truth—are long gone.

When it comes to child welfare, the claims of social scientists must be viewed with extreme skepticism.

Most researchers, who are biased in favor of homosexuals, ignore their own data. Dr. Paul Cameron, Ph.D., of the Family Research Institute has surveyed the admittedly scant findings of his profession on children raised in households with at least one homosexual.

In these studies, between 8% and 33% of adult respondents said they considered themselves homosexual or bisexual, far above the national norm of 2% of the adult male population.

How surprising is this? IN almost every area, parental behavior has a profound, at times predominant, impact on children. The children of smokers frequently become smokers. Kids from abusive homes often become abusers. Children from broken homes are more likely to divorce. Only in the case of homosexuality are we asked to believe that what happens in the home is irrelevant to emotional development. [*The Family, Opposing Viewpoints*, Mary E. Williams, Book Editor, ©1998, Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009, ISBN 1-56510-669-5; p. 52.]

No longer are feminist ‘just’ content with turning over our Judiciary, they are sectioning off huge portions of humanity, through the validation and instrumentation of government to control every portion of it. This Brave New Feminist World is not a world which any of us would recognize, perhaps excepting the survivors of Auschwitz or Russian Stalinism who also saw and suffered a similar fate as their institutions of truth and freedom died as they became subverted from within. And again, exactly as in the case with Shalala and Faludi noted above, these figures ‘just’

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

aren't small or tiny mistakes, they are errors on an order of magnitude which shock our conscience and mandate questions as to ask: "What is *really* going on here?"

"Gershenson also spread it around that the average Child Support per family in California is only \$380 a year, using the same methods of distortion. But, the fact of the matter is that the average yearly collection for cases with collections even in the California Child Support Enforcement caseload was \$3004 per year (or \$250 a month).

On the basis of its sensational statistical lies, the Little Hoover Commission calls for increasingly brutal measures against custodial fathers who owe child support—making nonpayment a felony, creating a National New Hire Registry, taking away business & drivers licenses, and so on. (They do not suggest making it a felony for AFDC Moms not to be supporting their kids or even themselves...only fathers.) Little Hoovers main concern seems to be to substitute Child Support for AFDC support. But, even on the national level, ***CSE programs spend a dollar for every AFDC dollar they collect***, not very cost efficient. The Census report cited says that even if all current child support due were paid, it would only reduce the number of custodial parent household below poverty level from 24% to 21%. Little Hoover itself says, "even if the private child support system works perfectly, ...60% of the poverty gap and more than half the welfare caseload would remain. "So, why step up the brutality? {*Speaking of brutality, Little Hoover (p. 36 under "Leadership: Missed opportunities, The Court of Public Opinion") even endorses hate crimes against fathers: "So that when a guy is sitting in a bar bragging that he doesn't have to pay child support, his buddies will beat him up."* No joke. This report has no credibility.] [W.J. Holly, Ph.D. (209) 668-1498 Web <http://www.users.cts.com/crash/j/jcb/lh.html>.]

"The Average annual child support payment received by mothers in 1991 was \$3,011, representing 17% of their incomes. [*Few Parents Pay Support, US Says*," San Francisco Chronicle, 13, May 1995.]

Again, we are faced with a government that is the resultant feminist product of GIGO. You put Garbage Into such commissions, you get Garbage Out from government by its laws. This is one reason why our present courts are so patently screwed up and no longer obey their own foundational laws anymore. This is why government has become the real criminal. and the real wife abuser, and child abuser, and abandoner within this nation. It has become a stoic fact that we do not need more Draconian laws against Fatherhood, we need less laws against ourselves and more massive laws and protections against our own government! Who not only facilitate this putrid science, put are making incomprehensible and un-American laws at a rate never seen before in any nations history.

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Are people "happy" in the traditional family? "Unhappy" with these [radical feminist] changes? Most people are happier with their personal lives today than they were fifty years ago: women especially have more choices and freedom than they did in the past. A "golden age" of family bliss exists more in people's imaginations than in their experience. [*The Hite Report On the Family*, by Shere Hite, ©1994, Grove Press, 841 Broadway, New York, NY 10003; ISBN 0-8021-3451-3; p. 345.]

Of course this is a blatant lie. With the social pressures of divorce, crime rates, suicide, with murders rising several fold from those 'pastoral' days of 1950—which we should never look back to—there is no way we are a happier nation. Indeed, we are so happy, the feminist pretend to tell us, that they are screaming of family violence at epidemic proportions. We have several standing armies shooting unarmed citizens upon our nations streets; where no American can travel our own streets in safety, to either being attacked by a criminal from the Welfare class which Ms. Hite entreats, or by being attacked by the criminal organized crime syndicate of government which has exploded beyond all recognition and proportions to its enumerated authority. With Fathers suffering through both divorce and radically redesigned feminist family life; where AIDS and other social diseases directly linked to the irresponsibility which the feminist have set upon this nation as a plague against our society; I directly challenge any such 'happiness' of which these feminists might pretend. Indeed, if anything—our nation is at war with itself—and it is devolving right in front of our own eyes. Clearly this survey Ms. Hite refers to did not address either the Fathers or Children who are being destroyed by this present system in numbers few sociologists can comprehend now-a-days.

Crime studies show that if the family does not perform well, no amount of government intervention can make up for it, says Lucy Sullivan.

Crime figures covering this century show that in the past 30 years respect for people's personal well-being and property has plummeted.

We get a picture of a police force so overtaken by the rapidity of the rise in the crime rate, it has entirely lost its preventative function where serious crimes are concerned.

The re-emergence of private police as a growth industry, in the form of security guards, is a telling sign of the loss of this important civic amenity....

### MORE POLICE

We need to consider raising police numbers to ratios, in relation to crimes, comparable with those a century ago.

An updated version of loitering and vagrancy provisions is also needed if truly preventative strategies are to be achieved. Creation of "alcohol free zones" in trouble spots is one move already in operation.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

An increase in crime rates, of 400-800 per cent in a mere three decades, is almost bound to be the effect of a conjunction of several circumstances.....

Sexual permissiveness, rather than poor socialization, was probably the major factor in the rise of ex-nuptial and teenage births between 1963 and 1973, thereby setting in train the social circumstances for later poor socialization....

Efforts at explanation of fluctuations in crime rates have been stalled for a long time on economic causes. This focus must be judged to be almost entirely non-productive, at least as far as long-term trends are concerned.

The remarkable correlation's between crime rates and family breakdown (divorce, ex-nuptial birth, single parent families), disengagement of women from supervision of their children (female employment) and maturity of parenting are not proved causes, but may be.

Does ex-nuptial birth cause crime or vice-versa? Does divorce cause crime, or vice-versa? Does female employment cause crime, or vice-versa?

In each case, it is unlikely to the point of absurdity that crime is the reverse cause.

But one cannot fail to be impressed that the family factors found to be strongly associated with crime rates - falling and rising across a century - have this in common.

Sexual permissiveness has found expression as both promiscuous and precocious sexual behavior, and these in turn have been given social approval in the liberalization of divorce and in the de-stigmatization of and financial support for, both divorce and ex-nuptial birth.

It may be that to reject "Victorian" virtues and morality wholesale is to take on again the whole range of 19th century ills which their implementation so successfully eliminated.

We should take a public health approach to psychological health for the prevention of crime.

It seems likely that psychological health - at least prevention of crime - may similarly be more sweepingly improved by discouraging divorce, young motherhood, ex-nuptial birth, and perhaps excessive maternal employment. The lesson of recent years has been that if the family does not perform well, no amount of government intervention and activity of the "caring" professions can make up for it. [*Broken Families and Crime: Cause and Effect*, by Dr Lucy Sullivan, News Weekly 29 November 1999, p14 .]

We see these Feminist Lies and Disinformation in continuing in virtually all their systems and interactions with either Government, or the Public. In riding the NYC Subway trains, I see Feminist Posters addressing "abuse," however; all over the background of this poster we see the classic Feminist ideology. First, they use the statistical references of abuse—which most of those figures come from women abusing men and children



## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

within their own homes! Then, in the background we see the words "He screams at her. He beats her. Tells her the house isn't clean. He tells her she's stupid, etc." Again, this is using the dissonance of dissimilar paradoxes, of using one set of figures to create a crisis, then; turning right around and sublimating another set of facts (or even myths as this case shows) which are in direct contravention of the message being displayed. If in fact these Feminists were trying to be fair and were trying truthfully to inform the public of any such crisis, then; the background material would in fact have about 30% of the references against the male, and then would have the remaining 70% making derogatory yet factual statements against the female, who statistically, is the real abuser within the home. For this is what in fact the approximate scientific data really shows. Yet, what we see here, as we do in virtually all the Feminist statistics, is the ability to bait and switch ploy in advertising. This of course if false, it is not really informing the public of what they should know to make proper determinations, it is in fact pure and simply only war propaganda against the American male.

"Since the 1960s feminist have been assuring us that divorce and illegitimacy didn't mean "the family" was breaking down—it was merely undergoing development, adapting to social changes such as feminism." [*The Case for Father Custody*, by Dr. Daniel Amneus, ©1998, Primrose Press, Alhambra, CA., p. 35.]

Of course we can now recognize this is a lie. In fact, the feminist not only want to destroy Fatherhood, but also the family as 'the' defined social structure within the American nation. In fact, we can see what they are designing by some of the literature which openly discusses this 'new design.'

*Out* magazine, for instance, published an article in 1993 containing advice for "queer moms" who need to "get out of the house and into somebody's pants." The writer, Susie Bright, whose latest book is *Susie Bright's Sexual Reality: A Virtual Sex World Reader*, mentions that it is extremely important to have lots of baby-sitters because "we are more often than not relying on an extended family of 'aunts,' 'godmothers,' and friends who are often the very people we'd like to spend an evening with."

The need for baby-sitters raises a problem, however.

But teenage baby-sitters are often squeamish about sex, not to mention *homosexuality*. Who knows what sort of parents they have, and how much they confide in them? The grim side of a gay mom's social life is that underneath her swinging-single exterior, she is always worried that someone will try to take her kid away. The law is not on our side. No matter what contracts we've signed

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

with donors, friendly fathers, or sperm banks, the whole area of child custody and gay parenting is up for grabs.

This sounds horrible, of course. Yet when the author of the article tells a prospective baby-sitter what she must be willing to put up with, we get a rare glimpse at the world that children of homosexuals are raised to take for granted:

I take the out-of-the-closet or out-of-my-house approach. I told my first teenage baby-sitter that I was queer, that I wrote about sex for a living, and that my house was full of erotic art. I said, "If your parents would disapprove of your working here, or if it's not your cup of tea, then this baby-sitting is not for you."

So the cat's out of the bag. Bright considers it repressive that some people think it is wrong and should be illegal to raise children in the presence of pornography. What wonderful "family values." [*The Family, Opposing Viewpoints*, Mary E. Williams, Book Editor, ©1998, Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; ISBN 1-56510-668-7, p. 55.]

I believe this was its intent from the First Wave of feminism in 1776 when Abigail Smith Adams wrote:

"I long to hear that you have declared an independency—and by the way in the new Code of Laws which I suppose it will be necessary for you to make I desire you would Remember the Ladies, and be more generous and favorable to them than your ancestors. Do not put such unlimited power into the hands of the husbands. Remember all Men would be tyrants if they could. If particular care and attention is not paid to the Ladies we are determined to foment a Rebellion, and will not hold ourselves bound by any Laws in which we have no voice, or Representation.

That your Sex are Naturally Tyrannical is a Truth so thoroughly established as to admit of no dispute, but such of you as wish to be happy willingly give up the harsh title of Master for the more tender and endearing one of friend. Why then, not put it out of the power of the vicious and the Lawless to use us with cruelty and indignity with impunity. Men of the Sense in all Ages abhor those customs which treat us only as the vassals of your Sex.

....I can not say that I think you very generous to the Ladies, for whilst you are proclaiming peace and good will to Men, Emancipating all Nations, you insist upon retaining an absolute power over Wives. But you must remember that Arbitrary power is like most other things which are very hard, very liable to be broken—and notwithstanding all your wise Laws and Maxims we have it in our power not only to free ourselves but to subdue our Masters, and without violence throw both your natural and legal authority at our feet." [*The Women's Rights Movement, Opposing*

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

*Viewpoints*, by Brenda Stalcup, Book Editor, Greenhaven Press, Inc., PO Box 289009, San Diego, California, 92198-9009; pp. 27-29.]

Of course one might immediately wonder if Ms. Adams husband: John Adams who just happened to be our second President of the United States, was considered an abuser. I have a supposition he was not, and just as in today's Feminist propaganda machine, I do believe that this was a ploy to force 'equality' on this society, which the Founders, who had a broader vision of this nation, did not fall for. This "Despotism of the Petticoat" as John Adams labeled it, did not have the desired effect of which our present Representatives are like Pavlovian dogs, held slave to today.

Does this mean that our Founding Fathers were abusive and tyrannical men in their own homes? I think not, for their vision in this country, controverts such assessment. Also, in being such iconoclasts the meter of history would have displayed a different countenance upon them.

Mr. Adam eloquently presents the ultimate dichotomy of the Feminist betrayal when he responds "Whence arises the right of the majority to govern, and the obligation of the minority to obey?" [*The Women's Rights Movement, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Brenda Stalcup, Book Editor, Greenhaven Press, Inc., PO Box 289009, San Diego, California, 92198-9009; p. 32.] This clearly indicated that the Founders understood like John Winthrop understood that this nation would not be a nation of tyranny, of mob mentality, but rather, one of American ideals and vision—of law--immutable to the temporal sway and mutiny of the mobs--of which Patriarchy was one of the foundational and principal ideals which this nation was formed under. Mr. Adams was not dissuaded by his wife's shallow attempts to blackmail him by promising to foment rebellion if her demands were not met. We should take note of John Adams courage, and more importantly, his vision.

Above and beyond this, as again from the time of Cicero, Fatherhood was not the raging animal in which feminist betrayed. Being Father of a country or a home fully understood that there were not only responsibilities, but benevolence ingrained in that august institution.

..."In about 1640 a third type of family began to develop, characterized in its later days by a new warmth, a new emotional stability, and a new individualism; the nuclear family consisting of only parents and children. With equality neat timing, there was a sharp drop in the bastardy rate that seemed to confirm the emotional solidarity of the new tightly-knit family unit. ..."In about 1640 a third type of family began to develop, characterized in its later days by a new warmth, a new emotional stability, and a new individualism; the nuclear family consisting of only parents and children. With equality neat timing, there was a sharp drop in the bastardy rate that seemed to confirm the emotional solidarity of the new tightly-knit

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

family unit." [*SEX IN HISTORY*, by Reay Tannahill, @1980, 1992, Scarborough House Publishers; ISBN 0-8128-8540-6; p. 333.]

Again, this is not to state that there was no abuse transpiring within the home, but rather that such abuse was again, in the Patriarchal institution, insignificantly way on one end of the Bell Curve and not as much of a crisis as Feminists would have us believe. Again, Patriarchy was an institution that had power vested to it, but; which rarely used or abused that power. On the other hand, early feminist doctrines were an offense not only to the institution of Patriarchy, but to the American nation as well:

"National Woman Suffrage Association was an irresistible arena, and Elizabeth Cady Stanton and Susan B. Anthony and their respectable cohorts stood by her, pale but resolute, even when she campaigned no only for woman suffrage but for free love at its freest and a kind of highly personal anarchism that offended every tenet of the American Way of Life--and made a mockery of the entire feminine morality thesis." [*SEX IN HISTORY*, by Reay Tannahill, @1980, 1992, Scarborough House/ Publishers; ISBN 0-8128-8540-6; p. 397.]

Again, this was a not too publicized paradox within the Feminist movement, of which fulminated various factions within the feminist movement. Like most civil right activists who we noted earlier, really didn't believe in the true ideals and precepts of American government, there were some within the feminist movement whom affirmed that they did.

"In the 1970s the concept of "republican motherhood" provided the rationale for women's political activities. It also initiated a debate on women's education and led to the first female academies. The term recalled Thomas Paine's ideal of the republican as an independent, mature person dedicated to the good of society. It reflected women's newfound patriotism, which developed during the American Revolution. Republican mothers had a dual responsibility : to educate sons to be good citizens and to promote the communal good. Throughout the nineteenth century, women used the rhetoric of republican motherhood to justify their political activities, saying they could not be good mothers unless they could vote to keep wrong doers out of public office. [*Women's Progress in America*, by Elizabeth Frost-Knappman, @1994 ABC-CLIO, Inc., 130 Cremona Drive, P.O. Box 1911, Santa Barbera, CA 93116-1911, ISBN 0-87436-667-4; pp. 258-259.]

Of course, who are we to believe in our present circumstances? There can be no argument that this "Republican Motherhood" agenda has been completely dropped by the Feminists as a whole and presently they are

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

implementing an Anti-American doctrine that comes from the direct extrapolation of Marxist Socialist/Communitistic theory.

Unfortunately, we are to believe our own reality, which is that government and radical feminist have willfully combined against Patriarchy in which to inflict mortal wounds upon a nation of men who can't fully understand the magnitude of what is happening to them. They feel as if it is something that they did. They understand whatever is happening is unjust, and that 'in all fairness' they should compromise somehow and 'work within the system,' as corrupt as it is, to get along as best as they can. Nothing could be further from the truth. If most Fathers could step away from their own particular problems with the present system, they would be able to see a completely misconstrued and ill-designed principals at law which is cogently working against them. There is a 'big-picture' to all of this destruction, and 'just going along' to protect yourself and remaining 'invisible' to the government, just doesn't cut it anymore. It is time we imbued a sense of engineered principles to the Fathers Rights movement in which to give it cohesiveness and direction. If we Fathers don't have the courage to stand against such tyranny, who will? Without this determined engineering, we cannot defend ourselves as a national organization in which to combat the well-funded super-combine of Feminist, Government, the State and Federal Legislatures, along with our courts which have all combined in which to harvest us.

What is so odd is that if you ask most Fathers or American's if they agree with the same principles and foundational precepts of which John Winthrop and John Adams espoused almost 400 years ago—most of them would agree totally with those concepts. If you then presented them with the new feminist agenda, as confirmed by Karl Marx, and Frederick Engels in the *Communist Manifesto*, or documented throughout the contemporary radical feminist regimes, they would violently disagree with such Anti-American, socialist concepts...Yet, blindly without making any connection about the importance of their own actions in regards to the *big* picture, they would blindly submit and pay their Child Support or Alimony which of course builds the feminist empire which they know is killing them, other fathers, hurting their children, and dragging down society.

From this short sighted mind-set, the American male is purchasing through submission to Child Support and his transfer of wealth, and he is developing an arrogant, insolent female underclass, which is unmanageable and which will be a further drain against the solid institutions of which this nation built. This arrogant class of female has become a nothing but a social indicator clearly demarcating the failures of our society:

"It showed me how any country's moral strength, or its moral weakness, is quickly measurable by the street attire and attitude of its wom-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

en....Witness the woman, both young and old, in America--where scarcely any moral values are left" (*Autobiography*, 349). The Eves of the West are contrasted to the Madonna's of the East--with the major difference being that men in the East know how to control their women, while white men in the West not only fail to control their women but have set a bad example for Black men who are consequently losing the ability to control theirs." [*Malcolm X, In Our Own Image*, Joe Wood, Editor, @1992, St. Martin's Press, Inc., 175 Fifth Avenue, New York, NY 10010, ISBN 0-312-06609-0, p. 48.]

We have to pose the question as to why other cultures have made this connection and why we have denied them, and forgotten these well learned rules and discipline's of advanced civilization. Both men and women have a function within an advanced civilized society. Feminism is destroying such discipline and direction, and it is not any type of 'new' redesign as Ms. Clinton would have us believe, it is a throw-back to the stasis of proto-man, to the "lowest and rudest" tribal condition which existed a quarter million years ago.

To impress this aberrant social revolution onto an advanced culture such as ours, the feminists have had to go beyond the "Terror of the Petticoat" directly into abstract terrorism, lies, and disinformation. They have waged an underground cultural terrorist movement against all our institutions, and have subverted them from within. They have not done this through the "law of the highest reason." On the contrary, they have, like Adolph Hitler, used not small lies, but the big lie in which to overthrow the sensibility of the masses of which they depend upon so much for their radical Anti-American platform.

"In a speech in Baniff, Canada, Andrea Dworkin exhorted her audience to "stop men who beat women," "Get them jailed or get them killed...when the law fails us, we cannot fail each other." The exhortation to break the law if it cannot be tailored to the radical feminist program shows the length to which the activists are willing to travel to implement their vision of a redistribution of power...they seek to have one set of laws for women and another for men. What is alarming is that, all too often, the courts are helping in this endeavor." [*Sexual Violence, Opposing Viewpoints Series*, Greenhaven Press, Inc, San Diego, CA., ©1997; ISBN 1-56510-560-5; p. 139.]

Again, this marriage between the Courts, Legislatures and Radical Feminist is axiomatic. Something has clearly subverted them, and is now using the institutions which should be supporting America and Institutions such as the Family and Patriarchy, and it now is proactively attacking and outright destroying them for a 'new' purpose of which Ms. Clinton only hints at.

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

"Variations on these competing visions of the role of government and the rights of individuals exist all along the political spectrum. Most of us hold a point of view that exists somewhere between the extremes, even if we do not consciously articulate it that way. We may grumble about paying taxes, but we generally support programs like veterans' benefits, Social Security, and Medicare, along with public education, environmental protection, and some sort of social safety net for the poor, especially children. We are wary of both government interference with private initiative or personal belief and the excessive influence of special interests on the political system. Most of us would describe ourselves as "middle of the road"—liberal in some areas, conservative in others, moderate in most, neither exclusively pro- nor anti-government. We respect the unique power of government to meet certain social needs and acknowledge the need to limit its powers." [It Takes a Village, and Other Lessons Children Teach Us, by Hillary Rodham Clinton, ©1996, Simon & Schuster, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-81843-4; pp. 307-308.]

Again, this is a blatant feminist lie propagated by Ms. Clinton as she is the last person as an extreme Feminist liberal-socialist who would "limit the powers" of government. This is double-speak, in its most highest form, and as Ms. Clinton in total alignment with the Radical Feminists, will inform you of one thing, exactly while they are planning to implement the exact opposite.

This ruse to use the national media to say one thing while behind closed doors in publicly funded executive sessions they are implementing another with facts and figures which are nothing more than perverse science, is has not only become a recognized tactic of the radical feminists, it is the required norm within Washington. When feminist throw about such figures, there always is some qualifying statement, fact or figure, or 'meta-analysis' in which to skew the facts. For example:

"Women receive less than one-tenth of the world income, but do two-thirds of the world's work. Although earning less than men, they work longer hours—2 to 5 hours more in developed countries, 5 to 6 hours more in Latin America and the Caribbean, and as much as 12 to 13 hours more in Africa and Asia. *When housework and child care are taken into account.* Women average have a 60 to 70 hour week. [*Women in Movement, Feminism and Social Action*, by Sheila Rowbotham, ©1992, Routledge, 29 West 35<sup>th</sup> Street, New York, NY 10001; ISBN 0-415-90652-0; p. 8.]

Again, these are massively skewed figures, which do not even attempt to bring out the reality of working relationships between men and women. In fact, the 'world' standard of income does not correlate when taking into consideration that men are the providers and work mostly outside the home. Ms. Rowbotham who cited this figure, has not taken into account

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

that home labor is not the same as working outside the home for income. She as with all feminists want to marry the two, pretending that such "work" (what average citizens understand as 'personal responsibility') really amounts to women accruing up to \$40,000 a year or *higher* for their home labor. They have quantified personal home responsibilities into the free market and have tried to place exorbitant dollar figures to these personal endeavors as to gain public support and give Legislatures a reason to destroy Fatherhood. Ask these people to show the concomitant "personal household chores" men contribute to, and again; these figures rapidly begin to change.

Not only that, but adding in such "meta-analysis" information as to a "world" figure for working women, you will find many other social factors which skew the figures in favor of women, such as war, famine, Third World Tribalism, etc.

The derogatory impacts of both government's and Radical Feminism have had devastating effects against men in this nation, and around the earth. From the Feminist aggressions against men, implemented by our errant government—the missing male has been a planned conflagration. His disappearance is now an exemplary fact of the Anti-Male War which is raging within this nation. As the war rages, things do not get better, especially for children, who each year—appear to be doing worse and worse. Their crisis and social pathologies strangely, appear to be growing logarithmically. And of course, because of this, the Feminist scream that we must attack and hold the male even *more* responsible for the crisis, which mainly stems from them being driven out of the home by government and the Feminists in the first place!

- Men are the primary victims of crime, violence and murder. Rates of violent crimes and theft victimization's remain significantly higher for men than women. Black men are at the greatest risk of becoming victims of crime, white men have the second greatest risk, then black women, and finally white women. A 1994 Department of Justice Study Found that through violence against women is increasing, men were being victimized by violent crimes at 63% higher rate than women. Moreover, since 1976 the rate of murders for men has increased about 10%, while remaining virtually unchanged for women. As of 1992, men were about three and one half times more likely to be victims of murder than women.
- Millions of Fathers have lost meaningful contact with their children as family courts discriminate against men in child custody decisions. Throughout the United States, divorce is reaching epidemic proportions. One recent estimate is that two-thirds of first time marriages will end up in separation or divorce. Slightly more than half of all divorced couples have children eighteen years or younger at the time of their separation.



## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Each year there are approximately one-million divorces which effect one million children. Fathers and children have been the biggest losers in divorce and custody wars. Mothers initiate divorce action at over twice the rate of men, while in many jurisdictions, men receive physical custody of children in only about 10 percent of all contested court cases.

- Discrimination against Fathers by custody court Judges and Lawyers is a major factor in losing custody of their children. A New York State Task Force Survey revealed that nearly three quarters of attorneys surveyed believe that child custody awards are "often" or "sometimes" based on the assumption that children belong with their mothers rather than on independent facts. (Over half of the attorneys believed that Judges "always" or "often" employed a maternal preference in custody awards, and 24 percent of attorneys believed that Judges "rarely" or "never" gave fair and serious consideration to Fathers seeking physical custody of their children. Nineteen Ninety-two statistics on child support awards show the result of the discrimination practiced against fathers in New York State Courts. The courts issued 65,536 support awards involving 94,788 children; only 3,537 (3.7 percent) were given primary residence with their fathers. [*The Masculine Mystique, The Politics of Masculinity*, by Andrew Kimball, ©1995, Ballantine Books, New York, ISBN 0-345-38658-2 pp. 4-12.]

Contrary to what Feminist and the Media inform the public of, the state of Men in this nation has been diminishing over the last 70 years and it is getting worse. In about 1920 the mortality rates of men and women were just about equalizing. From that point on however; because of this ever rising war against men, the male has lost considerable ground as far as his chances of living beyond that of his female counterpart. Now women are expected to outlive men by at least seven years, and that number is widening.

"For openers, more than half of the delinquent fathers are dead, or in prison, or disabled, or seriously ill, or unemployed. Of the delinquent dads who do have jobs. 52 percent earn less than \$6,200 a year (not enough to support one person). [Fathers' Rights, Hard-Hitting & Fair Advice for Every Father Involved in a Custody Dispute, by Jeffery M. Leving, c1997; BasicBooks, 10 East 53rd Street, New York, NY 10022-5299, ISBN 0-465-02443-2; p. 48.]

In the labor market, the massive shift of wealth has displaced and unemployed millions of men and fathers, all to the benefit of the Females who have pushed men out of the labor market, especially the white collar markets which now females, because of the considerable education grants given to them through Welfare and other means, have higher degrees than men. This massive shift in wealth has strained men, thereby adding to the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

stress factors which reduce their marketability and their job choices. Still however; the Feminists lie and claim that men are dominating the work-force, which they are not.

Of course the greatest and meanest lie which feminist still propagate against men is that they are nothing but abusers. Again, this is a giant leap from the time of Cicero up to about 100 years ago, when civilization as a whole viewed Fatherhood as a venerable institution, one of sacrifice, love and dedication. Presently, because of the efforts of the Feminists, government and the Mainstream Media; Fatherhood is a vilified institution, hated, and always under attack. Because of this, there is going to have to be a massive national re-educational campaign to disseminate the correct fact and figures in regards to this issue, which; in total; is a *very small problem, even today*. For instance presently Dentist, Doctors, Teachers and Police are all trained to 'turn in' any *suspected* incidences of child abuse or spousal abuse, and from this new mindset, many have. Of course in doing so, many of these people have either wittingly, or unwittingly placed innocent Fathers into prison. However; this has injected many incidences of physical trauma other than 'abuse' into the abuse controversy. From this, we know and understand that a great many of these 'new' inputs into the 'abuse' equation which were never there before. So, the Feminists have successfully artificially inflated the figures through this means of skewing the data sample of true abuse incidences. From this, we know from the false abuse charges and from criminal cases such as Carlos, that there are a certain segment of this population who are totally innocent, yet; who get caught into the legal trap of the courts, lawyers and feminism, and worse yet; of 'quotas' which *must* be maintained at all costs. So therefore, many incidences of abuse are artificially inflated and more importantly, many 'programs' such as counseling and psychological services obtain the added benefit by and from these inflated programs used to capture innocent people into their ranks, which would otherwise never be reported, and were not previously.

Also gay and lesbian abuse statistic's are now leaking into the mainstream figures, again inflating the overall impact, and when Feminist declare so many 'couples,' suffer abuse, indeed, which 'couples' are they referring to?!? Presently, only estimates are yet available, but they show that Gay and Lesbian abuse statistics are currently about equal with heterosexual couples. But it is irrefutable, that modern Feminist do not want proper facts or statistics brought out about abuse, or about the problem of Female abuse within the home and family which is as frequent or more frequent than male abuse figures.

"The last national misinformation campaign about domestic violence was the great Super Bowl hoax of 1993. Advocacy groups claimed that watching football triggered male violence and that Super Bowl Sunday

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

was the worst day of the year for wife-beating in the United States. That fiction was exposed, but the alleged football connection to domestic violence has been revived, with former all-star running back O.J. Simpson offered as proof that competitive sports inflame male brutality. No responsible editor would tolerate claims that the Simpson case proved that all black people are violent or that mixed marriages don't work. But the assumption that Simpson beat his wife because he is male and an athlete is accepted without question.

To complicate matters, radical women's groups actively oppose the spreading of more accurate information about gender equity in family violence. Take the case of Dr. Suzanne Steinmetz, director of the Family Research Institute at Indiana University-Purdue University and Indianapolis. When her article, "The Battered Husband Syndrome," appeared in the journal *Victimology* in 1978, she was harassed by phone, there were threats to harm her children, her colleagues were lobbied to prevent her from getting tenure and bomb threats were sent to a branch of the American Civil Liberties Union that had invited her to give a talk. Other researchers in the field report similar experiences, and male researchers are commonly accused of being batterers themselves." [*Domestic Violence, An Opposing Viewpoints Series*, Karen L. Swisher, Ed., ©1996 by Greenhaven Press, Inc., PO Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; ISBN 1-56510-381-5; p. 78.]

This known Feminist procedure to lie and terrorize others disseminating the truth to the public is a well documented pathology within that community. Like the Feminists who arrogantly informed the Georgetown Girls to lie "if it promotes our social agenda," the media and others have been consistently used by the Radical Feminists, as they have not suffered one iota of retribution for knowingly lying and misinforming the public. It is even *rarer* occurrence when the Mainstream Media when presented with these perverted disinformationologies to challenge the feminists as to the basis of their facts and figures. As in the Super Bowl case in 1993, it wasn't until one single reporter throughout the whole nation—who happened to work at the Washington Post in Washington D.C., challenged the feminists to back up their claim. The feminists couldn't back up their lies. Yet, the media, still even today are being led by the lies and disinformation this nationally recognized, publicly funded hate group continually propagates. One reporter can bring down the whole feminist regime, yet; the panoply of other national reporters and news editors, still dare not do these simple tasks, which is of course ingrained within their history and within their job descriptions. It is amazing that the media does not challenge this Feminist pathology.

Yet there is a plan to these lies.

"The "gender-motivated violence" civil rights provision of the VAWA can lead to serious intrusion of civil liberties. One commentator noted that

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

it would "invite publicity-oriented trials in which the desire is not so much to win as to call attention to the supposed injustice of American society....[This] is exactly what the radical feminists want." [*Feminist Jurisprudence, Equal Rights or Neo-Paternalism?* By Michael Weiss and Cathy Young, Cato Policy Analysis No. 256, p. 16.]

It is very odd for a movement that, as it's NOW's 1966 "Statement of Purpose" actually states that they "Believe [in] the power of American Law" and that they must "exercise their political rights and *responsibilities* as American citizens." Yet, their factual performance on this matter is to lie, and to tear down Law and replace it with Anti-Law Feminist Jurisprudence, and to abrogate proper "American" citizens responsibilities of fair play, truth and justice, to accomplish their Social agenda, by any means necessary. It is amazing that their outright lying, which has blatantly occurred for over three-decades now, is still marketed by the Mainstream Media, who still calls out the same old Patriarch's and parades them before the American public as 'experts' instead of their real moniker which should be *Feminist Liar*. If any other group had lied with the consistency and virility of the American Feminist movement, they'd never be in or on the Mainstream Media again.

Conversely, when the Fathers Rights community tries to approach these same institutions, we are shut out, and people such as Rodney from CBS insolently declare that we (the Fathers Rights community) "are not news." Yet somehow the American nation is stunned when those like Monica Lewinsky and the President openly admit to their lying. "Yes, I've been a liar all my life...everyone lies." [ABC Nightline with Ted Koppel, quote from Barbara Walters after her Monica Lewinsky interview, March 3, 1999, 11:30pm] Apparently the message is clear, those who are willing to lie as a way of life, are the ones on the fast track and are thereby become by such right as 'experts' and social leaders within the 'new' Clinton American regime.

What some consider to be their moral responsibility to lie throughout the American experience, we quaint 'old' Patriarch's who still believe in truth, American Law, and the American way—are to be pushed aside to make room for Hillary's brave new redesigned American society. We are just "old" anachronisms to be laughed at and discounted. Strangely, telling the truth has become a very unpopular thing to do. From this new Feminist discipline, we can only hope that our marriages and family life are as successful as Ms. Clinton's. She wants us to 'move ahead' into redefining humanity through feminism, a throwback of human culture to over a quarter of a million years ago.

"But how about the myths found in so many societies about a time when women ruled the world? Alas, they are just that—myths. Joan Bam-

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

berger, an Anthropologist who studied such myths among South American Indians points out that they portray the period of Matriarchy as one of injustice, immorality, and the abuse of power, which was only brought to an end when men seized the sacred flutes or whatever else served as both the symbol and the instrument of control. Men thus established their rule over women and, incidentally, over the rituals surrounding the sacred instruments, from which women are strictly barred. These myths are clearly not history. Instead, they are a rationalization and justification of the present male-dominated order. The peoples who tell these stories teach that women are potentially dangerous and immoral and that stable and just order in this world depends on their being kept under the control of men."

[*Millenium—Tribal Wisdom and the Modern World*, by David Maybury-Lewis, ©1992, Viking Press, 375 Hudson Street, New York, NY 10014, ISBN 0-670-83935-8; p. 130.]

I find it strikingly odd, that civilized nations all across the globe at disparate time periods, separated by both time, technology and distance, have similarly come to this same conclusion to attack Matriarchy. Again, it may be the final manifest destiny of this nation to rediscover the obvious, that we must regulate our females.

There are so many lies in which the Feminist have propagated in order to achieve their social agenda, that it would be physically difficult to catalogue them all within one chapter. Indeed, some ambitious newsperson or author might take up this sword and could find enough material to write a large investigative work in just this one endeavor and most likely that book would be a best-seller. However, the largest lie in which the feminist have propagated, has not been against the Father, or about abuse statistic's, but worse, it has been against the American two-parent nuclear family. Feminist hate the institution of the family. This is one reason why they are so determined to redesign it. Of course some feminist liars will attempt to obfuscate their real intent, as shown above; they will state that the family is "merely undergoing development, adapting to social changes such as feminism." What is *most odd* about this affirmation is, why change the family at all?

More consequently, Love Family ideology is winning over younger Americans. Teenagers have seized upon the idea that a family is a love feeling with the same enthusiasm that they have latched on to other culturally significant ideas. Across the socioeconomic spectrum, from inner-city teenagers to middle-class college students, young women say that they will have a child "on their own" if the right man does not come along. According to the same Family Research Council survey, 70 Percent of young adult Americans, ages eighteen to thirty-four, believe that a women has the right to bear a child outside of marriage, compared with only 29 percent of Americans ages fifty-five or older.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Juvenile literature and especially fiction for adolescent girls enthusiastically endorse the notion that a family is a "love feeling." A growing number of magazine stories and popular novels for teenage girls center on the quest of finding your true "love family" rather than the more traditional adolescent task of enduring your biological or adoptive family..."I didn't have a father at home, and it's not a requirement...all a child has to have is somebody to love them." {One character says.} [*The Divorce Culture*, by Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, ©1996, A Borzoi Book, Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., Publishers, New York, ISBN 0-679-43230-2; p. 150.]

Thus, we see an imprinting of the Feminist culture to just throw away or dispose of the traditional, nuclear two-parent family. If we look at the simple facts and figures surrounding the family, we see that even today, in this society where this institution is under incredible social pressure from the Feminists and government to fail—that it is *still* surviving, and still the singularly best place for children, wives, and husbands! Across the board, this is unmistakably the best environment for the health, development, protection and welfare of all those within the home. If you look at any social indicator of crime, health, economics, education, sexual well-being, productivity, love, morality, psychology, and happiness, clearly; it is the home were the best of the best of these figures remain. When we have such absolute idiots such as Ms. Clinton, proposing to change this institution, for the fallow gains of an untried dreaded social experiment, closely aligned to the dangerous Socialist hate-group of Feminists and other agenda driven special interest groups and Elite regimes, we must wonder. When Ms. Clinton makes the comment:

"We cannot move forward by looking to the past for easy solutions. Even if a gold age had existed, we could not simply graft it onto today's busier, more impersonal and complicated world. Instead, our challenge is to arrive at a consensus of values and a common vision of what we can do today, individually and collectively, to build strong families and communities. Creating that consensus in a democracy depends on seriously considering other points of view, resisting the lure of extremist rhetoric, and balancing individual rights and freedoms with personal responsibility and mutual obligations." [*It Takes a Village, and Other Lessons Children Teach Us*, by Hillary Rodham Clinton, ©1996, Simon & Schuster, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-684-81843-4; pp. 14-15.]

Talk about extremist! This is pure communist rhetoric which comes directly from the doctrines of Marx and Engels! Yet, here we have an extreme feminist radical, who cannot run her own home, yet, who is trying to program America to this new dogmatic regime. It must be noted, that her quote above is such a danger to all free loving American's as which should set off an alarm to each and everyone reading this. Please

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

note that presently, many fathers who have been destroyed, have done so through this program of what Ms. Clinton calls "balancing individual rights and freedoms with personal responsibility and mutual obligations." Trust me, when this new design is implemented, it will be forced down our throats with the same vengeance such as taxes and "Child Support" of which millions of present fathers are suffering through and being imprisoned by presently. Your obligations to this "Village" are as of yet undefined, and they will like taxes and "Child Support" start out low, and very modest; then they will become all-consuming; and a complete terror to you at the end. Everyone will be 'responsible' for such 'personal responsibilities' and 'mutual obligations'...as if the citizens of this nation already didn't have enough of these!

Again, Ms. Clinton's and the Radical Feminists and others, hopes of a redefined family will wreck even more havoc upon this society than we have now. She is almost shrill in her dictum for us not to look back into history, to the past; to where we might find true safety and comfort within the family. "To many, this brave new world seems dehumanizing and inhospitable. It is not surprising, then, that there is a yearning for the "good old days" as a refuge from the problems of the present." [Village, p. 13.] Factually, such a return would have exploded this nations wealth an indeterminate amount. It would have kept social pathologies to a bare minimum. The plagues of divorce and illegitimacy *never* and I mean *never* would have hit this country to the extent they have, and for all practical purposes, this nation would most certainly, not have had a staggering public debt. The other list of benefits could be extrapolated for pages, yet, keeping in conservative estimates—we would have had lower health costs, we would have been allot freer with massively low "American" prison incarceration rates. Education still would have been very high in regards to world standards, and; this nation would have been quite further ahead, and much more richer. These are just general estimates, however; even the most intellectually challenged person can see that this nation would have been considerably better without the advent of Radical Feminism within our borders.

People long for the 1950s because intrinsically they 'know' when something is right. Ms. Clinton needs to prevent any realistic evaluation of returning to Patriarchy due to the fact that as a Feminist and socialist, she cannot realize her socialist vision of this world with Patriarchy and Families who are succeeding in this nation. This is the reason why this government is pumping huge amounts of money into such programs as Surrogate Fathers and Mentoring right now—for they recognize the fact that Feminism has failed, but; if they can buy a replacement for the Father and one for the Nuclear two-parent household, then they will try everything, and spend anything in which to find any replacement for the simple

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

reality of the father. If given enough time, and obscenely more amounts of money—they could in fact, succeed in finding that replacement.

This of course will have to be considered and weighted by the American public, and it will not be a hard choice. Will they accept the almost certain tyranny of "balancing individual rights and freedoms with personal responsibility and mutual obligations." as Ms. Clinton beseeches us to accept? Or will they simply support Fatherhood at all costs and then, from that simplicity, with no money, with no government programs, (actually the collapse of such programs), just allow such Families to flourish as they have over the past five or six milleniums?!?

Again, the feminist do not want Americans to be informed, nor do they even want them answering this paradigm for themselves—as our 'leaders' Ms. Clinton is fully intent on answering these questions for us, in our name...again...with a vengeance.

If we study the Patriarchal institution in contrast, we can see that the many benefits clearly outweigh the detriments posed by the institution.

"According to the Federal Reserve Board's 1985 "Survey of Consumer Financing, "Two percent of U.S. Families owned the following:

- 20% of all Real Estate.
- 50% of all privately held stocks.
- 39% of all taxable bonds.
- 70% of all non-taxable bonds.
- 33% of all business assets.
- 30% of all liquid assets. [*The Ache for Home*, by Monica McGodlrige, The Family Therapy Networker, July94. P. 89.]

These 'two percent' families are directly structured off of the Patriarchal model. Again, these types of families are comparatively different from the feminist mantra that these homes are terrible institutions. In fact, the underlying premise of all Feminist doctrine is, that Single Female Headed Household's can do exactly as well as the two-parent family *if* and when you adjust them economically. "**IF**" you adjust them economically, and place children in Murphy Brown-like household's, an upwardly mobile, career minded forceful women; *then* you produce children exactly like two-parent nuclear households. Of course this is a lie. For in fact, if you go into the prisons, and into Child Youth Authority's around this nation and reach in and pull out one of its customers, approx-



## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

imately 75 percent of the time, you will pull out an individual from a Single Female Headed Household.

Is this to say that *all* Single Female Headed Household's produce these children and adults? Of course not. But it most definitely is relational at the source of pathology, where the relationship between crime and Single Female Headed Household's is irrefutable. If 99.9% of all Single Female Headed Household's produced wonderful children it still would not erase the fact that 75% to 85% of the people who are criminals inhabiting our prisons, only come from their domain. Factually, irrefutably, indomitably, criminals come from Murphy Brown families—no matter what her income.

The most recent important study of family structure was done in 1988 by the Department of Health and Human Services. It surveyed the family arrangements of more than 60,000 children living in households all over the country. Interviews were conducted in order to identify any childhood problems in health, schoolwork, and personal conduct. These results were tabulated according to the age, sex, and ethnicity of the child and the income and marital status of the parents.

The results were striking. At every income level save the very highest (over \$50,000 per year), for both sexes and for whites, blacks, and Hispanics alike, children living with a never-married or a divorced mother were substantially worse off than those living in two-parent families. Compared to children living with both biological parents, children in single-parent families were twice as likely to have been expelled or suspended from school, to display emotional or behavioral problems, and to have problems with their peers; they were also much more likely to engage in antisocial behavior. These differences were about as wide in households earning over \$35,000 a year as they were in those making less than \$10,000. [*The Family, Opposing Viewpoints*, Mary E. Williams, Book Editor, ©1998, Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; ISBN 1-56510-668-7; p. 39.]

This is one reason why Hillary does not want American's looking behind the Oz curtain to uncover the 1950s, because when we do, we see low prison rates, low social pathologies, low crime, with opposing high employment, massive wealth, and large individual savings. We uncover a national set of school children whose main problems were chewing gum in class, tardiness, talking back to the teacher—and the criminal offense of smoking. These are but "myths" to her ilk, and should be discounted. We should discount the fact that the schools of this period, smoking and chewing gum were the most egregious of problems that Teachers had to deal with. Now because of Murphy Brown, teachers have much more to worry about. Like their own lives and their own daily personal safety.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Teachers attacked by students.

A Brooklyn intermediate school is so out of control that six instructors have been assaulted by students since the fall—and kids roaming hallways pulling fire alarms, smoking marijuana and disrupting classes, teachers say.

One injured teacher resigned this week. But even as officials defended Intermediate School 117 in Clinton Hill, Parent Association President Theodore White said he wants to transfer his son.

"They have lost control," White said of school administrators. "I don't think they have a clear perspective as to what needs to be done."

IS 117 staff members charged that Principal Frances Horne has been unable to control the school.

"It's a dangerous school. Students have charged toward me. A student hit me," said social studies teacher Jeffrey Levy, 29, who has been on disability leave with rib injuries since Feb. 10, when a boy shoved a chair into his chest.

"I am scared to go back," said Levy, who left the school by ambulance.

"A lot of times I couldn't teach because the discipline was so bad," said special education teacher Lenora Mosby, 24, who started in September.

Mosby quit Tuesday, three months after a student shoved her into a desk and shook her, injuring her back and arms..."There are no consequences for their actions."

..."There's no respect," said Chris Chauncey, 14, an eight-grader. "But some of the teachers don't respect us either—they curse at us. I've seen some kids who want to hit their teachers." [*IS 117 Offers Lesson in Fear*. By Nancie L. Katz, The Daily News, Thursday, March 04, 1999. P. 4.]

This of course is the house that Hillary built, and through her affirmation that "The Village" (meaning you), will have to "balance [your] individual rights and freedoms with personal responsibility and mutual obligations," by obligating Trillions of taxpayer dollars to replace the Father, who would be doing this job but is prohibited. Indeed, Hillary may complete her task of replacing males ["the redesign of humanity"] if given enough money, if she can make each and every school into an armed encampment, place video cameras and monitors into every class, every corridor, every school bus; if she can hire untold amounts of security guards, Police, psychologists, counselors; and if she can guard the children from every street corner to every street corner—yes—she may then be able to obtain gain parity with those terrible Paternal schoolhouses of the 1950s, which she tells us ever so fondly and ever so efficiently, that we shouldn't be looking back to. Add to this the untold amounts of money that it will take to get our educational system back on scholastic par with those same

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

standards of those terrible 1950's...and you can add even more Trillions to the costs which Hillary anxiously wants to "obligate" you to.

Again, society can pay these astronomical costs and burden them and future generations into even more abject bondage at the hands of their Masters, the Elite regime and Feminists who profit from this insanity, or; they could pay nothing, and just allow the Father to rule within the home. From this, we *could* spend virtually nothing and return to those terrible pastoral 1950s. Of course it would mean 'a few' beatings...and some woman and families 'might' or 'would' suffer some abuse, but these numbers would be *negligible*. However, at the costs of those few, which were and are insignificant numbers—society could once again return to normalcy which made it free, and which made it great. They could allow the home to once again function as it should, make sex work for society, and thereby create a product that once that product got back to the schools, teachers such as Miss Mosby above, wouldn't fear, and *might* be actually be able to teach such students once again.

What the American society will have to contemplate, is if this Feminist glass is half-empty, or the Patriarchal glass, is half full. If this society again chooses to protect the weakest link in the family, "the Father," and to allow him again to rule in the home, the benefits would be irrefutable. Unlike the pedantic and tired abuse charges which have been successfully marketed for over a half-century, if society abstractly analyzed this issue in a Patriarchal light, they would find not abuse, but rather, a nation of disciplined, thriving and loved, two-parent household's.. This will; of course, as taxpayers reduce the innumerable burdens the present Feminist system has unfairly placed upon our American society. "IF" this nation can make this connection and can withstand the discipline of not listening to Feminist screaming 'abuse' and conversely follow the maxim of law that "A father that does not rule too harshly, *must be obeyed*;" if we can re-establish this form of abstract reasoning once again, then; both Feminism and Welfare will abjectly collapse. From this, the true wealth of this nation which has been so irresponsibly been allowed to flow into this never-ending feminist lie, will be returned to the people: the producers of this nation who earned it. From their own individual determinations, they will be the reinvestment of this nation, once again. This nation will flourish because of this courage to again tolerate freedom. We will once again, become a nation of massive savings, instead of one of incredible debt.

And *that* is the real reason why government does not want you running your home, because you might actually be successful running it without socialist 'outside help'. And *that* is the real reason why Feminist lies and disinformation, will continue to garner large media dissemination, because like Hillary Clinton; they don't want you looking back to the pastoral days of Patriarchy, nor do they want you figuring all of the

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

facts and figures out for yourself—they will inform you of the realities you should know—and from this; you will reach only the conclusions they have already mapped out for you...which will help *them* not you...*redesign humanity*.

---

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

---

"You guys have been practicing discrimination for years. Now its our turn." --- Supreme Court Justice, Thurgood Marshall [From: *The Court Years, 1939-1975: The Autobiography of William O. Douglas* (New York: Random House, 1980), p. 149. Citing the first reverse-discrimination case *DeFunis v. Odegaard*, 416 U.S. 312 (1974)]

### FEMINIST HATE

---

One of the most unnerving aspects of the American Feminist revolution is the aspect that this is a tyrannical organization whose main tenant's stem out of hate. They are a publicly funded organizations who hate Men, Patriarchy, the Bible Family life, Law and personal responsibility. They have used the Patriarchal sense of Justice and Fair play and turned them against itself, in which to at first gain its goals, then; once accomplished to wreck an unequal havoc against all those who are not "Politically Correct" and who do not agree with them. From gaining their own special interest social advances, they now are 'remaking' law in which to shut out everyone else who do not uphold their Feminist doctrines. They lie, cheat and have become a secret closed society within our main systems of government. Such things as 'bean count's' and open purges of government employees has become common-place within the specter of this totalitarian mindset. They have become the worst of which this nation has combated against, for the encompass the worst of Socialism, Communism, Fascism and Totalitarianism all rolled into one. It has become widely recognized, that Feminism, has gained the status of being a religion, all the while encompassing the complete domain of our form of Government.

"To handle social obligations and interdependency in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century, we must abandon any illusion that we can or should revive some largely mythical traditional family. We need to invent new family traditions and find ways of reviving older community ones, no wallow in nostalgia for the past or heap contempt on people whose family values do not live up to ours." [*The Way We Never Were*, Stephanie Coontz, p. 278.]

"Consider such slogans, circulating in the early 1990s on bathroom walls: 'Dead men tell no lies,' " 'Dead men don't rape!' 'The way to a man's heart is through his chest.' So many men. So little ammunition.' The individual man is not relevant, all men serve as symbolic targets. And this is true alone a wide continuum, from permissibly sexist jokes about men to the applause garnered by women who kill. The message being conveyed is that women, being blameless, are entitled to victimize without consequence. It was in that context that Aileen Wuornos killed and in that

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

climate of sanctimonious wrath that she gained her sympathizers. As Candice Skrapec observed in 1993, in an essay about serial killers, 'A woman's anger and need for empowerment will be directed at the power-brokers, those she has experienced as victimizing her. She will seek to punish them for being men.' With what result? "The victim becomes the victimizer.'" [*When She was Bad*, Patricia Pearson, p. 232.]

"In regard to the institutional church all women who are both Catholic and feminist desire passionately the conversion of the institution from the sin of sexism and know that this requires a full and final repudiation of Patriarchy." [*Beyond Patching*, Sandra Schnieders, p. 108.]

These few short quotes lay the foundation of hate which successfully emanates from feminism. These women, contrary to what happens to other persons who utter even lesser offensive and threatening material, get widely published, go on speaking tours, and are regarded by the mainstream media as 'experts' and are presented to a national audience by the media to spread these views. If men inadvertently speak as such, they are thrown out of their jobs, out from their positions on campuses, and out of the mainstream media.

Strangely, feminist hate is either viewed as innocuous, or as okay by both the media and government. What is most odd, is many of these people who carry these misanthropic hate doctrines are females who also work in the Social Services sector of Government: at Colleges and Universities, in Affirmative Action, in Health and Human Services, Child Support, in our Courts, and the range of other Support Industries linked both to radical feminism and government social services or even the media. These entities have turned a blind eye to either the constitution and this nations Laws. They only have a either narrow or broad view of their powers (as the circumstance dictates such need), and rule arrogantly, in direct violation of their oath of office. As was discussed earlier, many of these people don't even believe in our form of Government; worse yet; is that they don't believe in many of the Institutions which made America free in the first place. They are on top of the food chain now, in government, in the media, with very lucrative benefits and salaries, and they do not care about anything else than their own interests. They then use their own "practices, policies and procedures" to 'go after' and even-out any score or agenda which they want served. They even go after their own, if it serves their political purposes:

Spock faced the underlying anger engendered by his book at the 1971 National Women's Political Caucus meeting in Washington, D.C., whose endorsement he hoped to gain. Before his speech, Eugene McCarthy was chastised for missing the Senate vote on the Equal Rights Amendment and for calling his secretaries: "girls." Given the tenor of the meeting, some

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

friends tried to talk Ben out of getting up at the podium, but he wouldn't hear of it. He had nothing to be ashamed of. After all, Spock knew that millions of American women had bought the book and expressed their gratitude for helping to elevate the role of motherhood, calling upon men to help share the responsibilities of parenthood.

When he climbed up on stage, Ben received a chilly response. Once audience member marched out shouting denunciations at him. He immediately apologized for previous writings that could be construed as sexist. In response to questions, he promised to review the text for any female stereotyping, and reiterated his long-standing belief in equal child-rearing obligations for parents. Somehow, Dr. Spock's mea culpa didn't seem sufficient. During one dramatic encounter, Gloria Stienheim, perhaps the best-known feminist in the room, tried to summarize the reasons for the ill will.

"I hope you understand," Steinheim continued, "The you are considered a symbol of male oppression—just like Freud."

Spock was dumb founded. He stood silently at the podium in his archetypal doctors suit, all six feet, four inches of alleged male chauvinism, weighing his words. He looked drained. News accounts of the meeting later suggested that Steinheim's declaration had shamed Spock into a form of *nolo contendere*. Even decades afterward, Ben remembers Stienheim's words as "really scornful." [*Dr. Spock, An American Life*, by Thomas Maier, ©1996, Harcourt Brace & Company, 6277 Sea Harbor Drive, Orlando, FL 32887-6777; ISBN 0-15-100203-7, pp. 353-354.]

Again, this is a blindness, and hatred, which now inhabits every corridor of power within this nation. It infects our governments, it is a cancer upon our nations Universities, it is openly taught in our public schools; and it is a putrid reality dragging down both private industry and the home This twisted mindset, because again; men try to be fair like Mr. Spock above—has permeated society beyond the Radical Feminists wildest dreams. I argued with a friends wife who was an ardent feminist about an issue one time, intellectually repudiating each and every one of her arguments. Finally, in exasperation she blurted: "Well, men have been in charge since the dawn of time, its our turn now." This of course proves exactly what is happening throughout feminism and within government. Under their perverse morality, they think that two wrongs make a right. They are directly defying even the highest Constitutional law, fully aware that the courts will protect their criminal activities—thereby—since 'they' are in charge now, they will rule with as much antagonism and tyrannical authority that they can inflict. This of course has a label: "Administrative Absolutism" others even call it "Judicial Imperialism."

"First we must put excessive zeal—one might often say crusading zeal—on the part of officials and particularly on the part of subordinates, which leads them to see their relatively narrow task out of proportion.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This was notably shown under the regime of national prohibition. Those who had enforcement of the National Prohibition Act in charge were so impressed with the transcendent importance of the task before them that they often assumed in entire good faith that all other considerations must give way before the supreme one of enforcing the statute at all costs. Constitutional guarantees, individual rights, the ordinary decencies of investigation and of procedure were by zealous officials held impertinent to be observed." [*Administrative Agencies and the Law*, by Roscoe Pound, Dean, Law School of Harvard University, April 1946. P. 16.]

Feminism goes beyond this into a religious fervor—yet, amazingly; it sits embedded throughout government accruing huge grants to fund its religious zeal and doctrines. From this, they obtain huge monies to ‘re-design’ the home, family and society—something which is not within their proper function. Yet they pretend these powers—as nobody is powerful enough to stop these Madwomen, such as Ms. Clinton and other Radical Feminists. Contrary to their belief, neither the Patriarchal family nor foundational American government have to be ‘redesigned’ and any attempts are in fact; a war waged upon unsuspecting American’s by a new self-proclaimed Elite regime which dares these fundamental changes. Because of this, as anyone presently can see by reading any newspaper—this nation presently is in *real trouble*, especially taken in the light that we are supposedly, at a time of profound peace. But how can there be peace with Feminists? It is an oxymoronic assertion as they are willingly ready to enforce their zeal upon all of us as revenge for supposed injustices placed upon them by Patriarchy, which of course was fair enough to allow them to share this power in the first place...*this fact* has not happened in other Patriarchal regimes who still do not let women share power, yet; our American Patriarchal construct was different, and the fairness ran throughout this society, from individual homes, to the general society itself...yet feminist compromised this sense of justice, equity and fair play. They undermined it, seized power—and now are ruling through war and tyranny.

In return, Radical Feminists have espoused a doctrine which is not only shocking to the consciousness of every good citizen, but an affront to civilized life itself.

- "I claim that rape exists any time sexual intercourse occurs when it has not been initiated by the woman, out of her own genuine affection and desire." --Robin Morgan, in 1974 (Current Editor of Ms Magazine.)
- "All men are rapists and that's all they are." – Marilyn French, Author, "The Women's Room.
- "My feelings about men are the result of my experience. I have little sympathy for them. Like a Jew just released from Dachau, I watch



## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

the handsome young Nazi soldier fall writhing to the ground with a bullet in his stomach, and I look briefly and walk on. I don't even need to shrug. I simply don't care. What he was, as a person, I mean, what his shames and yearnings were, simply don't matter." -- Marilyn French, in "The Woman's Room."

- "Heterosexual intercourse is the pure, formalized expression of contempt for women's bodies." -- Andrea Dworkin.
- "And if the professional rapist is to be separated from the average dominant heterosexual [male], it may be mainly a quantitative difference." -- Susan Griffin "Rape: The All-American Crime."
- When asked: "*You [Greer] were once quoted as saying your idea of the ideal man is a woman with a dick. Are you still that way inclined?*" Dr. Greer, (denying she said it responded): "I have a great deal of difficulty with the idea of the ideal man. As far as I'm concerned, men are the product of a damaged gene. They pretend to be normal but what they're doing sitting there with benign smiles on their faces is they're manufacturing sperm. They do it all the time. They never stop. I mean, we women are more reasonable. We pop one follicle every 28 days, whereas they are producing 400 million sperm for each ejaculation, most of which don't take place anywhere near an ovum. I don't know that the ecosphere can tolerate it." -- Dr. Germaine Greer, at a Hilton Hotel literary lunch, promoting her book *The Change—Women, Aging and the Menopause*. From a news report dated 14/11/91.
- "The institution of sexual intercourse is anti-feminist" – Ti-Grace Atkinson, *Amazon Odyssey*, p. 86.
- "When a woman reaches orgasm with a man she is only collaborating with the patriarchal system, eroticizing her own oppression." -- Sheila Jeffrys. [from <http://www.vix.com/pub/men/bas/quotes.html>]

From these quotes, you can see a deep religious, Anti-American abyss in which the Radical Feminists have dug for themselves. What is so odd about this, is that from these queer and inflammatory remarks, they have not been driven out of the institutions of government, nor out from the media's purview—like other hate groups such as the KKK or the vast Radical Religious "Right-Wing Conspiracy"—as we discussed earlier, the opposite has occurred. *They have been embraced by these elite run and controlled institutions*. However, it is from these base comments such as these that most American's can clearly recognize as hate-speech, that this is an organization and a belief system that cannot be worked with. Not only can't this system be worked with—as we have stated over and over in this book, it is a communist model empowered by our own government, to undermine the very basis of our American way of life:

So that just to assure the elimination of the economic classes requires a revolt of the underclass (the proletariat) and, in a temporary dictatorship,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

their seizure of the means of *production*, so to assure the elimination of sexual classes requires the revolt of the underclass (women) and the seizure of control of reproduction: not only the full restoration to women of ownership of their own bodies, but, also their (temporary) seizure of control of human fertility...so the end goal of Feminist revolution must be, unlike that of the first Feminist movement, not just the elimination of the male privilege, but of the sex distinction itself: genital differences between human being would no longer matter culturally....the division of labour would be ended by the elimination of labour altogether (through cybernetics). They tyranny of the biological family would be broken. [Firestone p. 19.] [*Men on Top, and Feminist Lies*, by J. Mitchell, Psychoanalysis and Feminism, Middlesex, Penguin, 1975, p. 70.]

Just like the RCA logo, the dog, curiously looking into the speaker to where his master's voice mysteriously emanates from a magical source, the American public has listened to these raving lunatics embedded throughout feminism (and now our government)--and we wonder how they ever came to power and how they keep in power. Indeed, this scene gravitated to even the most ridiculous levels when President Clinton was charged time and time again of sexual assault, sexual harassment and even worse: outright rape—and the American public only heard an immutable silence from what was normally a belligerent faction in these feminist enclaves. Indeed, people are no longer just shaking their head at the upside down world of Feminist Jurisprudence—they are completely lost all faith in all Institutions aligned with this radical organization. Simply put: everyone really doesn't want to deal with these people anymore—they are well recognized liars, hypocrite's, and petty tyrants. They have left a disgusting taste in many peoples mouths' and *needlessly* ruined many lives who have seen many perverse things aligned with them, which of course make people listen and turn their heads quizzically, exactly like the RCA dog when they hear these outrageous things such as these outrageous quotes above. "Did they really say/pass this law/do this?!!?" they wonder in outright amazement. This is not only confined to law and politics, but the feminist especially hate the formal basis of Patriarchy, which is found within our own religion: Christianity. As we have shown earlier, this fact is backed by Congressional, and Presidential mandate—yet, the Feminists hate this institution with a vengeance.

It was a temptation to call this chapter "Sisterhood as Cosmic Church" in order to express some of the movement's elements that are in dialectical tension with its mode of being antichurch. However, the negative reactions of feminist to the term are warning enough. Betty Friedan expressed this gut feeling by remarking simply that "the Church is the enemy." [*Men on Top, and Feminist Lies*, by J. Mitchell, Psychoanalysis and Feminism, Middlesex, Penguin, 1975, p. 155.]

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Of course this religious hatred has been added into the Feminists zeal to destroy men. For instance, it has helped pass many laws which are blatantly unconstitutional. These laws use the premise that it's okay to abandon every American constitutional precept in the name of "saving the child," and in the "best interests of the child." Of course, the State Legislatures have gone blind to the requirements of a law being Constitutionality upheld, and the courts have become nothing more than a slavish extension of the Legislatures which are nothing more than an extension of the feminists.

"An example is New York State's Megan's Law, officially known as the Sex Offender Registration Act. Under its provisions, offenders must register with the state's Division of Criminal Justice Services within ten days of being released from prison. Some offenders must then verify their home address annually for ten years. High-risk offenders must keep in touch every 90 days. When Governor George Pataki signed the law early in 1996, he declared: "This will make New York's communities safer for our children."

He's wrong. So is the law. The best intentions—and they abound in the case of victimized children and their pained survivors—don't always result in good laws. Megan's Law is an example. It won't resurrect Megan or protect her peers. It certainly won't rehabilitate child molesters, which is the action society needs to take to guard youngsters. Warning parents about a potential threat to their children is a worthwhile goal, but Megan's Law is so unconstitutional that it can't survive a serious challenge in the courts." [*Sexual Violence, Opposing Viewpoints*, Mary E. Williams, Tamara L. Roleff, editors, ©1997, Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; p.163.]

Unfortunately, this "expert" is wrong. It will pass "constitutional muster"—not because the law is constitutional in any way, mind you, but rather because it is exactly 'unconstitutional' and thereby; these errant and criminal courts will pass and administer such laws—and will prevent them from being overturned. We can no longer trust our court systems or our Legislature's to do the correct things. No longer do they have "constitutional eyes," like every great tyrant of the past, these courts have an unconstitutional tenor attached to them, like totalitarian regimes, their logic is indefinable, to where "the impossible becomes possible, the implausible, true." This, along with the willing conspiracy of government has given them the basic building blocs of outright fascism:

**Fascist Party** The feminist party is a "fascist" party, which is defined as:

1. Suppress the opposition brutally  
Remove rights, access to children, family role, reputation

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

2. Exalts race and nation over individual  
Elevate (children & women) rights over father's
3. Central strong autocratic government [government Providing and Protection System] invade families in the seven "C" {areas}: Courts, Collection Agency, Crisis Shelters, Cops, Custody Battles, Child Access, Custody Investigator.
4. Severe economic and social regimentation [government] approved / enforced justice, and party speech codes

**Nazi** The fascism in the feminist party explains much of what we will come to know. Most of us however are not familiar with the word 'fascist,' but we do know the word "nazi" which is defined as:

1. Member of fascist party controlling Germany under Hitler.
2. One who is *like or similar* to a nazi

**Feminazi** Using the dictionary we have verified Rush Limbaugh's label "FEMINAZI" to be the correct label for this revolutionary group. (The feminazis have shown more chutzpah than Hitler's nazis by choosing a target group that is *half* the population!) [*Where Have All the Good Fathers Gone? Child Support and Custody*, by Douglas O'Brien, ©1997, Skid 18 Press, P.O. Box 60630, Fairbanks, AK 99706; ISBN 0-9637496-2-5; p 14.]

They emote fascism because they have been captured by the hate that this new Feminist Elite impress upon themselves. It is not law which controls our courts or public institutions any longer: it's hate. Hate rules within our Courts, within every state Legislature, and throughout all executive Branches of our government.

"At Yale an unstoppable force met an immovable object: The liberal Bill Clinton met the conservative professor Robert H. Bork, an expert on constitutional law. Clinton disagreed with most of what Bork taught him in class. Years later, when Bork was nominated to the U.S. Supreme Court by President Ronald Reagan, Clinton remembered those lectures at Yale. He submitted written testimony to the Senate Judiciary Committee suggesting that they should reject Bork's nomination because of his interpretations of constitutional and civil and individual rights. [*Hillary, Her True Story*, by Norman King ©1993, A Birch Lane Press Book, Carol Publishing Group, 600 Madison Ave, New York, NY 10022, p. 40.]

This all encompassing hatred is why we have Police seizing cars for "drunk driving," in direct violation of American Law, even *before* that American citizen has gone to court and been found guilty a *specific re-*

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

*quirement under our form of law.* Now, you are found guilty and pay a penalty long before you even enter a court. Not only that, but under American Law, for one crime you are supposed to receive one penalty—now—especially in the Fathers Rights arena—for one crime, *you get multiple penalties!!* Factually, any such a person is both guilty and instantly judged and penalized, long before he ever goes to pretend court thus turning over all law within our nation. This is why Child Protective Services is seizing your children even *before* you have gone into court or had a proper hearing. This is why American's now openly fear their own government, and no longer worry about a 'Communitistic' threat, or any other foreign invader; no—they worry about the IRS, CPS, Police, the DEA, FBI, BATF and a host of other Agencies and Agents who at *any point in their life, can come in, steal from you, shut down your business, and destroy your life, at the slightest possible accusation, need or whim*. Then, in court and in the media they will lie about it, or most likely become silent and do nothing at all. What is most disgusting is that the courts continually allow these illegalities, with absolutely no harm or penalty coming to the 'Public Servants' implementing such illegal despotism, because if any citizen *dare* resist in this regime, it is they who are attacked, it is they who are expunged, it is they who are publicly dismembered, and ruined.

Of course the Constitutional oath our "Public Servants" swear an oath to *says* that they will do and act differently. But there are many within government presently that are a new elite, totally immune to mere mortal trifles such as the Constitution. They're on a religious quest to either impose their own proactive agenda, or a personal quest to gain power, control and money...or even sometimes just mere self-aggrandizement. When unsuspecting American's who are destroyed by these intentional, planned acts of terrorism by government elite, they are then entreated by those within this same system who destroyed them to: "use system's of redress" to try and obtain justice. These same people within government are both laughing, and directly profiting from these Quixotic acts of desperation of "seeking redress":

...But when a divorcing woman's civil rights are violated by a judge, she has little chance to redress these wrongs in the federal courts, where violations of Constitutional rights are normally addressed. The reason is that federal courts have ruled—with few exceptions—that family issues belong solely in the lower state courts. In theory, individuals can have their Constitutional rights addressed in federal court, but as Lynn Hecht Schafran, director of the Legal Defense and Educational Fund at the National Organization for Women (NOW), points out: "Realistically, you can't [get into federal court]. I suppose in some dream world you could....But the federal courts absolutely do not want any part at all, under

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

any circumstances, of anything having to do with domestic relations. So it is extremely difficult."

Schafran's view is supported by case law precedent and, more recently, a 1992 U.S. Supreme Court decision in the case of *Ankenbrandt v. Richards*. In that case, the Supreme Court addressed this issue very plainly when the majority accepted the existence of a "domestic relations exception" barring spouses in divorce from federal court and held that this exception applies to cases "involving divorce, alimony and child custody."

Even more recently, a 1994 law passed by Congress to curb domestic violence includes a provision to protect the civil rights of victims of gender-motivated violence, but the act specifically forbids civil rights violations in domestic relations cases from being heard in federal court. Under Subtitle C—Civil Rights for Women, the provision reads: "Neither section 1367 or title 28, United States Code, nor subsection (c) of this section shall be construed, by reason of a claim arising under such subsection, to confer on the courts of the United States jurisdiction over any State law claiming seeking the establishment of a divorce, alimony, equitable distribution of marital property or child custody decree."

Because of these rulings, Constitutional rights are not guaranteed. For example, when a state court or state agency wrongfully removes a child from its parents, this is considered a violation of a parent's Constitutional rights. The U.S. Supreme Court has ruled on this matter, in the case of *Santosky v. Kramer* (New York, 1982), that the state courts "can't terminate rights without clear and convincing evidence...." But when mothers try to use this ruling or other similar rulings to get into federal court, they may be turned away. As child rights activist Michelle Etlin explained: "I know of more than a dozen cases where the mothers suing for civil right violations perpetrated on them were kicked out of the federal courts in anywhere from fifteen minutes to two years, on the stated basis that domestic relations cases are not entitled to federal jurisdiction—even though the cases that sought federal jurisdiction were based on *Santosky v. Kramer* and *Duchesne v. Sugarman*." [*Divorced from Justice, The Abuse of Women and Children by Divorce Lawyers and Judges*, by Karen Winner, ©1996, HarperCollins Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53<sup>rd</sup> Street, New York, NY 10022, ISBN 0-06-039184-7; pp. xxiii-xxiv.]

What is really sad about this is that we are just on the upswing on this wave, it hasn't even begun to peak. State tyranny has gone beyond the common-place and has now moved into the realm of being an art-form. This is one reason why all state agencies are doing 'bean counts,' to get rid of all those individuals like Mr. Bork, like Clarence Thomas (and a host of others, most of whom are mostly white males) who might *dare* stand up within the organization and challenge their tyranny. And this is also why Fathers, and now mothers, as noted above, are getting stonewalled when they try and access these present courts for justice. We have progressed from a nation which jealously guarded our rights, into a nation to where "You have no Constitutional Rights!" has become

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

part of our mainstream culture. Again, this is *directly* due to the Pandora's Box these feminists so unwittingly (actually, I contend they intentionally) opened! They now dare complain about the system they helped pervert! They have established, and built an Anti-American monster within government which adheres to their Ani-Law precepts—and *now* that they need our nations courts because the monster is starting to willingly consume them too—they dare complain that the system is "unconstitutional!!!"

Unfortunately, this widespread insanity and tyranny is driving many citizens, most of them fathers, to the brink of hopelessness and despair. This is why many wives and husbands go on killing rampages upon the mere mention of divorce or separation. Because they fully understand the inner workings of the Krell Machine. They know they will be destroyed anyway's, and thereby "resistance is futile." This insanity is also driving many more people to collectively join together and to try and combat this new domestic enemy that is buried throughout our own government. From these attempts of 'defense,' the government is now building even more radical Imperialist Empires, and making the most benign government institutions complete fortresses. They have turned from the "kinder and gentler" public institutions, to those armed and embattled encampments, with a complete military mindset. It is rare when you go and actually speak to real 'persons' within government now-a-days. Now, to hide their shame, and to protect their criminal acts; most government workers have one to three inches of bulletproof and bombproof plate glass window between them and their supposed "master" the private American citizen. This is of course, predicated on the fact that you might even meet a government in the first place—for many of our public institutions are becoming more and more faceless, nameless, and you either have a phone on the wall, or a button with a speaker near a door, or just a telephone number with an answering machine attached to it.

This is what such hatred has wrought in this nations public institutions. Sadly, there are more and more heinous laws coming against us, as there is no more constitutionality or restrained government. It has come to the point, where the American people and their own government have become the exact opposite of the Founder's dream of a "Republican Form" of governance. The abyss is growing wider and wider, due to the pressure of reactionary and unconstitutional laws along with unlimited powers of government intrusion and outright theft and seizure. Now the government, both state and federal, are quickly establishing a set of even more draconian and unconstitutional "Anti-Terrorist" laws, pretending that America's threat will come from abroad. The real truth and real intent of these laws is to protect government from its own people—who, because of the fact that there is no longer redress within our courts, will

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

have to find alternative method's to protect themselves *from the tyranny and oppression of their own American government*--which again, is an even more egregious affront to any hopes of re-establishing "Republican Form."

When these government Legislatures and Administrations fool themselves into passing such Anti-American, draconian laws which are nothing more than an affront and direct threat to our sacred liberties; they have completely violated their oath of office, and more importantly; they have destroyed the fabric, safety and security which binds us as one people, under one form of governance. Now those even embedded within the Feminist movement recognize what idiocy they have implemented through "Feminist Jurisprudence." Now they turn again against "a male dominated society" and blame "Lawyers, and Judges" *mostly men*, they assert—who planned this injustice. Of course these feminists will never admit that these bad Judges and Lawyers were taking advice and adhering and implementing Feminist Jurisprudence input from this nation's elite socialists in how to change the courts to "save the children" in the first place!

One of the most vibrant forces in legal academia was the Critical Legal Studies Movement (described by one of its leading members as a "political location for a group of people on the Left who share the project of supporting and extending the domain of the Left in the legal academy"). In terms of scholarship, this enterprise meant applying the European literary criticism and neo-Marxist social thought to the study of legal doctrines. That, in turn, meant dismissing old notions of legal reasoning as historical artifact or the will of the dominant classes. For "the crits" (as they were known), law was a hegemonic struggle for power, and the vast body of judicial decisions reflected little more than a sinister desire to perpetuate the class, gender, or racial advantages of the lawmakers.

*The crits deconstructed the law, exploding what they perceived as myths about the potential for objectivity or the value of tradition, history, and the common law.* The deconstructed law schools, too. Duncan Kennedy, one of the movement's founders, went on tour as a CLS evangelist with such "modest proposals" as equalizing the pay of janitors and professors at Harvard (where he taught) and having them exchange jobs for a while. Heirs to a sixties radicalism, the charismatic leaders of CLS charmed students with their "context smashing" doctrines while a follow-up army of feminists, multiculturalists, critical race theorists, and champions of gay rights borrowed deeply from such attacks on the established order. [*Closed Chambers, The First Eyewitness Account of the Epic Struggles Inside the Supreme Court*, by Edward Lazarus, ©1998, Times Books, Div. Of Random House, New York. ISBN 0-8129-2402-9; p. 236-237.]



## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

What is sad here about such elite's as the "Crit's" and the Feminists is: that they had no license to change or 'deconstruct' our laws. One dramatic example of this outrageous abuse has been exemplified by the O.J. Simpson case. After being found innocent of murder from one jury; those people (mostly feminists) whose hatred they felt could supercede the law by *using the law twice* (it wasn't law), to go after and attack him again, then again! This of course is not just a complete violation of Constitutional protections against double and triple jeopardy, but it is a violation against the sanctity of American law. These people who hate, many of them feminists who have made Mr. Simpson a lifelong advocacy cause, have somehow gained and established some super-right to supercede foundational and organic American law! These people were not satisfied with stealing Mr. Simpson's life savings, property and most personal prized possessions—especially after he was found innocent—they now are going after his own children, in continued and complete violation of the law! This ability has become so wide-spread that they violate the law and have these violations well-publicized as if that could somehow mask their outrageous crimes. Yet, when they turn to the courts to seek justice, or redress; they are then outraged when they come in contact the same machine that they themselves designed and built, which provides only injustice; in direct contravention to our form of law and governance. Unconstitutionalism is okay for Mr. Simpson...but when feminist go into court—they demand their 'constitutional rights' and are outraged that they no longer have any!!!

What people latently come to understand is that these unconstitutional laws are in the final analysis, used against them, in their own homes. Contemporary American's recognize that there are no more procedural safeguards or protections within one's own home, as government has most arrogantly violated that sacred domain also—because the feminists demanded its deconstruction through Feminist Jurisprudence in order to overthrow the Constitutionally protected power of the Father within the home. Through their ignorance, they had no foresight as to the monster they were creating by doing so.. William Pitt and other great American's affirmation that "the home is the castle" have been laid waste by these new self-proclaimed, unconstitutional Imperialistic powers. Now all our children are at risk in being consumed by Hillary's Village. Something as innocuous as going to the Dentist could wind up with seizure of you child—for your child's "best interests." What is sad is and most terrifying; is that they haven't completed their total program of terrorism yet. We have yet to see uncovered the complete Krell Machine that still awaits all of us.

Again, one design of this system is to undermine this form of government. The present system is seamless at accomplishing this by undermin-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ing the Father. Once the Father is criminalized, he then becomes civilly dead. (Actually, in all truth; it is Civil Murder). This murder is a very convenient tool to the Clinton's and their Feminist regime who want more and more power. Since they can't get more American people, they implement the reverse logic, they remove the citizens who are against their programs by criminalizing them. Once a Father had been so marked, then; that reduces his chances of entering public office. This of course happened in Chico where I lived where one gentleman who was an ardent activist and wanted to enter into the political domain to make changes.

Of course once he entered the race, his past "Deadbeat Dad" issue became a pre-eminent issue with the media who wouldn't let it go. This of course dashed his hopes and he lost all such community support completely. Again, this feminist design doesn't end there; it also moves to the vote itself—for after a father becomes a felon over this, he then loses his right to vote. Strangely, the Feminists do not lose their vote by and from their criminal acts—but more and more men are due exactly to this perversion. What is happening is that the Father's side of representation is slowly being eroded away. We are quickly becoming a nation of professional voters, to where only a small, special interest class is voting. This impact has disheartened the whole spectrum of American voters, who clearly recognize the fact that there is no longer hope or redress through voting. This has biased voting groups to the Feminist side, and especially government side, thereby establishing an environment to where they can propose and pass even more Anti-American and unconstitutional laws, then from their passage, like Megan's Law, revengefully declare that such unconstitutional laws are thereby "the law" when in fact, they are Anti-Law.

Such political acts are not laws, but only special interest tools of social control.

Again the political component of this Feminist hatred schemes other dogmatic designs which spill-over into gun ownership and other more direct domestic issues. This hatred has allowed the accomplishment of many other Feminist agenda's, from removing men in the workforce by making them less marketable, to making them submit to every part of the Feminist regime by unbelievable standards of 'sex speech,' and 'sexual harassment,' which virtually encompasses anything they desire; to again, removing guns from citizens by force. Once the male has been undermined, or cannibalized through civil murder by the political force of feminism, then; his replacement goes to those whom easily bow or conform to this new political regime. Hillary and her cohorts extrude more political power each and every time they destroy a male in this society. Many within this society, especially the ignorant and untrained masses, do not comprehend the fact, of how important the Father is to the control

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

and political structure of a nation. We are no longer trained in these arts, and thereby—the elite regime whom know and understand that fountain-head of power and understand the construct of its political nature of control—compromise this misunderstanding to their advantage and to our deficit:

These changes, of course, are the end of the story; what we encounter here at its beginning are several factors whose confluence sometime around 1600 makes it possible to understand why the family became a central category in English political thought during the Stuart period.

These factors may be summarized as follows: (1) The family had been the implicitly accepted source of society's origins in Europe for almost 2,000 years. When one of its main implications, the inseparability of state and society, was challenged by the contract theory, the working out of an answer helped to elevate patriarchalism from a relatively unappreciated political theory to a fully rationalized doctrine. (2) Religious and conceptual changes in English society after the Reformation called attention to the family and altered the way it was perceived as well as its actual role in society. Through this new awareness, the household became more relevant to political discourse, and this new symbolization perhaps provided some added insight into the kinds of relationship that were being alleged as the prototype of all social ties. (3) A growing but still crude historical understanding and a tendency to look into the past for the normative principles that underlay the present made it possible to dispense with the teleology that had previously been associated with the tracing of political origins back to a primitive family. The teleology was replaced by a genetic doctrine in which contemporary political obligation came to be understood in terms of those origins. In short, it was possible to hold that because political power was merely an extension of natural and absolute paternal authority, the obligation of the subject to obey his sovereign was identical to the unquestioning obedience a child owed its father. [*The Authoritarian Family and Political Attitudes in 17<sup>th</sup> Century England, Patriarchalism in Political Thought*, by Gordon J. Schochet, © 1988, Transaction Inc., New Brunswick, New Jersey, 08903, ISBN 0-88738-695-4, pp. 63-64.]

Unfortunately, many men within the Fathers Rights community, especially the "Joint Custody" contingent, have no comprehension of the true interaction of the Father to the Family and its relationship in delegating power and authority to the state. Indeed, there is a clear understanding that the emanation of the Patriarchal authority is in fact, the creation of all state authority. What many men in the Joint Custody encampment, give away by default, is in fact—not just control in their own families—but a whole system of government. Allow the State to replace you as a Father, and the American system of governance *no longer exists*. Being a Father, is a declaratory condition: "I shall rule over thee." "I will control what happens in my home." "I will tell my children how they will act in

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

school—not you." "I am in control over my wife, my children and my property."

What is less and less amazing, if seen in the light that Feminist hatred is used as a socio-political tool, is that people in government actually go along with the subornation of the American father. Most have no idea that they are undermining our system of government through, what they consider is just a benign act. "We are 'saving the children,'" they will inform us as they coerce Fathers to socially and politically fall on their own swords. The Feminist couldn't have made a dent in this society if Government officials and Public Administrators and other state actors didn't slavishly attend to these unlawful sophistries. Through the mythology of Feminism, they have allowed themselves to be led down a fallow road which has destroyed lives, and which has squandered Trillions which could have been put to more useful endeavors, all the while overturning foundational sacred laws which formed the nucleus of this nation in the first place! Now, they can't turn off the Krell machine they have mistakenly allowed to grow, and they take offense at the injustice they have ceded to our courts and criminal Legislatures who promulgate feminism.

Of course, nobody takes responsibility for this, nor will admit their part in this hostile takeover of this nation by Radical feminists. All those within the corridors of power remain strangely mute as Feminists propagate more and more inhumane and disgusting laws and outrageous profligatery. What is even more sad is that as the Feminist driven social Pathologies and outright social destruction climbs—all these people go further, deaf, dumb and blind. They have committed so many illegal acts—that they have convoluted this system beyond repair. To do so would be to admit their own criminality, so they become silent.

We could see this perversion and inability to do the right thing, after the tragic Jonesboro, Arkansas incident, where two children killed their schoolmates in a planned armed ambush. Several of us were discussing this incident on the internet and on the phone where we had found out that both the boys were from broken homes—as *most of these children are*—yet another correlation of which the media refuses to make. We were discussing and permutating the realities of this issue when Le Roy Marshall suggested we contact the National Rifle Association, (NRA). We were all electrified by this suggestion, and agreed to do it. I was selected to draft an introductory letter to them, showing our analysis of these children who committed such crimes, that almost all of them came from Fatherless homes.

I mailed both a letter and the FRFS to them, and spoke to first their regional California director, who was floored by our information then suggested I immediately call the National Director, Tom Wyld as nothing could be done without at first gaining national approval. When I spoke to

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

these people, especially the National Headquarters Secretary, they were *stunned* by our research. I even spoke with the main NRA director in Washington himself; yet surprisingly, week after week, their interest strangely waned. They never used the FRFS to correlate and capture the national mindset as to what could really be happening with our children.. What was odd was, that at this time, the NRA had been getting pummeled terribly by the national media and special interest groups as guns being the cause of this incident. Again, it wasn't guns we asserted, it was *Fatherlessness*—something which the national media had never considered! Yet, to this day, the NRA has remained mute on this issue.

Of course everyone whom I spoke to at the NRA was electrified by this research, not only that; they were vocally stunned at the impact of the FRFS. Yet, instead of using this research material to deflect errant assumptions by Feminists and others who had a clear agenda to remove guns from this society; the NRA did nothing! All they did was to engage in the pedantic "guns are the problem/guns are not the problem" pedantic arguments that did nothing for them, and which have become no more than a banality to the American mindset. I wonder about the true intent of the NRA administration, as this information should have been used at some level to deflect the continued national disinformation campaign which has been used to disarm this nation over the past 20 years. I don't own a gun—so this is a tertiary argument in my main emphasis for Fathers Rights—however; this incident posed a true conundrum for me as logistically, upon the NRA getting our information, they 'should' have established a beach-head behind these demarcated truths. Instead, they just sat on the issue, and engaged their enemies with the pedantic 'same-old—same old' and got massacred throughout the press. To this day, I don't understand why they didn't seize upon this issue. The "Fatherless" issue, may not just be the cause of what is happening in our nations schools—it may be the *answer*. Yet, *nobody*, and I mean *nobody* wants to discuss this palpable issue.

We must wonder why the mass of our Public Servants and other public leaders are so willing to bow before the Feminist mindset, when clearly, other action is needed. This question goes beyond the mere purchasing or political demographics of 16 to 32 year-old American females. There is something sinister about men and leaders who do not stand up for their nations precepts in the light of such outrageous tyranny. My observations are that this inability of these people to stand up and avert such injustices, exactly parodies the installation and Nazi take-over of pre-World War Germany, which succumbed to the same power influences and which I have documented throughout this book.

Those within the corridors of power throughout this nation have got a lot of explaining to do as to why they have allowed such visceral Feminist

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

supplied hatred to become such a successful training and subversion tool throughout our society. This is clearly not a failure of the American system, rather—it is a failure of those persons bestowed of the public trust who have errantly allowed this hatred to allow it to take hold, gain root, and flourish throughout our laws and institutions. Presently, what we as American citizens are now poised with, is a complete review and overhaul of our foundational public institutions, and most importantly, a complete review and expurgations of hundreds if not tens of thousands of clearly unconstitutional laws and public edicts which offend the true basis of this free nation.

This hatred has come a long ways where such vitriolic approbation's would have hardly gained notice before. Now such defiant cries as "Take back the night" and "not one more child" have come to imprison *countless* innocent victims, and more importantly; it has propagated a beast; not of this nations design, nor making.

"As student throw stories of suffering [rape] to the waiting crowds, the spiritual cleansing takes on darker undercurrents. The undercurrent is the competition for whose stories can be more Sadean, more incest-ridden, more violent, more like a paperback you can buy at a train station.

Under Blair Arch [at Princeton University], a blind girl takes the microphone and says, I have been oppressed by everybody, straights and gays, Catholics, Jews and Protestants. Unless I am imagining it, a ripple of unease runs through the crowd. There is something obscene about this spectacle. This is theater, late-night drama. One earnest male Princeton Junior tells me "it was better last year. More moving. There was more crying. Everyone was crying." [*Sexual Violence, Opposing Viewpoints*, Mary E. Williams, Tamara L. Roleff, editors, ©1997, Greenhaven Press, Inc., P.O. Box 289009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; p.103.]

What we see here of course, is the ever-growing design of a malevolent special-interest culture of the few, subverting the lives of the many, growing into a religious frenzy to where, none dare say "the King wears no clothes." The feminists and other splinter groups such as gays and lesbians—are engines of the same design—using the fuel of hatred to promote and accomplish their special interest agenda.

"The radical feminists' declaration, "organize around your own oppression," soon degenerated into the narrower position, "organize around your own interests." [*Women in Movement, Feminism and Social Action*, by Sheila Rowbotham, ©1992, Routledge, 11 New Feter Lane, Non-don, EC4P 4EE, ISBN 0-415-90652-0; p. 274.]

Again, which aptly demonstrates feminism's self-serving political agenda which uses "The Best Interests of the Child," "Take Back the

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Night," and other such ignoble social experiments, only as an ends to justify the means...they are in fact...no more than tools to be used against an unsuspecting public whom has no idea that they are being used to change the national interests and political spectrum of their own country against their own vested interests.

What of course is absolutely insane, and which has lent itself to depleting what were once considerable rolls of the NOW's membership to a mere 6,000 national membership—is that this radicalism has now begun to feed upon even the women within the organization itself! Their hatred is evolving into political cannibalism:

"If you are a feminist who is not sleeping with a woman you may risk hearing any of the following accusations: "You're oppressing me if you don't sleep with men"; "You're not a radical feminist if you don't sleep with women" or "You don't love women if you don't sleep with them." I have even seen a women's argument about an entirely different aspect of feminism be dismissed by some lesbians because she was not having sexual relations with women.

"...This perversion of "the personal is the political" argument, it must be noted, was not invented by those gay women who may be using it now; the women's movement has had sporadic waves of personal attacks on women—always in the guise of radicalism (and usually by a very small minority of women). I have seen women being told they could not be trusted as feminists because they wore miniskirts, because they were married (in one group quotas were set lest the groups quality be lowered by "unliberated women"), or because they wanted to have children. This rejection of women who are not living the "liberated life" has predictably now come to include rejection on the basis of the "unliberated" sex life.

The original genius of the phrase "the personal is political" was that it opened up women's private lives to political analysis." [*The Women's Rights Movement, Opposing Viewpoints*, by Brenda Stalcup, Book Editor, Greenhaven Press, Inc., PO Box 289009-9009, San Diego, CA 92198-9009; ISBN 1-56510-366-1; pp. 194-195.]

This exact form of extremism and cannibalism can be seen by our government's own actions, whom are driven by this Feminist brand of outright hatred and are openly undermining our most sacred and fundamental rights.. In again, an insolent display of anti-constitutional pro-activism, we see that our government, fueled by this new Radical Regimes power, is attacking even the most benign of citizens, who beseech the government for the most benign of redresses:

"But constitutional constraints are no impediment to the Clinton civil rights regime. In 1994, HUD launched a Fair Housing Act investigation against three Berkeley residents for opposing a planned homeless shelter in their neighborhood, threatening each with fines up to \$100,000 and a

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

year in jail if they did not turn over all their records, including lists of their coalition's members. HUD subsequently disclosed similar investigations around the country, aimed at suppressing what Heather MacDonald, writing in the *Wall Street Journal*, described as "textbook examples of petitioning the government for a redress of grievances.

After widespread publicity, HUD's Achtenberg backed down, conceding that the "Berkeley citizens acted within their First Amendment, free-speech rights." She pledged that "every attempt is being made to ensure that HUD's inquiries...do not have a chilling effect on political activity or the exercise of free speech." But, warned Achtenberg, "We can anticipate more cases of this kind." [The Affirmative Action FRAUD, Can We Restore the American Civil Rights Vision?, by Clint Bolick, @1996 by the Cato Institute, 1000 Massachusetts Ave., N.W., Washington, D.C. 20001; ISBN 1-882577-28-0; p. 106.]

Again, such deconstruction of our nations organic laws is much worse against Fathers who dare attempt redress of grievances to protect either, life, liberty or property. Of course, these acts, like more and more government's acts, are outrageous; and completely against our form of governance. Most Fathers who are economically annihilated, do not have the resources in which to even defend themselves, as most American's don't, in which to combat this feminist socio-political system. Of course this hatred is generating social ripples throughout our society, where the extremes are beginning to become more, and more normal, as the hatred imbued within our public institutions, portray and become more malevolent and intolerant through Feminist imprinting upon those institutions. This social pendulum is beginning to swing wildly to each of its axis limits, as the social hinge of this nation is slowly beginning to weaken, and tear apart from the strain.

"Those who are angry at government withdraw from it, call themselves Freeman, hold up in Montana, and, armed to the teeth, challenge hundreds of FBI operatives to bring them in.

Angry tax protesters, reeling out reams of constitutional rhetoric, refuse to become "tax slaves" and burden the courts with their unwinnable causes.

The maddened who can no longer identify their oppressors express their rage in random freeway shootings or burn the stores of small merchants in Los Angeles with whom they likely have had no dealings whatsoever.

The young, born in bondage and with desolate visions of a meaningless life, join gangs in which all human life is seen as being its cheap and as goalless as their own.

Across the land, vast segments of the nation, alienated and economically emasculated smolder in anger and, without thoughtful leadership, follow any who will but point to some race, some religion, any handy scapegoat at which to strike.



## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Because it is so easy to identify the color of skin, we have a resurgence of racism, and the Ku Klux Klan takes on a new and venal life.

Because the angry can readily identify a religious or ethnic group, we are presented with such ilk as the Aryan Nations and their preachment of hatred against the Jews.

Like a geyser in Yellowstone, these troubled waters boil away under the surface and finally erupt in the Unabomber, whose genius became distorted by his reaction to the pressures of technology. And in Oklahoma City, some demented dissident, already at an early age wildly enraged, blows up a federal building, sending 168 innocent people to their deaths. [*Give Me Liberty!* Gerry Spence, ©1998, St. Martin's Press, 175 Fifth Avenue, New York, 10010; ISBN 0-312-19267-3; p. 102.]

No society can withstand these internal strains, and it is only America's national size and huge economies which are keeping it afloat presently—while at the same time this national wealth is being siphoned away. When the next major financial crisis hits, we may see this nation instantly decimated into anarchy caused by this Feminist social pressure and their deconstruction of our law. Again, this is only speculation, however; we do know that Socialism is fundamentally flawed, and Feminism absolutely. When Marx and Engels placated the masses in their socialist blueprint, *The Communist Manifesto*, they wrote:

"[Our critics warn that]...but you Communists would introduce community of women, screams the whole bourgeoisie in chorus.

The bourgeois sees in his wife a mere instrument of production. He hears that the instruments of production are to be exploited in common, and, naturally, can come to no other conclusion than that the lot of being common to all will likewise fall to the women.

He has not even a suspicion that the real point aimed at is to do away with the status of women as mere instruments of production.

For the rest, nothing is more ridiculous than the virtuous indignation of our bourgeois at the community of women which, they pretend, is to be openly and officially established by the Communists. The Communists have no need to introduce community of women; it has existed almost from time immemorial.

Our bourgeois, not content with having the wives in common, and thus, at the most, what the Communists might possibly be reproached with, is that they desire to introduce, in substitution for a hypercritically concealed, an openly legalized community of women. For the rest, it is self-evident that the abolition of the present system of production must bring with it the abolition of the community of women springing from that system, i.e., of prostitution both public and private." [*The Communist Manifesto, A Modern Edition*, by Karl Marx and Frederick Engels, ©1998 Verso, 180 Varck Street, New York, NY 10014-4606; ISBN 1-85984-898-2; p. 57.]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This of course is classical contemporary feminist mantra, which wells up directly from its source: Socialist Communism which Hillary Clinton espouses. Again, they both recognize and desire the throwback to a community of women which "has existed almost from time immemorial." They of course hate the Patriarchal regime which they label as bourgeoisie, for using the wife efficiently within the own home, and that such use is a "prostitution"—not love for which men live and die for their own homes and families. Of course this double-speak continues in the enchanted mantra of Ms. Clinton herself who warned:

"Hillary argued in "Children Under the Law" that Blackstone's thesis held for a time when young people were apprenticed at the age of seven or forced to work in the fields and young women bore children very early in their lives. In fact, the law was mainly concerned with the successful passing on of estates belonging to the property classes." [Hillary, *Her True Story*, by Norman King ©1993, A Birch Lane Press Book, Carol Publishing Group, 600 Madison Ave, New York, NY 10022, p. 67.]

Again, this clear hatred of the American system and property classes, which; as Ms. Clinton fully recognizes and understands, was for the first time in history distributed as *never before* within any human populace more to the common man than in America. Here, *the common man was the property classes*, of which she and the Feminists hate so much. Again, this comes back to dreams deferred, as through the implementation of this Radical Feminist hatred for the American way of life, by their hatred of Capitalism and the attendant systems of law, justice and fair play; all American trademarks, Ms. Clinton and her Feminist elite fully intend to implement the safety of failed Socialist politics' into the American mainstream and pretend that they are American concepts and practices all under the guise of "The Best Interests of the Child." Again, this is not in America's interests, as it is the factual usurpation of our American Republican form of government into something malevolent and as-yet-to-be-defined, and it is happening at ground zero, right in the American home.

This insane jealousy over the profits within the American household are obscene, as the present Anti-American socialist model has been, and still is draining huge profits from that institution. The fact that the nuclear two-parent family still survives, and that it still accrues the highest wealth within our society, is a demonstrative proof that the Patriarchal system is clearly a superior model, even when it is being under direct siege by a Feminist empire proactively determined to destroy that very institution. Again, given enough time, energy, money and government programs—they *will* destroy that institution as well, and life on this earth will never again be the same, and again; our children will curse us for we letting this perverse legacy be allowed to survive.

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

We all must once again recognize, just as the Stuart's did in 17<sup>th</sup> century England, that the Father has more importance to this society, especially the free American society, than what most people in modern society comprehend. Fathers, must again "know their product" and understand not only the biological reasoning for men becoming Fathers, but perhaps *more importantly* their socio-political function *that establishes, and allows the most successful environment* for men to be Fathers: to create homes and families, strong children—and thereby—a robust, independent and successful society. Clearly, immutably; there is a symbiotic relationship to Fathers and their system of governance. Indeed—as the ancients clearly recognized—no free society can be without, a strong, capable Father, controlling, ruling and defending his own home: his own life, liberty and property.

It is time men stop falling on their own swords and subsidizing their own destruction. It is time that men start thinking of themselves, and enforcing their authority, and defending their homes, their children and their property with a vengeance...at all costs. It is time that men stop thinking about the mythical 'other male' "who might be an abuser." It is time for men to once again become selfish and start thinking of their own interests—for clearly—nobody else is...

Again, we are circularly proving here is adducible to the maxim: "*with regard to freemen, children follow the condition of the father.*"

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

---

*"When plunder becomes a way of life for a group of men together in a society, they create for themselves in the course of time, a legal system that authorizes it and a moral code that glorifies it." -- Frederic Bastiat (1801-1850) in his book, "Economic Sophisms"*

### MY PERSONAL EXPERIENCES

---

I can remember: dreaming. Vivid dreams of red so red, and greens so deep, and verdant, a sartorial intensity which some times, woke me out of a deep, deep sleep, uncontrollably salivating.

I was in prison, engaged in my hunger strike—having suffered huge injustices no American should ever suffer, for no crime ever committed. Yet here I was, placed into solitary confinement because I wouldn't book, I wouldn't consent, I wouldn't submit. I'd lie there in bed, with a garish light pouring down from the ceiling in a roughly 6 by ten concrete cell with nothing but concrete and stainless steel accommodation's. This just wasn't injustice, it was torture too.

The local political regime within Butte county was perhaps the most staggeringly corrupt institution I had ever witnessed. To this day, I suspect that Butte County, which is mostly an agricultural county, of perhaps 250,000 people total, which is the third largest county in California, and widespread with a large land-mass area, was/is a testing ground to try out new political tyrannies; new forms of injustice, to use against the people of Butte County as a laboratory test bed, and then port these selected injustices around this nation. Yet, with all its county influences, it has a huge city on a hill of courts and county services in which cities such as Boston, New York, Detroit or LA would envy. This small rural community had a Sheriff's department with six state-of-the-art helicopters, state-of-the-art prison system, state-of-the-art court systems...state-of-the-art....*everything*.

The courts, which I have found out are like virtually all other courts around this nation, were so egregious as to become an institution to be feared—which it still is. There is no law or justice within the Butte county courts. There is however; an inhumane brutality, along with a banal corruption, disguised as "law."

I felt a tremendous injustice since my first interaction with them in 1985 in demanding my son. That's when they first steam-rolled over my efforts to obtain him, and when I told them that he was taken right out of our home. I didn't say the word kidnapped then, but I do now. After they did everything opposite of the law I expected them to, I stopped—and began to analyze what was happening. After 13 long years, I sit here writ-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ing this book as a completion to my studies. As God is my witness I wished none of this had ever happened, and if our courts had worked, this whole thing could have been properly solved the first time in ten minutes. The time, effort, courts, countless documents, needless research and drain against the community and nation in my one case alone, is simply staggering. The drain against my life: abominable. Adding these types of useless effort up—*only to deny fathers their unalienable rights as fathers*—is a reality that is so profound, so complete that it exemplifies a complete *indictment* of this whole system. It is a universal charge of treason, which exemplifies what is really transpiring within our modern court systems. Simply put—it is way, way, way out of control.

Yet, as I lay in bed in this cell, trying to sleep—these dreams of food would gigantically intrude into my sleep. They were so real as to wake me, out from a sound sleep. I would sit there, in the half darkness with the cold neon lamp eternally pouring light from above, with the air conditioning pumping cold-air into the room at full blast. They did this to me knowingly, as a torture—in order to break me, which they never accomplished. The one dream that consistently haunted me was one of lettuce and tomatoes. A friend of mine would have me over for dinner with his family, and during the long hot Chico summers, they would serve a delightful salad for dinner, simply made of dark greens, purple onions, and thickly sliced tomatoes freshly picked from their garden, with a deep red wine vinegar and some light spices and cracked pepper. I really loved this dish, and we had it several times. Little did I know I'd be haunted by it during my arduous battle with out-of-control Butte County authorities.

There is a point in my hunger strikes, (of which I did four of them over this, the first being a 5 day strike during my first illegal incarceration at my 'arraignment,' the second being upon my first commitment after the faked 'trial' which had no jurisdiction lasted 63 days, the third after the Sheriff defaulted in his agreement to let me go, which lasted 10 days, and the fourth and final hunger strike was the 72 day strike which almost killed me, when they came and pulled me out of bed for being sick on my first 63 day hunger strike and they had released me on "Sheriff's Parole"); when your body just becomes accustomed to no food, and you get along just fine. This usually happens at about anywhere from 10 to 20 days into the strike. You no longer are hungry, you just live life normally and for me, I did a lot of writing during this time period. Somehow the hunger strike made me think a lot more clearly, as my writing from this period appears quite astute and fluid.

Because I would not consent, nor book, they kept me in solitary confinement. They call this administrative segregation. What most men don't know, is when you book, you consent to the arrest, which I never did. Thereby, the county never gets paid for your incarceration from the Fed-

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

eral government, whom must have that tiny box checked in which to dutifully send out funds to these jail institutions. Worse than that, they put me in a cell, and then intentionally turned up the air conditioning. This was *very* bad for me. I can remember it being so cold, while the outside temperature raged at about anywhere from 100 to 120 degrees, it was approximately 55 degrees in my cell. By 1pm every day, my socks would be soaking wet because of the condensation that collected on the floor. With four walls of concrete with everything else steel, the effect was amplified. This, along with my hunger-strike soon wore on me, and within about ten to fifteen days of this I finally got deathly ill. I couldn't even get out of bed anymore.

They knew what they were doing—because the second I got sick—poof! They had me out of that cell and moved me right into the warmest cell they could get me into. It was torture, designed, implemented, despotically enacted. I never said a word, never complained—and conversely, not one of these Jail Guards ever went to their superiors or the Media and said: "Hey—we are torturing this guy, and its wrong." Everybody just played their part. I adhered to my principles, they adhered to their continuing criminal corruption.

That isn't to say I didn't try to defend myself from this cold—no! Life in jail is rather odd. They restrict everything—even paper. I never had enough paper to write on. I never even had pencils. For the first month, I wrote with a tiny little pencil I found that was, no kidding—1/4 inch long. I wrote with this until it was just about 1/16<sup>th</sup> inch in size—just the lead remained. Yet, they'd give us as much toilet paper as we wanted! So, I'd take a roll, chew it up in my mouth, then; take the spoon size wads I chewed, and push them into the lower part of the air-conditioning duct grill, and let them harden. Then, after they hardened, I'd chew up another wad of toilet paper, and build off that now hardened mass just like a wasp building a hive, to effectively restrict the input of cold air into the cell. After about one to three days of this, slowly the temperature would start rising in my cell, becoming much more palatable and warm. But this would last until a guard would come in, instantly notice it was warm, turn; look at what I had done, and bang off the hardened shell over the air conditioning duct. Within one-half our it would be freezing again, and we'd start the whole process over.

When I finally got sick, I categorically kept refusing treatment. When the nurses and doctors would visit me, and inquisitively ask: "How do you feel?" I'd say in return: "I give you no information." From this, they could not act, as my refusal to admit to them anything blocked any of their job duties. What could they cure if they didn't know what hurt me? I knew I was driving them nuts, and belligerently kept them and others at arms distance. I would not be weighed, I would not allow them to check

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

my pulse or blood pressure—they got nothing. Zero. All they could do was come into my cell and get no information, just silence to all their questions. They hated it.

Another thing they did was to try and put an arm band on me, to give me a prisoner number. I wouldn't do it. They'd come in with one, or two guards and demand I put it on. I wouldn't talk with them or acknowledge them. Then, they'd grab my arm, and put the band on my wrist. The second they closed the door, I'd wait until they were away—and just rip it off. They'd come back—and they would be floored. This charade persisted throughout my 'incarceration.'

Soon, they were writing me up. I didn't care—it was all meaningless to me. They'd try and leave a write-up on my small desk—and I'd just push it back under the door with 'refusal for cause' boldly written across it. Soon, I was getting write-up's for this too. And again—I'd refuse these also—sending right back out "Refused for Cause."

I was resolute, as then as I am now. I was fully aware of what I was doing and risking, however; some guiding light within me—from the start of this thing years earlier was clearly telling me that this system was *wrong* and had to be destroyed. I had no idea what I was doing nor what it's ultimate impacts would be, but every single day I was in there, I *knew* it was the right thing to do. Hell—with our broken court systems—it was the only thing anyone could do given the circumstances. Since they did not allow me any redress, neither would they get any redress from me. Quid pro quo.

Soon, I saw my folder when I'd go and have meetings with them, when they wanted me to book, or take a physical, or whatever mundane administrative function that they were trying to pass over me. I'd look on the desk and most folders of other prisoners would be anywhere from a quarter inch thick, to maybe an inch. Mine, within about a month was close to 2 to 3 inches thick...and growing. Soon, they weren't writing me up, and the attempts to put a wrist band on me became less and less infrequent.

In doing my hunger strike I would feel relatively fine up to about 30 days, then; I started getting weak. I couldn't write as long, focusing became a problem, as each day progressed, even reading got harder. I could walk and still shoot basketball when they let me out for recreation one hour two to five times a week, but that was getting harder and harder. Pretty soon I was just going out to walk, then; just to sit and look at the sky.

These dreams about food persisted. Potatoes, vegetables, were the mainstay—I barely remember ever dreaming about steak. I think I had some lobster dreams too, but; the tomato salad of my friend was the most



## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

vivid. God, that dream must of woke me up salivating probably a half dozen times.

Yet, they would torture me by bringing food into my cell. They would open the tray, then let it sit there for me to smell, as if they could break me by doing so. Again, little did they know that this conflict was bigger than them, or I. This was a fight for who controls my own home, which for the past 13 years has been usurped by a criminal government, feeding off of it for its own benefits. They weren't going to win anyway they dealt the cards, I was in charge—it was my body as it was my home. They could temporarily steal my son, or even my money, but; they couldn't steal me, in the final analysis, they were screwed and they knew it.

What was bad though was the pains. At about 25 days, weird little pains start poking into you. First they start in your stomach, as your intestines contract by having no food. Sometimes this became a dull pain that wouldn't go away, but it was bearable. It was the chest pains that started at about 35 to 40 days that alert you to the fact that your body is using your heart muscle as fuel, as it starts to eat that organ alive. What was most surprising, is that during this time frame of relative sensory deprivation stasis, letters began coming in from around the nation. Each and every one whom wrote was absolutely supportive of my efforts and to a person, totally understood what was going on. Many in fact were trying to help and write congressmen, the media, and really get my plight known. I was touched and found new sustenance by these letters. You don't know how they kept me going. Many knew what this struggle was about, really; not much more had to be said. Just the 'hi' and "keep up the good work, we're behind you" were enough. Some letters were long and flowing, and these gave me time to digress and lose myself in them. As book reading got harder, letter reading became a pleasant diversity. Many letters of which I received were absolutely humbling. People really poured themselves out into them, and many of them called me hero.

One typical letter came from a gentleman whom I never met, in which I never knew how he got my address, but here it was staring me in the face, from a couple thousand miles away.

3905 South Farm Road 75  
Republic, MO 6738  
June 17, 1996

Laura Johnson  
Springfield News-Leader  
651 Boonville Ave.  
Springfield, MO 65806

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Dear Laura,

In regards to the article "Dad cites patriotism in not paying child support," News leader Monday, June 17, 1996, p.2A; Robert Cheney should not feel like he is a victim of political persecution. All divorced fathers and their relatives are victims of the same Judicial System, members of the American Bar Association, and the law enforcement agencies who operate the divorce courts for their own financial gain. THIS IS A NINETY SIX BILLION (\$96,000,000,000) dollar-a-year business. The system shows no mercy and will attack anyone who will try to pour money into the system in order to see that justice and property settlements are equitable. This is done in order to maximize the greatest financial gain for those in the system. All in the best interests of the children!, is a statement added to all good laws protecting the rights of fathers and their children and allows judges to operate the courts to maximize the financial gain for his friends in the Bar Association, and enforced by our tax.

Again, I want to Thank the News-Leader Staff for printing my letter to the editor, January 3, 1996 in which I stated, "Divorce cases should be removed from the control of the judiciary and the American Bar Association. There must be a better way to bring about separation of families. There is no need to subject the children and the divorcing parties to such thievery, fraud, extortion, harassment, antagonizing behavior and I would like to add lies, by the judicial system and the divorce lawyers for their own financial gain."

I totally agree with Robert Cheney, I don't want my grandchildren to inherit the system that has already attacked myself, our family and my son. I don't advocate the overthrow of this system but I do strongly advocate immediate change if not sooner! This financial gain is paid for by the young men's family and the young men's property is taken and the men are placed into slavery with the threat of debtor's prison and his children are taken from him, by the police with brute force and on his property, all in the best interests of the children!

Yes, if this can happen to you in this free country!, and God only knows what else!

Sincerely,

Robert E. Hackley

This kind gentleman also sent the news article about me from his local paper.

### SPRINGFIELD NEWS-LEADER

Page edited by Laura Johnson; call (417) 836-1199 after 5p.m.

Monday, June 17, 1996

#### **Dad cites patriotism in not paying child support.**

Oroville, Calif.—Some call him a typical deadbeat dad. Robert Cheney says he's a patriot and a victim of political persecution.

Cheney, the executive director of Butte County's anti-government Sovereign Patriot Group, has refused to pay nearly \$11,000 in child sup-

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

port for his 13 year-old son. The reason: He doesn't recognize the court that ordered the payment of the government behind it.

Now, that same government is making sure Cheney serve a 1 ½-year sentence for failing to comply with the 1989 court order. He's been in jail since June 6.

"He doesn't want his son to inherit the system that attacked him," said patriot group member Kevin Haddock.

This news-story which was published by the News-Leader is endemic the problems of our society. Although the 'general' basis of the story is true, major points are wrong. First of which caught my eye, and which we have battled over and over is the assertion that my organization is Anti-government. It is not. We are Constitutionalists, or strict structuralists. This is our proper term. We demand that the constitution means what it says, that it is the supreme law, that law is the law, and thereby; government must operate accordingly. We have never been 'Anti-government' nor ever will be, yet; this terrible label has been attached to us in countless cases, and has in fact, become a general moniker to all those who are Patriots when, in fact; the exact opposite is true. Secondly, the assertion that I did not recognize the court again, was a complete lie! In fact, I did recognize the court, per se; as my legal paperwork stated as such; however; as is my right—I *challenged jurisdiction thereof*, which any American is allowed to do not only by legal procedure, but is a right by birth-right! There is nothing wrong in this. In fact, when I did challenge jurisdiction, and on April 29<sup>th</sup>, 1996, Judge Stephen C. Howell stated on the record that "I have no jurisdiction in this matter." Thereby concluding the case! These are the facts.

There is no way, by these facts; that I could go into prison. Yet, here I was...in prison. The whole thing was a sham, and the results of this, are an exigent danger to every living American.

The fact that I when went got drawn into other subsequent fraudulent court sessions without ever legally contracting with those courts, and then in getting thrown into prison, cannot be explained away by any law whatsoever. What we are speaking of here, is the fact that a court without jurisdiction, placed me into prison. A legal impossibility, and a great crime in the United States. You can't do it. It's an impossibility. It's a criminal act.

In citing *People v. Zadro* (1937) 20 C.A. 2d 320, 66 P2d. 1204, the court said: "It is elementary that legal jeopardy does not arise where the court has no jurisdiction." (20 C.A. 2d. 323.) I have posed this legal conundrum to many lawyers and to a tee, each and every one when they have learned about my case has become strangely mute and quiet. But we again return to Brad Rhunt: "Where do you go when the Judge does not obey your law?" We now know, you can only go to jail.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This, is not my legal question any longer, it has become every single American's legal question—and as we visibly watch more and more of our legal rights erode away, this question will have to be answered soon, one way or the other.

Finally, to prove this point when the "Judge" in this supposed trial, who was a hired outside Judge from Fresno or Modesto named Richard C. Cumming who was flown in specially to handle my fraudulent "trial," he found me guilty through a 'jury trial' (which I never agreed to, nor chose any of the jurors, nor did I participate in), he plead "not guilty" for me when I never plead nor allowed him to plead for me—and when the "jury" (with planted shills on it) found me "guilty" I never accepted the verdict! Yet, the "Judge" in this matter, Cumming, sentenced me to jail for 1 ½ years. The DA noticed that there was a huge mistake in doing so, for they couldn't keep me in jail for a misdemeanor for more than 1 year in a county jail—so the DA made a motion (which I refused) to *reduce* my prison term by 6 months, so that my total time would be only 1 year. Yet, I resisted this, and wrote a motion refusing the reduction in sentence as my claim was that this "jury" and "court" never had jurisdiction in the first place!! Yet the Judge reduced it anyway's...

What court could I go to have Howell placed into jail? Or Cumming? Or the DA who all knew they were implementing illegal laws and acts. Where do I go? Now, more importantly; a larger question--where do you go??

To the only place I went when presented with absolute power which is out of control was the same place many other fathers went before me: unjustly into debtors prison.

The maxims state clearly: "Judici officium suum excedenti non paretur." -- To a judge who exceeds his office or jurisdiction no obedience is due. Jenk. Cent. 139. This maxim is carried into case law, such as Zadro noted above: There are many other cases also. "When a judge exceeds his jurisdiction and grants or denies that beyond his lawful authority to grant or deny, he has perpetrated a non-judicial' action." *Yates v. Hoffman Estates*, 209 F.Supp. 757 Ill. D.C. 1962. Clearly, I was suffering through a non-judicial action. But this is fine, how does one protect oneself from such arbitrary illegal persecution? As far as I can see, we can't, and this is the real story of this book. We can no longer protect ourselves with law against this 'new and efficient law,' the law of mutual responsibilities and obligations which Hillary desires for us so.. This is a new problem exacerbating within the American experience, and we have no idea how to handle it. There is no answer. There is only extreme danger.

What I mean by this isn't that there isn't an answer, I think the answer is very clear—but what I am saying, is under the present construct; as far as fathers are concerned—there is no answer. The only thing Fathers can

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

do is to bow and obey. To pay as quickly and mindlessly as they can with the least amount of impact to themselves. They must become on within the herd of the many zebra's—finding safety within the masses. Yet, because of technology, even this is becoming more and more impossible.

Finally, the last and greatest lie within this news-story and an issue of which all fathers face is the staggering amount of money the DA invents. I owed zero to the DA and government over this issue, yet; the newspaper—without checking with me, disseminates this \$11,000 dollar figure out of the DA's assertion--as if it is the final truth. It isn't. And unfortunately, the DA in sentencing to them to civil death 'invents' these figures through Disomaster figures and other 'expert' financial analysis without ever bringing forwards the real truth. Some fathers are invented to pay totally *astronomical amounts*, monies which they would never pay into any other items, such as houses or cars—strangely they owe to government! What amounts they couldn't accrue even if they had the child living with them—the DA 'expertly' informs the media that they owe these phenomenal amounts, and the media actually prints these figures as if they were the real authority. How can you tell a guy that makes *maybe* \$5,000 dollars a year, that he owes \$63,000? I mean, this is insanity, it is organized crime—and they know it.

The 'real truth' in my case was that ever since the first trial, I had only asked for full custody of my own child—something which that court—and every subsequent has illegally denied me, yet; by law—is owed me (under California Civil Code §7004(a), §5105, and §22.2). I never submitted never submitted to their illegal actions. I have never paid their extortion—yet; they most certainly have stolen substantial amounts from me through 'wage garnishment' over an 11 year period. When government acts under "Parens Patriæ" to become 'the ultimate parent' and usurp my authority and all my rights; then, *it* becomes legally the parent and *it* enjoys those pretended rights so *it* in accordance, as a parent, assumes the responsibility. It oppressive function however, proves if anything—that it is not a parent of any type—it is only an out-of-control tyrant. No citizen goes safe to trial with the Government as his ultimate parent; a complete abdication of the true role of such title. If the state is going to pull these ultimate despotic doctrines and impose them against me against my will, then; as it is now the supposedly main Master to my child using a government doctrine that is no longer American, common law, or Republican From of governance? Under this reality, then *it* assumes all liabilities to pay to enjoy these newly asserted rights. The parent is no longer required to pay, for we have been displaced. We are no longer the parents.

I have never believed in them being the "ultimate parent" of my child, I have *never authorized them nor supported them, nor shall I ever sup-*

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

*port these draconian Anti-American usurpation's of home and family.* To this day, I am my son's only father, I will never pay the thief who assumed unwarranted authority and control over my life, who allowed criminal acts to prevail over justice, in abject defiance to my continued protestations. Thereby; I have never owed them anything, I never will owe them anything...and I still to this day, in overwhelming impossible odds, demand my child's return to me, all monies stolen, returned; and a profuse apology from everyone involved in this criminal action. But now, because of my unjust incarceration, I'm also demanding damages, and a blanket indictment against all these criminals who were involved in this theft of my son.

On my first extended hunger strike, at day 63, the Sheriff, Mick Grey, had a meeting with me and two of my friends, Bill Brouhard, a Realtor and Doug Bussey a Lawyer-friend of mine. Both of them were shocked when they saw me, and surprisingly—I was kind of huffing it when I made the walk from my jail cell to the Sheriff's office, a walk of maybe 120 yards.. My throat was dry as a desert.

The Sheriff just let both my friends speak with me, which they did. Both of them gave impassioned pleas for me to call of this hunger-strike. They intellectually entreated me to dissuade continuing any further, but—I parried and overcame their arguments one after the other. They couldn't make a dent in me, and they both were losing the battle to dissuade me from continuing. I felt as if I had overcome this pressure until Doug, said something that kind of struck me hard.

There was a rather neat and gregarious gentleman in Chico, I can't even remember his name, that was a well-known part of the community whom had died suddenly that early summer, taking everyone by shock. I think he was in his mid-to-late forties, and his death, was plastered all over the media. Although I didn't know this gentleman, I recognized him and knew many in our community were devastated at his demise. This story was quite substantial, and raged in the local media for a good one to two weeks. Everyone who knew him, which Doug was one; was hurt by his death.

Doug looked at me, and with pained eyes said: "J.R., I've lost one good friend this summer—don't force me to loose another. I don't think I could take it." By this time I was drained—but that kind of sealed my fate. It was very emotional, and I just pursed my lips...it is strange how the human heart can effect even the best military plans and decisions. On a decision I regret to this day—I accepted the "Sheriff's Parole." There was something in Doug's voice, that just stopped me at that moment.

Then, surprisingly, although not one peep about my 63 day hunger-strike had made the local media—when the Sheriff heard I stopped my hunger-strike, he ceremoniously took me out to a local restaurant that

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

exact instant to Table Mountain Tavern, in Oroville, California. We ate there, with me taking my first taste of food in about a two-month period of time. Surprisingly, I couldn't taste a thing—my taste-buds had somehow shut down. Knowing what my body was going through, I had very little to eat, mostly mashed potatoes with gravy. All during this meal, everyone was very light hearted. I felt discombobulated though...I was still shaken by the whole incident. Grey, was almost rejoicing, he was very happy.

When we got back to the Jail, I finally "booked." I still regret doing this—but, the coercion was just too great. After all, just like the rest of you, I am human. Per our agreement, and in direct violation of Sheriff Parole policies, (as you are not supposed to have any write-up's in order to be granted for Sheriff's Parole...Hell! By this time my file must have been three to four inches thick!) I would stay in jail for about 50 days, and then the Sheriff would release me.

This isn't what really happened, for when it came time to release me he reneged on his agreement. Upon that—I again resumed my hunger-strike, which being my third, lasted for about 10 days. Soon, the papers got pushed through and I was released.

After I was out of prison, I was invited to go on a Radio Show, called *Veterans Forum*, on KZFR in Chico, California. I was a guest speaker on this show and some very remarkable things started to happen as I spoke on this issue, live, on-air broadcast.

As usual, the phones lit up pretty hard and I began answering questions from the audience after telling them about Child Support, the law and the general corruption of this system. One gentleman called me up telling me that he was at his wits end in trying to deal with his local DA in Yuba City, California. He said, that even though his wage was garnished, and that the DA took out all the money he wanted each paycheck by computer, that he was always getting notices in the mail that he was behind in payments a certain amount, usually, one, two or three hundred dollars. He'd then take a day off he couldn't afford, to deal with these people, and show them all his paychecks in which to straighten this mess out. They'd supposedly get everything right, and then sure enough, one or two months later—the *same exact charges would start reappearing in the mail*, once again charging him that he was several hundred dollars behind in his Child Support payments.

We had heard *a lot* about this, and in fact—the same thing happened to me. What we finally figured out was that the DA was intentionally doing this to pad his figures—again—so that the feminists would have 'the facts' of how many men only make 'partial' and not full payments. I informed this gentleman that the DA was intentionally doing this, that it was due to his need to fill quota's. His job was to paint all fathers in as

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

terrible light as he could, then label them deadbeats, so, they would use the system itself to generate false figures so that they could get more Federal funding to go hunt those terrible "Deadbeat Dads." What this meant of course was that it didn't matter how much you paid into these criminals, come time for accounting, you'd always be just a little behind. This of course, "checked a box" for the computer which was tallying such rote figures so that they could later be used to justify increased need, thereby allowing more Grants to come into the county. The computer would show Washington and the feminists that; there were a huge 'partial payment' segment of the deadbeat dad issue, and boy—did they have to combat that crisis by hiring yet even more people. I know many gentlemen have approached me on this conundrum, and it was puzzling to me until I figured out why they were doing this. As with most everything linked to this perverse system, it was a lie.

Another gentleman called up and complained that he had after many years, finally obtained custody of his own children. After getting them, he was chagrined that the DA did not pursue the mother for child support like they did him. I told him not to go after Child Support against the mother, as since he accrued the benefit of having his own children he could not steal from someone else to pay for what now he was responsible for. As I spoke to him and told him how more than three times the amount of women default on Child Support than men; I got an epiphany and started to ask him about his children. He of course started rattling off facts about how they now were doing excellent in school that they were in no trouble—I had the chance to link him to the *exact* facts and figures which I previously discussed and how his case exactly profiled what was happening when Fathers got with single dads: that they *flourished*.

All in all it was quite a remarkable radio show, and after completing it, I was surprised when the secretary came up to me and told me that there were calls still coming in and would I like to speak to these people. Well, I agreed sensing some responsibility here, so I spoke to all these callers who were still flooding the lines. One conversation of turned out to be quite remarkable.

It was the third and final caller who waited patiently for me, and when I spoke to him, he forcefully told me that he a student from Chico State University, and that he was a major in Logic there. He then said that he had been reading about me in the local papers and that he was angry. He said "You are not what the media made you out to be. I just heard you and you had a command of the facts, you were articulate—and you are not what they term a radical of any sort!" he said with finality. Well, I was sheepishly chagrined and we spoke for a while to where I ended the call thanking him. I left the station, happy to have done a good show, and went on with my normal life.



## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

Then; something very strange occurred.

One day about a week thereafter I got a telephone call from Fred Rusk, the disc jockey from the KZFR *Veteran's Forum* show, and he informed me that for a week afterwards the secretaries at the station were complaining bitterly that they were still getting calls in about my show. This he said had never happened before, (and that the secretaries were not happy about this new development). I was kind of stunned at this reaction. I asked him if he wanted to do another show and he happily said yes, he would love to, so we began scheduling a time.

What was funny about this was about a week later Fred called me again to tell me that now his listeners were calling him at home! Apparently the secretaries had had it, and were forwarding the calls to his own private residence. I was more than amused. He took it in stride though.

Again, this is the premonition I have always had in regards to the Fathers Rights movement, that it will become the next major social movement which will eclipse all other previous movements. It is the White Rhino, and when it is given proper voice, it leaves a trail which those who come in contact with it—or even wander across it—will find profound.

Where ever I have been asked to go on the media, whether it has been Television, Radio, or the Newspapers, somehow; it has created an indelible impact. I can remember being on KPAY Radio in Chico, California, the largest radio station in the northstate; and when we started talking on that show, every single light on their phone banks lit up like the proverbial Christmas tree. As God is my witness, I will never forget the host of the show, Bruce Sessions, looking at pointing incredulously down at the phone, then turning in amazement to his production crew at the sound board and pointing back and forth to the phones while alternately holding his face, and then back to the phones as they lit up wildly.

We were supposed to be on this show for a brief fifteen minutes. Unfortunately, he took the first 15 minutes and totally blew us out of the water (this show was in regards to the Butte County Sheriff and the Brady Dayton Cumbuss murder). Well, we waited patiently, (I had to restrain my associate, Kevin Haddock who was crawling out of his seat trying to answer all Mr. Sessions allegations), but I knew that was not why we were here. Bruce wanted to torpedo us, and in that scenario, nothing you say will matter when media plans such an attack on you. He controls the show. Well, this went on for a solid fifteen minutes and then at a break, his production crew was waving at him to come in and have a meeting. Bruce during the commercial break went into the production room and spoke with his producers. We could see them conferencing through the large studio windows. After coming back he said that there were a couple of calls and several faxes asking him to "shut-up" and allow us to speak.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

He was disappointed, he lamented; but he was willing to be fair, "and let us hang ourselves" so he let us talk. So we did.

I was amazed that this had happened, as I was resigned to take this planned torpedoing, and cut our losses as such by not engaging. But, to his credit he now was letting us inform the public as to the law as well as the facts, so we opened up the volumes of law books we brought with us and began going through them, item by item over the law, procedure and what was the correct lawful thing for the Sheriff to do *as mandated by his own laws*. Poof! Within five minutes of our speaking, the phone lines lit up as if Hoover Dam had suddenly been wired into them. Call after call came in agreeing with us. Bruce who was stunned at all this, to his credit; kept mostly quiet and allowed us the time for our platform to be heard. He kept us there the whole hour, then; he asked us whether we could stay for the second hour. "Sure." We said. So, he bumped his second guest and kept us on. When that hour was over, he bumped his third guest and kept us there for the whole three hour show! I'll never forget the next to the last call which came in just before the show went off the air, it was from an old lady who was a regular listener to the show. She told Bruce that the past few shows he had weren't very good, in fact she said "They were in the crapper." She then said this was one of the best shows he ever had done, noting: "I don't know who these guys are, or all of what they are really saying—I just thank God they're here." She said with finality.

I relate this incident in which to tell many people that I have never talked down to people. When I did my own Television Show called: *Sovereign America*; I always spoke as high a manner and intellect that I could to the common person, challenging each and every one of them. When I first started the show, people warned me, "No...most of the people won't understand you. They'll tune you out. You'll have to talk down to them. Come down to their level." "Go the lowest common denominator."

I never did.

When I did this show, I brought out the most erudite law and legal terms I could find and then explained what was the outcome of such determinations. We would bring out the Vehicle code and read exactly from its dry and highly ossified legal terminology. We would read the government code, Evidence code, the FRCP—the whole gamut of what we considered 'law' to be. If anything we pulled our audience along with us. We never 'limited' them. We pushed out the highest principles we could for any TV show—in fact, I can remember getting one fact wrong where I came back and told the audience that I got it wrong, apologized, made the correction and moved on. People need to trust you with the truth, and at some point you will always snafu. It is then that you have to admit your mistakes and tell the truth, and move on—letting them trust you that this

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

is the relationship of really getting to the truth of issues. An investment of sorts between you and the viewer. What I presently see in our contemporary media, government and especially feminists—this is the *last* thing on their mind.

Well, even though the show was only on cable access—it was a huge success. I can remember walking around Butte County—and people would instantly recognize me. I became a "celebrity." Along with this new found fame, I also listened to my inner voice, telling me to stay close to the facts and hold the truth even more close, to never lose this as a principle. I'll never forget going to a benefit Concert in downtown Chico. This concert was for Prop 215, the Medical Marihuana Proposition which later passed by a resounding margin—and as which the de facto 'corporate' government has still yet to obey. Nonetheless, there I was, just one of the masses, (I actually was coming back from a bike-ride) and just started walking around at this benefit/concert. It was so odd, I didn't get 25 feet into walking through the event when the first people stopped me and started talking to me. Soon a small crowd had gathered. It was very unnerving being an 'instant celebrity.'

I was quite amiable with these people none of them who I knew, speaking to them about the issue of Marihuana, which unlike the President of the United States, I had never taken or used one bit. But I supported their cause though, above and beyond just mere Marihuana medical use, of which this rally was supporting. Well, as I politely left the first group of people I had people coming up to me constantly introducing themselves and shaking hands. They had artisans there, like a small mini-fair who were selling a variety of things and one of them came up to me and *gave me* a small tile with some writing on it which he made and was selling, which spoke to the injustice of our local DA Mike Ramsey, who I considered to be a real criminal. I mean it was so surrealistic, it just kept on going on like this, I felt weird as if I was some kind of rock star—but I cannot deny that it was fun, and somehow moving.

What was the oddest thing about this was that, my Television show "*Sovereign America*" hadn't been on air in over *two years*, because I was in jail, and never got on my feet again. Yet, I knew even during this time, that Butte College, who was the carrier and main station for Channel 31, Cable Access television; was *still getting telephone calls for my television show even though it hadn't been on for this extended time period!* That, was truly astounding given the light, that not many mainstream television shows could boast that type of support. This support was wide ranging also, not just relegated to the supposed "Pot Heads" of Butte county.

I guess if anyone would label my countenance, it would probably best be considered as professional. I was at one bar kind of talking with some

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

friends, when two gentlemen walked into this establishment, and the second they saw me both of them just exploded into what seemed a rage. I kind of knew these guys, but was taken back as they both quickly approached me. As most people do in small communities, you see certain people and you bump into them once in a while, but you don't know their names, nor ever talk with them—you just see them every once in a while, way off in the distance--well, this was the exact case here. Both these gentlemen rushed up to me and one was saying "Here! *This is the guy* with the television show!. *This*, is who I'm talking about!!!" and they went on to relate how as they were driving in the car to come into town they were constantly discussing my show, and how good it was, or rather; how truthful it was. One knew who I was and was trying to explain it to the other fellow who never got it. I could see that in the car, they must have almost come to blows over this by both their reaction once they saw me.

The widespread acceptability of this format of not talking down to people and pushing their intellectual limits was driven home to me even among my friends. One of them, Pat Conroy, emotes perhaps the best of what Patriarch's strive for. He owns his own construction company, he is a highly active and visible community leader, he is the consummate parent, being very active and involved with his children, cub scouts, school—the whole nine yards. He is fiercely loyal to his employees, yet, as a true capitalist, he works them as hard as possible, trying to gain as much profit for his company, so that he can garner more work and hire more people and provide even better for his family, and to give to charities, which is something else his family does a lot of. He reveres his own father, and his father he—and there is strong familiar ties among the Conroy clan, not just in the immediate family, but in the extended one as well. He does all this—and in concomitant fashion, he has a stunningly beautiful wife, who he loves, and she him—and she is a benefit to him, and she is a mother to her children; and...they live very well which is the actuality of the American dream. He, his wife and his family are the blueprint of what we Patriarch's this nation should be doing.

He and I had many political discussions, and sometimes we'd agree, sometimes we wouldn't—that's the way things go, however; he did relate to me an insight that yet again proved the demographic marketability of using television as a real information tool. We were working together one day and he just stopped and said: "Oh—a funny thing happened last night."

I of course wondered so I asked him what it was. He said that he was on the phone with Steve Lotti, (yet another gentlemen in which the Patriarchal community would best emulate), and they were talking on the phone about some obtusely related business. Well, Pat told me, they were

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

in the middle of their negotiations when, all of a sudden Steve on the other end of the line suddenly said: "Oh, I've got to go!"

"Why?" Pat reproached still wanting to continue the business discussion.

"J.R.'s on TV and I want to watch this." Steve quickly replied. {My personal friends call me by my nickname: "J.R."}

"What channel?" Pat excitedly asked, now unconcerned about the previous conversation.

"Channel 31." Steve responded.

"Okay, call back after the show and we'll finish our discussion."

Pat then told me that both he and Steve hung up the phones, watched the show, and then when it was over; they both called each other back up—and then resumed the conversation—continuing exactly where they had left off as if nothing had happened...

Funny.

Now, I find this remarkable, not just because these were friends that found it funny or somehow quaint that they had a personal friend with a small time Cable Access show, but rather in the fact that this show really meant something. It meant something because of the *content* of what we were talking about. This was the hook. Somehow, in talking about Americanism, and proving it through erudition and didactic research appealed to people on an intrinsic level. This format of taking the high road and holding people up to the highest levels of thought and philosophy challenged many people to think on an abstract layer, and—as I figured; they found themselves deeply gravitated to my show. I wasn't getting these responses 'just' from my friends—but a cross section of the community and the letters we continually got in the mail, told me that we had a dedicated audience. We had a loyal following that went across all demographics within that community.

It wasn't some mindless diversion we were putting on TV, but rather, we were bringing out American concepts and philosophical ideals which we were reading from age-old manuscripts, and old legal books and journals which almost fell apart on us in our hands as we read them on air. We were speaking to the heart of just not America, but the human spirit—of age tested truths, and self-evident theorems and controversial doctrines which had filtered down to us and handed to our form of government as a solid foundation. We found, to our surprise, that all people hungered this intellectual challenge when it was presented to them. This show, and others which we did, struck some immutable chord within people who heard us—and when they did hear us, the phones lit up like Christmas trees every time, to many people's amazement. There was a power here as if a hammer were meeting an anvil, and everyone who witnessed these things—were circumspect in their surprise.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

I'll never forget going on the Art Bell show around 1995. I wasn't on as a guest, but rather as a listener chosen to argue a political point live on air against another listener who would argue the opposite point. I had been a regular caller for quite some time, and had sent many faxes into his show, usually bringing out case law, or other historical or legal points of interest. He knew me well, and knew my political positions and as I found out later, had a certain respect for me. When Art introduced me, he paused for a bit, and then said something that kind of humbled me, he said, "Ladies and gentlemen, here's the real thing, J.R., a patriot from Chico, California." He said this in a reverent tone, that kind of took me back by surprise, as most people today don't want to align themselves with patriots or admit even being one. The mainstream vilification of that American institution as well has been much maligned by both our media and government. This indoctrination has been so complete, that now most children only associate 'Patriotism' with racism and avid gun control, and "Angry White Males." Yet, here he was venerating me live on air, to a national audience.

Nonetheless, it is time we as a nation of listeners and viewers push these, what are for the greatest part, mindless and shallow entertainment shows and push these institutions to higher limits. For instance, I have watched the Howard Stern show and marveled at its titillation value, its irreverence towards the moral and its campy, mindless think-quick-on-your-feet-in-your-face kind of broadcast style. Yet, strange as it may seem, this show even serves a function, an important function abandoned by most culturally elite mainstream broadcast information shows; and that is a forum to actually show us the other side of the coin. One of the major functions of news, is to *inform the viewer*. The mainstream media has long abandoned this precept of journalism as it can no longer be tolerated within the new Feminist driven mindset which overshadows them all. Thereby, no longer do the mainstream media show people such as a KKK member and give him a free forum to speak, no longer do we see controversial intellectuals and the other side of the human experience in which, we as the viewer, once we have seen both sides of an issue, or of a person, **we** can make the determination of what to think or who to vote for in our public forums. Unfortunately, this has become a lost art within the media—one which is not done out of chance, but is planned by spite, power, and outright control over the American mindset. Howard Stern show is—but a brief glimpse, if not a perverse glimpse into what many American's don't normally see anymore—and that is the other side of the coin.

This of course did not happen on our show. We would entreat guests to come on and to say their side, yet; again—upholding the Doctrine of the Silent Treatise, they would always refuse, at least the 'public ser-

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

vants' would; and thereby—we would be left with the difficult task of trying to intellectually take their side, which was quite difficult, yet; which we always tried to do: show the other side.

Again, when we tackled really tough issues, as in the Brady Cumbuss case, the unseen hand of our illustrious elite would actually censor our show. This happened once upon us breaking new news on the Cumbuss case, and Butte College who perpetrated the act, at the bequest of a 'nameless' public official, placed themselves in severe legal jeopardy in doing so. We could have had their FCC license—and many in my group wanted to go after it. However; I wrote the Dean of the School there, let's just call him "Bob," a long letter informing him of the law, of his public Charter, and of the mandate given to him to air Cable Access television. We could have made things very messy for them, yet; I was prone as always to forgive first, and then if they proceeded to disregard the law a second time, then to go after them. Everyone should have at least one, two or three mistakes. We don't live in a perfect world.

Their public access mandate by law was to broadcast 'alternative' viewpoints, which our show clearly did, as nobody else was even coming close to such subjects and issues which we were doing. They also, as a public broadcast facility came under FCC law, which under case precedent meant that we as a broadcast information show, "classical journalists" if you will; had the inviolate right to first publish (broadcast) then get sued if what we aired was not true. I politely brought these issues out to them, and demanded in no certain terms that the broadcast the show forthwith. They did. My repeated attempts to find out what public servant called them and ordered them to censor the show, was never met however. They protected that person. We never found out who it was—although we do have suspects.

One of the things which I should relate to you was in the fact by which I resisted the Prison Guards feeble attempts to control me. What most prisoners don't know when they enter jail is that it is a psychological training ground. Classical doctrines of Skinner, Freudian, Jung, Pavlovian analysis, and other techniques are used to coerce inmate's into behaving the way they want. When I went into jail, I wiped their whole psychological slate clean. They didn't know what to do.

Most of the techniques really involve the concepts of positive and negative reinforcement. Do this, and I give you that. Don't do this, and I take away that. When I entered prison I was so angry by the outrageous injustice which I had just suffered through that I just stopped cold. I remained resolved that I wouldn't do a *thing* for these criminals. They were the enemy, and I was going to treat them exactly as what they were.

My first night there they try and break you—by doing slow and tedious paperwork, by placing you into cells and just having you stand ma-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

lingering. I went through this same tactic in the Marines at boot camp, so I was way ahead of these people. When they asked me: "Do you want to book?" expecting the normal "Yes"—I patently refused and demanded to immediately see the 24 hour magistrate; something of which they are supposed to do by law, but belligerently refused. Well, after several discussions they decided they would place me into solitary confinement (for not booking); of course they called it "administrative segregation" which I refused. They did it anyway's.

When it came time to place me into prison, two guards took me to a laundry room and told me to strip. I told them I wasn't a prisoner, that a terrible injustice had just occurred and to immediately bring me to a magistrate. Well, they were pretty taken back by the whole thing, but they assured me, that I would wear prison clothes—I told them I wouldn't—as I wasn't a prisoner, that I refused to consent, that I wouldn't book or submit. I told them I was there unjustly, by a court with no jurisdiction. I told them about Judge Steven Howell, and how he had admitted on April 29<sup>th</sup>, 1996 that he admitted he had "no jurisdiction in this matter." I may as well been talking to parakeet's. They didn't hear a thing I said—they just did what they mindlessly trained to do.

They threatened me every way known to man; with beatings, with several officers forcing me to do it, with 'write-ups' and with several other assorted penalties. Of course I didn't want any of these things, but I was determined to staunchly send the message that I was resolute, that I was right and they were wrong—and that they were in very much deep trouble. So, both of the guards left and placed me into a cell right near this facility, about one-half hour later they returned with two other prison guards, (four total)...and a *video camera*! Inside my mind—I was just laughing at them. But I was also very concerned for my safety. I was entering into a Brady Cumbuss scenario, and this jail had a malevolent, well-documented, and brutal past. The complete Butte County political regime did not like me, especially this jail—I had to be careful. I had to also, remain resolute however.

They led me back to this laundry room, threatened me several times more, of which I refused; then they all attacked me. I knew I couldn't hit these people, I wanted to send a clear and decisive message to the whole system—that from now on; things wasn't just going to be 'business as usual.' Ever since I was a little child, I was inculcated with the precepts that we are a free nation. A proud and noble nation. That the time to stand up came, it was the small man, the true American whom stood up and who defended this nation, and others; and from and by these enoble acts of sacrifice, we protected not only other people's Liberty and Freedom, but more importantly, our own. Well, I was in for the fight of my life. All four of these guards at once jumped me. To combat them, I placed each



## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

of my hands underneath each arm, and I crossed my legs and then squeezed myself inside as tight as I could, held this position for as long as I could. One thing that really surprised me was at how weak these four guards really were. I mean, one of them even appeared to be of stout countenance, yet; none of them could either move my arms, get my hands or nothing. This struggle ensued while the fifth man filmed the whole event.

This debacle went on for one minute, then two; five, and at about ten minutes maybe even fifteen total, (I'm only estimating here, for there was no clock), It was a long time, because they were winded, and I was outlasting them. Finally they got me down on the ground, and exhausted, one got my thumb and tried to break it by twisting it back with his full body weight. Slowly I unraveled, and once there, they began tearing off my clothes. Then, naked, I still refused to wear their prison suit, so they placed a blanket on me, and with the four (now exhausted) guards and myself, and the fifth prison guard still filming, they put a sheet over me to cover my nakedness, and in the middle of the night they all marched me to my cell in silence to where they left me.

What was most unnerving to them was that when they would take me to mental health (just like the Russians who couldn't force political dissidents to do their bidding), I would always come back and refuse to wear prison clothes. But what was odd was, that in each subsequent battle, they would add two or three more guards. I mean the first time there were four, the second time about six, the third time eight or nine, and then the final time, they had *thirteen guards* wrestle me to the ground and strip me. No kidding. Thirteen.

This last time was most remarkable. For it was at my second term of imprisonment, and when I came back from mental health a second time, to which again; I would give the psychologists no information what-so-ever. It was about day 50 of my second hunger strike, and I was tired. It was about 3pm when they brought me back to intake, and a female guard came up to where I was standing and asked for my shoelaces, and again, I refused. She stood there shocked, and I can remember a guard distinctly standing to the left of me, sighing loudly and turning, shaking his head; walking away in disappointment. She made the call to main dispatch to inform them that I again, was refusing to disrobe and wear prison clothes...to which there was circumspect silence from the other end. Again, the video camera came out, they filmed me, then; the camera went back in to administration and disappeared for a bit. Then, I can remember all these guards collecting around me, some of which were, and had become my friends. We waited while guard after guard showed up—all of them, confused. Not happy at all.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

I told everyone who was assembling there, "Sorry gentleman, but I shouldn't be here, and you know that." All of them remained mutely silent as they assembled around me. They didn't even attempt to dissuade me.

We then walked back to the laundry room again, in total silence. Nobody was talking. The whole assemblage would walk down the cold concrete corridors, come up to a locked door, bunch up; wait for a bit as it would become unlocked, and this huge assembly would lead me, a guard to each side of me into what was becoming an all too intimate laundry room. It took about five to ten long seconds for everyone to crowd into that small room. I quietly assumed my locked position, the camera got a good place to film, and as usual again, they all pounced on me at once.

What was unusual from previous struggles was that this was the most professional beating to date. They worked systematically to force me to the floor. Each man who double and tripled team me would take a specific function of my body. Others off to the periphery would use their free hands to secure me. As they were mashing my face into the floor, I could take comfort that I somehow had contributed to a refinement of jail beating techniques and procedures within this draconian institution

What was most odd, was this time, unlike others, with the Film camera running I could hear the jail guards in the background standing saying "Don't hurt him! Don't—No! Don't hurt him. Be careful. Be careful!!!" came the admonitions. I could sense that these avocations came from their hearts. Clearly, there had been a paradigm shift from within this jail itself. Unlike previous times which lasted five to ten minutes...because of my hunger-strike, I barely lasted three minutes during this one, to where I, God—it is hard writing this right now and remembering—I cramped up severely. My arms, and legs, even stomach went into ripping knots. I couldn't hold it back—"Cramps!" I screamed. "Ohh! Cramps!!!" I kept screaming over and over. I was totally debilitated. I was like a rag doll. When they got me up, I was drained...and it was hard holding my head up. Once up, it took about thirty seconds, maybe a full minute for the cramps to subside; while they took off my clothes. Then—all of them silently walked me back into administrative segregation once more.

I remember I couldn't lift my head up, it just kept falling down. I was very weak, and the guards kind of lifted me as I walked with them. We got into administrative segregation, (solitary confinement) they put me in my cell into the bed with just my shorts on, and I lay there quickly blanking out into sleep. When they left—I'll never forget this...it was dead quiet for a bit in solitary confinement. Then the guy in the next cell said. "Jesus! Thirteen guys! Fuck. I just counted them. Thirteen guards! They had thirteen guards come and take you here—I ain't never

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

seen *that* before!" he said incredulously. Then he asked me: Who are you?"

I was a father who only wanted my son, my mind told me as I went to sleep. I don't even remember if a answered him. I just fell into a deep sleep.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

---

*"Where the people are free there can be no great contrast or distinction among honest citizens in or out of office. In proportion as the people lose their freedom, every gradation of distinction, between the Governors and governed obtains, until the former become masters, and the latter become slaves."* --A Farmer, Maryland Gazette and Baltimore Advertiser, March 7, 1788.

---

### THE REAL EFFECTS OF FATHERLESSNESS UPON AMERICA

---

Strangely, this is the topic of which everyone refuses to discuss. The media, our Social Science experts, our economists, those within our Prison systems, within the State and Federal Legislatures, our Educators, the NRA, even feminists, some of which who are posing as Fathers Rights activists—all of them refuse to discuss this issue—even though most of the problems they are facing are directly related to the rate of Fatherlessness in this nation. Yet, if you dismantle their individual problems, somewhere along the line you will see that Fatherlessness is either the root cause of their ensuing problem, or very close to being the total cause.

Even Rush Limbaugh, the national talk-radio show host, is extremely reluctant to discuss this issue—being full aware of what happened to Senator Moynihan in the 60's--even though 99 percent of everything he discusses directly stems from this problem of Radical Feminism; of which he had termed: Feminazi. Again, it is like they all don't realize that in order to have personal liberty in this nation, it has to start within the home; not at the school, not at the workplace, and not from surrogate fatherhood. All freedoms emanate from that most sacred fountainhead: the American freedom—which is the home and family. Rush, who discusses a wide array of national topics, stop's short of entering the home and defending the Father, due to the fact that he says that he has no children, and therefore cannot correctly discuss the subject. But then, he will go and talk about politics or the economy, whose effects emanate from within the home; outwards. Somehow, he's willing to jump down those avenues without ever studying the source, which is kind of like trying to discuss building a bridge without at first knowing about mathematics' or engineering. Our educators scream for more money, while conversely supporting and implementing draconian measures against Fathers which undermine their sovereignty, then; when the family breaks down, or the morality within the children breaks down—they again, stop short of discussing the real issue which would solve many of these problems with little or no money—and revert right back for asking for new programs or more grants and public funding!! No one wants to talk about fatherless-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

ness, but they all want money in order to create programs to either disenfranchise him, or to directly destroy him.

We have economists now who are expounding outrageous thesis's claiming that the more debt people can amass in their lives, the more 'wealthier' they will be. You have a religious cadre of Radical Feminists who are cogently attempting to 'redesign' humanity, which of course mean's redesigning the basic principles of American governance, which—is Non-Constitutional, and patently treasonous. Yet, Hillary and her cabal are doing all this in the bright light of fame and the media and getting applause from the dolt mobocracy who have no comprehension or understanding what is really going on. So, just like the unnamed Taxi Cab driver who correctly noted: our nation continues to advance, all the while all of us recognize that it is 'somehow' going backwards, all at the same time.

Yet...nobody says a thing. Nobody makes a peep. Nobody has the courage to connect the dots...and thereby, from their willful malfeasance; things stay the same. All the while people like Montel, Oprah and Rush throw out their own brand of informational disinformational campaigns which do not enlighten people, but tend to keep people more in the dark by keeping them closer to the frivolous and petulant 'spin'; of which the mainstream media/government endorses.

If any of these talking heads would on any issue, such as crime, police, the economy, really—anything else: just take the time to include in their discussions the Family and most certainly the Father, and Fatherlessness, they would gain new insight to many of these public conundrum's and indeed—a new national discussion might begin to actually begin to solve problems. However, solving problems is a tricky trade, for; if you start solving them, that means you are denying government it's business. This may be the 'real' reason nobody dares speak about the national tragedy of fatherlessness. This is what kept Senator Moynihan and others silent; and which keeps the present "Silent Treatise" viable as a national institution.

Not addressing the costs of Radical Feminism and the trillions of which this nation has wasted in pursuing such sophistry, we can begin our discussion of Fatherlessness by addressing the basic costs of removing the Father from his child's life.

First, we must discuss how a Father is removed from his child's life in the first place. How is this done? Is there some secret law that one goes to in order to do this? Are there secret thugs that are hired like the LaCostra Nostra who are hired to "take the Father for a ride?" Does one take out an ad in Soldier of fortune?

No...there is not, and one does not. Unfortunately, this is all done in the light of day by our local District Attorneys, police and Sheriff who

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

will arrest and remove the "abuser" (who is 99% of the time considered the Father) with an attendant court superstructure which is designed to civilly kill him and drain all of his wealth. All a woman has to do (or child) is pick up the phone. Then, at that exact instant; government will imprison the Father by using illegal extra-judicial procedures, and to do all this publicly, right in the light of day...in every downtown community across America. Any female merely wishing to remove the Father, or get him out of the house, just has to pick up the phone and make a call. It is that easy. Above and beyond that; there are also "victims" benefits, of cash, money, support, food, moving costs, baby sitting, relocation costs, lawyer referrals or complete legal funding—all accomplished under the guise of 'Victimhood' which the Feminists have evolved into an art form. They subsidize this program which from the outset is designed only to destroy Fatherhood—then the nation wonders why they are spending so much and why there is so much social pathology linked to all of this. American's actually blink in astonishment when they see the resultant theft from their paycheck.

If the woman who considers herself a "victim" doesn't want to go through the legal paperwork—all she has to do is get a boyfriend, a biker—an exciting "bad boy"; and let him move in, while she calls the police who help throw her old boyfriend out in the street. He comes home to find all his belongings out in the road—and a new replacement in his bedroom and his children's lives.

The case of a man we'll call Alan is fairly typical. Without warning Alan came home one day to find his apartment cleaned out. His wife and two-year-old girl were gone. Shortly afterwards Alan was summoned to court and as a "defendant," was ordered to stay away from his daughter most of the time and to begin making child support payments. His two-hour, thrice-weekly visits with his daughter were supervised and she was not allowed to stay with him overnight, since his wife alleged that he was dangerous and would kidnap her. The accusations eventually proved groundless, and the supervision terminated. After a year Alan was permitted one overnight visit with his daughter per week. His wife, meanwhile, was never charged with making false accusations nor has the fabrication counted against her in the custody proceedings. Various experts testified that Alan is no danger whatever to his daughter and that he is a devoted and loving father. All these findings were ignored by the courts. More than four years after his wife left, the child remains with her. He has spent a \$160,000 inheritance on legal fees, not counting about 40 percent of his income for child support, and now lives hand-to-mouth.

Then there's Bruce, who was a truck driver in Boston and who came home one day to find his things on the street, the locks on his doors changed, and his wife's new boyfriend already moved in. Angry and bewildered, Bruce kicked in the door and began shouting. (He did not strike anyone.) His wife called the police, who arrived and took Bruce away in

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

handcuffs. She got a restraining order preventing any contact with his three children. When his son was hospitalized with an illness, he was not allowed to visit. Eventually Bruce was allowed to see his children at a supervised visitation center with his wife and her boyfriend present in the next room. [*Why is Daddy in Jail?* By Stephen Baskerville, The Woman's Quarterly, Washington, D.C.]

Both women as well as society recognizes that the male is the weakest link between he and his children. The present Elite Regime, of socialists and Radical Feminists have been able to build empires off these well-documented facts by compromising the American male. Presently, they are in the process of designing even harsher laws against the male, in order to undermine his association with his own children even further. National and state budgets are designed around this eventuality. In essence, they have established markets of failure, in which they can conspire laws, and from their social impact, accrue billions of dollars worth of profits. The fact that such laws destroys children, is of no consequence to these people, whose main task is to destroy the American system of government and to replace it with "something else" that will "redesign humanity." To accomplish this perversion: they destroy Fatherhood: with a vengeance....their efforts do not go unrewarded.

What most American's do not understand is that once a system of government becomes so unjust and totalitarian against one segment of its population, those injustices will then overflow into other portions of the society, and eventually go after them. When you allow government to peel open a Fathers economic life—soon, your life too will be economically peeled open. When you give the Government authority to establish a national job bank and registry to predatorily 'hunt' deadbeat dads; then, in the not too distant future, they will be using that same exact system to 'hunt' you down for not paying that ticket for not turning your turn-signal on *exactly* 100 feet before the turn, and other associated penalties. When you start placing Jews into ovens, soon—even the Protestants themselves become wary—because totalitarianism breeds disaster, and conspiracy; soon there is danger to all citizens. This is where we are presently headed, and a full Autocratic, dictatorial Totalitarian regime is already here, using the guise that it is the "freest" nation on earth. That we are a 'democracy' or even a Republic, when the real facts show a completely dissimilar reality. Like *Lord of the Flies*, nobody truly sees that we are devolving, all we do is chant the national mantra more and more, and beat the drums ever more loudly all under the moniker of whatever the national conviction turns out to be—and when we see the ensuing hunt and campaign's against our own society, against our own humanity, we label these conquests with perfidy—discounting their true intent. Soon, however; even



## CHAPTER NINETEEN

the tribe is not big enough to hide us all, until when—*even we become the hunted*.

This of course has folded over into our national consciousness. There are no hero's here any longer. There are no Judges, or Lawyers who are willing to turn against this animal which is in direct contravention to the rule of our lives. No Police who are willing to stand up and do the right thing. Everyone, just silently goes-along-to-get along; and the injustices soon escalate and become even more inflammatory, even more deadly. Soon, government is seizing cars and property in the bright light of noon, and claiming these seizures under the right of an infinite justification of altruism. This is "the law" they will resolutely tell you—until you get them into court and force them to answer the most basic legal questions, and then—they break down and claim: "I was only doing my job." Most however, to the greatest extent—don't even answer these simple questions. They immediately enshrine themselves within the Morbius Complex: they are right, you are wrong—it's the law, is their only explanation. When they cannot explain the basic tenants of law, they get belligerently silent. Now, we have bred a contingent within government under the countenance of "Ollie North;" who are no longer meek, but in criminal defiance are admitting their crimes, under the altruism of their religious cause. "I had a right do break the law, because I was doing the right thing!" they claim. This is the present mind-set of Ms. Clinton and the Radical Feminists like her who, will do anything, break any law, do any crime, destroy any civilized precept in order to achieve their ultimate social goals.

When such religious doctrines throw men out from their own homes, it immediately attacks the entire substrate of the American experience. Again, in the past we recognized these acts as totally illegal and contrary to our foundational form of Government—an American government of which there is no other across the face of the earth. This fear of ultimate Autocracy imposed by faceless tyrants and Totalitarian regimes, was fought against at all costs. Just like the war poster declared in an Antique store in Venice Beach, California: "Save our Children from Autocracy!" Previous generations recognized that the sovereignty of the home imbued an immutable expression of freedom across the face of this nation. Freedom, they recognized, came from within, it wasn't bestowed upon from above. Any attack upon the family, was an attack on both the wealth and safety of this nation itself. Against the very form of governance.

The fact that we are no longer a nation of savings if a direct corollary of what has happened to the males in this society. Where Malcolm X recognized that the females showed the moral status of a nation, the condition of the male shows the economic status of the nation. Presently, because of the huge attack against the institution of Fatherhood, the fantasy

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

that this nation is doing economically well, is dubious at best. First, if we look internationally, we see all other Western Economies having difficulties, with some in immanent collapse. Yet, the American economy, which "used" to also follow such world-wide trends, now 'supposedly' chugs along happily as if nothing is wrong. Well, how can this be?

With a money system that is nothing but a fraud, with no wealth being accrued either through our labor, into our own homes, or into our national economy—where is the profit? As a *huge* debtor nation with zero savings—how can we not be effected by such things as the collapse of the Russian economy, the Japanese economy, the Pacific rim, recessions in Germany and elsewhere—why doesn't our economy follow the normal pattern of other M8 monetary nations??

Well, here lies the rub. Somehow the fraud has been complete, and in their silent re-engineering of our society from one of a free-individualist model to one that adheres to a Matriarchal slave based society—suddenly, as was noted before, the impossible becomes plausible, the fantastic true. Even though such assertions controvert the normal relativity of what we understand as plausible, now—a new magic has descended upon the life of government. If they can just get enough "experts" to explain away even the most egregious crimes and actions of government away, if they can all assume their "Ollie North" Morbius countenance, then; the public will buy it. And unfortunately, they have, and they still do buy into these fantastic allegories such as Ms. Reno went into explaining away Waco and other national incidents which were nothing more than fascist police state crimes against the American citizenry. Starve the public from proper education long enough—and they will accept anything the government hands them, unquestioningly, which is where our present state of affairs is right now. With abstract reasoning capabilities gone from the mob of the national plebecite—*anything* becomes possible.

This of course has empowered a certain class of people within government, who are, basically evil. Those who are willing to lie, cheat and steal all using a straight faced conviction of Ollie North (or Hillary Clinton). Those who dare controvert such tactics are soon discounted and removed from their positions through 'bean counts.' They don't appear in the media any longer... The American public is left with a society to where if they try and 'legally' serve papers on government officials in which to protect themselves and seek redress, they are completely refused; and instead, this new breed happily violates even the most basic tenants of laws so that all those who wear the badge's and robes, can wink at each other knowingly—to affirm that they are on the proper side of the bean count. Through several generations of such winking, soon there are no people left within our public institutions who even believe in the proper enumeration of government, nor the just application of laws.

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

You only just have a criminal mindset who represent 'special interests,' who like Ms. Clinton, and Ollie North, are willing to do the wrong thing, instead of the right thing. And are thrilled when their subordinates do even more perverse criminal acts—of course denying that they had any disclosure at all of these injustices. But we all know what is going on.

So, as the Fathers are being systematically removed from their children's lives, the nation goes further into debt. Meanwhile, our GNP and GDP are exploding in record levels. Yet all that developed wealth, is siphoned off—and instead of we American's enjoying the highest standard of living across the earth, instead of we accruing the major portion of the wealth for ourselves—the common man's resources dwindle. As the poor are hit even harder and are forced even further into poverty. This ever burgeoning segment of the populace, taken in the light of such massive economic expansion—is a dichotomy which is socially unexplainable even in the kindest light. Somehow, the massive wealth of America is going into 'somewhere else,' most certainly to the upper 5 to 10 percent of the populace as well as the Fortune 5000 of corporate America, who are the real beneficiaries of government subsidized welfare. Most certainly: this wealth is going to foreign elites.

So instead of having a solid middle-class, like we did in those terrible 1950s, an era of which Ms. Clinton and her fellow feminists shrilly keep informing us not to look back to—we have an ever-developing under-class, to where more of the middle-class are being eroded into the under-class, or "the new working poor." These families, who have been the hardest hit by this unequal paradigm of Ms. Clinton's new Socialist Welfare state, are creating more havoc upon this nations landscape, thereby enhancing the Welfare empire even more. We have become what is termed as an "hourglass society" to where the middle class has dwindled, the few rich have become richer, and the massive poor have become poorer. Instead of the nation using its massive wealth to allow those who produce it to keep it, now; we have more middle class dropping out into the lower ranks of the poverty than ever before. Yet, Ms. Clinton and the new Village elite will tell us to 'maintain the course,' that we have never had it so good economically as they wave the flag of America, harder and harder as Rome burns.

Yet, strangely, as more and more fathers get civilly killed, and economically destroyed—they become part of the walking murdered—no longer civilly recognized nor in any of the facts or figures of the Clinton's national database. We are not in the workforce, we are not on welfare, we are either marginal, homeless, being supported by parents; or in prison, which is a further burden to the ever-dwindling middle class. After our several tours of being destroyed for profit, we are left to die—usually by suicide, which many fathers are turning to, because in the Clinton's new

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

world order—there are no places for men anymore. When we are used up, we just fade away. But we have to fade away ‘nicely.’ As we are denied the most basic of human services in which to even live, we must in turn finance our own destruction. These men, who suffer through this war, are the shell shocked within this nation. They have been literally, been physically, and psychologically torn apart, and then just left to waste. If we cannot be harvested, if we cannot be imprisoned and create wealth by burdening the masses through that fraud, then; we are then civilly murdered and then just thrown away. There is a massive underground of these fathers who live at their parents house, or homeless, just wasting away—while Hillary and her cohorts scream: "Things couldn't be better," while in syncopacity they also scream "Save the Children!" because every year the children keep on doing worse and worse and worse...

Many people, again, like the proverbial RCA Dog, turn their heads in question when they are presented with this paradox. Many are starting to call this a cultural war. It isn't. It is an attempt to overthrow this American nation under the construct of what Bastiat noted earlier: by using an altruistic form of national social need, used to disguise the real intent of the take-over. This is done through Radical Feminism. Welfare is being used as a tool to overthrow the free American society. Again, this "Cultural War" is nothing more than a political correct way of softening the real impacts of War. This is an outright war, a conflagration which has sapped trillions of dollars from this nation, and has hundreds of thousands if not millions of registered war casualties. A more proper moniker would term this: World War III.

Yet, slowly the walls of Hillary's wonderful Krell Welfare Machine are beginning to crack. Slowly, immutably, some lone visionaries, who truly care for this country, and are willing to place themselves on the line, are beginning to tell the truth. Note the words of one such contemporary Patriarch and Patriot, who so eloquently addressed this issue at the site of ground zero of feminism: the college campus of Harvard University.

### **"Winning The Cultural War"**

Harvard Law School Forum

February 16, 1999

I remember my son when he was five, explaining to his kindergarten class what his father did for a living. "My Daddy," he said, "pretends to be people."

There have been quite a few of them. Prophets from the Old and New Testaments, a couple of Christian saints, generals of various nationalities and different centuries, several kings, three American presidents, a French cardinal and two geniuses, including Michelangelo. If you want the ceiling re-painted I'll do my best. There always seem to be a lot of different

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

fellows up here. I'm never sure which one of them gets to talk. Right now, I guess I'm the guy.

As I pondered our visit tonight it struck me: If my Creator gave me the gift to connect you with the hearts and minds of those great men, then I want to use that same gift now to re-connect you with your own sense of liberty...your own freedom of thought ... your own compass for what is right.

Dedicating the memorial at Gettysburg, Abraham Lincoln said of America, "We are now engaged in a great Civil War, testing whether that nation or any nation so conceived and so dedicated can long endure." Those words are true again. I believe that we are again engaged in a great civil war, a cultural war that's about to hijack your birthright to think and say what lives in your heart. I fear you no longer trust the pulsing life-blood of liberty inside you ... the stuff that made this country rise from wilderness into the miracle that it is.

Let me back up a little. About a year ago I became president of the National Rifle Association, which protects the right to keep and bear arms of American citizens. I ran for office, I was elected, and now I serve...I serve as a moving target for the media who've called me everything from "ridiculous" and "duped" to a "brain-injured, senile, crazy old man." I know ... I'm pretty old ... but I sure Lord ain't senile.

As I have stood in the crosshairs of those who target Second Amendment freedoms, I've realized that firearms are not the only issue. No...no...it's much, much bigger than that.

I've come to understand that a cultural war is raging across our land, in which, with Orwellian fervor, certain affected thoughts and speech are mandated.

For example, I marched for civil rights with Dr. King in 1963 – long before Hollywood found it fashionable I might say. But when I told an audience last year that white pride is just as valid as black pride or red pride or anyone else's pride, they called me a racist.

I've worked with brilliantly talented homosexuals all my life throughout my whole career. But when I told an audience that gay rights should extend no further than your rights or my rights, I was called a homophobe.

I served in World War II against the Axis powers. But during a speech, when I drew an analogy between singling out innocent Jews and singling out innocent gun owners, I was called an anti-Semite.

Everyone I know knows I would never raise a closed fist against my country. But when I asked an audience to oppose this cultural persecution I am talking about, I was compared to Timothy McVeigh.

From Time magazine to friends and colleagues, they're essentially saying, "Chuck, how dare you speak your mind. You are using language not authorized for public consumption!"

But I am not afraid. If Americans believed in political correctness, we'd still be King George's boys-subjects bound to the British crown.

In his book, "The End of Sanity," Martin Gross writes that "blatantly irrational behavior is rapidly being established as the norm in almost every area of human endeavor. There seem to be new customs, new rules, new

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

anti-intellectual theories regularly foisted on us from every direction. Underneath, the nation is roiling. Americans know something without a name is undermining the nation, turning the mind mushy when it comes to separating truth from falsehood and right from wrong. And they don't like it."

Let me read you a few examples.

At Antioch college in Ohio, young men seeking intimacy with a coed must get verbal permission at each step of the process from kissing to petting to final - at last - copulation ... all clearly spelled out in a printed college directive.

In New Jersey, despite the death of several patients nationwide who had been infected by dentists who had concealed their AIDs---the state commissioner announced that health providers who are HIV-positive need not...need not...tell their patients that they are infected.

At William and Mary, students tried to change the name of the school team "The Tribe" because it was supposedly insulting the local Indians, only to learn that authentic Virginia chiefs really liked the name "The Tribe".

In San Francisco, city fathers passed an ordinance protecting the rights of transvestites to cross-dress on the job, and for transsexuals to have separate toilet facilities while undergoing sex change surgery.

In New York City, kids who don't speak a word of Spanish have been placed in bilingual classes to learn their three R's in Spanish solely because their own names sound Hispanic.

At the University of Pennsylvania, in a state where thousands died at Gettysburg opposing slavery, the president of that college officially set up segregated dormitory space for black students. Yeah, I know...that's out of bounds now. Dr. King said "Negroes." Jimmy Baldwin and most of us on the March said "black." But it's a no-no now.

For me, hyphenated identities are awkward...particularly "Native-American." I'm a Native American, for God's sake. I also happen to be a blood-initiated brother of the Miniconjou Sioux. On my wife's side, my grandson is a twelfth generation native American ... with a capital letter on "American."

Finally, just last month ... David Howard, head of the Washington D.C. Office of Public Advocate, used the word "niggardly" while talking to colleagues about budgetary matters. Of course, "niggardly" means stingy or scanty. But within days Howard was forced to publicly apologize and then resign.

As columnist Tony Snow wrote: "David Howard got fired because some people in public employ were morons who:

- a. didn't know the meaning of niggardly,
- b. didn't know how to use a dictionary to discover the meaning, and
- c. actually demanded that he apologize for their ignorance.

What does all of this mean? It means that telling us what to think has evolved into telling us what to say , so telling us what to do can't be far behind.

Before you claim to be a champion of free thought, tell me: Why did political correctness originate on America's campuses? And why do you

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

continue to tolerate it? Why do you, who're supposed to debate ideas, surrender to their suppression?

Let's be honest. Who here thinks your professors can say what they really believe? Uh-huh...there's a few...

Now that scares me to death, and should scare you too, that the superstition of political correctness rules the halls of reason.

You are the best and the brightest. You! here in the fertile cradle of American academia, here in the castle of learning on the Charles River, you are the cream. But I submit that you, and your counterparts across the land, are the most socially conformed and politically silenced generation since Concord Bridge. And as long as you validate that...and abide it ... you are - by your grandfathers' standards - cowards.

Here's another example. Right now at more than one major university, Second Amendment scholars and researchers are being told to shut up about their findings or they'll lose their jobs. Why? Because their research findings would undermine big-city mayor's pending lawsuits that seek to extort hundreds of millions of dollars from firearm manufacturers.

Now I don't care what you think about guns. But if you are not shocked at that, I am shocked at you. Who will guard the raw material of unfettered ideas, if not you? Democracy is dialog! Who will defend the core value of academia, if you supposed soldiers of free thought and expression lay down your arms and plead, "Don't shoot me."

If you talk about race, it does not make you a racist. If you see distinctions between the genders, it does not make you sexist. If you think critically about a denomination, it does not make you anti-religion. If you accept but don't celebrate homosexuality, it does not make you a homophobe. --Charles Heston, President, NRA

However, Mr. Heston, if you defend your individual family against everything you describe here, then; somehow—that act makes you the most vilified criminal in this nation and you now go to prison for it.

Perhaps my words did have an impact on the NRA when I contacted them in 1998. I don't know. As this appears to suggest, some people are starting to connect the dots. I know this, is that this speech, which just begins to hint at the truth—has electrified millions.

However, the final fulcrum issue of Fatherlessness—is still not raised. The last intellectual leap finds itself unconsummated. Everyone it appears to be afraid to admit it, *even if it is true*; that Fatherlessness has developed plenary systems which are destroying this nation, that the hinge of law and reasons are beginning to be ripped from their foundations. For at the exact instant the problem of Fatherlessness gets nationally recognized, this putrid, monolith Krell Welfare Machine—gets concurrently, turned off. And when that happens the ensuing freefall of power factions will be in a cataclysmic state of freefall. For factually, the whole power paradigm of our government has attached itself like a gorged maggot across the body of this machine, and when it no longer functions—that maggot will

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

quickly fall to its ruin due to its own weight. Thereby, many people are frightened to the core, that this system will continue and thereby destroy us from within, or that it will stop—and thereby collapse by its own profligaterly, its own perversion. Again, this is the House which Hillary built—and the last thing she wants you to do, as Mr. Heston notes above, is to "How dare you speak your mind! You are using language not authorized for public consumption!" We are only to be the dull and meaningless workers who must unquestionably accept their pabulum—while she and her elite cohorts reap the awards from our ignorance.

Removing the Father from his own home and disenfranchising him, has done so much harm to this nation—that it would take decades of study and several university teams to really add up the costs of this Third World War. Most of the damage has not been extrigent, as one might find in a First, Second, or Third Wave war. No—there are no bombed out buildings, no Maginot lines. No well ordered armies establishing either stationary or movable front lines. Instead, the current Third World War causes intrinsic *silent* damage to a society, while the host society, doesn't even understand what is happening to it. Like cancer, it eats out most of the hulk of the healthy body first, before it kills the entire being. Just like the alien Krell in the movie, the main society can't even comprehend what is happening to them until they are all dead.

Modern Radical Feminism has done exactly this. It's armies? The hundreds of thousands, if not millions of Public Officers within the Krell Welfare Machine of every type, who have effectively thrown away the constitution, to follow the newly mandated "comic book" laws passed by Hillary's Elite ruling class through the "Legislature". "The Comic Book" of Legislatively enacted laws which controvert our Constitution most basic concepts written in Marble upon the earth's highest mountain, for all to see, are now forgotten. These new soldiers, patrol the whole society from the individual family home, and then move extrinsigently outwards. Phones are bugged, Library reading habits analyzed, internet accounts scanned. This fifth column of silent Public Officers never are seen. They move along battle lines of what are now a *virtual* front. That is anywhere they want that front to be. We can see the first establishment of this juxtaposition when the FBI went after Al Capone for Tax evasion. Presently, since everything has now effectively become a crime, and all avenues of effective redress are cut off from us; now this virtual front, pre-ordains the next casualty lists in which to feed the Krell Welfare Machine.

This means that when the Elite need more money, all they do is have their silent fifth columns of Stealth Police, pre-field the crimes—then; when the demographics are known, then the elite can attack already pre-selected targets in which to harvest their income by sending out millions of mindless "public servants" to fulfill 'quota's'. This is done with any-



## CHAPTER NINETEEN

thing, such as taxes, to pornography, even our roads—as we have demonstrated before--and everything inbetween. You are found guilty even before they knock on your door, or pull you over—and they have already cashed your check in even before you were arrested or go to court—because they have groomed their own citizenry to be ignorant—and when these dumbed-down citizens enter court at your trial as ‘your’ jury; they have only the indoctrination of what pabulum government has indoctrinated them with over their lifetimes to judge you with. In over 90 percent of the cases—you’ll be found guilty—and DA’s and elite’s all over this nation, *depend* on the modern citizens ignorance, as that ignorance has become a known, and marketable quantity for their social purposes. This was most certainly done for the destruction of the American Father—clearly; the government elite and other special interests groups fully understood that they were onto something big.

We can see this just by the massive national public debt, which stands at 5.7 Trillion dollars. Because we cannot pay this debt—which was established by these secret Elite, in our name—every single year, any savings we might have accrued now go for the debt. Thereby; all American’s by default are held in this eternal condition of eternal servitude. Since the debt will never be paid—there will no longer be savings. As wall-street insiders now portend; the ‘real’ way to wealth—is through debt! Of course, this means that you cannot obtain this wealth through the content of your character, but rather; through obeisance to the new special elite—who will ‘qualify’ you to enter the new sacred institutions of a debt based society. If anyone questions the inconsistencies of this type of perverse system compared to our Founding Fathers and the organic laws which established this nation, like Mr. Heston; such people are labeled as backwards, or as malcontents, or vilified to the extreme if need be. All the elite who support these new theories of debt wealth, are pushed to the front of the media—and become the new darlings of the national mindset.

Now the key is, that again; those who do not obey this new task master who will allow citizen entry into this new "debt based" economy—will find themselves instantly castrated. You can see the effects of this even today. Many fathers tell me; "God, I can’t do what you have done—although I want to! I’ve got a car payment, a house, credit card bills—there’s nothing I can do! If I don’t agree to be coerced, then they destroy me!" The funny part is that most of these men wind up destroyed anyway’s in the long run—but the government hopes that by doing it slowly, they won’t notice it. Like the proverbial frog in boiling water. Trust me and other fathers—if you aren’t destroyed now—you will be...

Again, there is no shame in this, for many people in this predicament; had no idea that their own money system would be used to make them into slaves! Now, if you and the government don’t agree about some-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

thing—suddenly you have IRS agents at your door; your business suddenly finds itself under governmental regulations pressures. "Oh...Mr. Smith, your fire-extinguishers haven't been properly checked last year; I'm writing you a ticket for a \$500 fine..." I've seen some businesses get attacked during business hours by a contingent of armed police; with bulletproof flack jackets, and POLICE broadly marked across their backs....to check for drugs? High explosives? Militia arms? Armed Felons?!?? Nope.

They were there to do a surprise check for bugs in the liquor bottles sitting behind the bar! No kidding. This actually happened to a restaurant during a lunch-time rush hour. The Restaurant owner in question went ballistic, yet; remained professional and chewed out the main officer in charge who was doing this to him. Of course they 'found' a tiny bug in one of the bottles, to where they restaurant owner went back, opened up a box, and obtained a sealed bottle of a very high-end scotch, and found the exact same particle "labeled as a 'bug' " in a unopened, brand-new bottle of scotch which never had its seal opened! Again—this is a direct war casualty stemming from the loss of the Father within the home. This man is in charge of his own business and local government—just as much as he is in charge of his home. He doesn't realize it, nor does Rush Limbaugh, perhaps even Chuck Heston; but when we are NOT in control of our own homes—we control *nothing*. Zero. Absolutely zero to infinity! We have just an abyss to where—government under its pretended socialist doctrines, rules with an iron fist to steal from the masses to transfer that wealth to an unseen elite. Everyone kind of guesses what is going on to a limited extent, but they haven't made the final transition into the home. They haven't connected the dots. When we remove the government from that domain of the home—it's power is snapped incomplete. Now, it is the master of nothing, and only has *enumerated authority* to rule by. At that instant, FATHERS become once again, masters of their own homes...

When they refuse that; then it is the individual citizen and family who can withstand the fusillade of an errant government. As William Pitt, Blackstone, Coke, and other founding fathers noted, a man could stand sovereign in his own home and withstand the tempest of an unjust government. *Just one man!* Just a small collection of such men, standing in defiance to an out of control government, could absolutely defeat it. Again, nature may enter, the wind may enter—but not government. Now, because government is there, we are shocked that it pretends it can steal our cars, overthrow businesses, seize our children, attack every part of our lives—yet we cannot understand where the perverse fountainhead stems from! The root is simply: either we control ourselves; as free men—or government owns us as slaves. And as all tyrants, the American

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

government will outstrip the powers of all other tyrants and madmen combined. For everything they do, will be done under the guise of 'reason,' and 'law' and in the 'Name of the People.' Most people don't even comprehend the convoluted doctrines and Anti-American theories they are coming up against. They don't even know if the government even views them as a citizen or not. They don't even know if the Judge is truly a Judge and is acting under law....they don't even know if the Police are truly Police! We know this, that when WE have asked them these simple questions—the DA's go strangely mute and will not allow the officer to affirm what appears to be a simple premise. Yet, when a national public sees a President reluctant to answer the simple question: "Are you as Commander-in-Chief the supreme law enforcement officer of this nation?" surprisingly; a similar controverted answer is presented—of course never answering the main question itself!! Presently, their ability *not* to answer, *not* to accept proper legal complaints, to keep everything as silent as they possibly can under the Doctrine of the Silent Treatise is their major power at this point.

Who are these people? Factually, we don't know. We only know that they pretend super-powers and rights, all under the guise of something else that is undefinable, and they get paid very well for doing this. Conversely, these same people when being presented with the Constitution, strangely; appear to become very belligerent. In one most memorable incident; I saw a video tape of an Officer, either of the California Highway Patrol or a Sheriff's department, in a courtroom on the witness stand acting very peculiar. The extent of the testimony between the person who was defending himself from a traffic ticket; and the officer, went something like this:

Defendant: "Have you sworn an oath to the Constitution?"

Officer: "Uhhh. I don't know."

Defendant: "You don't know?"

Officer: "Yeah."

Defendant: "Did you have to graduate the Police Academy to become hired as an officer?"

Officer: [Reluctantly.] "Yeah."

Defendant: "Did you graduate?"

Officer: [Reluctantly.] "Yeah."

Defendant: "Did you take an oath that day?"

Officer: "Yeah."

Defendant: "What was that oath?"

Officer: "I forget."

Defendant: "You forget?"

Officer: "Yes."

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Defendant: "When you were hired for your position as an Officer of the Law, did you take another oath?"

Officer: [Reluctantly.] Yeah.

Defendant: "What was that oath?"

Officer: "I forget."

Mind you this officer is getting a pay raise to do these crimes against us all. The Judge—and everyone else in the courtroom, were embarrassed from this outrageous testimony. But, not one Judge, not one DA, not one Bailiff immediately arrested this Officer for perjuring himself and violating his oath of office. All of them can't, because they are too deeply entrenched in the Morbius Complex to see the truth. I can factually tell you that all government officials take their oath as seriously as this Officer did. The President, takes his oath just as seriously, as this Officer did. All our local, state and Federal elite 'representatives' take their oath of office, just as seriously as this Officer did. And your local DA as well as Ms. Hillary Clinton herself when she enters office, take their oath of office just as seriously as this Officer did. And as our current history has shown us; no American will ever be able to hold their "public servants" to their oath of office, as their unlawful actions become more excessive, more egregious—the oath has become virtually meaningless. All it has become now, is a quaint reminder to our distant past.

This is why when thousands of children are sacrificed to this system, that nothing really gets better. This is why, when we had millions of people who were poor in previous generations, that our generation has even more, and more and more poor people and children in trouble! The government is not there to solve these problems, they are there to eternally manage them, and thereby; to become comfortably part of the problem. Presently, our government has become everyone's enemy, whether they realize it or not, because government's job function has become to usurp your rights, and to devise even new or more ingenious ways in which to make you a slave. This is the real reason why Ms. Clinton pretends she cares about you and your family—she doesn't! She only follows the Communist mindset which cares about what your family has, and more importantly, what funds it can harvest for her wonderful Krell Welfare Machine. When she angrily challenges those who would dare defend themselves from all this, she commands: "Who benefits from this?" Shaming those individuals who might want to *better their own lives through use of their own resources*. What she is really saying is that *she and her elite* own the economic benefits of the family, and everything which emanates out of it—and *they* lay claim to those treasures. Indeed, I throw down the gauntlet to Ms. Clinton: "Who *really* does benefit from all this?" Remember: this woman's whole political mindset and reason for being is to support the child and family. This is

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

her fantasy, this is her platform—and she is entering public office on this platform—when in reality; she is the families *greatest enemy*.

In her Morbius mindset—she will have an answer for everything the media politely asks her. To many American's this answer espoused by Ms. Clinton will be convoluted, for to follow her entrenched position to overthrow your rights, takes a highly evolved fraud, and those such as Ms. Clinton have chanted the Feminist mantra long enough to where they can sound very convincing. *But they can't answer all the questions, and this is where they Silent Treatise comes into play.* This is why many of the news conferences and public meetings are highly choreographed public affairs. This is why all government's presentations are extremely highly constructed events—where the smallest detail is engineered to sway the mass plebiscite's mindset. This is why, in the final analysis, our courts are no longer our redress, the Camera is. And this is why in the final analysis, our media have become closed to such redress. No longer does the Fourth Estate entreat the aggressive position it once had in uncovering government corruption, such as the Teapot Dome scandal. You may see carefully presented national scandals, but—in the rural to small community markets—government propaganda is totally entrenched there. The real corruption's of America, go untold.

No news reporter is uncovering corruption in our courts. No reporters are going into jails uncovering beatings, deaths, corruption. No reporters are tearing apart government accounting books to find out where millions are being wasted in corruption. Yes you will hear about Monica Lewinsky, but you'll never hear about Judge Cumming, or "Cocaine Annie" and the thousand's of other corrupt Judges they both represent. Thereby, corrupt Judges, Police, Court Clerks, County Supervisors, Sheriff, Congressmen, Senators, even Governors and President's go completely unscathed. For they are all enjoying the cool summer comfort of the Silent Treatise affords them. Yet, those within the media organizations will resolutely affirm to you entranced by *their* Morbius Complex, that they are underpaid, and that they *are* doing the news—and that its a big job and they are doing the best they can—as they open with their leading story about car crashes or weather 'disasters.' I have personally argued eloquent journalistic doctrines with these people until they have stammered "Well, we are waiting for a government report." (I'm serious. They actually have said this to me.) Worse: these people actually claim that: "We are not your publicists." But have the DA call: and trust me, they can't get out what *he* says fast enough. The press may not be *our* publicist—but they *most assuredly* are *his* publicist...

So much for investigation. So much for the protection of the press. So much for redress...so much for truth.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

### MONEY

---

This is what we are left with. This is the final discussion. It all comes down to money. The government is using Welfare as a political instrument in order to wrest the most basic rights away from Americans, and to subvert the Constitution and impose a new Socialist government in its place, all the while still claiming that America hasn't changed. What is even most outrageous, is that these people doing this 'claim' they are helping America—when in fact, every social pathology within the United States in some way can be traced to their Anti-American actions. In doing so, they have become masters within every single household, and are outright mining the wealth out of countless homes for their own profit. In doing so, they are burdening the other half of Citizens whom are not overtly attacked through this system, who must pay unbelievable taxes in which to fund the Welfare Superstructure, which only grows and grows, thereby getting even more money for the new Socialist order.

There is a well hidden secret to our money system which is kept hidden from the mass plebecite, and that is that America's money system is worthless. That in reality, it is just a Military script system, with printed paper that has no value to it whatsoever. People assume, because they can go down with a bunch of this Military script and buy a refrigerator, well, that our money system somehow, does have worth. They assume that because the *government* hands it out, that it's legal. They assume all this without abstractly recognizing what is really happening. They never go to the second level and discover the real truth behind the facade which is advertised as reality.

However, more and more people are beginning to question such assumptions and what they are uncovering is truly startling. Once any American does study this, they soon find out the obvious. Soon, they uncover the true perversion of the money system, and some very unsettling questions come to light which nobody can answer.

First, we must note, again; that our Constitution defines our money under "law." Under Article I, §10 it states: "No State shall enter into any Treaty, Alliance, or Confederation; grant Letters of Marque or Reprisal; coin Money, emit Bills of Credit; make any Thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in Payment of Debts..." [Constitution for the United States, 1787-1789] Article I §8 demands that Congress shall "...coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights and Measures."

It is odd, but in those 'bad old days' in which Ms. Clinton *really* doesn't want us looking back towards and analyzing; in those days our money system had substance. People had 'almost' the *exact* same bills in their pockets and in their bank accounts, excepting one small thing: those bills had the words "SILVER CERTIFICATE" and

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

"This Certifies that there is on Deposit in the Treasury of THE UNITED STATES ON AMERICA" ONE DOLLAR, in Silver payable to the Bearer ON DEMAND."

As far as the American public was concerned—everything ran exactly the same. You could take a substantial amount of this currency, up to your local store and purchase bread, or a refrigerator, or a automobile—just like we do today. However, with today's money there is two substantial differences.

The first difference is of course that no American can go anywhere to obtain 'something' like gold or silver, from the government which should back the worth of our currency. In other words, these new Federal Reserve Notes which we all carry around are substantially different from the gold and silver certificates of the past which any citizen could walk up to a national bank or Depository and extract gold or silver out of the treasury which represented the money at hand. This of course, meant that such citizen had 'savings'—in other words—they had 'saved' or 'accrued' or 'held surplusage' value of consideration of what they had done, and could show this consideration at some point in something meaningful; like gold or silver.

The second major difference is related to the first, but; which is part of the problem in which most Citizens don't "understand" why our money system is so dangerous. This second difference just doesn't show that our money system is 'worthless,' that we cannot 'exchange' it for anything of value like gold or silver. Unfortunately, our present money system is worse than this, it actually *harms* us all. For in using this worthless script, it is also empowering an out of control government! In using the worthless script to purchase bread or a refrigerator, the transaction just doesn't end there. Unfortunately, the military script you used to purchase that refrigerator is then used by this Government, to place all of us further into debt. It takes that money, and uses it as a CREDIT CARD, against all of us! If you spent \$849.50 on that refrigerator, Congress takes that \$849.50 and uses it to bribe a Nigerian government official; or to build another Atomic bomb; or to enlarge the US Navy that much more; or to hire 20 more Social Workers. Using this money empowers the very elite of our Government, who are in control of "discharging" the debt of this money. You no longer spend money, YOU ALLOW DEBT.

Since the contemporary Federal Reserve Note is only a debt based instrument—*someone* in the final analysis has got to discharge (spend) the debt. [Look at any dollar bill in your pocket. It is not redeemable for anything as noted above on a true Silver Dollar Bill. Now, your money will only say: "This note is legal tender for all debts, Public and Private."] This is what most American's don't get—and don't understand. This is what most Citizens have no comprehension of when they get "paid" at

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

work. Upon every transaction throughout our money system, there is an unseen third-party who is involved in every transaction: the government. Sure, everything appears the same, the *money even looks the same*, but in the end; all we are left with is crushing debt, and this debt grows after each subsequent generation. Soon, nobody really owns anything. You don't own your land, your car, your home or your children. Sure—you *think* you own these things—but like many Americans who abruptly find out different, in reality *the government owns everything you have*. This is why individual American's work and work and work, and never appear to get ahead. This is why we are all advancing, while at the same time we are all falling behind.

This is why we have car seizures without any true justification or laws. This is why we have our children stolen from us under the doctrine of *Parens Patriæ*. This is why our court systems have collapsed and no longer function for American Citizens. The root cause can be explained by our perverse Military script money system, which is worthless, and which only builds debt for this nation. The corruption of our money system bears a huge relation to the corruption which is silently attacking every single American home and family.

Indeed, as we look across our nation with army after army placed across the complete breadth of our national experience, as we see a nation burgeoning with prisons, with war raging upon our very streets, we can begin to see why the marriage of Feminism and Government can never work. They have effectively usurped the national savings of this nation to produce a nation at war *with itself*, during a time of supposed peace, a nation which is ascending, while at the same time it devolving: moving backwards. This is the best of what Hillary and her cohorts could ever produce, for this is the promise of "Feminism." This is what it has effectively wrought. This is the fruit of that tree. Consider these words:

"Whoever controls the volume of money in any country is master of all its legislation and commerce." [President James Garfield (1831-1881)]

Embedded within this proposition is the marriage of our government to the altruistic needs of Feminism, there has been created this secret system of money, which steals as American Citizens unwittingly use it. Strangely, no one within America can understand why they don't have profit. They cannot understand why they never accrue any savings. Indeed, when one begins to look at the big picture and analyze what is really happening, we can begin to see that all of us are fighting over the economic scraps of America, while the main pristine portion of our wealth—silently goes elsewhere.

In order to gain control of our homes once again, we must gain control of our money. Until we can stop the silent theft of our money system



## CHAPTER NINETEEN

itself, we can never be truly sovereign within our own homes. The home is a refuge from the outside. It must be able to gain and accrue wealth and use that wealth for its own determinations. As long as government can silently usurp wages and monies through the money system itself, this will always be impossible.

For as we have shown, that in the tribal condition of Matriarchy, any entity within a society who accrues surplusage, will be attacked by other Tribes. In this present perversion under a Military script system, all government has to do is to locate the surplusage, then; seize it at will, through a monolith of laws which makes everything a crime.

If you accrue \$300,000 dollars in wealth under this current system, you immediately get a letter in the mail, or a knock on the door, or those monies seized outright. For now the many altruistic tribes within government are scanning everyone's bank accounts, and anyone who rises too quickly, gets his surplusage seized. (The tribal village is in a constant state of war against others who have a surplusage, just as we noted in Chapters 1 through 3). Presently, this nation has become one which defines and maintains castes—and those who rise too quickly, are batted down through such electronic seizures of surplusage. This is the true condition of feminism, of matriarchy: constant tribal war.

We must stop government from having this ability. Presently this is driving many American's who do have money into foreign markets. Presently, there is a mass exodus of American's from their own banking community, because of the Tribal war in which government has placed upon us all. This in turn has devastated this nation greatly, by undermining the true seeds of investment, which in turn are supposed to fund private American Industry and small Business. We must once again, become a nation of families, and we must recognize that our banks cannot become an instrument of the State. The right of individuals and families to accrue wealth and surplusage is more important than the enumerated authority for a government to fight crime. This is a nation of freedom and liberty, not a nation of safety and crime-fighting. *This is also a nation of privacy.*

Once we re-establish families once again as the main repository of savings in this nation, we will see a mass decline in the Welfare state. For as the family again is able to accrue and save wealth, people will be able to find safety within that institution once more. This also will have the effect of reinstituting lost Liberties and Freedom which have been usurped by this Imperialist State. Once money is retained back within families, there will be a massive mass exodus from welfare, to families.

Once government is pushed out of each individual transaction—freedom will begin to control our economy rather than the foreign-national "experts" of the foreign IMF. A national sovereignty of the American people starts in every single American home. Until we can

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

make the home a safe environment from unwanted intrusion, we can never truly be a free nation. For in that analysis, 'someone else' will always be watching out for our safety, to their economic benefit and not ours. Until we stop the monetary leakage from leaving those who produce this wealth, we can never truly be independent nor free again. For many of us are being held hostage to our own money system, as other unseen fees, taxes, and debts constantly erode away our wealth.

Savings, and banks are not government institutions; they are in fact; only mere extensions of the home, which cannot be intruded upon.

## STATE OF OUR CHILDREN

---

Inventing Fathers into bogeymen has established unstable family formations throughout this nation, which in turn has devastated our children. To be succinct once more—our children have had enough 'help' from the Feminists and Government, and they can no longer tolerate being helped. Ms. Clinton and those radical Feminists and Socialists like her, have effectively established a false abuse industry to where there are nothing but rewards for women seeking cause to leave their husbands and thereby enrich both the state and themselves by their betrayals. This has fractionalized the institution of marriage into a very unstable social institution within our society. Presently, feminists market the eventual breakup of the marriage by plying new laws and regulation against males, thereby lowering already incredibly low standards of abuse and other incentives in which to allow women 'freedom,' which in essence means building more Social empires for the elite regime.

This in turn, has developed instability within our children whom no longer can depend upon the stability of their own homes. This instability has manifested itself in the social pathology of our children.

"IF" in fact either the feminists or government were truly concerned about children, they would have openly marketed the real reasons as to their jeopardy, which of course, they do not. Their only intent is to keep the sophistry alive that "all men are bad" that "all men have the potential to be tyrants." Unfortunately, the mass of the populace has been indoctrinated by our media to see nothing else but evil men. They all too easily see "Bogeymen" within every family.

Unfortunately, while the mass plebeite are being dumbed down via 'public education' and thereby being fooled by this well financed public relations media campaign. The real truth as to why the children are in jeopardy, why the American Family is under direct attack, and why they as a public are paying such incredibly huge amounts of their paycheck in order to fund these feminist sophistries; are being obfuscated to them. If not obfuscated, then; they are being groomed to accept such lies through the institutional indoctrination of our present school system. Indeed,

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

the **true** reason for our nations jeopardy is simple: it comes down to money.

"IF" the American public is able to keep the amount of money that they did during those 'bad old' pastoral 1950's, then, we'd see a dramatic drop in child abuse. In fact, "IF" the American public, most certainly families, were able to just keep what they earned without government intervention of those funds, then; we'd see a complete collapse of the Socialist state in which Hillary Clinton so strives for. The simple fact is, that the best place for both men and women, and most certainly children—is demonstrably the two-parent nuclear family. The best place for America to accrue wealth, is within the Patriarchal construct which unlike the Feminist socialist construct—allows not just families—but *all Americans* to keep their own wealth. THIS is the real way to combat the social ills of which Ms. Clinton's Krell Welfare Machine grooms and festers for itself. There can be no denial, that one of the largest concerns of the Welfare state is to gain more empire by keeping these social pathologies alive, rather than truly fixing them. Ms. Clinton, along with her host of well funded Feminists and social elite's—will undertake any effort in which to beguile the American public into funding this continued failure **which by design is never supposed to solve the problem.** If most of the families in question were able to keep their own money, they would be able to rise generation after generation and realize the American dream WITHOUT GOVERNMENT HELP. This is the only promise of Patriarchy—that your money will be your own. Your life is your own. Your children are your own. That 'by the content of your character' both individuals and families can ascend and improve themselves. Exactly as they did since the formation of this government, *up until the last generation* to where they were told: "You won't do as well as your parents did."

Presently, the problem with most poor Americans, and *especially* a **new class** of poor people never before seen in any human society, and a direct result of Ms. Clinton's Krell Welfare Machine state, which is **the new engine developing "the working poor."** Because of Ms. Clinton's socialist empire, she has invented this new class of American family. This is a direct extrapolation of the welfare state, and they are a new product class for the Krell Welfare Machine, which needs an ever-growing product load in which to sustain itself.

The poor whose growing numbers are changing the character of American society are almost invisible. They are not unmarried black welfare mothers with 2.5 children, improvident males chronically underemployed, or inner-city youths heading for prison or an early death by gun, knife, drugs, or AIDS. Instead they are mostly white, they are not on welfare but rather have year-round, full-time jobs, and they are as law-abiding as anyone. Because of the phenomenal extent of crime and recurrent riots,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

the latest and most famous in South-Central Los Angeles in May 1992, Americans are very aware of the black and Hispanic urban underclass with its familiar cast of characters. But although the urban underclass already lives in full Third World conditions, it is quite incapable of causing the Third-Worldization of America: it accounts for 3% of all Americans at most. By contrast, the *working* poor of all races are far more numerous, and their impact on America's future is bound to be much greater. Yet their very existence is often overlooked by social commentators and politicians who focus exclusively on the highly visible "inner-city" poor, as the current euphemism goes.

Talk of the "working poor" was largely a matter of anecdote and conjecture until recently. But official Bureau of the Census statistics now show that the percentage of all full-time, year-round workers (forty hours a week, fifty weeks a year) who did not earn enough to keep a family of four above the official poverty line (\$12,195 in 1990 dollars) increased from 12% in 1979 to 18% in 1990...

...Of the 31.5 million Americans living below the official poverty line at the last count, 12 million were under eighteen years old (the government's definition of "children"). With some 4 million in the looser category of the near-poor. In combination, that amounts to just about one in four of the total population of some 64 million under the age of eighteen. Inevitably, they will also account for roughly a quarter of the overall total of 24.3 million Americans in the start-of-life age brackets of eighteen to twenty-four projected for the year 1995 which will supply most of the new entrants in the labor force. When the country's ability to compete in the international economy is being severely evaluated, that may be the most decisive fact.

Raised by hard-pressed families at best, usually very badly taught in the neglected schools of low-income school districts or in ruined "inner-city" schools, many of the poor children of today are destined to struggle against the current of an economy that offers fewer and fewer job openings for the unqualified. Many high-school graduates are virtually illiterate, more an innumerate. As they become improvident parents at an early age, bringing children into the world at higher rates than the most affluent, poverty perpetuates itself and grows instead of declining, as is did in America's past decades. [*The Endangered American Dream, How to stop the United States from becoming a Third World country and how to win the Geo-Economic struggle for Industrial Supremacy*, by Edward N Luttwak, ©1993, Simon & Schuster, Simon & Schuster Building, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-671-86963-9, pp. 154-155.]

Again, these are the 'bad old' pastoral decades of America's Patriarchal past, which of course, Hillary does not want you to look back to. These were the 'bad old' days when successive waves of immigrants could actually work their way out of poverty. No more. In fact,

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

those *not* in poverty, (the middle class), are slipping down into the ranks of the poor, to become either the working poor, or outright poor!

The true fact is, that "if" government left the Family alone, allowed the marriage contract to become sacred and legally binding once again—while allowing Fathers to control their own homes and children—then factually, incontrovertibly, without-a-doubt Ms. Clinton's Krell Welfare Machine would immediately implode from its own weight. It would instantly be switched off. Those within the lower ranks of society could once again accrue wealth by and through the Patriarchal system and become upwardly mobile once again.

The Founding Fathers understood this paradigm and not only established Patriarchy as a formal blueprint as to how our society would run, they gave government a mandate to only entreat an environment which would help individual American's to prosper. This function has been long-lost by our government, to where now, the government is only a predatory entity [Model VIII NCPGI], "Big Brother" constantly patrolling the economic lives of all American citizens. Any citizen who 'rises too fast' soon gets a knock on his door from the local or even federal official.

This actually happened to a friend of mine, who had an obscure job of marking trees in Northern California for a living. For almost two decades he and his family lived a modest lifestyle, and fought very hard to make ends meet. Strangely, through a weird set of *national* circumstances that nobody could have foreseen, most certainly due to the environmentalist movement—his job and his expertise and knowledge of the local forests became very much in demand in the 1980s. Within a short time-period, his bank account began to rise extremely quickly. To put it bluntly: his bank account exploded upwards.

Within a year, there was a knock on his door from the local District Attorney. The DA demanded to know where he got all this money. My friend had to prove all his contracts and to prove all his earnings. This went on for approximately *four years*—until my friend went down to the DA and confronted the DA and screamed at him to either stop harassing him or to arrest him on drug charges which the DA suspected him of. (Which this charge was laughable at best.) The DA 'reluctantly' stopped his harassment of my friend...but it took four years out of my buddies life...*for nothing*. But you better believe my buddies bank account is still being watched to this day...

This is what our government has turned into. It isn't here to allow a 'free state' or environment for the masses. If anyone rises too quickly from their station in life—there are knocks on your door. All our bank accounts and every one of our economic transactions are being monitored by the state. We saw this down in LA with the illegal funneling of family court funds to Judges...strangely, we saw check after check in the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

amounts of \$995 dollars...deposited into their accounts. For instance; if they were to get \$5000 dollars for instance, they would break this up into five \$995 dollar checks with one last check for the remaining \$25. Banks, as just like doctors and dentists now have a 'duty' to report us to the Federal government if we deposit too much into our own bank accounts. The corrupt Judges did this, because the banks didn't have to report any deposit below the \$995 amount!

What unlawful invasion of privacy this is legion in our times. This insanity has also cost the American banking industry trillions, as now, the American banking industry is 'really' only a monitoring tool for the mass plebiscites. The 'true' capital and wealth being created in our nation is being sent to foreign banks which protect investors from being monitored by the U.S. government. Now, our government has become the organized crime syndicate, driving away jobs and wealth, rather than allowing it to flourish within this nation.

Unfortunately, this means that all banks within the US are only used to monitor and help harvest the masses. With fathers, the bank as well as the government becomes his enemy. No father can have a bank account any longer. We see the impact of this tragedy by a new form of banking which has grown to amazing proportions, and that is "Check Cashing" institutions which deposit and cash checks for those who are disenfranchised within this nation. Again, this type of 'banking' is a huge drain on the poor, which keep them in a situation where they can never arise out from, thereby debilitating the poor classes even more. Where the rich are able to obtain most banking services for free, the poor are being charged phenomenal rates just to get their own money to live off of.

This tragedy again, is assurance that Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine will stay empowered, as they try and keep as many people within this new poor class of Americans as they can. Ms. Clinton does not want Americans to rise out of their poverty and to become sovereign nor successful—she and those like her want to feed off the poor masses through their endless programs of 'entitlement' which are designed to keep them poor. Fathers who are caught into the new "working poor" classes are specifically held down and kept economically disadvantaged and attacked in order to keep both him and his child on welfare.

Meanwhile, this same system, allows the female to realize all her dreams, after all, this is why the Krell Welfare Machine was built! So she is totally subsidized, as if she had anywhere from a \$20,000 to \$30,000 a year job!! Above and beyond this, she is allowed, at public expense—to obtain as much higher education as she desires, as now our Universities themselves have enjoined in on the Krell Machine and make great amounts of money from that public subsidy for the women. Like Le Roy Marshall's ex, who now has her doctorates—the University obtains funds

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

not only to find her grants and programs in which to 'fit' her higher education goals, it also gets another student into its society in which to profit from. Meanwhile, honorable, hard-working fathers such as Le Roy stays in total stasis, unable to have bank accounts, unable to rise above the poverty his has been enslaved to, enslaved to a total burden of work—even though he is the smarter individual. As the maxim states, the Children follow the condition of the father—and we can see what has happened to the Black populace because we can document what has happened to the Black man. He is enslaved by the narcotic of the Krell Welfare Machine, and as that machine allows one gender to realize their dreams, it kills the other gender in order to pay for it. This is the true reason why the Black race cannot and will not ascend to truly experience the American dream.

As 'bad' as Patriarchal systems are 'supposed' to be, there is ingrained within the system the ability to rise out of poverty. We clearly saw this, and the world recognized this by the various waves of immigrants whom came to this country, who worked, were exploited terribly by a neo-mercenary capitalist system—and who *still* ascended into realizing the American dream. Presently, under Hillary's tutelage, we now have *generationally poor*, and the *working poor*, who are held in the stasis of Matriarchal village tribal condition. The *exact* problem which plagued early humanity for over a quarter million years, until Western Civilization recognized and 'invented' Patriarchy.

The whole paradigm of this problem boils down to money. As Marx and Engels noted about the family, he who controls the mode of production within the family unit inherits its wealth. "He who controls the children of America, rules the world." [RLCII] Presently, for our poor classes and for most Fathers, they do not control their own families which means that they do not and cannot accrue any wealth. This is the exact condition of the Black and poor populaces of America, and it is a direct extrapolation of the Maxim stated at the beginning of this book: "*Partus sequitur ventrem.*"

*"The offspring follow the condition of the mother. This is the law in the case of slaves and animals; 1 Bouviers Institutes n. 167, 502; but with regard to freemen, children follow the condition of the father. Every single father, every single school child and every single American should commit to memory this one Maxim of law.* This maxim should be memorized by every school child, it should be taught as required teaching in every American school and university, and it must be relearned within and throughout our nations churches which also shares this basic virtually throughout most all religions.

More importantly, we must re-establish this as a national doctrine within this nation. We must forcibly throw government out of the home

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

and out of our affairs. Our homes must once again, become sacred. No longer can we allow Judges to rule our lives under a false and anti-American doctrine of Parens Patriæ. WE must once again become our own children's ultimate parents. In doing this, government becomes subordinate to "We the People" once again—where now it claims a superiority through military means, and unfortunately, where it now controls all American lives with a fascist and Autocratic furor.

"IF" we gain control over our own lives, homes and families once again, then; we will see society ascending once again. We will again see those who are poor, whom will be able to rise out of poverty. We will again see the reestablishment of a strong and growing middle class, where they have the major portion of wealth, and not government and the elite. Government's sole reason for being must be to establish a favorable economic climate for "We the People," not the Fortune 5000. Indeed, when we see families empowered economically, the facts are again, absolutely incontrovertible, all the social pathologies the Feminists and government scream about: dissappear:

In some respects, the [Civil] war brought significant benefits of the Irish population, providing employment for thousands of men and women in war-related industries and generating millions of dollars in military pay and support money. By 1865 the city's leading Welfare agency could conclude that "There was less suffering from indigence in the city than in any proceeding four years in our history." [*The New York Irish*, edited by Ronal H. Bayor, ©1996, Johns Hopkins University Press, 275 North Charles Street, Baltimore, MD, 21218-4319, ISBN 0-8018-5199-8, p. 203.]

Unfortunately, this silent transfer of wealth is Ms. Clinton's and the egalitarian socialist elite's greatest secret. This is why she along with the feminist scream for their Krell Welfare Machine so much—for the machine transfers both wealth and life to those who enjoy it's control. In order to transfer wealth, this means that one segment of our society had to be attacked. This segment was the lower-to-mid Middle Class whom now were pushed downwards into poverty to become our new burgeoning "working poor." The main entity whom was attacked was: the American Father. This transfer of wealth, directly correlates as to why Ms. Clinton is so desperate that you do not look back into those 'bad old' pastoral 1950s...where the real wealth of America was held by the majority of the middle class working families. "The wage and salary structure of American business encouraged by federal tax policies, is pushing the nation toward a two-class society. The top 4% make as much as the bottom half of U.S. workers." [*America: What Went Wrong?* By Donald L. Bartlett and James B. Steele, ©1992, Andrews and McMeel, a Universal Press



## CHAPTER NINETEEN

Syndicate Company, 4900 Main Street, Kansas City, MO 64112, ISBN 0-8362-7001-0, p. ix.] In 1959 for instance, the top 4 percent (2.1 Million families and individuals) earned \$31 Billion dollars, the amount which the bottom 35% of society made during that time period. However, unfortunately, by 1989, a mere thirty years difference in separation, the same top 4 percent were now earning \$452 Billion dollars, the same amount as the bottom 51 percent of all Americans!!! What a striking difference!

Is this due to solely Hillary's Krell Welfare Machine? Of course not!—however; the significant portion of this transfer of wealth is! For welfare attacks the home through government programs supporting altruism, just as Frederick Bastiat predicted. As Newt Gingrich and others have documented, we have spent as a nation *at least* five trillion dollars on Ms. Clinton's Krell Welfare Machine...and this does not add up the dreams differed which such money *would* have added to our populace and the middle class, which this nation *should* be protecting at all costs. The government shouldn't really be supporting either the upper classes, through a trickle down theory, or the lower-classes by a bootstrap theory of economy—it should be focusing totally on the middle class on a charge pump theory of allowing the wealth of the nation to the portion of the population whom does the greatest work in the society whom produces that wealth.

The ultra rich and elite are not the work engine of our society, nor is the lower poor classes—clearly, the working engine of this society is the middle class, (and the new 'working poor,' the recent exiles of the middle class) of which this nation has virtually abandoned. If you truly want to help the poor, help the middle class. Again, this goes back to the biblical parable of the fish. Jesus correctly stated that you do not give a man a fish to help him, you teach him to fish. If you allow the middle-class the means to self-enrichment, by allowing them to keep what they produce, you will allow the poor the avenue to obtain what the middle-class clearly shows what can be done. We don't have to wonder if this system works, we *know* this works, throughout history and throughout several societies. The clear indication that we have a growing class of working poor, and an every widening two-class 'hourglass' society, with virtually no middle class. Again, there is a clear, unmistakable relationship to this condition to the lowest and rudest state of mankind: the tribal state—as represented by the last vestiges of this condition within the Third World nations which also have two-class 'hourglass' societies:

Just as self-perpetuating and expanding poverty is one aspect of the Third-Worldization of America, another is the increasing concentration of wealth in fewer and fewer hands. That, too, is a clear sign of degeneration. Indeed in many ways it is a more significant symptom than the increase in poverty. As everyone knows, even Third World countries can contain a

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

great deal of private wealth, but they still remain poor as countries because while their rich are often very rich, the vast majority of the population is very poor, and the class in the middle that dominates First World societies, is instead quite small. What is less widely recognized is that the concentration of wealth found in Third World countries is not only a result of their underdevelopment, but also one of its causes.

The middle-class is small because there are few opportunities for it in a primitive economy, but also because potential opportunities are systematically denied by the rich. Not submerged by a vast middle-class as in First World societies, the rich minority can also be politically powerful in Third World countries—not merely disproportionately powerful, as in many societies of all kinds, but almost exclusively powerful. And they have many ways to use their power to become even richer, or at least to protect the privileges that made them as rich as they are. [*The Endangered American Dream, How to stop the United States from becoming a Third World country and how to win the Geo-Economic struggle for Industrial Supremacy*, by Edward N Luttwak, ©1993, Simon & Schuster, Simon & Schuster Building, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-671-86963-9, p. 161.]

For some reason, many researchers do not, or perhaps are reluctant to come out and recognize that the destruction of the father and the family is directly related to this condition of pushing our nation into what is clearly recognized as "Third-Worldization." Yet, the continuous devolution of Feminism is impressing this condition against this society, thereby forcing our Western Civilization "First World" nation into the complete domain of a Third World tribal state. What Hillary calls: "The Village."

From this, we can record the exact conditions of which Mr. Luttwak notes above, that now we have a government of super-rich, elite, who control every facet of power. They have undermined the vote, and our Legislatures are intimately dedicated with supporting their interests, of the Fortune 5000, Insurance Companies, and a host of other "Special Interests" whom many are outright Feminist and Socialist in their very nature. These are the new "Elite" whom controls America with a death grip, and if anyone dares challenge them, the media, and other institutions rise up to shout them down.

This is our present state of affairs. As we noted earlier, Americans no longer trust the vote. We can no longer trust our courts. Our legislatures and other government institutions are now overrun by feminists as open "Bean Counts" are purging government even further from anyone whom might even attempt to represent the other side. Clearly, we have entered the "Third-Worldization" of Mr. Luttwak's admonition.

Ms. Clinton, along with this new feminist 'elite' whom have seized power and infest our nations institutions with a vengeance—now impose their mandate to continually transfer wealth from the ever-shrinking mid-

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

dle-class, and to directly and continually profit by their 'management' of the new American slave-class people whom are held into bondage by the welfare state. They are very concerned about your children, because your children and your home means money to them. Again, as government violates the tenant's of the Maxim of law that a man control his own children to create a nation of 'freemen,' fathers categorically keep refusing to economically support this endeavor, even though most cannot verbalize why they are doing this. Most understand, that they are doing the correct thing, under this most intolerable of conditions:

Among the several consequences of broken father-child bonds, the easiest to measure and quantify is the widespread decline in fathers' economic sponsorship of children. Although the family has steadily shed its economic functions, it remains the primary social institution for transferring dollar resources between generations. Historically the main beneficiaries of these familial transfers have been children, and the most prominent group of donors has been adult men. But with the decline of marriage and the departure of fathers from children's households, the family and incentive structure for male investment in children have been profoundly damaged. [*The Divorce Culture*, by Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, c1996, A Borzoi Book Published by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., New York, ISBN 0-679-43230-2; p. 155,]

Men, and society are being conditioned to be ashamed of this reality, but we should not be. As we have demonstrated earlier, in law and by maxim; if the state is going to arrogantly assert its ultimate *Parens Patriæ* authority against us within our own homes and disenfranchise us from our birthright—then we owe no economic allegiance to such perversion of American law. Again, the main fight here is not about helping the children—it is about money. Who gets the money of whom produces it?? When government usurps this function and bargaining, control and discipline function of the father—by his ability to withhold money; or even to disinherit either his child or his family, then; the state has become the true master and Parent within that subjugated home, and thereby; in accruing that power and benefit, it must take on the responsibility for its arrogant actions. It must be the true parent, both in moral action, and in pecuniary obligation...just like a father would...of which it is continually replacing..

This battle over our individual rights and control of our most basic property rights, of our own bodies, children, our homes and our wealth, can be relationally aligned with much of the problems in the United States today. The idea that fatherlessness, is in fact the cause of the condition of our children, can in no way be refuted. But oddly—it is never meaningfully discussed or recognized. The idea that fatherlessness is tied directly to this nations economic condition, is no harder to prove—yet, I have yet to meet one expert who has made this most important basic con-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

nection. Clearly Adam Smith, Marx and Engles recognized this importance of birthright of the family and saw the organic links to wealth from the resultant condition—yet, as if an massive aberration in modern society, none of our so called ‘experts’ make this connection: that the condition of the father shows the economic condition of the nation.

As Malcolm X noted earlier, the female condition shows the state of morality in a society, it is the male which clearly indicates the economic condition of the society. The present crisis of the American male is much greater portender of the national economy of the society. The recognition that the American male who is in severe jeopardy due to the unlawful predatory actions by our own government, along with the virtual disappearance of middle-class America—cannot be discounted—yet, again, strangely no connection is ever made by our intellectual elite. The state of our children is directly linked to money. The fundamental causes of abuse are do to money. The state of middle-class America is directly due to money. And the main prevaricator of obtaining money, both for children and the families, thereby raising their standards while also reducing abuse and raising this nations middle-class and national wealth standards; is irrefutably the father.

This nation has proceeded in a well-documented anti-American socialist program of attacking the male, which has been to the greatest extent the root of all our problems. Indeed, if Ms. Clinton and the feminists were hit with this reality, they still would never change nor abate their present platform to destroy the American male. Destroying the male is destroying this nation, and has greatly debilitated our children. The facts are that Ms. Clinton, the Feminists, and the Socialist elite regimes had full knowledge of their failure as far back as 1960—yet, they continued on with a cancerous plague which has only destroyed and sapped this nations wealth.

The feminist presently are shrilly discounting the most obvious facts, that there ‘redesign’ of humanity, is unattainable, at least in its present form. The single-female-headed-household, has factually become this nations enemy. Her quest for individual autonomy has enslaved not only fathers, but a society, and has factually ‘redistributed’ this nations wealth into a new "Third Worldization." We, as the most technologically advanced society on earth (which clearly was only established upon the platform of Patriarchy), are being dragged down while we continually try to rise up. Again, this proves the taxicab driver observation "we are progressing, while at the same time we are moving backwards."

This transfer of wealth has not only destroyed the middle-class along with a nation of Fathers and children, it factually has subverted a free American system of governance, with ‘something else.’ What we as a nation would have never voted in, now is empowered throughout gov-

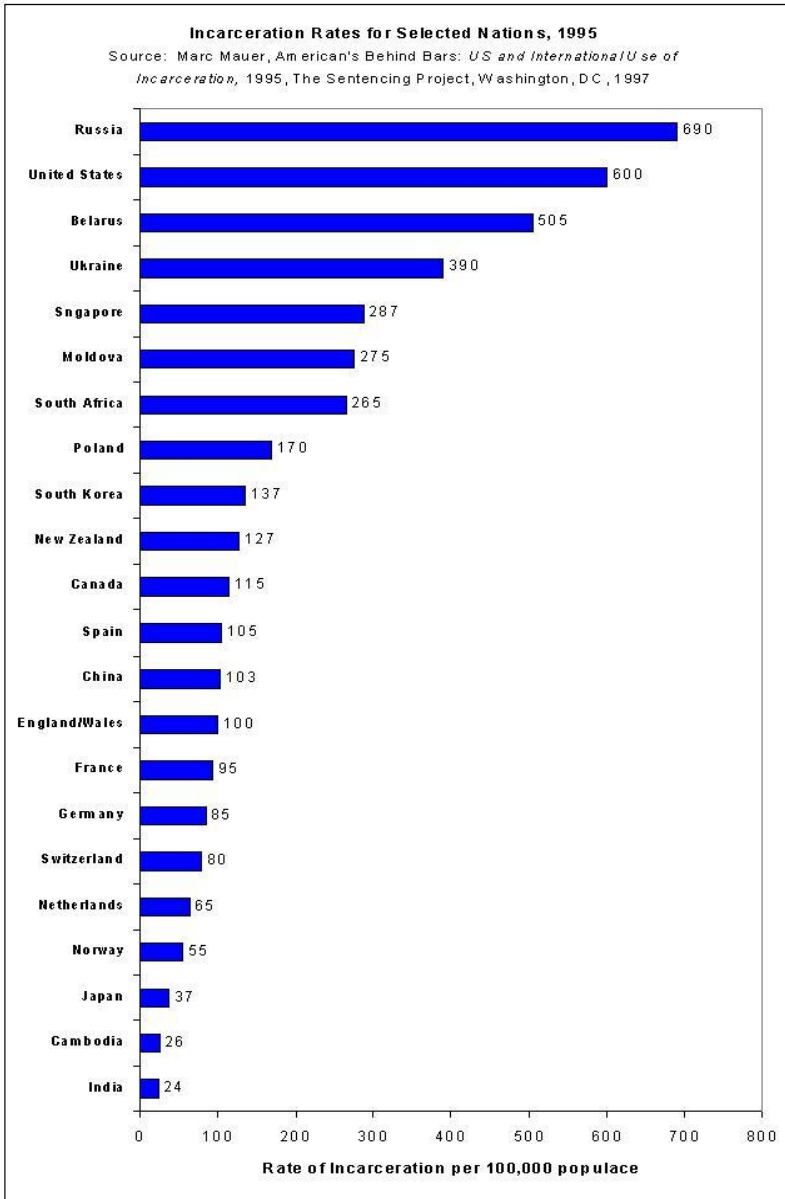
## CHAPTER NINETEEN

ernment. This new "Bean Count" certified government elite, are imposing direct unconstitutionality, by mere corporate government practices, policies, and procedures. Presently, we have established a government, so arrogant, so insolent, that it will not do the most basic requirements for its citizenry. Presently, we have established predatory Armies across the landscape of America, directly funded through both taxes and the destruction of the American male. These Armies and state agencies have become our enemy, asserting themselves most violently into our lives, wrestling us to the ground upon the most incipient causes; following us in our cars; monitoring our bank accounts; seizing our property; crashing down our doors by dynamic entry; throwing men out of their own homes for nothing; then, arrogantly refusing to prove their actions constitutionally in court. When such effected citizens even attempt to get simple documentation of trial transcripts or even the most benign police reports—or even the government's assumed authority for committing these heinous acts--most all public agencies, safely secured behind their three inch thick plate-glass steel windows—insolently refuse.

Most Fathers are in trouble with DA's because *that is what government wanted in the first place*. Most Fathers have legal problems because *that is how this system was cogently designed from the start*. You don't overthrow a system of laws which protected fathers and kept many out of jail and gave them direction, purpose and function in life, and then create an inescapable trap in law and then say this happened by chance or by social necessity. Fathers are in trouble and in direct jeopardy, *because that is what their function in society is today*. And the feminists, the DA's and the government will jealously guard this new slave-class of men as much as it can, for it is stealing too much money from the males enslavement to do anything meaningful for either his escape or control of his own life. Freedom and Liberty are four letter words to these individuals, and the ever burgeoning and unlawful laws which state legislatures still continue to propagate only against men, clearly show this design and intent.

I'm convinced there is circumspect knowledge of this relationship of the destruction of the father and the concomitant destruction of children, families and societies. Indeed, when it was first publicly aired by Daniel Moynihan over thirty years ago—he was in no-uncertain terms shouted down, and directly told not to air this issue. Indeed, others who have attempted to bring to light such issues, have been immediately attacked and threatened with their lives if they propagate any doctrine which informs the public as to this relationship of the father to the national health of our economy in our society. Any such recognition of this problem would mean the instant closure of the Welfare state, which the Legislature, the Feminist, and the State will never allow, no matter what facts and figures

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



are brought before them. Indeed, as this book and others show, the facts and figures in direct relationship to this problem, have become a tsunami of empirical proof. There is so much directly related to this issue and

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

provable beyond reasonable doubt that the Doctrine of the Silent Treaties can no longer hold it back.

But clearly, neither government nor the feminist will relinquish their death-grip upon this problem. They will market it to the destruction of the very last male if need be. Incontrovertible facts and figures have no meaning to them. The destruction and outright war which has developed and enveloped this nation over the past 30 years has absolutely no meaning to these people. Nothing means anything to these people except "Save Our Children." They embody the most stoic passions within their Morbius Complex, where—they cannot see that they are destroying the American civilization—and our children—just like in the movie *Forbidden Planet* where Dr. Morbius would in fact, is willing to destroy his own daughter and sacrifice her to the *Id monster* in which to feed the Ancient Tribal desires of the Krell Welfare Machine.

This willing insolence from our "public servants" has created several needless wars, not only throughout our society, but in the home, and in our courts. Along with the slow attack and eradication of fatherhood since the 1950's, we have also has a concurrent rise in the number of lawyers and an exponential growth in litigation which has again, destroyed this nation.

Americans are thoroughly habituated to lives of corrosive insecurity, but European and East Asian visitors are often left speechless when they encounter what Americans take for granted: the unending wails of police sirens in the city night; the near-universality of burglar alarms in private homes; the throbbing and searchlights of helicopters searching for fugitives over our largest cities; and the "gated" communities with their own private police, obsequious to residents, brusque to straying outsiders with the wrong clothes, diction, or color. First World visitors are even more amazed by the casual acceptance of barbarous violence as an everyday norm by the Americans they encounter—their fearful steps as they approach their own cares in dark parking lots; their insistent warnings to avoid this or that entire part of town, their matter-of-fact tales of brutal crimes seen or actually experienced; and their firm advice to surrender wallets and watches quickly and uncomplainingly if asked, even, or especially, if robbers are mere children.

For all their protestations, American's are no longer truly shocked by the huge dimensions of our own permanent uprising, even though 8 million larceny-thefts, 3 million burglaries, 1.6 million motor-vehicle thefts, 1 million life-threatening aggravated assaults, 639,000 robberies, 102,000 rapes, and 23,000 murderers at the last count, have recently been increasing at an equally phenomenal rate of 6% to 10% per year, and have long since spread to suburbs and once tranquil small towns. In a futile attempt to overcome the dulled impact of mere numbers, the FBI even publishes an official "crime clock" for dramatic effect, which last recorded one murder every twenty-two minutes, a rape ever five minutes, a robbery every

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

forty-nine seconds, and aggravated assault every thirty seconds, a burglary every ten seconds, and so on. Still, Americans hesitate to visit Naples because sometimes cars are stolen....

...With its 248 million all-out individualists, diverse and sometimes clashing races, and a long history of violence, American could never be compared to famously law-abiding Japan, cohesive Finland, strict Switzerland, or indeed any First World country at all. Of late, however, it cannot even be compared with itself: between 1980 and 1989 the number of inmates in federal and state prisons more than doubled, from 329,821 to 710,054, and the number has now passed 1 million including jail prisoners and juveniles in detention. And even that number is still increasing rapidly—almost 9 million Americans were arrested for all causes in 1990, as compared to 6.8 million in 1981. It seems that the prisons are absorbing quite a few of the people that the economy can no longer employ.

Fittingly enough, it is the nation's capital that offers the most extreme of the prevalence of crime in the abandoned slums called "inner cities." In 1992 it was estimated 42% of all black males between the ages of eighteen and thirty-five living in the District of Columbia were in prison, on probation, or on parole awaiting trial. Because there is a large black middle class in Washington, of well-paid government employees and professional's who lead settled lives, that 42% must represent a terrifyingly high proportion of all underclass black youths raised by single parents—or rather birthed by unmarried girls. In 1988, out of just over 1 million American children of all races born out of wedlock in that one year (53.7% of them white), 312,500 had mothers aged fifteen to nineteen (another 9,900 had mothers under fifteen). Inevitably, many will join the 7.5 million children already on the welfare rolls, not many of whom will have a chance to grow up into educated, employable, and law-abiding adults. [*The Endangered American Dream, How to stop the United States from becoming a Third World country and how to win the Geo-Economic struggle for Industrial Supremacy*, by Edward N Luttwak, ©1993, Simon & Schuster, Simon & Schuster Building, Rockefeller Center, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020, ISBN 0-671-86963-9, pp. 158-160.]

Indeed, there is an ever growing correlation from our society being a First World, free, western civilized nation to that of being in reality a Third World, autocratic, uncivilized nation. This correlation is not only more and more recognizable, but; is virtually indisputable when seen side-by-side with other totalitarian, fascist or Communistic regimes. Something is terribly wrong when we hold up such simple proof.

Here we can readily see what the problem with the United States is. We can see this nations clear totalitarian reversal in by chart above. Here, the United States is paired with some of the most totalitarian, oppressive and dictatorial regimes on earth. *We*, are paired with them, when we *should* be paired with those free First World nations at the bottom of the chart! Nothing can be so glaring as this proof that the Feminist Krell



## **CHAPTER NINETEEN**

Welfare Machine aligned and supported by an ‘unseen’ government, has changed the basic foundation and tenor of our ‘free’ nation...of which again, the United Nations lists us at 13<sup>th</sup> in free nations. Something has categorically broken in this nation, as we are no longer either free, nor the hope of opportunity that we once were.

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

---

## CHAPTER TWENTY

---

*"Our deepest fear is that not that we are inadequate. Our deepest fear is that we are powerful beyond measure. It is our light, not our darkness, that most frightens us."* --Nelson Mandela, South African President

### AMERICAN MEN AS CONQUERERS

---

In my exploits I have met many, many people throughout this experience of defending my home and family against unwanted government intrusion. One remarkable meeting I had came with some Butte County farmers who had contacted me out of the blue, and asked me to run for Butte County Sheriff. Now, when I got this call, I was of course floored. I mean, here I was 'supposedly' a criminal, barely able to take care of myself, yet more and more people started asking me to run for office. I thought criminals were criminals—not political candidates. This of course followed the Totalitarian form of inverse logic, where the impossible became probable. In this world of upside-down logic as I was now labeled a "criminal" by the corrupt de facto system, more and more people knew I was not. Many of them were telling me to run for office, of which I couldn't for I could barely survive because of the attacks and constant war this system was placing upon me. Yet here they were, pleading with me to run.

Well, I knew I couldn't run, because of the fact of how crippled I was both financially, and socially. I had to repair my life before I began such endeavors as these. But it wasn't that which was so remarkable about meeting these people—it was in the relationship I had with one, "Bob" was his name, that really made me think. We were speaking of various things on his farm one day, and he was telling me about his observations of several issues of which he brought out a remarkable point in regards to civilization as a whole. He said: "You know, the Black people and many throughout society have this notion that the Blacks are great warriors. That they have this tribal legacy which makes them 'bad,' which shows that they are ruthless, and warring. That the more tribal societies are really conquerors in this world. They may be true," he noted. "But the most voracious killer, the most indomitable conqueror is not the Black race—its the White race. We are the real ruthless killers. We are the ones to watch out for."

I have contemplated this issue and in essence I do believe this gentleman is right. In the whole of human experience, there is a drive within the White race stemming from Western Civilization that, is quite remarkable, and if left to fallow interests, and left undirected, or misdirected; as in the case of Hitler and his fascist regime—it can rise up and consume the es-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

sence of humanity itself. Let it be catalogued and noted here, that the whole indigenous people throughout India quizzically noted when trying to rest and to get out of the brutal Indian heat, that it was only "mad dogs and Englishmen" who were out doing anything in such inhospitable weather. It is this incessant drive, which many other societies do not display—which must be controlled and harnessed.

Societies can either use this massive force, or they can make it devolve, which the present American elite regime is doing. This devolution accomplished through the deconstruction of our laws, has made many men, both young and old, aimless; and from this unrestrained distribution of this latent power; it of course finds industry in the more contemptuous and base occupations of mankind...mostly criminal in nature. However, when this industry is harnessed, it can build the seven wonders of the world, it can build canals, tame mountains, oceans, and nature herself. It can even put a man on the moon or decode the human genome...or it can create a solid foundation for a family.

As I said earlier, the Fathers Rights movement must understand its product. It doesn't right now. Hopefully this book has rectified this. All men must understand their community, their issues, and even 'the field of battle' as some would put it—in which to advance this social movement. We have no concept of what we are; or who we are; that in essence, we are the vehicle, the main power within any civilization. We are a remarkably engineered biological product. However, it is in the way we are controlled or coerced by government which presently limits our freedom's and capabilities. Government is only coming after us because we are the main producers within any society, we are the true wealth of our nation. *That's why they are hunting us—and not the women.* Right now, men are the greatest untapped resource this nation has. We are a reserve of dedication and industry which is only being left to atrophy. We are like untapped national reserves of coal, or oil—a huge resource which has been buried, and which government refuses to free in which to power our ideals and concepts of freedom.

Of course what this means is that in the final analysis, is that we are the true power. We are in fact the only power. If society loses the support of men, it will most certainly crumble. This devolution is clear—as past history has proven that the Feminists have been given Carte Blanche by government to implement their socialist regime through the Krell Welfare Machine. And with the complete services and breadth of power held throughout the complete range of government, which they have thrown full force against the Males in this society: they have *failed*.

Think about that. They have taken what is almost unlimited resources of the most powerful nation on earth, to "redesign humanity" in the image

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

and vision of women, socialists and feminists, and they failed! They failed miserably.

*Think about that.* If you gave such resources and power to the Kawanis Club for instance, well; most certainly everyone in this nation *if not the entire world*, would now be wearing one of their funny little hats. Yet, the feminists have completely failed, as Newt Gingrich noted earlier; using on the order of 5.2 Trillion dollars....OR MORE. Yet even as their religion dies from the inconsistencies, hypocrisies and illogic of its own weight—they scream for more money, more support—as if one more program might make the difference. As if one billion more dollars would ‘fix’ the anarchy they themselves created. In essence they are screaming for more money, more power so they can build yet another machine to somehow turn off and slow down the original Krell Welfare Machine they originally created.

We must put this plainly. If the Fathers Rights movement doesn’t stop funding this insanity, it will never stop. The ever burgeoning enslavement of the American people will become in fact, more and more egregious as each generation inherits a more and more insolent and out-of-control government. Presently this nation is factually illegally seizing cars in the streets, stealing money from bank accounts and peoples wage earnings, they are stealing children, do dynamic entries in people’s homes at the slightest provocation, they are pulling people over and searching their vehicles for no reason other than, they have the guns—we don’t--and they can get away with such crimes. Strangely, nobody considers how deeply they are shredding our foundational doctrine, the Constitution in doing so. Others are beginning to come to the same solemn implications that this book has documented:

"Today the New Master responds to the cry of the slaves by punishing the fatherless child, by forcing the single mother into the streets, by emptying the mental hospitals under the ignorant and inhumane theory that it is too expensive for the system to care for the casualties of the system. The New Master builds more penitentiaries, not more housing. It passes yet harsher laws that further alienate the people from one another and from their government. Marshaling our best logic, we argue that the death penalty will teach the killer a lesson. Education for the poor has become a dream from which we have been rudely awakened. One remembers the old South’s response to Nat Turner: Do not educate the slaves, for educating the slave can be dangerous.

Crime begets crime. Criminal growing fields can grow only criminals. In the inner city, white police take over black neighborhoods like occupying troops and, even in plain view of the camera (as in the Rodney Kind case), beat black men out of their senses. In the pristine halls of the judiciary, the courts are packed with judges who, with heavy but callous-free hands, lay down the law of the New Master.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

In the ghettos, those who need the most are abandoned and become like cannibals, devouring each other with drugs and crime. In response to the slave's violence, the New Master, always paranoid, knows no other means by which to confront the violence it has engendered except by loosening a greater and more empty-headed violence of its own.

At Ruby Ridge, federal agents shot in the back and killed a child's dog, shot in the back and killed the fleeing child as well, and then blew off the head of that child's mother who was standing at an open door holding her baby in her arms. And even after a cover-up was discovered, the federal government refused to prosecute the killers. At Waco, the government, employing a relentless program of unleashed violence, roasted twenty-two helpless children like wieners on a spit and cremated more than fifty adults in the same inferno. Yet no federal officers were prosecuted. [Give Me Liberty! Gerry Spence, c1998, St. Martin's Press, 175 Fifth Avenue, New York, NY 10010; ISBN 0-312-19267-3; p. 97.]

Yet surprisingly, strangely; they have not made the underlying connection of these tragedies to fatherlessness. Any tremor of such truisms are quickly quashed away as emanating from a "Vast Right Wing Majority"—when the facts clearly show what they clearly show. That driving Fathers away from their children and criminalizing them for government disenfranchising them from their own homes, has caused several spillover effects of several outright wars within this nation, and has propagated countless social pathologies all at the expense of our total wealth, and freedoms. Yet, the story doesn't end there—because—it is going to get worse!

### AMERICA'S POOR KIDS: NEAR ROCK BOTTOM

---

Here's a ranking of industrialized countries by living standards of poor children:

1. Switzerland 10.) Austria
2. Sweden 11.) Canada
3. Finland 12.) France
4. Denmark 13.) Italy
5. Belgium 14.) United Kingdom
6. Norway 15.) Australia
7. Luxembourg 16.) **United States**
8. Germany 17.) Israel
9. Netherlands 18.) Ireland

[Source: Lee rainwater and Timothy Smeeding, *Doing Poorly, The Real Income of American Children in a Comparative Perspective*, Luxembourg Income Study working paper, Number 124, Aug. 1995.; *We're Right, They're Wrong, A Handbook for Spirited Progressives*, by James

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

Carville, © 1996, Random House, New York; ISBN 0-679-76978-1, p. 32.]

Thereby, we have a nation of 'experts' totally blind to the underlying foundation of these problems. We have special interests groups dedicated to suppressing any dissemination of this problem to the greater public. We have a insolent government that is more than ready to implement even more draconian and unconstitutional laws and actions against their own people all under the guise of "law" and under color of "justice." Meanwhile, we have a recursive surreptitious undefined entity embedded throughout our government which is subverting our whole system of government for Radical Socialist/Feminist purposes—then arrogantly marketing such injustices as 'new,' 'efficient,' or "a redesign of humanity." They have dumbed down the masses, to where they cannot even comprehend what is going on anymore, and by this complete seamless program they arrogantly declare that they are doing all this in our name, and for our best interests; when factually; our society is being cannibalized, fed upon, enslaved, and harvested like never before.

### **AMERICA: LAND OF INEQUALITY**

---

America is now the most economically stratified country in the industrialized world:

- 1.) **United States** 10.) Luxembourg
- 2.) Ireland 11.) Germany
- 3.) Italy 12.) Norway
- 4.) Canada 13.) Austria
- 5.) Australia 14.) Netherlands
- 6.) United Kingdom 15.) Belgium
- 7.) France 16.) Sweden
- 8.) New Zealand 17.) Finland
- 9.) Switzerland

Source: Peter Gottschalk and Timothy Smeeding cross-national comparisons of levels and trends in Inequality, Luxembourg income study working Paper, Number 126, July 1995. Inequality is measured that the ratio of earnings of the worker at the ninetieth percentile of the income distribution to the earnings of the worker at the tenth percentile. [*We're Right, They're Wrong, A Handbook for Spirited Progressives*, by James Carville, © 1996, Random House, New York; ISBN 0-679-76978-1, p. 85.]

We must factually come to the conclusion that these people will never solve this problem. (Have they ever really solved any?) For they are too close to their own selfish interests and "daily bread," and too mesmerized

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

with its seemingly endless benefits. Why should they lose out and do the right thing when they are making so much money off of this? Why place their careers into such jeopardy to merely 'do the right thing?' Why bring down a government of socialist intent just to bring back Constitutional rights?

Clearly, these people no longer believe in the precepts of this nation as they are unwilling to risk their lives, the names, their sacred honor to realize the American experience, and more importantly; leave it for our future legacies and mankind to marvel at and experience in the future. Indeed, those who inculcate Ms. Clinton's redefinition of humanity can go to a hundred other nations who are implementing this fallow social program or who will be in the future and see the exact similar exponentially rising disasters there. However; the big question is; where do American's go to realize their birthright? Where do we go to enjoy the patently unique system of American government? A government as Winthrop adumbrated would be a nation of families, "as a city upon a hill" for the rest of the world to see.

In fact they did see this unique new government whose compellation was as an experiment in freedom. Clearly, Ms. Clinton and others fully endeavor to shut this door tightly close, and thereby to eternally enslave us to 'mutual obligations and shared responsibilities'—which are nothing more than code words which mean that you must turn in your neighbor, you must allow police in every corner of your lives, you must immediately bow to authority *especially when they are wrong*, and that you will pay anything to allow this reality to occur. If you think the Clinton's Imperialist regime with 100,000 more police across our nation already in force, with another 50,000 more to be armed and sent loose upon us, in conjunction with a DEFCON military build up and armament of a panoply of various agents and agencies, is here to make us more free—you are wrong. They are at the precipice of overthrowing every aspect of the American form of Republican governance, at their source: the American home and family. We are beginning the entry into a dark age where we compromise all our Liberties for "Law and Order," "Safety," and "In the Best Interests of the Child." There will be no place for those American's who believe in their American heritage in Ms. Clinton's brave new world. There will be no place to flee as Winthrop and his fellow Puritans could 400 years ago for us to realize the American principles of government.

"He who controls the children of America, rules the world," I say.

It is this premise which embattles the home and Father so much. For if Fathers cannot rule within their own homes—then as we have seen by the exponential explosion of welfare—nobody truly can. Only government, through its establishment of its hideous Krell Welfare Machine. And as a Priest noted in Hillary's book, *It Takes a Village*, government's cannot



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

love children of which he is consummately correct. It can be also said that Schools do not teach morality. Or that Policemen do not teach children to not do crime. Teachers cannot teach children to love education. Only families can, and the only way you get a family is with a Father. And those children that do have fathers become inspired to learn, to be good citizens, to be productive members of the community, and have instilled within them; a sense of morality. The facts and figures prove this.

Now, the Feminists will quickly assure us that you can have a family without a Father, which is 50% child abuse right off the start—for the 50% of children who are males are instantly destroyed by such affirmations. That fact notwithstanding; the Feminist will affirm the strong bonds and relationships that can be accommodated by extended and blended families, of Gay and Lesbian households, mentoring, adoption and even Foster Homes. These are in fact insipid replacements, for they are at best, in the kindest light possible, *only shallow substitutes of the irreplaceable*, and that irreplaceable is a mom and a dad combined as one to raise their own children. Any other averment is nothing more than feminist socialist propaganda. Other people with vision are beginning to come to the same conclusions as this book, as an ever rising backlash against Matriarchy is imminent:

### CARDINAL PREDICTS FALL OF ANTI-LIFE MOVEMENT

By Tracy Early

The president of the Pontifical Council for the Family said in New York that the outlook which denies needed support for the family and the right to life will collapse in the coming years.

"These positions are not serious," said Cardinal Alfonso Lopez Trujillo. "They lack truth, and so they will not be permanent."

He predicted a change comparable to what happened with Marxism. In the past, that ideology required a great deal of attention, and some people thought it would last an eternity, the cardinal recalled.

"But it all quickly collapsed," he said. "It will be the same with this."

In an address March 5 at a luncheon arranged by the Northeast Hispanic Catholic Center and in a meeting with two reporters March 8, Cardinal Lopez Trujillo expressed serious concern about trends such as those seen at the United Nations and in many national governments dealing with family and right-to-life issues.

Many people do no want to give family structures the support they need but, using new definitions of family, claim the same status for a union of two homosexuals or other kinds of relationships, he said.

And he said a form of family life in which "the father seems to be disappearing" was a contemporary development that "concerns us greatly...."

"Before, the family and life were protected by the law, by the culture, by all people," he said. "Today, the family and life are not protected."

But while the church is working on all levels for protection of family life, it also reminds everyone that "the family and marriage are not the pri-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

vate property of the church," the cardinal added. [*The Tablet*, of Queens and Brooklyn, New York, March 13<sup>th</sup>, 1999, Vol. 91, No. 50, p. 16.]

However, the Feminists and Government under the doctrines of Parens Patriæ most assuredly believe the family is their property; their domain.

Thereby, it is time that men assume their proper roles and functions to affirm American law, that we own our own children. We can no longer allow our own homes, personal lives, our jobs, our bank accounts, and most importantly children—to be ruled by what has only been an imbecilic pretender. Our children, our nation is hurting desperately because we have trusted, both government and our courts to do the right thing. Well, their facts and figures are a monument to this modern failure. It has shown that they have not done the right thing. Thereby, this failure has become so sublime and pronounced as to establish a new national American doctrine, that Fathers cannot allow these continued perversions no more. "Do not cross our sovereign threshold's within the sanctity of our homes any longer." Clearly, the facts and figures which have transcribed this war; this national tragedy; mandated eradication of feminism way back in the 1970s. Since our government recognized this failure, was fully informed as to the impending disaster: a "train wreck" as Patrick J. Moynihan so eloquently put during the 1960's; and since they refused to stop it; by that fact and their continued profligate actions show that such continued efforts to sustain this failure at all costs; could have been only done by design. The statistic's show year after year, that the Feminist program to re-engineer the American home and Family were categorically, an abomination.

Thereby it has become long overdue that somebody do something. Since we know that the American design of three branches of government are supposed to keep each other in alignment to their mandate of enumerated constitutional authority has failed; it has now come time for the fourth branch of government to rise up; and to eradicate the present miscegenation of law and authority which now permeates this society. We are that fourth branch of government, empowered through the both the Constitution and the Declaration of Independence.

It is clear, **nobody** is going to either protect Fathers in our homes, or our families, therefore, we must protect them. Our children cannot stand anymore 'help' by the government nor the feminists. This Feminist attack against us has gone on for too long, and has been incredibly too successful. Fathers must be released from their bondage and eternal vilification, if we are to do this, then—we must do it. Indeed, in whatever social indicator you look at, the impact of the Feminist social revolution has been indelible upon our lives and our children. As far as the institution of Fatherhood or marriage goes, they have almost become insignificant. These

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

are not good things, and they never were. These problems never should have gotten to the point to where they are today. Because they have been inflamed to this point, can only mean they were intentional.

This idea that government gives lip-service about being a nation of laws, and then when men dare to stand up and assume these sacred rights under that same law, and from this, are denied these rights in favor of alien doctrines of Family law and Feminist Jurisprudence, which are in fact, an affront to every single American law, only shows the willing conspiracy of government to impose this terror upon all of us. This of course comes back to Brad Rhunt and his declaration: "Where do you go when the Judges do not obey your law?" This single question posed to me in May of 1998—*must be answered*, not just to me, but to a nation of waiting fathers and American Citizens who have no idea where to go.

Of course many fathers have wrestled with this no-win solution. In fact the only answer is that we can only go to ourselves. So upon public recognition of this fact, what the remaining equation becomes is one of time and power. How much time will it take for the fourth branch of government, of a nation of men and women to rise up and collectively overpower the other branches of government in order to re-establish our laws and our sacred rights? This is the only remaining question to this paradigm that has been handed to us.

As we stated earlier, because there is no money in Fatherhood, and there is no profit to be made in resilient homes and families to a Socialist driven government, this revolution will be met with the most unctuous of responses. Allowing freedom is not big business for the ruling elite. As we cannot depend on those either within government nor within the elite sector of society—the remaining assemblage must coalesce upon a single banner. For we are indeed the light, and we cannot be afraid of our own power any longer, especially our own impending success.

The Fathers Rights movement as it currently sets, is that polite and docile creature, the Elephant I mentioned in previous chapters. It thanks the Master which has beaten it severely, by working even more assiduously than it did before. It hasn't become the raging Rhino of which it must become in order to overthrow these great injustices. We can be docile no more and we cannot be that complicit, obedient Elephant anymore as we must transform ourselves.

I believe this book has efficiently documented the problems facing us all. The one remaining component is to coalesce all Fathers Rights groups under one banner. This is the present conundrum of this movement with the singular point of contention being between the Patriarch's and the Joint Custody encampments. There can be no denying that Joint Custody (which we already supposedly have) in the kindest light, as intelligent as it may seem: will in fact continue this perversion against fathers, homes

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

children and families. As this perversion of government intrusion into the home continues the problems facing our homes and families will continue. It must be well recognized that these people are not here to help us, they are here to manage us. They most certainly do not want to solve this problem of the anarchy and enmity which they market and allow to flourish within our lives. If the Joint Custody people do not recognize this and come to terms with this, then; they are allowing this criminality to continue generation after generation. Upon that reality, not only will we have to deal with this fallow outcome, our children will be doomed to inherit it.

This must be understood.

However, if the Fathers Rights community joins forces under the Full Patriarchal model, then every single father and home wins under this scenario. In fact, this will be the direct confrontation of every citizens right to his own children as parent against the government fallacy they assume under the Doctrine of Parens Patriæ. This Doctrine must be challenged, because if it goes on as it is, then no man rules anywhere. For if a man cannot rule within his own home, he most certainly will never rule his own government. We all become subordinate to its will and interests. This is a direct contravention to our form of government which imbues a sovereign people under "We the People," as masters over their public servants in government, doing their bidding.

Once all Fathers Rights advocates recognize this, and coalesce under one banner, then; factually this conflagration will be over. The government knows this just as the Elephant trainer understands this: that if we turn on it—there is nothing they will be able to do. We are too big, and we are too powerful; and they know it. This is one of the reasons they have made Fatherhood one of the greatest crimes you can commit in this nation, or any nation for that matter.

Once the Fathers Rights coalition joins together, then; we will begin to see not 'a return to the fifties' but the realization of a new American Renaissance. This promise has been denied to us from the amazing retrograde imposed through modern Radical Feminism which has drained this society of Trillions of dollars. For those trillions, we got nothing. Only a raging anarchy and nightly war.

We must mandate no social programs. Fathers Rights must recognize their own inherent power of themselves and within their Families. For instance, presently we are spending about anywhere from \$6,000 to \$10,000 per student per year in our national public school system. Take this money and simply return it to the Father or the home, and indeed; the children will receive an education, and the home and family will be all the better for it. With \$10,000 a year, families could spend for private tutoring for their own children at home, and I think upon such a fact hap-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

pening; the educational results would be astronomical. This is but one example of what I am speaking about.

The condensation of the real question here is who rules within my own home? If government accrues that benefit, then it must assumes also the total financial burden and responsibility for those actions. Upon that realization of the State becoming the true father under the doctrine of *Parens Patriæ*—I am no longer the father, and therefore—I cannot be forced to pay. Nor can any other ‘father’ thusly attacked. I fully doubt any Joint Custody advocate would let me rule within his own home, and then would voluntarily pay me after I held him at gunpoint. He would only pay out of fear, yet—this is exactly what this present system requires of both Fathers and society, which is charges inhumane amounts of money in which to propagate this profligatory.

To rule in ones own home means that we must accrue not only the benefits as such but the payments as well. This means that we must be leaders. We must be responsible. To be a leader means that you—and nobody else makes your decisions for you. In this case, you must be given the right to make mistakes, as every leader makes mistakes. We must have the right to not to rule too harshly.

The feminist do not want this, as there whole empire is predicated on the question "Have you stop beating your wife?"

If you answer in any manner, you are instantly guilty; for it is the design of the logic of this question and the whole Feminist system. Thereby; the Father who does not rule to harshly—destroys this whole system. This means that yes, some fathers may have to spank and discipline those within his home, even the wife...sometimes *especially* the wife. Government cannot second guess this function—nor can it ever even enter into the equation. This is the price of a Free society. The fact that they have had such input, has been a huge mistake, and most certainly; an overstepping of the bounds of their enumerated authority.

Once Fatherhood is thusly re-established once again, the collapse of the Welfare State will be the imminent corollary of this function. Literally, this simple re-establishment which has been lacking for too long a period of time within our culture, will have a crippling effect upon that well entrenched empire. They will not survive Fatherhood.

The Family and Children will however. And the resultant spillover effects of a collapse in the divorce rate, Welfare, all the teenage pathologies, crime, a staggering drop in prisons, and a new American productivity cycle stemming from children, who now will groom themselves for marriage and family; rather than the institutions of Welfare and Prisons, will be remarkable. Also, as we have proven earlier, Fathers being close to their children once again will rise American test scores, to where children will become educated once again. In fact, within a six year period,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

with either a zero increase in educational expenditures, or *even a drop in such expenditures*, this nation may once again become the dominant educational country around the globe.

Again, all this is from predicated doing one simple thing; replacing something which has been torn from this nation: the Father! Of course when this happens, it will be a criminal condemnation for all those who have participated in this Anti-American socialist experiment called Feminism. The worst thing that could happen to this Clinton ruled government presently, is fatherhood. For the wealth that he should be accruing for his own home and family, is being siphoned off into other more national and international endeavors.

What I am trying to impress upon the Joint Custody component of the Fathers Rights community is that their side admits defeat by default, where our side encourages success within the home, through the main component that makes a family a family—and that is the American father. Joint Custody, even if it works, and *especially* if it works, means divorce, and thereby, continued destruction of the family. Patriarchy, however; means that there will be no frivolous marriages, that the institution of marriage and family, actually mean something. It will most assuredly mean a huge reduction of divorce! Instead of people passionately throwing themselves into that institution as they do presently, their decisions will become more circumspect. More deliberate. Divorces will go down, which will mean a saving of the agony which many people and children go through in divorce. Divorce does not help this nation, and presently, divorce is at epidemic levels. Will this mean that there will be *some* people disappointed regardless of low divorce rates? Yes...for we cannot really prevent that, but most certainly Patriarchy certainly mitigates this pain and failure. Joint Custody however; embraces the institution of divorce, and it does nothing to avert its continued growth. It just 'works' with the present system in the best possible light.

The Fathers Rights movement must thereby establish a new Codicil of intent binding on our whole community. It must either embrace Patriarchy, or—if such groups refuse, to categorically give reason and show cause, as to why they philosophically remain with Joint Custody. In this way, we can gain a roll call of our complete movement, and by such consensus gain critical mass. Once we have achieved that—then everything within our path will lay down in submission to this new Patriarchal order. We will at that point, become the raging Rhino I envision, empowered towards a just cause; and thereby, we can finally end this injustice. We can end this perverse plague which has effected us all.

I must digress here and relate a story about trying to attempt redress. I had over the impending years, written everyone about my plight. The silence I received from my "representatives" was so deafening as to cause

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

me even more inquiry as to why. I finally was so exasperated that I wrote up a legal document called: LAST NOTICE AND DEMAND TO MEET, and sent it to virtually all my 'representatives' and filed this in my court case. This included Sen. Tim Leslie, Congressmen Wally Herger, both Diane Feinstein and Barbara Boxer, then Governor Pete Wilson, Vasconcellos, Wood, the list is too long to enumerate here. From this, I received two responses. One was from Wally Herger, who wrote that I wasn't in his district that he'd pass it on to State Senator Tim Leslie. The other response was from Senator Tim Leslie, who wrote back one line: "There is an impenetrable wall between the Legislature and the Judiciary. There is nothing I can do." And that was about it.

Of course, one has to wonder, since the courts are extruding these unconstitutional "Law's" only from the State Legislature, and from that the Judges plea that they are held hostage to these bad laws. Well, shouldn't the Legislature stand up and be responsible for these draconian laws that they are passing against us all? Not in their minds. What is even more unsettling by Mr. Leslie's declaration that he has an impenetrable wall between himself and the Judiciary; one has to wonder what happens when the Judiciary like the Weimar regime starts placing Jews into ovens? Especially with Laws which Mr. Leslie helped pass? What then?

Do the other separate branches of government, whose main mandate is to keep each other in check so that one does not rule as a tyrant against us all—just sit back and say: "Well, this is *very* unfortunate, but—there appears to be this impenetrable wall between us and the Judiciary..." All the while Jews are being stuffed into ovens?

In today's dumbed down Legislature—yes. They will affirm this idiotic brand of thinking, although they will establish several committees to review the human immolation's. They will establish several more "fact finding" committees. This of course, is in the light most contrary to our form of government—but they don't care. They have not been placed in office to re-affirm the "Palladium of Liberties" we are supposed to enjoy. They're here to make us safe, and to combat crime and to maintain law and order *at all costs, even if it means destroying the society itself*. Everything else—becomes very much secondary, *especially* if it has anything to do with the constitution, or freedom, or personal rights or liberties. We are just the plebecite. We can be managed, we are expected to assume our "mutual obligations and shared responsibilities," silently as we suffer through them.

So, I called Mr. Leslie's office several times to meet with him. Well, of course we understand that he was *much too busy* to meet with a mere mortal such as I. Perhaps Ms. Clinton—yes! He'd meet with her. But me? I had to literally break in the door just to meet with just an associate.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Finally, I did establish a meeting with one of his office staff who had something to do with the Judiciary. I will never forget this meeting, for it exemplifies, ground zero what is wrong with government and what stations fathers have within the modern corridors of power.

I met with a droll woman in about her mid-thirties, and we went into a room to where she sat down, and were I stood up pacing because I couldn't sit down. I think I attempted to, but; was so anxious as I immediately stood up again. I knew something was very wrong when she said, "So...what is it you want?" with a dispassionate sigh as to indicate I was truly wasting her time. I was not dissuaded however as I immediately handed her two copies of my FRFS and a copy of Dr. Daniel Amneus' book: *The Garbage Generation*, and begged both she and the senator to read it. Well, she kind of lightly perused the FRFS as I continued talking—telling her what a terrible plight fathers were in with these rogue courts. How fathers really did want their children, and how these courts and the whole system were intent on something else, which I postulated; could only be the crime to steal from us, for that was all that was really happening.

Upon each affirmation I made, upon each fact and figure I told her, she literally, and I'm being completely truthful and serious about what transpired during this meeting; blandly looked out the window and said: "Uh-huh." To each and every point I made. It was terribly rude, and most unprofessional. The only thing she didn't do was to yawn. I was enraged. Finally, unable to take anymore of her callous indifference to me, I virtually yelled at her.

"Okay!" I said. "You want to know what I want done? I want Tim Leslie to pass Legislation reversing all these facts and figures! You have Mr. Leslie pass legislation giving women this perverse system that fathers suffer through—and conversely—you start letting men enjoy what special "Super-Rights" these women have over the past 30 years!!!"

This got her attention. She *immediately*, and I mean *immediately* sat up as if probed by a proctologist who had no particular liking to her, and she opened her mouth to say something; and nothing came out. The word formed, and hung on her lips, while I waited expectantly for her reply—but there was just total silence. Soon, after about five very long seconds, her face started turning red with embarrassment. She then started to fade sitting back again into her chair, as I was going to say something in reply to her silence—and then I could see her eyes light up with another thought—and she moved forwards again; and *again*, her mouth held open with a word buried in its recesses, yet; *again*, *nothing came out*. *Again*, *there was just an embarrassed silence!* Finally she just sat back defeated in her chair and exhaled. She nodded her head sadly "No." That was her



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

only real response. She just mutely shook her head once or twice "no." As if to dismiss the whole affair.

Meanwhile, I was seeing red. I was just so angry at this total malfeasance and outright disrespect to not only my plight, but to millions of other men and families everywhere. What happened here was outrageous, it was terrible, and it showed me an ugly reality of why our government no longer works for mere mortal Americans.

Finally, I just got my jacket, as I had put on a business suit for this whole charade, and as I got it and turned to her, and just laid it out on the line. I said: "I want Mr. Leslie to read all this information. I want a report from him, specifically telling me, what he intends to do about this disaster. I want his response mailed to me within the month." I said as I turned and left.

I never heard another word from them.

Upon writing this I am reminded of what Lincoln said during a similar observation. He wrote:

I have always thought that all men should be free; but if any should be slaves, it should be first those who desire it for themselves, and secondly those who desire it for others. Whenever I hear anyone arguing for slavery, I feel a strong impulse to see it tried on him personally. [*Address to an Indiana Regiment*, March 17, 1865; Abraham Lincoln.]

One of the largest issues which many of the fathers rights community dwell upon is the singular issue of out-of-control power within the home. Power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely this maxim goes. This is undeniably true. However, in the sense of familial power relationships, the true power gained there within is not one of despotism, rather; it is one of relationship. Does such power get out of control—most certainly. However, the distribution upon such aberration is a minutia compared to present levels, and even at present levels while the nuclear family unit and fathers are under direct and sustained attack: it is still extremely negligible. In 1997 alone, there were approximately 1,215 died from child abuse *and* neglect.. Compare this with shopping cart injuries which estimates range at about 25,000 a year; and you start to gain an appreciation of the magnitude of the pretended problem here. Compare this with the 52,000 deaths of Vietnam or the 600,000 deaths in the Civil war and you can appreciate the miniscule size of this problem. Side this with recent statistics of 35,000 firearm deaths, or 300,000 unhealthy eating habits deaths—and we are seeing orders of magnitude 300 times what the supposed ‘child abuse’ problem really is. Again, re-establishing Patriarchy will not enlarge this 1,215 figure, rather—this figure will go considerably down. For this one figure, we pay on the order of 1.2 Trillion

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

dollars a year in government subsidies to protect these children, and we incarcerate on the order of 100,000 men to keep them 'in line.'

If we have the courage to abstractly reason that this is a phenomenal waste of monies, then; we might recognize the predicate that re-establishing the Father as the sole head of house hold and to secure within him his natural station, from that stability of power we will once again obtain the stability within the family which has been missing for so long. For the abstract proof of this is inherent in power itself, for the truly powerful person does not require power to rule over others, and therefore—such power is benign to him. He doesn't need it. Conversely, set the current feminist struggle for power within the home and you thereby see such inner conflicts rise exponentially as to people struggle to find some natural order and quiescence within the home.. Thereby, if you think about this, there is a safety and stability in denoting power to one individual in the home—and that should be where it always was vested, within the Father.

This is but one reason why the Feminist system cannot work within the home. The home *needs* a leader. That leader must be able to rule to establish a sovereign, robust entity: the family. This of course refutes any tendencies towards subsidy, which again; the Single Female Headed Household's require.

This issue again boils down to the simplest fact that *somebody* factually is going to have to rule within the home. You can paint pretty words on this and redefine it into a different Politically correct terminology—but this fact remains. In this domain, there is only going to be four choices: 1.) the Father, 2.) the Mother 3.) the Children, or 4.) the State. I think the body of this work has already established the delimiter statistics between these four choices. By these facts alone, the intelligent choice can only be number one, the Father.

As Nelson Mandela stated above: we are the light. We must be resolute in the fact of who we are, and thereby, rightfully assume our proper place. For some this is hard, because they would rather push their children off to others because the pain of separation is too great otherwise. Fathers try to be fair to everyone else except themselves. Again, they must realize that they are the weakest link of the Family, and they must resist this urge to adduce themselves that somehow they are doing good by separating themselves from their children. This is why we must fight to resist these Judges who unjustly rule with a feminist agenda who implement these separations—and analyze where this has gotten us, and our society...not to mention what is had done to our children.

Again, Fathers must ask themselves a large question, one that I haven't had answered yet. This question is: Who is implementing the basic tenants and beliefs of America? Of supporting goodness instead of evil;

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

of inculcating mores and wholesome standards within our children; of standing up against wrongs; of charity, truth, and justice; and our American way of life?

Many will say the Radical Right Wing and Christian fundamentalists, but they are wrong. They don't implement these things, they just advocate them, which is something completely different. I'm asking what person is actually handing the torch of our civilization on to the next generation? It's supposed to be the Family, but it is not anymore.

I mean to the greatest extent; no one is doing this. It is the function of families to teach these things, and pass these noble legacies, to teach morals, to imbue fairness and proper socialization. However, if we purview our present society, we can see such truths and beliefs have become a lost mindset. Many Generation X people can mouth most feminist doctrine, but ask them who William Penn was, and why he is important to us. Ask them to explain Patrick Henry's famous speech, and what meaning it has to them. Ask them who rules within their own homes—and see what answer you get.

Clearly, there has been a cult type brainwashing of our citizenry who no longer know these things or even the basic precepts of this nation. When "leaders" such as Ms. Clinton and others come along and chant their mantra—these people do not have the tools to understand how they are being compromised, and they have no idea to the extent of how they are being subverted. This engineered ignorance, has left us all in a very precarious position—then many wonder why the media consistently refuse to air such countervailing information to a national audience...

We must therefore again become conquerors, and not bow our head to this present insanity. We must seize the day, and not let this enemy pass, for unfortunately; it has come to us upon our watch, and we are mandated to meet it, and refuse its continuance. Thereby, we must start speaking in a new tenor, in recognition of our problems and of these treason's. We must discuss the hard issues about what to do with the criminals who dared thought they would get away with these crimes. We must start formulating a justice of how we can consummate with the least impact against our society, effective measures against these people within our government and courts, who have knowingly set this plague upon us for their profit. We cannot allow them to sit in the public trust any longer. We cannot allow them to profit by their profligate actions. We must severely penalize these people to leave a legacy for future Legislatures and future Magistrates that they will have no other Gods before them other than ones of American Constitutional Law and Justice. This, unfortunately, has been lost to us, generationally—and we must restore it, lest we be lost.

We must not be dissuaded from this impending retribution, we cannot allow these crimes to go unpunished. Their acts have not only stolen un-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

told legacies and profits from the American peoples, but they have also needlessly killed literally *millions of people* from their fallow acts—which these acts were, and still are, patently non-Constitutional. If the real magnitude and scope of this fraud were ever revealed to this nation; we most certainly revert into a tribal rage that would make all previous bloody revolutions pale in comparison. This of course, is the Krell Machine which they wrought—and exactly like the Krell, they had no idea that as the power in it built, that soon it would consume them as well. Because of the exigency of our situation—we have reached that time—and now the Machine, the machine of their own making, must be allowed to work against those who built it. This is inevitable and it is just.

A man who bears arms against his government or who takes any preparatory measure towards that end can be punished; but revolution as a subject of discourse may not be outlawed any more than a defense, criticism, or advocacy of any political, philosophical, or religious creed. Bigamy may be outlawed; but the discussion of it, its defense and its approval, may not be made illegal. [William O. Douglas, *The Anatomy of Liberty, The Rights of Man Without Force*, by Ruth Nanda Anshen, ©1963, Trident Press Books, New York, Lib. Cong. Cat. Card No., 63-12572; p. 9.]

The Fathers Rights movement must start to make earnest discussion in regards to this issue—as it is our duty. There is an unlawful out-of-control arrogance, in our courts, in our government, throughout the structure of society that is breeding a new fascism throughout government. All people now fear government—as with all systems of redress now closed to citizens, we have entered a new terrorist state of tyranny, with no bounds or constraints whatsoever. Clearly, this rogue entity has usurped American law, and it has *directly* waged outright war against its own citizenry; a *mixed war*, of a tyrannical government against its own people. We have case precedence for handling such treason's in this country. Our forefathers had to deal with similar treason's by Tory American's who sided with a lesser foreign enemy, the British. We should use that as a focal point to these discussions, and begin to plan accordingly against our domestic enemies.

This will be a tough discipline to initiate, however; such commitment will establish a realization of our American culture once again. The clear message of this book is to not believe or trust in me, nor government, nor the courts—but rather, as our American design compels us, **to trust ourselves**. *This is where the real power is, and fathers have this*, and our domestic enemies know this. This is what the Black community has missed over the past four centuries. They have been enslaved so much, that presently they flinch at the true American dream, which is *not subsidies, nor affirmative action* and most certainly, not the courts nor gov-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

ernment...but *themselves*. When they understand and decide to stand on their own two feet, along with the rest of us, then; like the saying goes, "we may have to suffer and pick cotton, but at least we pick it together."

Presently, there is a backlash against people within this system—and all too quickly the backlash has become uncontrollable, and predictable;

### Official and His Wife are Slain in Driveway

RANCHO CUCAMONGA, Calif., March 20, 1999 (AP) -- A Los Angeles County Official and his wife were gunned down Thursday night in their driveway.

The official, H. George Taylor, 68, a Superior Court commissioner, was killed inside his white Mercedes. Neighbors said his wife, Lynda, was found dead on the garage floor.

San Bernardino County sheriff's investigators would not discuss a possible motive. Mr. Taylor became a commissioner in 1986 and handled family law cases. [The New York Times, Sunday, March 21, 1999, p. 29.]

Malcolm X fully recognized this when he said "when Black people make revolution, the majority of white folks will rise up with us." [*Malcolm X, In Our Own Image*, Joe Wood, Editor, @1992, St. Martin's Press, Inc., 175 Fifth Avenue, New York, NY 10010, ISBN 0-312-06609-0, p. 13.] For if we do not recognize to fight and protect each others freedom's, neither shall either of us enjoy the blessings of Liberty.

This is a clearly recognized defense mechanism as to what is going on, and it shows that there is an undeclared war going on against what are clearly understood as arrogant, insolent and rogue institutions. Without redress, without any law available to Americans, the only solution can be armed conflict, which will grow exponentially as these recognized tyrannies grow.

### The Constitution gives us 'rights' in court...

Unfortunately, we have traveled far away from our Constitution. The problem is that agencies (and lower Civil courts) don't recognize our rights...

The reason civil courts don't recognize our rights is because very few people ever appeal their decisions, forcing a cleanup.

#### **...but the agencies don't recognize these rights...**

Judges routinely give away their responsibilities (defer) to agencies which don't recognize our rights. The reason agencies don't recognize our rights, is because the agencies are set up under a separate-legal system. States create a System of Administrative Laws (SADLAWS) which bypass Constitutional protections, remove "due process" from its procedures and actions, and have their own executive, legislative, and judicial branches within itself (a violation of our Constitution's separation of powers).

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

**A very sad day for America...** This 'administrative law' system has no outside checks and balances. It is a "protection" system that does its' own investigations, interprets its own information, has its own data base of information (that it may exchange all across the United States) and makes its' own rules. By refusing to separate powers, *the agencies have three times more power than any other part of government.* (Powers that our forefathers knew was abusive when acting unchecked.) [*Where Have all the Good Fathers Gone?* Child Support and Custody, Douglas O'brien, ©1997, Skid 18 Press, P.O. Box 60630, Fairbanks, AK 99706; ISBN 0-9637496-2-5; pp. 30-31.]

Now one point must be addressed is imperative to us all. This regards women. As Alexis De Tocqueville noted earlier, the women had a venerated station within the American experience. Unlike today, she was vested with an inordinate station within the home, and especially community. It is clear, that modern Feminism has clearly fallen short of even reaching this level of respect, honor and station in life. She was restrained willingly, through the contract of marriage of which she was bound. This of course made marriage an extremely viable and carefully chosen institution. Unfortunately, we have trashed this institution beyond recognition, and from this; there is no stability either in the home nor community for women, and much, much less for men. There can be no denying that men need women, and women, most certainly need men. Ours is a symbiotic relationship, and as we join in that sacred institution, everyone benefits from that association.

We can find no other replacement for the wife. Men have crossed oceans, they have waged wars, they have done the silly, and the incomprehensible in which to acquire one mate to cling to throughout life. This is not a bad thing—and many men now go to foreign lands to bring back wives willing to fulfill this needed function, not as slaves as the feminists have indoctrinated us to believe, but rather—as wives. The do this because the American female product in which the feminists have developed, has become unmarketable, and untenable. Through their "superiority"—they have become inferior—all the while desperately trying to emulate men.

Emerging as a revitalized movement in the 1960's, feminism reflected women's social discontent, which had arisen in response to the decline of the male breadwinner ethic and the perceptions—heralded in Philip Wylie's 1940s castigation of the evil "mom"—that Western society does not value highly the roles of wife and mother. Women's dissatisfactions, nevertheless, have often been aggravated rather than alleviated by the feminist reaction. To mitigate their discontent, feminist argued, women should pattern their lives after men's, engaging in casual sexual intercourse on the same terms as sexually predatory males and making the

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

same career commitments as men. In pursuit of these objectives, feminists have fought unceasingly for the ready availability of legal abortion and consistently derogated both motherhood and the worth of full-time homemakers. Feminism's sexual teachings have been less consistent, ranging from its early and enthusiastic embrace of the sexual revolution to a significant backlash against female sexual promiscuity, which has led some feminists to urge women to abandon heterosexual intercourse altogether.

Contemporary feminism has been remarkably successful in bringing about the institutionalization in our society of the two beliefs underlying its offensive: denial of the social work of traditional homemakers and rejection of the traditional sexual morality. The consequences have been pernicious and enduring. [*Domestic Tranquility, A Brief Against Feminism*, by F. Carolyn Graglia, ©1998, Spence Publishing Company, 501 Elm Street, Dallas, TX 75202, ISBN 0-9653208-6-3; p. 3.]

The loss of this woman who held and met the daily duty, and discipline of marriage sacred, has been a great sadness to countless millions of men. The feminist have brought us no joy to us in this regards. This dissolution has also done untold harm to our children, who are in certain jeopardy under this present dominion. I can most assuredly confirm to you, that many men have had their dreams deferred because you were missing in their lives. They have never married, nor shall they ever. The new found independence of women, has been a substantial loss both to men and fatherhood and society itself, who has been crippled by this. And if this feminist course is continued, we will see a steady decline in marriage, even during times of economic boom, due to the fact that if we men cannot depend on you—then the marriage contract becomes meaningless, which is has done so, directly by feminist design.

### A Democratic Revolution in the Family

What we are witnessing now—and participating in—is a revolution in the family. The way we live our personal lives, with whom and how, is being questioned and debated in a ground-breaking and important revolution. The fundamentalist reactionary forces that are calling for the "preservation of family values," opposing this democratization, are wrong to insist that the revolution is causing harm, and have no statistical base for such claims.

One constantly hears that the family is in trouble, that it doesn't work anymore, that we must find ways to help it. But does it matter if the family is in trouble, if it doesn't work anymore? If the family doesn't work, maybe there is something wrong with its structure. [*The Hite Report, On the Family*, by Shere Hite, ©1994, Grove Press, 841 Broadway, New York, NY 10003, ISBN 0-8021-3451-3; p. 345.]

This is the direct opposite position that Ms. Clinton would have us believe. Ms. Clinton begs us not too look back to the success of the pastoral

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Family of the 1950's—yet conversely now; Ms. Hite begs us to look back and see how it failed!

What Ms.'s Hite and Clinton really want us to do is *not* to recognize the massive compendium of facts and figures which clearly are only associated to the family breakdown and the creation of the Single Female Headed Household—they want to enjoin a feminist supplied sophistry, blind to the massive facts of feminist failure, yet conversely acutely visionary to their "Brave New World" design of the 'new' American family.

As this book has proven, it isn't the American Family that needs help...in fact...we are begging government and the feminist *to just leave it alone*. The thing that *really* needs help is Ms.'s Hite and Clinton's new blended, extended and single families, which of course need *massive government funding and massive public debt to be eternally managed by their Social Service experts who now obtain eternal careers to control the herds of the faceless masses. "The offspring follow the condition of the mother. This is the law in the case of slaves and animals..."* This is what they are really establishing.

This is tragedy. This is disaster. This feminist dominion of our mind-sets and our lives, has most certainly caused infinitely more damage and sadness than it has anything else.

This country, and American men in particular; need subservient, dutiful wives to help form new, traditional two-parent families.. We need such women to dominate, but rather to depend on. To trust. To join as one. There is a difference. And that difference, contrary to all the feminist literature, out of all their doctrines, has never been eloquently positioned as an affirmative intent concurrent with *their* rule. And as such, the one component never discussed which we entreat is imbued in the word "love." We Patriarch's need to assert who we are, we need that responsibility; and in return; you get the universe of what we can provide in return by love. Ms. Friedan says that marriage develops into a malady of which it evolves into a "problem with no name." Indeed, the marriage institution is not a simple one. It takes discipline, cohesion. Duty. And station. It takes a superior mind. Unfortunately, things do not always work out—but regardless, the sanctity of marriage and our concomitant station within marriage must remain inviolate. Because in the final analysis, we are an asset to each other when brought together as one, and in this condition; we have the ability to ascend all temporal dissonance's. Let it be therefore, written and acknowledged here; that we need you to consummate this special condition in life. For the reality is that although men may genetically and hedonistically desire many partners, we can only have but one true wife.



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

The present plague of feminism has made this search eminently difficult; almost a pyrrhic endeavor, not to mention the fact that it has hurt us—and delimited many of our dreams. But as Patriarch's, under the present construct, we can neither enter this institution of marriage, nor recommend it to future generations as its contract has become nothing more, than a impotent epiphany.

There is a new age ascending where men will be men. This new tyranny that has plagued us by feminism has held us all back for much too long. It is time to re-establish the American dream, and more importantly, the American government.

One of our main endeavors as Patriarch's is to establish an environment of families in which they can accrue their wealth for their own benefit. Upon the reinstitution of Patriarchy, we must allow families the direction to keep what they earn. With a dutiful wife managing the home and with the male again as the main protectorate and breadwinner; we can once again re-establish this nation as a nation of savings. This will have the impact of charge-pumping private industry which will provide and diversify our economic base. No longer can we allow government to extrude our money for their special interest agenda's. Through solid two-parent families, we must re-engineer a smaller government system and a more robust small business private industry platform. This can only be done if we allow our individual citizens the ability to keep what they earn. Our freedom must economically well from the bottom of society, upwards.

We must understand the underlying dynamics of the range of issues which we have addressed here, and the scope of their effect within our society. It cannot be understated how detrimental the effect of fatherlessness has been to this country. It is just incontrovertible. Strangely, I find it remarkable that such relationship has not been established and discussed in a national venue, as this most assuredly effects us all. However, we must delimit these observations in the harsh light of reality: is feminism totally responsible for the national debt? Of course not. Is fatherlessness totally responsible for national incarceration rates? No. Is fatherlessness directly responsible for drug use, teenage suicides, gang membership, teenage murders, adolescent crime, teenage pregnancies, falling SAT scores, high school drop out rates and teenage illegitimacy rates? No, of course not.

However, when we dissect those social pathologies, we concurrently keep on obtaining a direct causal relationship between these things and the incidence of fatherlessness. This causal relationship is strong enough, as to warrant further examination. *At least* public discussion. Yet, strangely; when such issues are brought to the attention of either the public forum, or to such radically effected institutions themselves—such as

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

in our efforts to get the NRA to discuss this connection—we are strangely met with mulct silence. This is a rather a unique approbation to facing the facts of these issues, and I personally am quite concerned at this mulct attitude.

Again, when we start to address the causal relationship between the public monies afforded this issue to directly attack and debilitate fatherhood itself, thereby adding fuel to the fire in regards to enhancing the pathologies related to fatherlessness—we are again met with a disjunctive set of logic for continued sustention of these clearly failed policies. It is as if these elite regimes embedded throughout the social infrastructure are well aware they are driving this nation upon the shoals of disaster—and if given a map—they will do so even quicker.

Again, the tendency of this system to speak of everything else in regards to these social pathologies and what have become now, national tragedies; and to cogently and intentionally avert the argument away from fatherlessness, is quite distressing indeed. The contemporary feminist movement is more than willing to bring their causal suppositions for these disasters shrilly forwards in a rising staccato of public awareness. Their intellectual domain has become pedantic, predictable and tired. It is on its last deathbed. There is only so long you can scream about abuse, guns, television and "save the children" until it just doesn't have any effect anymore. We have clearly reached this point in time as the national public consciousness is beginning to role their eyes against such continued affirmations.

We can even see this in individual examples to where this fetid feminist technique has devolved to. Amy Fisher, the "Long Island Lolita" has incessantly brought false rape charges against prison guards, her lawyers and anyone else she can malign in which to gain her freedom. This doesn't happen by chance, but rather by example, as presently the national feminist movement has garnered too much sin against them in this one category alone. More importantly, these false allegations have become, not the exception; but the rule. This again, is a great danger to a free loving society, who must then suffer through false allegations, which factually have imprisoned many, many innocent people.

This nation, and we Patriarch's in particular, must demand in no uncertain terms, a complete and broad review of every, single, male prisoner found guilty of abuse, sexual assault or rape; and immediately release those who were placed into that institution without any hard evidence whatsoever. We have countless untold numbers of 'Carlos's' languishing within our prison system who, in fact; may be absolutely innocent, placed or rather coerced into prison by and through the present court terrorist activities, and nothing more. Lawyers, District Attorneys and Judges should be held fully, criminally, and financially accountable for these

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

false imprisonment's, which only come about through the false implication of a Feminist driven law which needs these sacrifices in which to justify its continued existence. What has happened here to many men is not only a crime against them, it is a sin against them, their families, and our nation which must take responsibility of this disaster.

Might we let out some prisoners who are guilty? Yes...most certainly. However; I am convinced that they are strangely in the vast minority within this singular group. To the greatest part, we will be freeing mostly poor, men; of every color and demarcation. This has been really the extent of their crimes. This, and nothing more. Thereby, we must do the right thing in regards to this issue, and more importantly, take note, study what has happened to us that such an errant socio-political movement was implemented which has transgressed our most basic laws and philosophies in which to imprison these poor men. We as a society must resolve that we shall obey our own laws and never incarcerate an innocent man again. No matter how supposedly noble the social cause.

The Patriarchal community has a huge task just like this ahead of it. We must totally dismantle and forever forbid Family Law and the Family Codes within this nation. We must categorically end Feminist Jurisprudence as an institution, within our time. This is a mandate to all Fathers placed forwards under exigent circumstances, and full war conditions.

Now, are we saying that in every single case that Fathers should be allowed to rule over their children? No. Of course not. The human experience has shown us that there are indeed, people like Jeffery Dahmer out there. There are also Susan Smith's. But they are at one extreme end of the Bell curve, and in accordance with statistical analysis on this subject, we must provide for the general case, not the exceptional one as feminist are compelled to do. This means that we must bring back the essence of the Common Law into this society. We must bring back the law of the highest reason which has been totally devoid from this subject. No longer does government adhere to this simple common law principle, which provided us with a stability which established the greatest nation on earth.

A mother who stood idly by as her boyfriend repeated sexually and physically abused her three daughters, including one who later died, should be flown at taxpayer expense to Florida four times a year to visit her two surviving girls, Illinois officials are recommending....

At trial, testimony showed that [the mother] had for years stood idly by as her three daughters were beaten and raped by [the boyfriend]. In some instances, she had been in the same bed with [the boyfriend] as he sexually attacked her daughters, according to testimony.

[The mother] also was implicated in some of the physical abuse of the girls, but never was charged criminally.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

On the day [the child] suffered her fatal burns, [the mother] went to work instead of taking the girl to the hospital, testified [the mother's] oldest daughter, who was then 10. [The child] was left with her two older sisters, who tried to comfort her as she slowly went into shock and the skin peeled off her body.

..."Take any floor of any housing project in the nation. Seven or eight families struggle heroically against impossible odds, to raise their kids. Three or four do a marginal job, while one or two crack-addicted parents abuse their kids or leave them alone while they go out partying. Which family gets the homemaker, money, intensive social work services, chauffeuring to and from appointments, and several months' rent for a new apartment? You got it. [The crack-addicted family does.] The message to the underclass is, act irresponsibly and get help. Act responsibly and get nothing. Since this patronizing message involves an underclass which in our major cities is chiefly African-American, it is also a racist message, though unintentionally so. [*Wasted, the Plight of America's Unwanted Children*, by Patrick T. Murphy, ©1997, Ivan Dee, Inc., 1332 North Halsted Street, Chicago, IL 60622, ISBN 1-56663-163-7; pp. 81-82.]

This of course is the intellect which is also propagating Feminist Jurisprudence against fathers and forcibly removing them from the home, and from their vested position within that institution. There is no intellect within the Krell Welfare Machine, in fact it's anti-logic empowers it even more. This is done not by accident, but amazingly; by design.

The family, especially the Father, must be allowed to rule unfettered by any social pressure or mandates. He must be allowed to rule harshly—but not too harshly, in exact accordance with the law. He must be allowed to make mistakes. He must be given a broad and lenient brush in which argue, make points, and enact discipline. It is time that government and the feminists ability to micromanage the home and Family be categorically laid to waste. Under law, there has always been checks and balances against the abusive father. (Actually against all criminals and all crimes). Clearly, more so than there have been concomitant checks and balances against the abusive mother. There is in fact remedy under law, and the common law against parents who lose control. But for the greatest part, with factually only 1,215 children's deaths from child abuse the out of control father is in fact—not that large of a social problem. The numbers just aren't there. Concurrently, there are approximately 700 deaths involving spousal abuse, this includes both sexes, both male and female. This of course stems out of a nation of roughly 350 million people. Surprisingly, these shallow numbers have been steadily declining from the 1970s, yet; our expenditures and advertisement of these crises exponentially keep on rising! I would place forwards the proposition that this 'national crisis' of abuse, given in the light of statistical facts, is nothing more than a lie. It is propaganda. It is outright fraud.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

We must stop this, and again get back to the business of freedom. That is freedom with responsibility, with moral direction. This is a broad independent brush that must be once again placed back into those within their own homes. We must return to the common law principles of Blackstone, Coke, Bracton, and William Pitt—and allow America to flourish from the bottom up rather than being tyrannically forced to submit from the top down.

Lincoln and Lord Coke were correct in their maxims that we cannot have both freedom and slavery at the same time, we cannot be both Lord and tenant to the same property. Government cannot be both benevolent and oppressive at the same time, as a Father cannot be the leader of his own home whilst others direct him from outside his home as how to personally live.

Fathers must gain a national consciousness of how to say ‘no’ to their oppressors. Unfortunately, we are too deeply inculcated with our own sense of fair play and justice. These intrinsic features imbued within the American male have been used to compromise us all. No longer can we allow Lawyers to ‘plea bargain’ on our behalf. They must be singularly ordered what to do, and if they delineate—must be categorically fired. It will not take too many times of Judges seeing the contumacious opposition of Fathers being railroaded into plea bargains and resisting, and from this, Fathers thereby claiming no representation, no due process—to make them understand that the ruse is up. Already the uncivilized aimless Fathers Rights movement has had a huge impact on the courts. They understand that revolution is immanent. They see that the great animal is beginning to stir uncomfortably. The only thing they are doing now, is collectively holding their breath and hoping we never establish a national coalition and actually move and do something. Once that happens we will be dictating what transpires in these courts—and they will never regain control of this issue again. They presently, fully recognize this, and right now are trying to madly equalize their madly skewed custody and child support figures to our side of the fence in order to pretend that they have been ‘fair’ in their discretion upon this issue. They are trying to do this all the while maintaining a political facade to the feminist coalition whose dying embers categorically show that they are on their way out. What is funny about this is the new feminist statistics coming out to combat this, to show that the courts are in fact unfair to women, and that men actually win in courts roughly 80% of the time. I laugh and scoff at such assertions. If these feminists even remotely *think* this is true, I’m willing to stop all these courts, set up a national computer system where men merely pull a lever and ‘win’ 80% of the time—and then wait one year and watch what happens to both Welfare the child custody statistics. Lets see how many men fear this type of system as they do these present

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

criminally corrupt courts. Within one year the custody statistics would almost inverse, court cases would collapse as women would quickly understand there would be no 'Sir Galahad's' in which they could depend upon to force their injustice; and most importantly; welfare would quickly be unemployed. Sure, I'm willing to play with these blatant Feminist lies—now let's see if they are.

To be frank, most Judges hate the Feminists, and they hate Family court. However; they fully recognize where their daily bread comes from; and if any viable power base can shift the redesign of this perverse system, there will be no intellectual resistance from within the Judicial community. For the only question to be resolved here is that of money—and presently those special interests stealing those vast sums will become the main vocal resistance to the impending Patriarchal order. Everyone fully understands that this system cannot go on, that it must change, the only paradigm left to be argued is: how much will these special interests new monies amount to within the establishment of this new regime.

They are not going to like the answer we have ready for them.

Fathers must understand that this ability to say no, may be uncomfortable, but it is severely needed to save ourselves as a species and to save the American home and family. Frankly, nobody else is doing this. This body of work if anything, has established the fact that *something* is severely wrong and that *nobody* is doing anything about it. In fact, they are not even *discussing it*! If after 50 years that government cannot control this 'crisis' then; someone must. Again, I'm not asking you to trust me, rather, I am asking you to trust yourselves.

Who spends your money best? Who determines what is best for you and your family? If you answer government then; you then in fact must argue against the body of this work and its conclusions, and you must advocate that things not change. If you however; answer that you can do these things yourselves, then; you must recognize the present danger we have been posed with, implemented by domestic enemies who do not care about you, or your children or this society; only themselves; then you must side with Patriarchy.

When they ask you to fill out a form listing your wealth, we must categorically say "no." Give them zero information. Nothing. This is your right, and the more we all fight together to keep our money, and starve this beast, the sooner this plague against us will end. When a Judge does not obey the common law, as he is bound to do and he again gives the children to the mother, vituperatively say no. Do not sign anything. Do not agree with that decision. Categorically become insolent and refuse everything they do, and do not sign one thing—nothing. Give them no signature. Again, this is your right, and they cannot do anything against you for asserting your constitutional rights. We can no longer cooperate

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

and go along with these courts. If the Judges disobey these rights, its time they start crowding our prisons.

When we assume the countenance of this charging Bull Rhino—there will be nothing they will be able to do. Nothing. When the tiny Judge prods the Rhino to go left with his little stick, the Rhino must go right and break the stick and crush and destroy whoever is trying to control him. Start this precedence within our courts, and after one, two or maybe even three Judges—you'll soon see that when *their* master hands them the tiny stick to prod us and make us go left—then the Judges themselves are going to turn to them and say "no." And trust me, conversations behind the closed doors within the Judiciary community have already been discussing these issues in earnest. They know what is coming. They fully understand that they have gone too far, and are hoping metal detectors and three inch plate glass steel windows might secure them. These draconian measures have come about not because they have secured for us the 'Palladium of Liberty.' No. This has come about because they recognize their criminal acts, and now enjoin the Krell Welfare Machine to secure them with protection. They are becoming prisoners of their own making, yet; they do not really mind because most of these people inhabiting this institution are not there for the money; they are there for the power, and their own self-aggrandizement. They have a pathological need to control and rule over other people, and as such they have become petty tyrants. This is the real reason they are there.

In order to re-establish our homes, and take us out of the bondage of slavery, the Fathers Rights community is going to have to look at and change these following flaws within our present society:

1. **Fatherlessness.** As we have demonstrated throughout this book, this is the major flaw within this society presently. We are only being used as cattle in order to supply funds for the Feminist grand socialist experiment to change this nation from a Free American Republic, to "something else." Re-establishing Fatherhood as a national mandate within our homes will have the following effects.
  - a. It will generate, and accumulate wealth and surplusage within the Family. This has been lost to several generations of American families and has been a major flaw of this society. Wealth must return to the homes so we can again become a nation of savings and not debt.
  - b. It will to a great extent stop the rampant social pathologies which now undeniably plague this nation. It will greatly reduce the criminal 'spike' shown in previous chapters, that children ages 15 to 25 are prone to commit.
  - c. It will provide a healthy environment to men, women and children in which statistics clearly show, flourish in such an environment.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

This will reduce both present health costs and attendant social health cost expenditures.

- d. Father based households will greatly reduce prison rates. For both men and children who presently, have been socially abandoned and suffer the greatest incarceration rates due to Fatherlessness, will in this new regime, now have well defined places and responsibilities, and thereby; most probably will not be entering prison any longer.
  - e. The complete collapse of Welfare as an institution in America. Welfare can then become redefined and again, specifically help persons who are debilitated in this society, and really need societies help.
  - f. Education scores will quickly ascend as we have shown, educational test scores and Fatherhood are closely related. Something which has been lost generationally. Either one or two things will happen here. Either our schools will be able to reduce costs because the reimplementation of fatherhood, or there will be a huge expansion of infrastructure as the Feminist 'Police State' mentality is removed from our schools, as we change from a Tribal influenced society to a Patriarchal order. Or, these vast sums of money can be spent in other ways: reduced costs per student returned to the tax-payer; funds saved for college grants; re-establishment of sports and other extracurricular activities which have been hit hard and reduced under Feminism.
  - g. Astronomical tax savings to the general public and tax-payer must be implemented as our prison systems, court systems, and welfare systems contract. This again is going to add to a nation of savings which, again has been devastated by government implementation of Feminist inspired socialism, the Krell Welfare Machine. Conceivably, we are speaking in terms of tax savings up to 75% of what we are presently paying for.
  - h. Divorce rates will go down as no longer will Females have an easy way out of the institution of marriage. They will have to develop ways in which to work things out within the home and family. They will have to rededicate themselves to that institution.
  - i. Marriage rates will go up as men *and women* once again will be able to depend upon the security of that institution.
  - j. Eugenics. Since women will no longer have easily 'disposable marriages' they will have to choose the *best* husband they can. No longer will young females be impregnated by "bad boys" as such acts will destroy them. The generational welfare class will no longer be an influence, propagating children to obtain Welfare benefits. Therefore, the act of a woman getting pregnant will become more carefully planned than it is now. This will have a great impact as women will be forced to choose the best possible mate they can. After 20 to 100 years of this natural selection, there will be a marketed rise in the Eugenics of the human species in this nation.
2. **Our money system.** This is one of the greatest dangers to our free society. It is a silent thief, and an even more insidious killer. Presently,



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

the cash in "Dollar Bills" in your pocket, currently known as "Federal Reserve Notes" (FRN's) are worthless paper. Our whole system of money is a fraud. When you 'spend' them (you are not spending them you are 'discharging a debt') you are only assuring Congress that they can put you and future generations into further debt. Spend \$10 to see a movie and you have just given congress a \$10 check to go spend in Uganda for instance, (or whatever else it deems fit). This of course has led to an uncontrolled government, and more importantly, it has led to a leakage in the ship of America. No longer is our work getting placed into individual American bank accounts, it is going "somewhere else," to unseen masters, most certainly the IMF or World Bank. This money, developed from the breadth of our labours is *not* being reinvested here—it is being siphoned out—and neither we nor future generations are allowed to benefit from our own labor. This is a substantial problem, many Americans do not even know it is happening, and they can't even comprehend how it works (which would take another definitive work just in itself to explain properly). But it is a theft, just as much as Government Inflation or raising of the Interests Rates is a theft from you. Anytime 'they' want more money; all they have to do, is raise these rates, and suddenly, you are paying more for nothing in return. Our present money system under the Fraud of the FRN's is a similar perversion. If Families are going to succeed in this nation, if our American government is going to succeed, we must be in control of our own wealth, presently; we are not.

3. **Courts.** Jefferson and others recognized that this branch of government could be susceptible to corruption and become a rogue element and an affront to the cause of freedom in this nation. As many of us know, this is an understatement of our present problem. My purview on this subject after careful empirical review is that this entity is no more than an organized crime syndicate, enforcing Anti-American Law and tyranny, and then laundering money for various government agencies and corporations. This is going to be a difficult task as really, this system has become so insolent and so out-of-control, that by its own actions, it has left us but little choice; but to overhaul it, to take those individual tyrants out from their office and to hold them eminently accountable under law. As in the case of *Olmstead v. U.S.* stated, we must hold them to a 'scrupulous' and exceptional standard of the law. We must make an example out of them, not out of visceral needs, but rather, we must set an example to hold off future criminality from that branch of government. Secondly, we must get the ABA out of our courts. First within the Judges themselves, and in the present mandate that citizens can 'only' have "Lawyers" represent them, rather than what is written and allowed under all Constitutional law, and that is "Counsel of Choice," which is really, anyone whom that citizen chooses. This could be a Lawyer, or a Priest, your co-worker, your Father, Grandfather—anyone you want. This is understood birthright which has insolently been denied to us, and thereby, many persons, such as "Carlos" mentioned throughout this book, has been railroaded by the "Officers of the

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Court" which are the citizens "supposed" representation in the "Lawyer" who is really working for that court and not the citizen in need of true legal help. Thirdly, we must as a public, start picking other people for this office other than the Lawyer class. All this has done is to assure elite regimes easy entry of corruption into our courts system. Finally, we must remove these "Gold Fringe Flags" from these tribunals and re-establish "the law of the highest reason" within these courts. We have to throw out this perverted 'discretion' and the related 'equity' dominant factors within these courts and replace them with the ideal of Justice, which has been far removed from these tribunals for too long. These courts are an intolerable rogue entity within our society, and they have to be presently dismantled and replaced with their original function—which was Justice. Re-implement these solid principles, and many of our problems will cease to be problems, yet a further saving to the tax-payer.

4. **The Vote.** Presently, the American vote has been corrupted beyond comprehension. It is so bad, that recently, a book has been written on it called *Votescam*, which documented how the vote has been so undermined that Election volunteers walked off the election in Florida, leading to the investigation of that campaign which revealed that corruption. This is happening all across America, and I as well as others have recognized this criminal perversion of our vote. Thereby, my analysis is that we must replace the vote altogether. This idea came to me on a Sunday morning, awakening me out of a sound sleep. My idea is called "Lotteried Government." Which is nothing more than the establishment of a database of the local citizenry, and from that a "Selective Service" of the citizenry into the ranks of government. This would save untold amounts of monies, while at the same time virtually eliminating all forms of corruption. The greatest benefits to this system of selecting people for office from the general public for office are two-fold. First being that we will finally stop this elite royalty within government from ruling corruptly over us by replacing them with average citizens. Finally, Doctors, Teachers, Welders, Laborers, and other people from the mainstream class of America. The second benefit of this form of selecting our government officials is that those persons entering government after their terms were up in office, could no longer be in government again. (A condition of accepting the benefit of public office.) The point of this being that *they would have to live with the laws they pass, just like the rest of us*. Thereby, if they increased *our* insurance rates, within a few short years, they would be suffering through their unfortunate choice of law. This would to a great extent, stop most of the Corporate corruption which now infests our present form of governance, which again, is stealing monies from the American populace. The other benefits to this suggestion of Lotteried government are almost innumerable, and again; as a systems engineer, I can confidently state that this should be our next form of selecting those for commission into our Representative branch of government. Strangely this idea has been gaining momentum. Gerry Spence in his book *Give Me Liberty!* He

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

calls this system of government: "Pancake Democracy." Both of us are recognizing the same problems effecting the conceptual ideals within this American society, and separately coming to the exact same conclusion. We must first recognize that these present elite in Government who 'pretend' that they are somehow eminently 'qualified' are in contrast rather eminently 'corrupt.' Also, my main point with Lotteried Government is, what part of Self-Governance don't you understand? Clearly, we as a common people can run this nation much more efficiently than the present Imperial Royalist regime who are embedded throughout our government. This suggestion must be given extreme consideration if we are indeed to plant the crop of the American Dream to which our children may harvest when their time comes to inherit this nation. As things set right now, they will be doomed if we do not change these things.

5. **The Executive Branch of Government.**
6. **The Legislature.**

Fathers must recognize, that we are the fountainhead to regaining a stable government. If we are not free in our own homes, and in control of our own lives, than the ideals of Freedom, Liberty and Self Governance are but a mockery. Government has gained so much power because of the fact that they have strained the economic viability of the people so greatly, that none can dare withstand even the smallest challenge from the most insignificant public servant. What great amounts of wealth they have gained, we have lost. We presently have no real surplusage in our lives because our homes have been compromised, by the government which was supposed to protect it. The average statistic is that most of the citizenry has no savings, and is only two to three paychecks away from destitution. From this construct, if government comes into anyone's life presently, they immediately bow to the corruption, for truly; nobody can't withstand the fusillade of government knocking at their door, or stopping them on our public roads, or IRS inquiries—or *anything*. Now, Americans immediately pay for these treason's, politely say thank-you; and hope and pray that they don't get recognized again.

Because American's no longer have strong stable homes, mostly due to the Father being missing, our national people are only viewed as a funding source for government, and harvested by "a multitude of New Officers, and sent hither swarms of Officers to harass our people, and eat out their substance." [*Declaration of Independence*, July 4<sup>th</sup> 1776.] Clearly, with the eradication of the American Father, a concomitant erosion of the American Middle Class has occurred as well. This of course is establishing a larger and larger slave class of people who can only immediately bow to the Master of this explosively powerful government, who no longer knows any restraints nor obeys its most basic laws any longer.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

It has become arrogantly defiant of any enumerated Constitutional restriction placed upon it.

If Fathers can once again simply assume their proper tasks of ruling within their own home, we will begin to see the ascension of the American dream once again. If women assume their roles to the right hand of their men, they will be happier and safer in the long run. From this solid platform, our children who will fare much better due to the increased wealth within the home and general society, will fare much better—and if any ‘redefinition of humanity’ is going to be done, it will be done by them, through the comfort, security and safety of their own homes. And not by Ms. Clinton and those of her ilk.

Again, we must simply rediscover the obvious. Are men destined to join with women to create stable two-parent families? The Patriarchal community resoundingly says ‘yes’ to this proposition and is committed at all costs to re-implementing this natural plan, which has been under direct attack for the past five-decades. It is time we see our enemy, and defeat him, and drive him from our lives, and most importantly; our homes. This retribution, has been long overdue.

Women who want to remain free and independent can most certainly do so. They can thereby rise within this society, from and by the content of their character. The American Experience is large enough, and benevolent enough to supply those dreams as well. But upon marriage or illegitimate birth, no longer will this society support the endeavor of Mothers gaining Unconstitutional and Non-Constitutional Super-Rights, no longer will there be such subsidy for you to explore such alternative realities at the costs, and enslavement of others. This form of life is patently over in this regards.

With Freedom, comes responsibility. The feminists have skirted this reality in their conquest for control of this society, and it has burdened this nation beyond comprehension. They have not been responsible, and they have caused great pain, and hardship in this nation. They have done this in open defiance to this nations foundational concepts which they have overturned at the cost of many, for the benefit of the select, and the few. I see Feminists as a patent threat to this nation and our form of government; and thereby; we must understand that threat, and act accordingly. I suggest in the light of the pain, war and destruction that they have caused to us all, that Feminism, and any other similar doctrines like it, be outlawed from this nation; exactly as the Germans of WWII outlawed Fascism. If these women, and other Feminists desire to ‘redesign humanity’ then; by all means let them do it—in Canada, Sweden, England, Australia—but they can no longer do it here, as their form of conquest is antithetical to a free government, and to a free society. They can implement their new humanity elsewhere, just not here in the United States of Amer-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

ica. They are the direct incarnation of the Socialist party, and have no place within our form of government. As such, and in consequence to their acts and omissions which they have harshly burdened upon the rest of society; they have been, and they continue to be a direct threat to our safety and security, and a harm to our future prosperity, and our form of government.

They are as our Founders noted, an illegitimate encapsulation of a tribal culture, the "lowest and rudest" state of civilization. They are corrupt and clandestine organization in power not to help either American children's or citizens, but rather, themselves. They use these sophistries as a cover to underscore their own interests in changing a free and Capitalist society to a Socialist Communist dictatorship. This is unacceptable, and no longer tolerated within the borders of this nation. We are either free and American, or we are not. We cannot vacillate upon this most sacred principal in which millions of American's have died in establishing and maintaining this blessing of Freedom and Liberty to our progeny.

Thereby, this all comes back to we Fathers. We must find the courage to be who we are—which are Fathers. We can no longer tolerate the usurpation of our function within our own homes. This is not only our birthright, but under American law, and in accordance with the needs of an advanced technological Western culture such as ours, it is our mandated duty to assume this leadership over our homes, our wives, and our children. We are not the monsters you have invented us to be, in recognized countervaleance; of which the facts overwhelmingly show, that you and what you have created under the false doctrines of Feminism and Government absolutism are in fact; the *real* monsters, hiding within the Krell Welfare Machine you have established and groom for our proposed destruction. We thereby categorically rebuke and refute Feminism, Family Law, Ms. Clinton and those fellow socialist like her and her ignoble "Village."

The formal lines of war have now been declared and established into existence. We will not move from these principles that "all men are created equal, that we have the right to life, liberty, property, and happiness." Our children, our wives, our homes and family have been ours, our property is ours; and no one else's. It is we as Fathers, that are in fact; the ultimate parent, and not you—as you claim such a title under usurpation and outright fraud. This Government has no constitutional station to that right, as government's do not enjoy rights, only Citizens do. There is no valid constitutional authority supporting *Parens Patriæ*.

We hereby seize these rights, these secured blessings, and forever deny them to errant political regimes. We are resolute upon these simple points of law, and will never be dissuaded from them. Those whom defy these blessings place themselves into severe jeopardy; as with no redress

## **SUFFERING PATRIARCHY**

available to us we must say these things only in the most strongest and harshest legal terms: that we retain and reserve all rights to our freedoms, and we give up none.

Completed this ninth day of March, in the Year of Our Lord and Savior, Jesus the Christ, Nineteen Hundred and Ninety-nine, at seven hours, four minutes past the morning hour, Queens, New York City.

---

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

---

### THE PROMISE OF THE FORBIDDEN PLANET

*"Show me that age and country where the rights and liberties of the people were placed on the sole chance of their rulers being good men without a consequent loss of liberty !*

*I say that the loss of that dearest privilege has ever followed, with absolute certainty, every such mad attempt."* --Shall Liberty or Empire be Sought? Patrick Henry, 1788 [From a speech made on June 5, 1788, in the Virginia Convention, called to ratify the Constitution of the United States.]

The feminists whom now control this nation, acquired power surreptitiously through their arguments and supplications presented to the American public decades earlier by the works of Betty Fredian and other first and second wave feminists. Again, they used the inherent fairness and open opportunity to speak and be heard within the public forum of the American Patriarchal archetype which formed this free and open American republic, which they then compromised to their own advantage once they were in it.

Within the first and second wave feminist writings there contained a promised land, of fairness and equality, of gender justice and social progression. Of realization of dreams deferred upon abject conditions of Patriarchal inequality and slavery. [Sexual regulation]. Exactly as portrayed in the movie Forbidden Planet, they promised that if we just built and turned on their great ethereal machine, then mankind would enter a new era of feminist progression and advancement, culminating with the fabian work of Ms. Hillary Rodham-Clinton multi-culturalist village.

Exactly as in the movie, this all was a fraud, a great ruse—the most famous and largest ever perpetrated against a national (and world-wide) peoples; for these feminists whom used the foundational precepts and words of our Founding Fathers in order to gain a foothold into the corridor's of power—had no intent of upholding those precepts of fairness, truth, and freedom. Again, as was exemplified in Chapter XX of this book, feminists completely disregard all the foundational precepts and blueprint of this nation—as again; this feminist matriarchy is of the ancient Id, those failed and rude societies of the tribal archetype, which are in fact, in direct opposition to our form of governance. As Mr. Bolick's observation's at the beginning of Chapter Eleven conclude, these multi-culturalists, although they might *mouth* the words of truth and freedom, are in fact, abhorrent to it. Ms. Clinton and her cabal cannot uphold and defend the Constitution of which she swears to uphold, as her religious belief system and political adherence and philosophies **are in direct op-**

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

**position to our way of life, and our form of governance...**...which is why she is embedded within our government: as in the movie Forbidden Planet, all she must do is wave the flag, and carefully choreograph every presentation of herself in front of the media—and a nation will slavishly follow as her real intent will be suddenly hidden from them by and from the verification and constant advertisement of the Krell Machine.

The promise of the Forbidden Planet was, the early Feminist suppli-cated us, that *if* you allowed the first law of Matriarchy to exist, ("a wom-an has the right to control her own body and her own sexuality, sic.), well, then that would free up the inhumane burden of *both* the males and females within the society whom did not want this. They plead with our sensibilities, working in direct opposition to the rules of sexual regulation and Patriarchy, defining them as "old" and "outdated"—a throwback to a more pastoral and Victorian past. This unfair, and unjust "regulation" of which Patriarchy impressed upon society to make sex work for the whole of society—was in their words, a constraint to the productivity of which the freedom of the First Law of Matriarchy would release. From this *freedom* of sexual anarchy, they promised, great things would occur, and humanity would be "redefined" in accordance with Hillary's visions.

Again, their pleadings *sound* viscerally sensible to an unsuspecting public. But the documentation of our historic past has proven **this think-ing is consummately wrong**. Again, this Feminist/Matriarchal "promise" is a throwback to a quarter million years of pre-human evolution. When man was stuck in the quagmire of "the condition of slaves and animals" of which the *superior* system of Patriarchy annihilated approximately 5,000 years ago, (as we have documented in Chapter 3 "In the Beginning" which was the main cause for modern western civilization's ascent. Again, that did not happen by chance or mistake, there was a cogent reason civilization chose Patriarchy, and that reason is intimately tied with the concomitant rise in Western Civilization. In fact, Western Civilization could have *never been established without it*.)

Yet their dogma persisted: If you gave mothers kids, they suggested; then they would be cared for more completely. If society would just allow divorce (of which both men and woman wanted desperately), well, then; much conflict would be overcome, and both men and women would be all the happier. If you wrested children away from abusive fathers (the only condition now recognized by the courts, government and media), well then they and their mothers would do so much better. If you allowed entitlements, and pushed men out of the workplace and then replaced them with women, (and minorities) well, then this nation would become more egalitarian, and fair—and justice would prevail for all to societies benefit. If you allowed women abortion, then the mass of poor children would decrease, and women would not be held in slavery of being bred as



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

animals by their brutish husbands (again, the only condition that society recognizes men) and from that there would be a decrease in the population, and men and women could now have joyous sex, without the need for an unexpected retribution.

This sounds good. However having earth as the center of the earth sounds good. Even reasonable. Thinking that the earth is flat—well, that sounds pretty wonderful and we can prove it every day by looking at the flat horizon. Etc. Socialism even sounds viscerally good (of which all these "promises" by the Feminists ultimately lead in Ms. Clinton's "Village").

Patriarchy, is the unnatural condition of mankind. It is the highly evolved and invented social condition. It's a more labor intensive and intellectually intensive system in which to promulgate within a society. (People don't viscerally think it is right. It is only after they sit down and reason within themselves the benefits of Patriarchy do they become aware of its superiority). It is also the higher, more advanced ascendant condition of mankind—and it takes secondary and tertiary thinking in order to both understand it and justify it, *and this is why it needs both social and governmental backing*. (Matriarchy does not need this backing, as when society fails, it will most certainly revert to this "lowest and rudest state of mankind", "natural" order of the tribal (Single Female Headed Household) Feminist/Matriarchal condition which our forefather's correctly labeled it. This now proliferates in the lower income and ghetto infested neighborhoods across this nation). Feminists hate the condition of Patriarchy, because it is in fact in direct opposition to their *natural order*. Matriarchy is easy to devolve into. Patriarchy, takes structure, discipline, order, and work to make successful. It needs people and societies backing in order to work.

The invention of Patriarchy, once it is understood, is then clearly embraced and implemented by those societies educated in its advantages, just like everyone understands outdated and errant theories once thought to me true. Once you understand that the earth is round, then instantaneously the whole society begins to understand it is not flat. Once you understand that the earth is not the center of the universe, then the majesty of the universe itself opens itself up to you. (Indeed, under Matriarchy, it is easier to "viscerally" feel and understand the world is flat. But implementing Patriarchy, takes scientific and empirical training and observation to *prove* the earth is round).

Feminists however; want society to be kept viscerally ignorant of Patriarchy, which is why they have a death-grip on our educational institutions, and the media and then lastly government. Patriarchy is just not politically incorrect: it is in fact, "the enemy" for Feminists. Again, exactly as in the movie, the feminists of their great Krell Welfare Machine,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

pound the ground with great power to impose Political Correctness, they allow no other view to rise above theirs, they have an intrinsic hatred of anything that even remotely disagrees with them, and they do this all in the shroud of waving the flag, of being in committees before congress as well as the town hall meetings, and most importantly—they and their associates and supporters are the only view allowed in the mainstream media.

This is exactly Krell, as our movie adumbrated, the Krell civilization itself had no comprehension what hit them, nor even what was happening. The same is true of mainstream America.

Matriarchy, of course is the ancient Id spoken of in the movie. It is the natural order that predates mankind—and as the original Maxim of Law of this book in Chapter One relates: "Partus sequitur ventrem." "The offspring follow the condition of the mother. This is the law in the case of slaves and animals; but with regard to freemen, children follow the condition of the father." Again, this Maxim of Law must be taught in every school. Every Father's Rights advocate must memorize it's truth. Every government official should be indoctrinated with this knowledge—yet; in fact—this is all kept hidden from the American public. And those people expounding this view are proactively attacked and harassed—not because they are wrong, or implementing failure, but conversely, they are attacked ***because they are right*** and are expounding the truth. For the past 60 years, this nation has been proactively creating a nation of slaves and animals by destroying Fatherhood, and implementing the regime of the lowest common denominator in its place. (The Single Female Headed Household).

The truth of the matter is, that Ms. Clinton and her Matriarchal cabal, are not asking for equality, or freedom, or truth, or justice, nor American law. What they are asking for is privilege, special treatment, entitlements, and a class and gender based system. They are asking for us to destroy ourselves, the health and welfare of the body politic and the strength of the American nation, home by home, cell by cell, Father by Father. They want everyone to trust in the tribe. Hillary's "Village." Every time they destroy a father, they have overthrown the American republic without any shots being fired. Like the Krell, they expect us to allow the Welfare Village to eat us out from within—via "secret" forms of law; which come after all of us. Again, this anti-law which now infests our courts, has utterly destroyed this nation from within. This silent Krell Machine was first recognized in a book called *The Road to Serfdom* by Frederick A. Von Hayek which described the operational values of this machine perfectly:

"Late in the war, the University of Chicago Press Published *The Road to Serfdom* by an Austrian-born economist, Friedrich A. Von Hayek. [He]

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

had set his scholarship within a general proposition that caught perfectly the mood of American conservatism. **Nazism, he contended, had not gown up on opposition to New Deal-type liberalism; such liberalism and Nazism came from the same roots.** All Western Civilization had been relying increasingly on ideas of national economic planning, and the ideas, whether called liberalism, Nazism, Socialism, or Communism, led inevitably to totalitarian serfdom." [The Crucial Decade--and after--America 1945-1960, by Eric F. Goldman; (c) 1956, Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., Vantage Books, New York; pp. 7-8.]

This book is Mr. Hayek's empirical vindication; as my proof and documentation of the existence of the Krell Welfare Machine is the exemplar of Mr. Hayek's postulate he first spoke about and made public sixty years before this writing. Over the decades these two books coalesce in their mathematical and social precision to prove both our points.

The Fascism we now see through the Krell Welfare Machine, is totally hidden and secret. It is Ms. Clinton being erudite at a town hall meeting in front of a local crowd who eagerly ask her questions—and to which she consummately, expertly and confidently answers... Unfortunately, when you turn off the Krell Machine and find out the truth of the matter—the fact then shows that she has paid off the mainstream media, has had a special setting made available, and has her cohorts in crime bussed in to "act" as a local populace and ask her pre-prepared and canned questions *to which she already knows the answers and knows via study groups that the public want to hear and will accept these carefully presented answers.* Does this get her to win? Most certainly. Does this fool and hide the truth from the American populace? You bet. Are we better off for this type of fraud and capriciousness? No.

But it is perfectly Krell, and it keeps the public from truly knowing what is going on, which is the main design of all this foolishness.

The initial promises of the Krell Welfare Machine first expounded by the feminists, have been attempted in this nation to the point where we have *conservatively* spent an advertised 5.1 to 5.4 Trillion Dollars on this failed social *experiments*. We have tried everything from "feel good" new age rebirthing techniques to (false) "Memory Recovered" syndromes and outright lies. Currently, 1.2 Trillion dollars (the national operation budget of the United States as well as China) is being collected to fund this madness yearly. All on the false, fraudulent and failed "promises" of the Feminists which have fallen by the wayside. (Note for comparison: China's *national* operating budget for one year, is a little over 1 trillion dollars!)

Yet the machine remains on. Why?

Think of it this way, you have a home, and it needs to be cooled. Let's say it is 80 degrees inside. You buy an air-conditioner to cool it...put it

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

on the house and turn it on. The next day, surprisingly, the house is now 85 degrees warmer in temperature. How odd, you think. Do you return it? No...you rationalize a bit, and you then think that perhaps the coolant needs time to circulate after being moved from the factory and store, so you keep it on. Again, another day goes by...and now the house thermometer reads 90 degrees! Again, what do you do? Clearly, the air-conditioner is failing and not doing its job. You keep it one more day, and now your home is a boiling 100 degrees! Wow! Do you keep the air-conditioner on the house? Or do you return it for another?

Well, most people confronted with this conundrum would know exactly what to do, as there is no dissonance being applied from outside parties. But in regards to Father's Rights and Child Support, you have a complete superstructure telling us we are all cool and temperate when the opposite is true. In reality however; this feminist social experiment is burning down our national house—with temperatures in excess of 100,000 degrees! From 1955 until the present, there has been a 45 degree slope rise of the Single Female Headed Household, Gonorrhea, the and Childhood Crime all linked together. (Just to name three—which are known as "Railroad Tracks" in Washington D.C. and elsewhere). This 45 degree slope has gone on unabated (constant rise in temperature in our example above). But instead of turning these failed social programs off—which any normal society would do, the Krell Welfare Machine has kept these failed systems and social projects going, to the direct affront of Fatherhood, which would not just reduce these curves, but most certainly eliminate them entirely.

Why keep this burning house of Feminism and Matriarchy going? Why keep a terrible disease like Gonorrhea, and Childhood Crime statistics on the constant rise? **Because those "railroad tracks" feed other industries needed by the Krell Welfare Machine, those of Counselors, Welfare Workers, Free Clinics, Doctors, Judges, Police, Prisons, Court Reporters, Probation Officers, Jail Guards, Healthcare workers, Psychologists, Feminists, Attorneys, and Legislator's; all demand this price from us.** The fact that it destroys and is in direct opposition to our way of life is inconsequential, because all they have to do is wave the flag at you, have the media back their lies up, set up industries to support themselves and "suddenly" the Krell Welfare Machine is good for you—even though it is not.

The promises so long ago promised, aren't even spoken of anymore. Yet still we need entitlements, still the machine demands equality; when in fact, it is the males being oppressed, disenfranchised and discriminated against. Yet still the Krell Machine compromises us, and benefits women and government via "Super Rights" never seen before in humanity.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

For example: a woman does drugs, becomes pregnant, abuses her body, addicts the baby, then has the child. She then walks down to the local hospital and roughly drops it on the desk to give it completely up. With but a mere signature and a thank you—and perhaps even a demand for a ride home--she is gone to again complete another similar act. This is now legal under the "Safe Haven Laws" proliferating throughout this nation... She can do this innumerable times, and the courts, hospitals, Counselor's, Welfare agents, CPS, Police, will be kind and thank her, and "understand" her pain.

Is this exact help available to the most noble father? No! In fact, he is now compelled not to have children *if he cannot afford it*. This means, in the future, our poor male progeny of this nation, *cannot have children*. [SEE: *Wisconsin v. Oakley*, 629 N.W.2d 200 (Wis.2000). -- Oakley poor father mandated by Judge not to have any more children.]

Yet poor, drug infested, outright whores and prostitutes can pop out diseased and damaged children at will, and happily drop them off at any Krell Welfare participating government institution... A woman who cuckolds any man, and has a child from *another man or group of men* who fools him can enslave that for the rest of his life to that child and the courts will back up this injustice with a vengeance. He at no time can participate in the "equal" Krell Machine and drop the child or his obligation off at any Krell supported state institution...but women can. The Krell Welfare Machine will stoically continue to attack any male with clean hands, with no criminal wrong done to society at all, and they will crucify him for having a child, disenfranchise him, enslave him, and ruin him—knowing he is innocent, and with full knowledge knowing they are in overt violation of law and morality. Any Father demanding ownership of his child, is not only a threat to this system, but is directly destroyed by it. No Father has any safe haven within this system.

Yet the Krell Welfare Machine stays on. As it pretends it is helping the child and helping society. Of course the facts show the exact opposite, but that is how the Krell Machine works—as it is ultimate design is to destroy by using the ancient Id (Matriarchy) against whatever it needs to in order to accrue its own power and profit. The machine is there for the machine—and nothing else.

The cavalcade of feminist promises have long ago gone by the way-side. The "promised" that once abortion was allowed, well, then pregnancies would go down. (They haven't, especially for those within the Krell Welfare Machine, as the average woman on welfare has 2.8 children (higher than two-parent families at 2.1) and stays on Welfare 'on average' from anywhere from 7 to 14 years). Now over 33 million abortions have occurred in this nation, to the detriment of both men and children, and in its place we have a Machine dedicated to murdering live fetuses in order

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

that they might profit from the body parts and extrapolated extracts sold on the market.

The promise that easy no-fault divorce would reduce friction's of relationships between men and women *have produced the opposite*. Now, there has been a flood of divorces, which has steadily risen from a low of about 3 to 4 percent at the beginning of the 1900's to a high of 63% (and beyond) presently.

Feminists promised that if you removed the sexual regulation of the female kinship system, that there would be a greater sense of harmony within the home and family. That society would no longer be burdened by the conflagration imposed by the more rigid sexual regulation of the Patriarchal system of which they hate. The exact opposite has occurred to a point where now family law now dominates our court system. Where false allegations of child abuse (up to 2 million accusations per year, and rising, most of which are totally unfounded) now promulgate an ongoing industry dedicated to placing ten innocent men in jail before they catch one guilty person beforehand, again; something directly in opposition to our form of government.

The profusion of promises of the feminists Forbidden Planet has, as exactly adumbrated by Frederick Bastiat, led to something totally different than promised, in every single area where its been implemented. The feminist promised that "if" we just allowed women to be free to work—society would benefit. It hasn't. Instead of society getting a better soldier or fireman, we have gotten worse female candidates whom have to be held to a different standard for their job, while they scream for equality and entitlements all the while.

"If" we just allow the gay and lesbian groups entitlements they asserted, well, there would be amity and harmony for all. Instead, in every area measured, from family breakups, health issues, public and private lawsuits, to lesbian violence between couples, we can see and prove that the opening of this Pandora's Box within the machine is dragging our society down. Silently, the machine eats us away from within, as the gestation of sexual disease inspired directly from this subgroup, indeed threatens us all.

Yet, the machine entreats these groups and failures—as again, it is embedded with failure, and seeks more all under the guise of "something else": equality, gender equality, fairness, humanity, etc. It's all a ruse only to sustain the machine with more failure, empire, and profit. Again, any group from the ancient Id in opposition to Patriarchy is to be groomed and supported at any costs, even if it threatens the majority of us all. Again, we must remember the Krell Empire as when they turned on their machine it destroyed them, just as it did in Rome, and every other civili-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

zation who devolved to the lowest condition of mankind embraced through Matriarchy.

### ***THE HOMOSEXUAL AGENDA*** By Michael Swift

"Gay Revolutionary." Reprinted from The Congressional Record. First printed in Gay Community News, February 15-21 1987

"We shall sodomize your sons, emblems of your feeble masculinity, of your shallow dreams and vulgar lies. We shall seduce them in your schools, in your dormitories, in your gymnasiums, in your locker rooms, in your sports arenas, in your seminaries, in your youth groups, in your movie theater bathrooms, in your army bunkhouses, in your truck stops, in your all male clubs, in your houses of Congress, wherever men are with men together. Your sons shall become our minions and do our bidding. They will be recast in our image. They will come to crave and adore us. [Full Article] [*Will The Homosexual Agenda Provoke The "Reconstruction" Of The Essential Father?* By Gerald L. Rowles, Ph.D. Tuesday, March 27, 2001.]

Of course, society has noted these denigration's before, and previous American societies had the mettle to confront this perversion of the Krell Welfare Machine:

"Oh, my countrymen! What will our children say, when they read the history of these times? Should they find we tamely gave away without one noble struggle, the most invaluable of earthly blessings? As they drag the galling chain, will they not execrate us? If we have any respect for things sacred; any regard to the dearest treasures on earth; if we have one tender sentiment for posterity; if we would not be despised by the whole world - let us in the most open, solemn manner, and with determined fortitude, swear we will die, if we cannot live free men!" [Josiah Quincy, Jr., 1788 published in the Boston Gazette]

Unfortunately, the present American male has been so beaten down, and presented with such a no win scenario, that the greatest majority of them disavow both their heritage as Americans, and more importantly their station as Fathers. A judge will without fear seize a father's child then "offer" him 50% of which he owns 100% of by and under law.

"It is a well settled doctrine of the common law, **that the father is entitled to the custody of his minor children, as against the mother, and everybody else;** that he is bound for their maintenance and nurture, [because he] has the corresponding right to their obedience and their services. 2 Story' Eq., secs. 1343-1350; 2 Kent Com. 193; 1 Bl. Com. 453, Jennes v. Emerson, 15 N.H. 486, Huntoon v. Hazelton, 20 N.H. 389." [*State v. Richardson*, 40 N.H. 272 (1860)]

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Men take this subrogation of their rights by the courts, government, and Feminists without a whimper—and then they along with the whole society wonder what is going wrong in this nation as more and more children openly kill themselves in our schools, and feed the panorama of social pathologies of which the Krell Welfare Machine feeds off of. None dare and turn and refuse the machine to turn it off, which is exactly what they must do. (It is our duty as American citizens, to turn this machine off, and hunt those whom have groomed it, and made it grow). The feminist Matriarchal system now rules openly with an open hatred and vengeance in this nation—and no father dare raise his voice to it. The wisdom of the bible itself must be noted here. "Give not your strength to women, nor thy ways to them that ruin kings." Prov. 31:3.

**"TESTOSTERONE POISONING:** ... 'Until now it has been though that the level of testosterone in men is normal simply because they have it. But if you consider how abnormal their behavior is, then you are led to the hypothesis that almost all men are suffering from 'testosterone poisoning.'" from A Feminist Dictionary, ed. by Kramarae and Treichler, Pandora Press, 1985

Again, why must we support Patriarchy? Why must we remit ourselves to the arduous and "unnatural" formation of the sexually regulated society and ordered society? The choice is clear and represented in our past, and not our present or future:

"The united States certainly has no monopoly on natural resources. And in most countries the people work much harder, on the average, than we do. We are not a superior people. Our ancestors in the Old World, starved right along with everyone else."

"There is just one answer. There can be no other. We in the United States of America have made more effective use of human energy than any other people on the face of the globe--anywhere or at any time."

Henry Grady Weaver; "The Mainspring of Progress"

This is the fountainhead of the American society. As most state constitutions admit this fact in their "Declaration of Liberties" to allow men control of their human energy:

"All men are by nature free and independent, and have certain inalienable rights, among which are those of enjoying and defending life and liberty; acquiring, possession and protecting property; and pursuing and obtaining safety and happiness." Article I, Section 1; Constitution of California (1849) [Adopted by the Convention, October 10, 1849; Ratified by the people, November 13, 1849; Proclaimed, December 20, 1849.]



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

Allow men to rule in their own homes, to control their own family and property, and allow children and females to inherit their proper place and function—and you suddenly get a society that has no need of a Welfare state. *This is the real argument and reality of what is transpiring here.* Silently, the Krell Welfare Machine has used the Promises of the Forbidden Planet proposed the Second Wave and Radical Third Wave Feminists in order to establish a socialist state "transfer of wealth" program to attack the body politic at each and every Father in this nation. In Hillary's Village, no male has the right to acquire, enjoy, protect, and defend his home and family and the courts have implemented this treason against us all. Instead, there are a host of opportunistic "experts" within the Village, both state and federal, both governmental and private, whom will tell any Father (or citizen), what he will or will not do, or what he has or has not done, what he can or cannot do. Presently, the state will inform him if he has committed a crime, or violated any entitlement or "Super Right" granted to his home and family. Of course, conversely; he has no rights...only "obligations" and nothing more. He is a slave. This is Ms. Clinton's Krell Machine inner working PROM—and there can be no other truth than this. This is the first rule of the Krell Welfare Machine—that you are a slave, and worthless, and can say nothing about you or your own children's condition. In fact, you have no say over anything. Of course, people who have endured the destruction machine find out differently:

"I had assumed that the Doctors were doing the best thing for my daughter and that I was the parent depending on them to do the best thing for her. After her death, I recognized that I was the parent--and they were merely the doctors." [Mike Watt, father of daughter Kristen who died of anorexia. From: Oprah television show Weds. December 05, 2001]

Indeed, Ms. Clinton and those within the Krell Welfare Machine will hyperventilate in front of television shows, billboards, Radio and TV advertising spots, and Government "Fact Finding" committees and panels, all inferring to the nation to empty out their pocket-books to let *them* intrude into our homes and save our own children. *They* are the best thing for our children, *we* are not. More than this, Fathers (and all males) are only sadistic abusers; who all carry and inherent *disease* handed down to from males to their sons. (No kidding. They actually said this on a massive news blackout of all primetime TV on Sunday December 03, 2001 in the greater Northern California area, where *all* television stations aired a one hour commercial-free television show where they actually said this, and during the show labeled *only* the male as the abuser, handing this "disease" down to their sons, and the female and children only as the victim, even though study after study

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

shows that *both* men and women physically abuse each other about equally. (To receive information on this Orwellian propaganda piece. Ask for the Domestic Violence "Action Kit" from the Radical Third Wave Feminist hate group Weave Crisis Line 916-920-2952 or the National Domestic Violence Hotline Line 800-799-SAFE). This is the only view the Krell Welfare Machine allows—and this propaganda is the *only view espoused from the American public. No human in the American society is allowed to say that Father's love their children. No human in the American society is allowed to say that most Fathers are not abusers. No human in this society can rise above the feminist mantra that the MEN, HAVE TO BE RESPONSIBLE, BOTH FINANCIALLY AND MORALLY for the children, even though the Krell Welfare Machine totally emasculates them and prevents them in the first instance from disciplining their children, from admonishing them, from even raising their voice, especially when the children are wrong!!!*

### **DAD GETS PRISON FOR HITTING SON**

Caught preschooler getting high on gas.

Associated Press

SEARCY, Ark. -- A man has been sentenced to four years in prison for slapping his 4-year-old son twice for repeatedly sniffing gasoline to get high. [*America the Conquered*, by Pastor Pete Peters, © 1993-1991, Scriptures for America Ministries, P.O. Box 766, LaPorte CO, 80535; Lib.Cong.Cat.Card No. 91-062772, p. 139].

Again, the promise of the Krell Machine, just like in the movie, sounds viscerally enticing. It's application however; is completely sick, and sadistic. An overt danger to us all. It is in fact, *the enemy*. Like all shams, the promises of the Forbidden Planet are uncovered and the hundreds of thousands, if not millions, of scammed and irrupted lives which have been outright destroyed to implement this disaster must be simply exposed for what they are. We must square the original promises for what has been gained, and account and view this treason and disaster for what it is, and have no fear in exposing those and jeopardizing those whom have supported this abortion against humanity as well as Western Civilization. If Hillary and her feminist cabal, no matter what their title, and/or positions of authority, have been and acted as Nazi's, we must label them as such, and deal with them accordingly. For the "promise" of the Krell Welfare Machine, is in fact, a disease to eat out and destroy this nation from within.

Feminism has transformed the social climate in this country as thoroughly as the Bolsheviks transformed the former Russia. Which is, of course, what it set out to do: Thus, it is a rousing success as a social movement. But, like the collectivist thinking on the economic level, the

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

collectivist thinking on the social level which drives feminism did not have quite the results promised. After 75 years, the grand socio-economic experiment of the Bolsheviks was abandoned because it was too contrary to the nature of human beings. For those 75 years, however, citizens had to contend with economic deprivation and hardship as they struggled to change that nature to conform to a grand ideal. Not just human nature, but the natural world as well. Crops were planted according to 5 year plans and not according to weather, harvests, and needs of the population. In the same way, feminists have demanded that the factors and forces which drive attraction conform to a plan, a FEMinine plan.

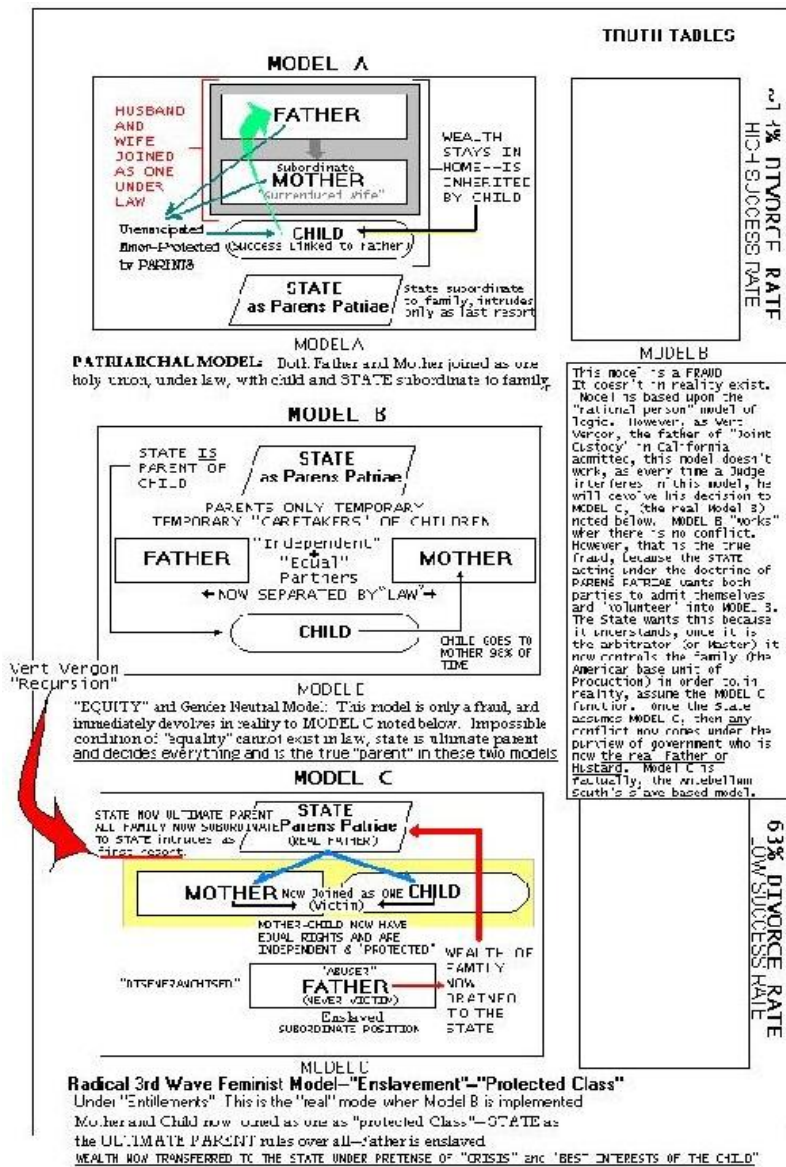
Males have simply been dropped out of the picture as serious elements of consideration, except to regard them as agricultural crops which fruit love, support, and sperm. Author Dennis herself says it - "For one of the implicit, if un-admitted, tenets of feminism has been a fundamental disrespect for men.". When the Bolsheviks fundamentally disrespected the fact that a crop ripens dependent on rainfall, sunshine, and a host of other factors, demanding instead that it be planted on a certain date and harvested on a certain date according to a grand idealistic plan laid down 5 years earlier, they could invest all the hours, fuel, and seed in planting and still have nothing to eat when it was all done. Not just no result, but an incredible waste of resources which were already in short supply. And people ended up hungrier as a result of wasting the seed which could have more productively been eaten than thrown away in an attempt to force nature to conform to a human ideal. Fortunately for them, in the States farmers still understood that a crop ripens according to natural laws and did not attempt to play GOD, so had surpluses which allowed the Bolshevik plan followers to purchase grain to keep from starving to death. Unfortunately, no one is growing a surplus of male attraction to women these days, particularly not one which meets the complex, contradictory, and completely impossible requirements of the feminist agenda, so women are emotionally starving to death. [HOW IT ALL FELL APART, by: John Galt. Mr. Galt is a men's rights activist. E-mail address: zenpriest@yahoo.com  
World Wide Web:  
<http://www.geocities.com/RainForest/Vines/3951/fallapart.html>]

### WELCOME, TO THE MACHINE

---

"How in God's name could this have happened," you ask? Easily. By and through the Krell Welfare Machine that was first established by an *unseen* (Krell) elite within this nation and our courts, then later implemented into law by F.D.R. in the 1930's. Interesting enough, he openly presaged the errant collapse of our form of government concisely enunciated the exact vehicle that would do it, of which he himself implemented: "In the hands of a people's government, this power is wholesome and proper, but in the hands of political puppets of an economic autocracy, such power would provide shackles for the liberties of the people." [Franklin D. Roosevelt, 1936]

# SUFFERING PATRIARCHY



How did Hillary and her Krell machine, (of which, by the way, both government and Feminists have continually and precisely steered this government towards since the mid-to-early 19<sup>th</sup> century) allow their economic autocracy to take over and undermine this nation? They did it from within each and every home. They didn't conquer any army, they con-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

quered our ability to rule ourselves from within our own home, in each and every home. Again, the results of this genius is eminently displayed within our bible in 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy:

1. "It is a trustworthy statement; if any man aspires to the office of overseer, it is a fine work if he desires to do.
2. "An overseer, then, must be above reproach, the husband of one wife, temperate, prudent, respectable, hospitable, able to teach.
3. "Not addicted to wine or pugnacious, but gentle, peaceable, free from the love of money.
4. He must be one who manages his own household well, keeping his children under control with all dignity.
5. **But if a man does not know how to manage his own household, how will he take care of the Church of God?** [*Ryrie Study Bible, Expanded Edition, New American Standard Bible (1995 Update)*, Charles Caldwell Ryrie, Th.D., Ph.D., Moody Press, Chicago, © 1986, 1995; ISBN 0-8024-3866-0; 1 Timothy, 3:1-5, p. 1920]

Again, as noted above and throughout this book, any man merely defending, disciplining, protecting, or enjoying his home or family, is wide open to overt and unrelenting attack. Father's who are adhering to 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy are covertly and overtly targeted to be eradicated, and destroyed. Again, the Krell Machine's inner mechanism for accomplishing this is insidious, and evil; and many men have no idea what is happening.

As Model A, B and C shows, "something" is actually going on here that most people have no idea what is happening. Mind you, this model is effecting every male and female relationship *before* any association between the two takes place. (Totally Krell).

Both men and women who begin to associate have visceral ideas as to what is happening, but these underlying Models, A, B, and C, quiescent wait and benignly percolate until *some conflict occurs*. The instant any conflict occurs, these model's then emote themselves completely out of the ether and begin to silently react with all parties involved in the association.

As we can see, (especially during the marriage vows), most societies vision of marriage and home and family extend from Model A. This is the "classical" Mom and Pop model most notably seen within this nation up until the 1960's, when it was silently replaced by Model B and C. But subconsciously, all people instantly recognize this Model A. This is the model most of Western Civilization was built upon. The one that actually, now get this: *respected and venerated fatherhood*.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Model B, and C are the more dangerous models that come into play upon any conflict. As you can see, again; Model B is the "new" feminist model. It is the 'visceral' model that "sounds right", "fair", and "equal." It is not. In fact, the Krell Machine depends on this Model to destroy men; transfer their wealth; and control both they and the complete society through the power and wealth accrued from this disingenuous model. This is the model of Homer Simpson, Ted Bundy, of Ellen Degeneris, and Rosie and Oprah.

What we immediately note in Model A is that the State, acting as *Parens Patriae*, is *subordinate* to the family. Again, from *State v. Richardson* we see why:

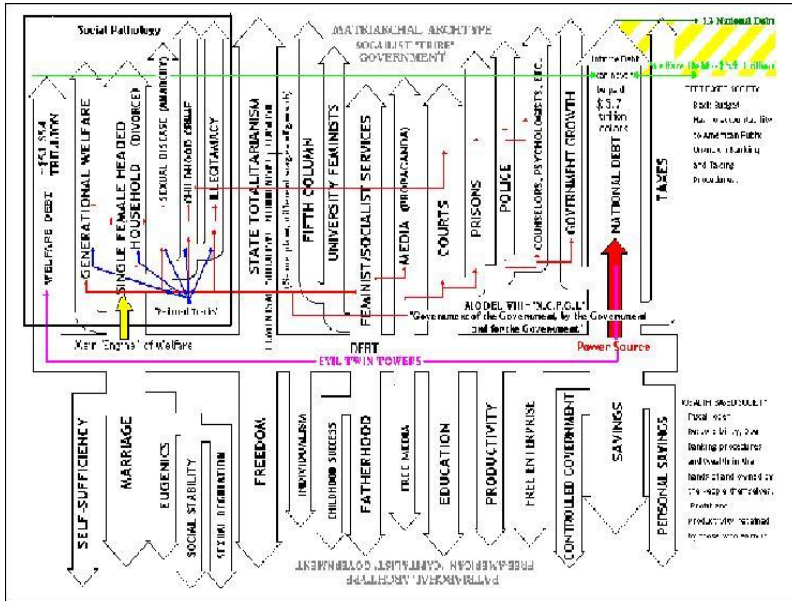
"[The Father owns the child because] [t]his power of the father is, however, regarded as a trust, confided to him by the law, upon the presumption that the natural affection of the parent will ensure its faithful execution. **He is in truth, the guardian by nature of his child.**...The discretion to be exercised is not an arbitrary one, but, in the absence of any **positive disqualification** of the father for the proper discharge of his parental duties, he had, as it seems to us, a paramount right to the custody of his infant child, **which no court is to disregard.** And while we are bound also to regard the permanent interests and welfare of the child, it is to be presumed that its interests and welfare will be best promoted by continuing that guardianship which the law has provided, until it is made plainly to appear that the father is no longer worthy of the trust. *People v. Mercein*, 25 Wend. 72.

...[T]he surrendering of these ties will always be approached by the courts with great caution, and with deep sense of responsibility. [*State v. Richardson*, Id. (a.k.a. *Herrick v. Richardson*)].

In other words, society clearly recognized that under Model A, it assigned a CEO...a "president" of the family if you will, which was best exemplified through Fatherhood. This was the price for "sexual regulation" and "order" within society. Impose this Model A upon society, and suddenly, a nation of Police, Prisons, Counselors, Psychologists...etc....suddenly "stop" without any other government programs or intrusions being required. Why?

Go back to Chapter Six, and look at the "Four Box" teleology that Milton and Rose Friedman demonstrated. Model A is Box I: wealth accrued and controlled by the individual and individual family. This is the key of the whole Krell Monolith. Feminists, Socialists, and Communists **not only hate Model A, they are instantly destroyed by it. This is why they cannot let Model A survive or procreate. Government, Feminists, Socialists, and Communists will always insist only on Model B-C. Place Fathers back into the home as the natural**

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE



guardian that *State v. Richardson* addresses and suddenly you eradicate the Krell Welfare Machine.

As we can see by Richardson quoted above, with the Father as the CEO/President of the Family, his rights are supreme over that of government. The Doctrine of *Parens Patriae* (state as the ultimate parent) is subordinate to his will. As long as he obeys the law, and protects his family, he is in the Friedman's Box I. His wealth stays with them, and is transferred to his children upon his death! This model (even today, as it is under direct and sustained attack) is the most beneficial, secured, profitable, and healthy environment for men, women and children. It has the lowest social pathology rates, divorce rates, and failure rates, and it is the one that accrues the most personal wealth.

Conversely, Model B and C, suddenly we significantly note that the STATE is now "the ultimate parent." (You are in Friedman's Box IV—Someone Else, Spending Your Money). It now controls and says whether you hit your children; whether you have a clean home or kitchen and can keep them; whether you are teaching them the right things (you can teach them communism or how to be a Muslim—but you cannot teach them either the fundamentalist principles of the Bible or Constitution). Now, all families doesn't own their children, **because their father doesn't own the children**. He's been replaced by the state! Now, the state is the father.

If any occurrence transpires within the home, under Model B-C, you now have a swarm of "experts" and "protectors" descending upon it to

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

destroy the father, and to harvest the wealth, **that formally was guaranteed to the child, which now goes to "experts", lawyers, psychologists, courts, Judges, and government empires. (The Krell Machine). This is why the Feminists and courts have opened up the home to harvest it, and "redefine" the level of abuse to mere fraud, where any mere allegation, or supposition of "abuse" (or even non-abuse, just supposition alone) now destroys the home and family.**

Again, where Model A contains strengthened families, with pristine, dutiful and moral wives and women binding themselves faithfully to their man; under Model B and C we have raised generationally "inferior products" of immoral and deceitful women, and children, all whom have been raised under the feminist tutelage of "abuse" and "entitlements." Of course, the concurrent and exponential failure rates of Model B and C are well marketed by the waiting Krell Welfare Machine:

### THE KRELL WELFARE MACHINE

This is the machine. This is the operations which provide it with power, personnel, corruption, and secrecy. Now, we dissect how Model B and C empower this machine.

As noted above, Model B and C are powered by the visceral and base general proposition of "fairness", that where you had the structure of Patriarchy defining the roles of the family members of Model A; Model B and C through the Promise of the Forbidden Planet now impose the pop-psychology that allowing the First Law of Matriarchy of sexual deregulation and deconstruction of Fatherhood, that now through entitlements, and the power of the Krell Welfare Machine, two people can own "equally" their own children.

Of course this is a lie, and it not only unrealistic—it is never allowed under law. It's a pure feminist invention. In law, there must be at least 51% ownership in all property. Where government, banking, corporate law, international law...actually the complete aegis of law requires this foundational principal...it is only in the mythological realm of Feminist Jurisprudence through family law that now allows pure 50-50% ownership and custody of children.

Well, it doesn't work in government and other institutions, and it most certainly *hasn't* worked in family law. The only thing powering this is the brutal force and fraud of the Krell Welfare Machine, and the courts and government principles and terrorism supporting it. This was addressed by Lord Coke in the begging of Chapter 2, and is further proven by maxim:

Duo non possunt in solido unam rem possidere. "Two cannot possess one thing in its entirety." Blacks Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, pg. 502

Cum legitimae nuptiae factae sunt, patrem liberi sequuntur. "Children born under a legitimate marriage follow the condition of the father."



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

**Somebody** owns our children. Who is it? Who is the ultimate authority over our children? Who is that final person who says that the child gets the appendix operation? Or that experimental treatment for a rare cancer? **Nobody wants to address this foundational question and the Father's Rights community is in complete dread of even answering it.** The Bible, our law, Western Civilization, State v. Richardson, and even the California Civil Code section 7004(a) up until 1993 answered it...(they all pointed to the Father)...but fathers are terrorized and shell shocked from even attempting the answer. **But you better believe, "somebody" owns our children. If the Father does not assume that natural responsibility he is blessed with, the state and Krell Welfare Machine will.**

"Each child belongs to the state." - William H. Seawell, professor of education at the University of Virginia

This has been the conclusive dictum by the Krell Machine as documented in this book. Father's are hated, because the Father's station is mandated by both God and law to own, protect and defend his home, his property, his family and children. The Krell Machine and those feminists implementing it silently against us; are Fatherhood's natural enemies, and as noted previously, the Matriarchal archetype and Patriarchal archetype *cannot* exist in the same country. *Only one will survive in this country (or any country).* Carl Marx recognized this, as did Plutarch, all the way up to Milton Friedman and beyond. Presently, Father's whom are attempting to be fair and "share" their children under Model B (and C), are instantaneously empowering the state (as a silent partner) as Parens Patriae and enjoining with the Matriarchal model. (They are giving up Fatherhood to the *inferior and subordinate* state). In fact, through Model B (and C), we can see he has been replaced. **He** is now subordinate to the state, as well as the Mother and Child! (Complete reversal of roles!) He is in fact, only a slave. The Mother and child by default unknowingly have the inferior state as the family, and their success rate is severely constrained, if not doomed. (Appendix C factually demonstrates this). Model B and C has been this nations greatest disaster, eclipsing all others.

Under the American form of governance, the state and all its ancillaries and employees are *public servants* to we state citizens. *We* are in charge of *them*. *Not visa versa*. As our public servants, and in accordance with Richardson, the *servant* is bound not to steal or misappropriate the property of the Master (the Father).

"Thus far, nothing has been said with regard to the custody of servants. It is a well-known doctrine of the criminal law, that a servant who

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

criminally converts property of his master intrusted to him and in his custody as servant, is guilty of theft, because he is deemed to have taken the property from his master's possession. This is equivalent to saying that a servant, having the custody of his master's property as servant, has not possession of that property, and it is so stated in the Year Books." (Y.B. 13 Ed. IV, 9, 10, pl. 5; 21 Hen. VII. 14, pl. 21; Cf. 3 Hen. VII. 12, pl. 9; Steph. Crim. Law, Art. 297, and App., not xvii.)

Every Father thusly forced into the unconscionable contract which totally disavows fatherhood and allows no rights to him except slave to his own property (which he cannot be held in slavery over his own property) is being overtly defrauded by his public servant. This means that the Krell Machine and those inhabiting it, are in fact, nothing less than cheap and immoral criminals.

Now, Feminists within the Machine will overtly lie, and errantly state that Model A is suppressing women, it is entrapping them (in a 'comfortable' slavery as they have described it). They are lying.

Because as women, **who don't really count in patriarchal society**, we remain a little closer to our true nature than the men who have been charged with setting the standards and with enforcing the values of patriarchy. And the primary value of patriarchy is production. The work ethic. Control and domination. (I'm talking patriarchy here, not blaming men. Patriarchy is simply a word describing the culture we live in which has as one of it's primary characteristics that men are valued over women.) [What Do Women Really Want ? by Dr. Deborah Taj Anapol, Ph.D., [http://www lovewithoutlimits.com/women\\_want.html](http://www lovewithoutlimits.com/women_want.html)]

Factually, again, if you cogently and not viscerally look at Model A, you can see the genius of it's revolution and a complete contradiction to the Feminists assertion that Model A is endemic to slavery. If "women didn't count in society"—as declared above, then why would men (as depicted in Model A) *join with them, as one person before God and under law, to keep, hold, care, protect and love?* Think of this construct—what would you keep joined to you **as one**, which you found worthless? Which you hated? Which you found *subferior*?? *Who would chain themselves to a slave*!!? Any person thus doing so, would be making the inherent statement that they in fact, hated themselves, that in fact, they thought so less of themselves as to join as one with something that was "worthless."

Of course, again, this is an overt lie. Model B and C feed off of the continuing perversion of this sustained lie. In fact, the most revolutionary statement of this book, is that under Model A, Father's in fact, *do* love their children; that in fact, they *do* need to protect and guard them; that the Mother and Father, joined as one, with the inherent leader and protec-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

tor of which God and law has clearly pointed to as the guardian, is the most irrepressible force for protecting the family than any other entity in human civilization ever could. Men actually love the women they choose. We can see this by the fact, that under Model A, women wanted (and still want) to join with men as one—to find their soul-mate; to join as one, and to procreate and to the terrible scourge of "doing good work" as 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy notes above.

How terrible! How oppressive. What indomitable abuse levied upon our poor defenseless young females!

Again, the real truth is, that Patriarchy not only needs women, it beseeches women to not just join, but become one—an integral part of the society to assume their natural duties as dutiful wives and mothers—something again; perversely hated by Hillary and her Krell Welfare Machine. That part, of women has been very much destroyed by the present system, and that loss has been insurmountable. [Even so, Patriarchy allowed women separate to this upon their own choice, the condition of femme sole: or the modern independent feminist woman.] Again, if Susan Smith, Amy Fisher or Loreana Bobbit had been brought up under Patriarchal tutelage, perhaps they would be happily assuming their duties under "a comfortable slavery"—instead of being discounted as they are under their present self-imposed "First Law of Matriarchy/constant state of anarchy" free feminist enslavement model they now find themselves in. I make the case that it is irrefutable, that under feminism that women don't count. Under Patriarchy, they are a valued and esteemed part of the society, and have instant recognition, and an eternal place within our society.

Indeed, this Model A, assumes concomitant and well-defined duties both men and women as separate parents, each containing seminal and disparate abilities, of which in each or different, but joined as one in insurmountable in its design, beauty and efficiency; to *both* protect and defend their own progeny, who are labeled, under law as "unemancipated minors." Clearly, we see the government cannot protect our children, as the horror stories of Foster care and court neglect is legion in the time of man. No. When you place Fatherhood in charge of the family, and combine man and woman as one suddenly you get as close as possible to true 50-50 distribution of power, because, under Model A, both man and women have to join and intimately depend on each other. It is a closed "zero-sum game" system. You cannot go outside this system, otherwise it breaks down. In Model A, the greatest success is ensured as everyone works together. Mankind knew this and for 5,000 years, it created a prodigious, advanced Western Civilization, *that would not have existed, had not Patriarchy been invented.*

Again, Patriarchy, can find no replacement for either the Father or the mother.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

Under Model B-C, the Krell Machine under the fraud of "equality" of the partners (where the state now determines and arbitrates everything), it is a mythical "open" (infinite) game system. This system *can and does* find replacement for both the Father and the Mother. Now, again; upon any conflict, either the children (who legally are factually emancipated having full legal rights) or the Female, can run to government and the host of "experts" and "programs" the Krell Machine can invent. Under this system, both partners are always "equal" and wary of each other, as any pre-emptive strike can totally destroy the losing partner. (They are not working together. The state is inducing failure). Under this system, the parents are "equal"—and either can replace the other. No male or female is valued within this system—has better or worse abilities of parenting—even gays are acceptable for the upbringing of children. Indeed...if need be, if carried to the extreme, an intelligent machine carries this same weight and value as against parents, and will be allowed to bring up and heuristically "care" for children in the future...under the Krell Welfare Machine "Village" model.

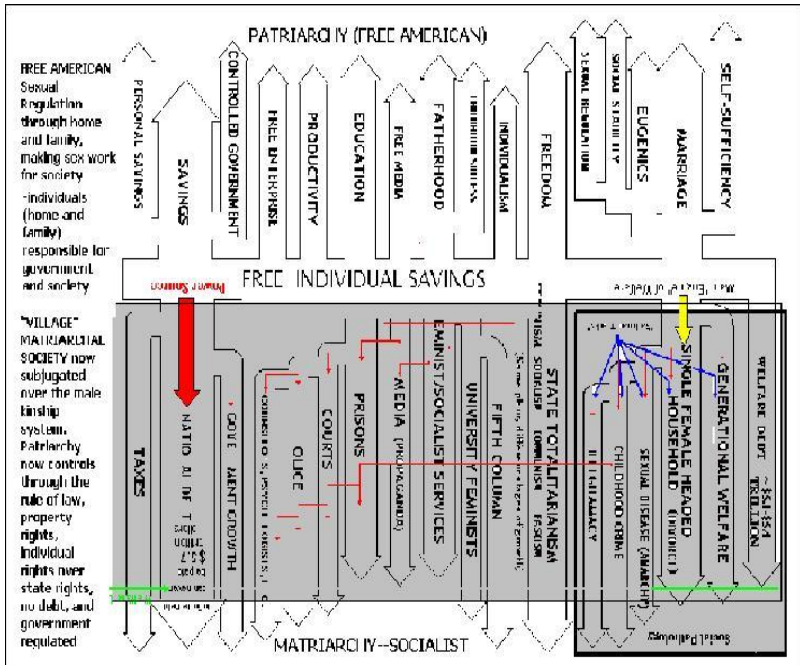
This "Brave New World" insanity, has fractionalized the family into competing groups. Children in fact, are inculcated by government to turn their own parents in for any infraction. "Counselors" and "Hotlines" are available 24 hours a day and through the leviathan of the Krell Welfare Machine (police, doctors, dentists, psychologist, teachers, nurses)—anyone can turn in any one else for any mere suspicion or allegation of abuse. This strain has in fact, taken Model A's divorce rate of approximately anywhere from 3% to the astounding figures of 50, 63 and 75% divorce rates!!! (Or higher) within Model's B and C.

So looking empirically at the systems, anyone one would pick Model A. However, in accordance with GIGO (discussed earlier in Chapter XX), the Krell Machine and it courts continually, willfully and cogently choose the higher failure rate Models B-C. They want this garbage.

Now, know that Model B, in fact, in "reality"—doesn't exist. It is really the model expounded by all equity feminists in this nation. But it only exists in discussion. It is ethereal. Not of this world—totally Krell. It is in fact, a *virtual* myth.

As Vert Vergon notes, that any time a father brings any issue into the court, he is instantly destroyed. "The Judge will always get it wrong." Vert tells us. Again, he is correct. Model C is the *true* model that exists. When the court (or CPS or any government entity) raises it's ugly head, it enforces this model which is the real reality competing with Model A. Model C, is a fraud, because it only allows the failure of the Father, and it intends to destroy as and drain as much as it can from the two-parent family. Model C does in fact, harvest the family, for profit, which again; creates the Krell Welfare Machine shown above.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE



This charge pump, creates the Single Female Headed Household, which in turn cascades the Krell Welfare Machine and initializes it into action. Just as Mr. Von Hayek noted above. Once started, those within the machine can depend on the instant to long term social pathologies which will accrue from the "railroad tracks" of sexual anarchy, sexual disease, childhood crime, and illegitimacy. These intentionally seeded Matriarchal pathologies, now empower the courts, police, prisons, counselors and a host of other opportunistic agencies and "experts." This in turn cascades once again, pushing up tax rates and our virtual National Debt—which is the power source for his madness. (Remember in the Movie: "Ten, times, ten, times ten each preceding meter...power raised almost to the level of infinity!") This of course creates the "Welfare Funding" which creates the panorama of social programs, grants and trust funds...all allowing the SFHH to again, access the ancient Id of Matriarchy, and allow her to make any "dream" possible, and create it out of thin air....all powered, sustained, and backed by the machine.

Of course if you look below, you can see what the machine is feeding off of: Fatherhood, Self-Sufficiency, Marriage, Stability, Sexual Regulation, Individualism, Childhood Success, Savings, etc., etc... Silently, in-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

visibly, exactly as in the movie *Forbidden Planet*—these things are silently attacked and destroyed. Murdered.

What impact has this had? Well destruction, but more importantly, it is a single-blind proof between the two disparate systems of Matriarchy (Socialism) and Patriarchy (Capitalism-Free American Government).

When I developed this chart depicting the Krell Welfare Machine, again; it silently and secretly was telling me and reaffirming exactly as a proof of what I was saying in this book. Inadvertently, I dropped the chart on the ground, and it fell upside down on the floor—to which I instantly recognized what it was telling me:

What do we see here? Upside down, suddenly we are looking at the foundational American form of governance. Wow. Turn it upside down again—what are you looking at? The Socialist/Communist form of governance (anti-patriarchy).

This Anti-Patriarchal form of governance, *needs* a fifth column to exist. It *needs* a large police force to put fear into its citizens and coerce, and enforce it's external burden of laws which sustain it. The Free Form of Patriarchal American government does not need large police and prison systems, because it depends on the individual to uphold their position in the structure of ordered society that Patriarchy has assigned them. Large prison systems of which we now have in this nation, were *never the invention of Western Civilization*, again a further proof we have been totally subverted and running under the feminist/communist/socialist form of government, all the while *pretending* to be free-American. Again, another empirical proof that demonstrates this is the "Incarceration Rates for Selected Nations" chart in Chapter 19. Again, *it* is Krell, as it is silently and invisibly showing the form of government we really have become. Look at the chart. All our "free" Western Civilized allies are at the bottom of the chart with *low prison populations*, whereas, we now supersede all nations on earth with a modern Krell prison system that leads all other oppressive and totalitarian and communist regimes on earth! Whether we are an American society or not, the Krell Machine has clearly turned the form of government now inhabiting our society into our enemy...because it is leading all others against us, hunting us, as fodder for the Krell Welfare Machine.

The French intellect, author and researcher Michael Foucault recognized this, when he said "Large gulag prison systems were never the invention of Western civilized society. They are the sole invention of the 1920's Soviet, Stalinist Russia." Well, now they are the Krell Welfare Machine's daily bread, as we now have a gulag prison system hunting all of us, for profit. And it will have its product of innocent men, invented into criminals by the mere stroke of pens of local DA's, Judges, Legislators and others within the "Village" system. Again, remember the movie:

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

most of the people being killed by the "monster of the ancient Id" had no comprehension what was killing them...just like the magnificent Krell themselves.

"The perception in the West that Socialism is a 'more fair and just system', that it is even worth salvaging to become part of a 'Third Way', is also a manufactured reality. When evidence started to leak out of the Soviet Union that socialism was producing social inequality, slave labour and brutality, the Western media manufactured the idea that the problem was 'Stalinism', not Socialism. That too was a lie. The rot had set in long before Stalin, in the days of Lenin himself. As the documentary series 'The Spirit of Freedom' (SBS TV 1995) showed, the Gulag Archipelago slave labour camps began in Lenin's time, well before Stalin. In 1918 there were 3, by 1920 there were 8, by 1922 there were 56, and by 1923 the year before Lenin's death there were 65 slave labour camps in the USSR. As Alexander Solzhenitsyn pointed out in his essay 'The West's Betrayal of Civilisation' (1976), slave labour was not a distortion of the Socialist ideal, it was part of the programme." [MANUFACTURED REALITY: THE 'THIRD WAY'

by Graham L. Strachan, © 1998,  
<http://www.wealth4freedom.com/truth/14/reality.htm>

"The marvel of all history is the patience with which men and women submit to burdens unnecessarily laid upon them by their governments." - William H. Borah

We are now in the midst of realizing this perverse system, effectuated under the guise and the authority of the Feminist mindset within the safety of the virtual reality of the Krell Welfare Machine.

### CONCLUSION

---

Know an enemy when you see it.

It is amazing to me, to what extent that the national public will go into a national fervor for a mere 5,000 persons murdered by terrorists on September 11, 2001 in New York City's two World Trade Center towers, when every year we have on the order of two complete World Trade Center's disaster's of Father's committing suicide, directly due to this Krell Welfare system EVERY SINGLE YEAR!!!! Five thousand innocent men and women get murdered by an enemy deserves a war. But Eleven thousand fathers gets silence.

Yet, Eleven thousand true and just American men, (a substantial portion who served and defended this nation honorably as veterans), who are thrown away, and forced and bludgeoned into suicide, do not deserve outright silence. But the nation does nothing. It allows people of darkness to feed off of their own citizens, to enslave them, to disenfranchise them

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

and destroy and murder them whose only crime is that of being a Father, and through the Krell system merely invented into a criminal *for profit*. And many other citizens, cower and remain silent and mulct in the light of this crime against Fathers, and thereby, the fund and empower this perversion by default. If many of these men driven into suicide by the present system were allowed to just assume there proper roles of fathers—and control their own lives (in Milton Friedman's Box I as noted in Chapter 6), they would never be cannibalized by this unjust system that hunts them with a vengeance, which even foreign terrorists or murders don't deserve nor get, and they would be alive today.

Foreign terrorists and murderer's can get drivers licenses; they can obtain pilot's licenses, professional certifications; they can have bank accounts; get jobs; happily attend universities and private courses; freely travel unabated or undisturbed throughout the breath of this nation....yet *fathers*... are destroyed, hunted, disenfranchised, enslaved, falsely accused and imprisoned, enslaved, beaten, brutalized, and denied all rights—**even murdered**—a for merely being in the condition of Fatherhood. A murderer only gets one penalty assessed against him under law....a Father, however...receives almost 100 penalties for a "crime" he may not have even committed. [Note Chapter Ten and the sixty delineated "short list" of injustices and penalties unjustly imposed upon Fatherhood.] Law only requires one penalty for one crime. Why so many?

Because it is Krell. It is our sworn enemy, and we as a nation don't yet see that.

We must recognize that no real man would pay child support to fund this enemy. No man would pay money, to have his rights obliterated, to be enslaved, and denied all rights. No true man would fund his own destruction. No "crime" in human history carries the penalties of "Fatherhood."

Yet paying "Child Support" only does in fact, empower this machine to hunt others. It is an authorization from us as Fathers, to our domestic enemies within the Krell Welfare Machine to undermine our fundamental rights, to directly intrude upon our homes upon any fantasy, and to usurp and replace our vested positions in our own homes and castles, with "something else" that comes without warrants in the night, that seizes our own children upon pretended and manufactured "offenses" allegations and charges. Again, note 1st Timothy above: *if* we fund this perversion which directly intrudes to our rights as Fathers in our own homes and Castles, and we can neither control our own homes, children, women or family...what can we control? How we control the house and Church of America? More importantly, how do we control our government?

Factually, we can't. For if you don't control what happens in your own living room, there is no possibility you will control what happens in



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

the forests of Oregon, or the Oceans of Alaska, or the bustling streets of New York, or the quiet and hidden sanctuaries of our State and Federal Capitals.

This is the present state of Fatherhood. And exactly as the Krell Machine intimates—it demands our fealty—and father's obediently submit, "willingly." This can happen no longer.

Would the Black's of the late 1950 and early 1960's fund their own civil rights destruction of that era? No! And once they turned and faced that challenge and refused obedience to it—they were set free. Yet Fathers, under some virtual mythology created by the Krell Machine that destroying ones self for their own children is "good"—it isn't. The facts are replete on this matter. Children can no longer take being "saved" by Ms. Clinton and her feminist cabal. They are no longer just destroying themselves, the system itself is helping to annihilate them. No true Father would allow his future progeny to inherit this system. But this is a bleak future we are leaving them. Our cowardice is allowing the Krell Machine to expand exponentially.

Father's must start educating themselves and outright attacking this system, both overtly and covertly. We must insist that no person within the present feminist Krell Welfare Machine come from either "abused" or feminist backgrounds. Presently we have a massive coterie of individuals of this cancerous ilk that infest our institutions of government as a domestic enemy. They are so diseased and openly biased, that only their Krell logic, biases and prejudices are protracted within the Krell system as "public policy." We can no longer allow these people either subsidy, nor the power of our government. They not only must be purged, but eradicated from the aegis of government in order to eradicate that perverse mindset from those institutions.

We must also, expunge all public funding from the Feminist national institutions. This means all "organizations" and "Community Groups." Again, these people are of one feminist mindset and where is where the bulk of the Feminist Hive exist.

Many within the Father's Rights community are salivating at "public funding" which is now slowly trickling into our cause. We must admonish those who would dip into that power source—as it is Krell. Soon, those organizations will along with the extreme feminists, be "eternally managing the problem" of which there is no name. Donna Laframboise of the National Post has somewhat documented this new Feminazi mindset:

But a growing chorus of critics say the highly politicized character of many facilities means that the clients' needs take second place to the agenda of the people in charge. In some cases, the critics say, these services are being run by zealots concerned with dogma who are overtly hostile to men, male children, and heterosexual relationships.

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

"I can't say what it's like now; I've kept my distance," says Madelyn Iler, a former shelter worker in Kingston, Ontario. "But in my experience, there was a very militant political agenda that came first. The interests of the client were way down there."

... In 1993, a victim of an attempted abduction complained to the media that staffers at the Hamilton rape crisis centre were anti-police and anti-male. "They strongly discourage trust and respect in the police and there is no desire to help a woman continue dealing with men, not even her partner," said the woman, who questioned the propriety of counselors expressing "such strong opinions" to vulnerable people.

... In 1994, the women's shelter in Kingston, Ontario, was in an uproar. After three damning reviews in as many years, the Ontario government withdrew \$180,000 in annual funding designated for counselling and employment programs, and put the shelter on notice that another \$314,000 for general services was in jeopardy if changes were not made.

A letter signed by ten shelter staffers, including Madelyn Iler, alleged that "the workplace [was] used to further extreme militant feminist philosophy" and that lesbian employees received preferential treatment while heterosexual ones were told not to "discuss their wedding plans or their wedding days with their co-workers."

Also in 1994, the atmosphere at Nelson House, a Nepean, Ontario, battered women's shelter, became so acrimonious that police were called in after a staffer tried to prevent the chair of the board from entering the building. Residents witnessed some pushing and shoving.

An independent consultant reported "numerous incidents of yelling, put-downs [and] disrespect for differences of viewpoints" among staffers. A second report noted that while the primary purpose of such a facility should be to help victimized women, Nelson's mission statement "begins and ends with an emphasis on striving to fulfill the needs of staff and protecting the 'personal power' of staff."

By late 1996, two factions at Nelson House were asking a judge to decide who was in charge, and for a time it was shut down.

Meanwhile, Ottawa's Interval House shelter was also in trouble. A 1994 report concluded that that facility was so dysfunctional it should be closed down. In 1995, police were called after a staffer accused a director of assaulting her. One woman was charged with assault while a stalking charge was laid against another. In June 1995, the board resigned.

The following January, the entire staff was fired.

In Toronto, Shirley Samaroo House -- meant to help immigrant women -- collapsed in 1994. Resignations, mediators, and concern from provincial funders were elements there too, as racial squabbles, intolerance, and extremism tore the shelter apart. [*Battered shelters: Criminal charges, mismanagement, infighting and sexual politics have left many women's shelters as bruised as the people they serve (Part 1 of 3)* by Donna Laframboise, *National Post*, 14 November 1998, p. B1 (© 1998 Southam Newspapers Inc.)]

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

So those entreating these funds which are becoming more and more readily available to many (some very deserving) Father's Rights Organizations: know that those organizations have sold out in accepting these "grants" or "entitlements" and are in fact, investing in failure and the undermining of our cause as Fathers. We must remove total funding from this equation—and starve these Krell "groups", "organizations" and "community organizations" that are eternally "helping" us and "saving our children." They are doing no such thing. The Krell Machine shows exactly what they are doing and as the bible says: *you will know them by their acts*. We must no longer allow either Mothers or Fathers to be extorted or burdened with having to suffer the removal of their children from their lives. If a mother or father obtains custody upon divorce or separation; *he who accrues the benefit, must assume the burden*. Again, support this reasonable and just maxim of law, and suddenly, divorce will plummet, and marriage will once again become a vested institution.

Now, am I asking and demanding that father's destroy themselves in order to stand up and face this corrupt Krell Machine?

The simple answer is yes.

As shocking as that sounds, we must consider this. Nobody else will eradicate this enemy within our nation. There is no judge which will either adhere to law or reason. Butte County District Attorney Investigator II Brad Runt informed us of that fact. The legion of Fathers who have entered and "trusted" our present court systems and entered them in good faith and submitted law to these courts have been destroyed and annihilated. Why are we supporting, and allowing courts which only hand fathers a "no-win-scenario" and which deny law, palpable motions, injunctions, and even the Habeas Corpus itself? Your silence is complicity. Your acquiescence allows treason to be committed within our government and courts under the guise of normalcy. Lending any support or even direct silence to these bastards is validating their existence, when in fact, we should be excoriating and eradicating them from our existence. Again, know an enemy when you see it.

We must not allow the infestation of the Feminist Hive within our schools and universities, and must radically expunge them from this nation's experience. Modern feminism is in its final death-throw's and like the stoic veterinarian, when it knows something is living when it shouldn't—we must have the courage to euthanize this criminal, this diseased and perverse element of our society. This will effectively clean our schools—which is one reason why children and even many adults have no higher cognitive abilities, and think viscerally instead of empirically. Many within our society have no choice, and like the Trogladites of H.G. Wells time machine, they unwittingly enslave themselves to the caves and darkness of which Feminism propagates within our learning institu-

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

tions. Presently, both the Gay and Lesbian and multiculturalist teachings has created an upside down reversal of logic and morality within our schools systems; where being gay and fisting are right, and where motherhood and fatherhood are wrong and evils to be shunned or not obeyed. This infestation has created generations of "Attention Deficit Disorder" and Ritalin bound children which do not have the cogency nor fundamental capabilities to either understand or handle a free society. such as which Jefferson mandated for this nation.

The Krell want this, as a dull and morose society is much easier to fool and control as one which is informed and educated. For the past 40 years—feminists have overtly undermined these institutions—and we must completely erase them from that existence. In order to have an advanced society you need sexual regulation. In order to have a free society, you need an informed society. The Feminist infestation of the institutions of learning completely block that ability.

Those within the Krell Machine must be constantly hunted, exposed, and never allowed again to hold any position of the public trust. We must not only do this in order to strike fear within these people, we must also do it to strike fear into future generations of tyrants and their drones whom stolidly mumble that they are 'only doing their jobs.' Such a fetid utterance must carry with it instant dismissal within our free society.

Again, those person's of light, now within the system, police, firemen, counselor's, court clerks, secretaries—must rise above and be counted, and place themselves into harms way. When entreated to act against a Father without probable cause—the secretary must refuse to type or assist in any way with the transmission of the criminal Krell intent against fatherhood. If any police officer is instructed to arrest without warrant or probable cause—he must flatly not only refuse, but place and file a complaint and report against his supervisor. When any clerk or administrator is asked to "go fill out your quota"—that agent must adamantly refuse, and again, file a report, record the crime and disseminate it to the media.

Those within the media, must also be hunted and exposed for what crimes they have allowed against us. Like Rodney from CBS news who refused to acknowledge fatherhood—even though he clearly was involved with the fulmination and support of feminist causes throughout this medium—we must insist that advertisers do not support Corporations such as CBS and others that embrace the leprous people supporting the diseased institution of Feminism. Again, those clearly Krell, must be attacked, taken to prison, sued in court, and placed in legal and criminal jeopardy.

Judges, Legislators, and other public servants, as well as those in private opportunistic support industries of the Krell Empire, must lose their property, and rights. *It is they that must be civilly murdered and disen-*

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

*franchised.* All those within the Village must learn, that they cannot overthrow not only the bond, but the station of Fatherhood. As that wealth is the fountainhead of all our individual freedoms.

Know, that we must reluctantly take over the system. I know this is a sore point with many people who see the destruction and havoc this system has committed against this nation as a planned conflagration. However; we *must* train our neighbor's, son's and daughters; those within our community, to become hired and infiltrate the Krell Machine and dismantle it from within. "Normal" people, do not want these jobs—as again, you must have a sick personality in which to constantly market and harvest human tragedy and misfortune. However; these sick and twisted individuals are now teaming throughout our institutions.

We must also collectivize. Those "within" our system must be placed on the fast track, be empowered with both money and position. Those who are not of our system—must be denigrated and kept back—if not outright terminated. Again, we are involved in war, and if we do not win this war, we will neither control our children or our property. Government will.

Those within the Krell machine propagate the myth that we cannot win. That our side, does not use the substantive form and system of our government, such as voting and the courts as well as "writing your representative" because we do not have the backing of either the moral or the critical mass majority. In fact, the exact this is the truth of the matter. We do have both morality and sustain the will of the mass majority of both the mainstream public and many fundamental minorities. It is only the doctrines of the lunatic fringe of Feminism which propagates within the our corridor's of government—not because they are right, nor can win elections; but rather, *because they have corrupted, infested and undermined our systems of government.* For instance, they insists that "Abortion terrorist are doing this because they can't win at the ballot box." That those like the Army of God anti-abortionists petulantly and illegally murder Doctors and others supporting abortion, because they can't win in court or in any election.

Hell! All systems of redress have collapsed! We are speaking of corruption's throughout or society which are no longer whispered as a "vast right-wing conspiracy" but factually have elected our current President! We have courts which insolently disregard the Habeas Corpus, our most sacred legal document and vested right of all free peoples. We have officers insolently throwing flags into the trash and openly desecrating it, without fear of reprisal. We have judges, congressmen even President's openly violating law, and scoffing about any accountability, not adhering to even the most base principles of either etiquette, honor or morality....Presently, the 'system' they have devised consists of those in power,

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

voting themselves back into power. They disenfranchise fatherhood, in order that they might propagate their species with a death grip. It is Krell Machinery in succinct control of the socio-economic, political and even religious factions of this society. Those who "dare" raise their heads above the crowd, get it lopped off—sadistically.

Clearly, these Krell miscreants make this assumption because they fully comprehend that we have not only have had *one branch of government fail—but all three have collapsed, right in the light of day!* Directly due to their intervention. And they beseech us into this failure, of *their* systems of groomed corruption?

No. No more.

We also must completely take the word "abuse" away from the Feminists. We must bring back American law, and not allow false allegations to carry any weight within any court of America. Too many harms and false abuse charges and imprisonment's have transpired. Again, these present ABA controlled court systems have created allot of 'bad karma' of which we again; cannot ever forget. There must be an accounting for those transgressions against innocent men, who by a mere whisper of "he said, she said" falsely were placed into imprisonment.

The threshold critique of what actually consists as "abuse" must be raised. Presently, the feminists have lowered that standard to such a point as to be frivolous and meaningless. "Everything" is abuse now—and this is unacceptable for an advanced, law abiding society.

Do I ask Fathers enter the present corrupt court systems, and fight them, even though they are a fraud? Yes. Confront, and expose the enemy, let them effect and implement their corruption, allow them their cheap win. By mass attack—the system is doomed to collapse upon itself. Then we must *never forget their acts against us*.

Know, that these people have created many, many, many friends for our side. They have signed their own demise for obtaining their thirty pieces of temporal silver by and from your planned destruction. Many Fathers have survived this base gauntlet and they *must neither forget those who did evil to them, as conversely, they cannot forget those who now fight on their behalf*. Fathers must support fund Father's Rights organizations and those that do "good work" in every way as we now are taking power and soon will eclipse all other social revolutions. Father's who have been falsely accused and damaged must also persistently hunt, harass, and excoriate those individuals who supported and benefited from the Krell Welfare Machine. These people chose to destroy their own citizens, for no crime. They made their bed and must be forced to sleep in it.

Again, from the website noted above:

Why did the Western media persist in calling the social system in the Communist bloc 'Communism' instead of Socialism? They did it to manu-

## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

facture a false reality: to protect the reputation of another form of Socialism which existed in the West....so-called 'Democratic Socialism', socialism by stealth, socialism achieved through the 'permeation' of existing political institutions by members of organization such as the Fabian Society, in order to influence the policies adopted by those institutions towards socialism.

Democratic Socialism itself was based on a lie: that Socialism could be implemented peacefully through the ballot box. The implication was that if the voters didn't like it they could vote it out again. That was a hoax. Since Socialism does not permit private ownership of property, it cannot be 'democratic' in the sense of allowing a choice of political Parties. This is not a matter of ideology, but of logistics. It would be impossible to have a two Party system of genuine democracy, for example, under which the state nationalized all property including business when the Socialists were voted into power, then sold it all back to the people again when they were voted out. The intention of Democratic Socialism was (and still is) to be democratic just long enough to gain power. Then it will declare the 'end of history' and entrench itself forever, enforcing its politically correct speech and thought on everybody, and being just as tyrannical as its Marxist revolutionary counterparts. [MANUFACTURED REALITY: THE 'THIRD WAY' by Graham L. Strachan, © 1998, <http://www.wealth4freedom.com/truth/14/reality.htm>]

We are now taking over. We have critical mass. We have both law, morality and justice on our side. Plus, we have a superlative product, called "Patriarchy." This great ship is now impossibly turning mid-stream; and there is nothing they can do about it. They are going the way of the dinosaurs—while we are the ascendant, superior prodigy. They cannot and do not see this, as they are too full of themselves to recognize their reality, exactly like the Krell in the movie. We have a duty to study them as archeologists study the dust encrusted bones of an Apatosaurus after their demise.

Finally, we must recognize that the Single Female Headed Household is our enemy. It is this nations enemy. It cannot be controverted that 90% of all SFHH are headed by loving and caring mothers...but this does not dismiss the fact that they are a constant danger to the peace and safety of not only Fatherhood, but society as a whole. But more than that, it is the final 5 or 10% of this group, the ones clearly fulminating the most gross of our social pathologies and crime, that are gestating Monsters from the Ancient Id—beings human civilization has never seen before. Most; generationally tied to the Krell Welfare Machine. Even Murphy Brown needs a house and baby sitter. She needs some outside subsidy or help that eventually destroys what she was attempting to create. Those radical feminist movie stars, such as Jody Foster, Calista Flockhart, must be opposed, protested against, and not supported. We must pro-actively enter our species and people into the midst of this modern Media industry—

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

and again, like government, take it over and undermine it from within. We must contact and boycott those companies supporting them, and we must destroy any marketing or monetary credibility that these women might have. Again, we cannot have a meeting of minds here—these women are undermining Fatherhood, and making Fatherhood meaningless. They are through their altruistic entropy, destroying us. We must return the favor.

"Dr. Nathanson, who has been working with Dr. Young on the project for 15 years, said misandry -- the hatred of men -- is unexplored academic terrain. "I don't even know how to pronounce it," he said during an interview yesterday. "I've never heard the word used." He said the U.S. Library of Congress has three books under the heading of misandry but thousands under misogyny -- the term for hatred of women.

...The brunt of their attack, however, is reserved for television and movies, everything from Home Improvement and Beavis and Butt-Head to Sleeping with the Enemy and Silence of the Lambs. Men are laughed at, denigrated or demonized, receiving treatment that would never be acceptable if directed at women, they say. Dr. Young, a professor of religious studies at McGill, said her research has attracted some hostility from "ideological feminists" who believe women are superior to men. "As we wrote it, we realized it's going against the grain, and therefore it's going to be controversial," she said.

She added that being a tenured professor made it easier for her to take on the controversial topic without fear of harm to her career. Some may be tempted to dismiss the book as another example of academics overly obsessed with popular culture. Its index is peppered with such entries as Buffy the Vampire Slayer, Gloria Gaynor, Murphy Brown, Sex and the City and The Vagina Monologues. One appendix, titled the Misandric Week on Television, analyzes a week of TV Guide listings for examples of dastardly men. The book is the first of three volumes about misandry the pair will publish with McGill-Queen's. Dr. Young said the issue needs to be explored because it is exacting a social toll. Fed a popular-culture diet of men who are either hapless or downright evil, boys and young men are feeling more alienated, she said. "What group wants to live with constant negative stereotyping?" Even more serious is the gulf such portrayals create between the sexes. "What happens to society when the prevailing world view is dualistic, with one group seen as good and the other as evil?" she asked. In their book, the authors warn such polarization could provoke a backlash. "If men are told over and over again that they are not only brutal subhumans in general but also hostile to women in particular, they are likely to say, 'So be it ...' What goes around, according to the old saying, comes around," they write.

National Post November 14, 2001 Male-bashing could prove 'disastrous,' authors warn New book on misandry by Graeme Hamilton  
MONTREAL -



## CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

We must demand a new generation of Television shows, devoid of Feminism. We must empower and venerate Patriarchy through all extents of our national media. We must turn the tools of propaganda against them, as our survival depends upon it. The survival of both men, *and women* depend on it.

Finally, we must re-learn what patriarchy is, and not only not fear it, but openly teach it and hand it down to our children. Especially, from men to their sons. We must groom little girls to assume the pristine station of motherhood, and train them to be subservient—and have them know and depend that in the doing, that they will be vested, cared for, loved, and valued in a way that no government, nor feminist programme ever could attempt.

We must inculcate within our men, these long lost ideals, that men are in fact the true protectors of women and children—and not either government or the media which are fallow replacements of the male. Every male is silently combating this present Krell government who through Briffault's law, now offers women substantive offers to bribe her away from her proper station and into the Krell Welfare Machine that very few men can compete with. We must remove these Krell programs that entice women from their valued station, to a socialist "Village" epiphany.

Like the young women on Oprah who was cognizant that "all men aren't bad" and said so directly and confronted Gloria Allred; we must groom those women and make them again chaste, obedient, moral and feminine. We must avert the present inferior product of feminism (the modern American woman) and turn her into the ascendant classical American woman. The one which De Touqueville noted in our past that "men viewed as superior." Those women we must place on a pedestal, and put on the fast track of society, and protect and defend them at all costs. This is the higher order of mankind, not the devolved condition of Matriarchy. The aging Matriarch's of the final dying generation of Radical 3<sup>rd</sup> wave feminism, must be induced to die out more quickly, and pass into our history as soon as possible, to be studied in universities and law schools.

Also, we must en-masse overthrow the present corruption's within our courts. We must challenge not only them, but also government Agencies and administrators to uphold Patriarchy. Not just fatherhood—but Patriarchy. Although the two are joined, there is a difference, and we must reinvest ourselves and this society in the protections of that institution. Those public servants and institutions not adhering to those precepts, must be constantly challenged, harassed, worn down, vilified, humiliated, driven into extinction, never to arise again.

Family law must be expunged, and private charities, churches, individual philanthropists and families must take up the institution of caring

## SUFFERING PATRIARCHY

for our own family members and citizens. Such an entity cannot do the job any worse than the state presently does, **but more importantly, they will not be hunting, disenfranchising, imprisoning and transferring wealth from the institution of Fatherhood. And that is the main fulcrum of this whole issue. Father's must fight to retain both their wealth, and children—and must refuse any and all attempts at any entity removing him from that right.** When the Germans of WWII created the concentration camps of Nazi Germany, we never allowed that political construct to rise again. We destroyed it, and criminalized it. The courts, by their overt criminality, have lost the right to either rule or delegate within the home or family. They have lost by their own acts—and we cannot invest them with any ability to care or decide for our children ever again.

Simply put, Father's once again must become Fathers.

Dr. Morbius in the final scene of the movie, where he finally recognizes that because he accessed the power of the Krell Machine, and upon the insistence of the main hero is told that the invisible creature that now comes through the impenetrable Krell steel door to kill them all, extends only through his mind engorged by the power from the wondrous Krell machine. Suddenly, upon that salient understanding, Dr. Morbius gets up and faces the monster, and says: "I rebuke you! I give you up!!"

In doing so, the Krell monster, simply disappears.

We must in courage, with one solid voice, face Ms. Clinton's Village, and face the impenetrable Krell Welfare Machine, and exclaim the same, with one intent, one solidly resonating voice. "I rebuke you! I give you up! I demand my son!! I refuse to pay Child Support! You will neither command nor extort from me again!!"

Do that; and this nightmare of this present Krell Machine, will just simply disappear, just like in the movie. You now have; and understand that exact power, and realization. It was embedded within our own station as men and Fathers. It always was there. It is now time we turn, and with great courage rebuke this sick and diseased machine, Father by Father; home by home, and watch it simply disappear.

It will happen that quick.

## END OF BOOK

-- 30 --